LiskookiAnne's



GREAT TEACHER JEON

A Liskook AU

Great Teacher Jeon | A Liskook AU [COMPLETED]

Anne Nature

Published: 2020
Source: https://www.wattpad.com

Cast of Characters

Jeon Jungkook
Teacher of Seoul National University High School
24 years old

Lee Ji-eun
Jeon Jungkook's girlfriend
27 years old

Kim Jisoo
Teacher of Seoul National University High School
25 years old

Wang Jackson
Teacher of Seoul National University High School
25 years old

Kim Jennie
Teacher of Seoul National University High School
25 years old

Bae Joohyun
Teacher of Seoul National University High School
27 years old

Kim Chungha
Teacher of Seoul National University High School
27 years old

Bambam Bhuwakul
3rd year student of SNUHS
18 years old
“Class Introvert”

Park Chaeyoung
3rd year student of SNUHS
18 years old
“Class Rebel”

Park Jimin
3rd year student of SNUHS
18 years old
“Class Playboy”

Kim Namjoon
3rd year student of SNUHS
18 years old
“Class President”

Kim Soekjin
3rd year student of SNUHS
18 years old
“Class Joker”

Jung Hoseok
3rd year student of SNUHS
18 years old
“Class Sunshine”

Min Yoongi
3rd year student of SNUHS
18 years old
“Class Bully”

Chou Tzuyu
3rd year student of SNUHS
18 years old
“Class Beauty”

Kim Dahyun
3rd year student of SNUHS
18 years old
“Class ATM”

Yoo Jeonyeon
3rd year student of SNUHS
18 years old

“Class Gossip”

Cha Eunwoo
3rd year student of SNUHS
18 years old
“Class Hearthrob”

And

Lisa Manoban
3rd year student of SNUHS
18 years old
“Class Slacker”

Dearest Readers, let’s enjoy and follow the story of the most troublesome class of SNUHS.

I made another Liskook story for my dear readers and I hope you support this story just like how you supported my other stories: Idol Pleasure and How To Be A Real Man 101

Author’s Note

Comments are mostly appreciated ☺

New Teacher

Seoul National University High School

Walking along the school corridors of the school is a breathtakingly young and gorgeous man. He was dresssed nice and clean with his suit and tie while carrying files with his muscular arms.

He was so enchanting and attention grabbing that all the students gathered to get a better glimpse. Eyes were fixated on him and most of them are from young girls. They were squeaking in admiration while the boys are rolling their eyes out of insecurity.

His movement was straight. Not even paying attention to all the girls who are rushing out to get a good look of him. He was used to it in all honesty. Being called handsome, gorgeous, hot, perfect was an everyday chant for him.

Trully, Jeon Jungkook's physical feature was no joke. He is someone you would drool over. He is someone you would dream to be with. His manly features and his perfectly sculptured body is evident on the ladies' eyes but he has this cold and intimidating aura that people think they shouldn't messed up.

Today is the day that he set foot to this University. He came here for one reason.

And that is to become a substitute teacher.

Yes, you heard it right. He is a teacher. A freshly graduate one and he was lucky to land a job (Although not permanent) in the biggest University High School in Seoul. Sadly for these girls who are attracted to him, he came here not to flirt but to work.

Besides, his heart is already taken by someone.

Jungkook's POV

“Jungkook! Finally you’re here!” a warm and beautiful smile welcomed me the moment I entered the school’s faculty room.

“Jisoo” I offered a bow to my friend who recommended me for the position.

“This jerk! Can’t you even smile? You’ve been frowning a lot since we were in college. Now you have lines on your forehead!” Jisoo smacked my arm.

“What is there to smile for?” I asked.

“Whatever. You’re as cold as ever Jeon. If I were you, loosen up a bit because it won’t help you being so stern in this kind of job” she warned but I remained unfazed. I’m not the type of person who would smile a lot and talk a lot for no exact reason.

“Where is the principal’s office?” I asked her.

“Oh, I almost forgot! Come with me! I’ll introduce you to Mr. Yang.” She said and we started walking to a nearby office.

Jisoo must’ve noticed the girls screaming around so sje smirked at me.

“1st day of job and you’re collecting fangirls already. I’m still not used to this.” Jisoo teased but I didn’t respond.

Well, I’m used to it already.

I can say that my relationship with Jisoo is a close one. I was classmates with her back in college and she’s aware of how I am already. She and Jennie were the closest friends I have back then. And now both of them are working here. They got hired immediately while I focused on taking an MA degree.

But now that Jennie took a personal leave, Jisoo asked me to apply here as a sub. At first, I didn’t plan on taking the job because I’m busy with school. But Jisoo said it will only be for three months so I finally agreed. There were actually a lot of young teacher like me who applied for the position and luckily I was chosen.

When the door of the principal's office opened, Mr Yang's voice echoed with a welcome greeting. Then we head inside his spacious and clean office.

"Good Morning Mr. Yang." I bowed. I have meet him before already when he held an interview for the job online.

"Good Morning, It's good to see you again Mr. Jeon."

"It's my honor to work in this school sir." I said.

"Well, are you ready? I hope Ms. Jennie Kim sent you the needed information for the work?" he clarified and I nodded.

"Yes sir, I have read the schedule already along with other important files for the job."

"So everything is settled then. Are you ready to meet the class?" he asked and I felt a little tensed.

This will be my first job experience and I'm actually worried if I can do my job properly. But I still remained calm infront of the principal's eyes. I won't let him see that I'm nervous so I confidently replied. "Yes, Mr. Yang. I'm ready."

"Okay then, Ms. Kim, please usher him to the class." he said but he continued "Oh.. I forgot. Introduce him first to the teachers. Is it okay Ms Kim?" he asked Jisoo.

"Of course Mr. Yang it's a little early so we will go to the faculty first. We are going now." Jisoo and I bid Mr. Yang goodbye and we started walking back to the faculty.

"Guys, let me introduce to you the substitute teacher for Jennie's class." Jisoo announced and the rest of the teachers came to us.

"This is Jeon Jungkook. He will be taking the class of 3-C as Jennie is on her leave for months." She introduced me the rest paid me a smile.

"Hi Mr. Jeon! I'm Jackson Wang, I'm the Math Teacher of your class." a fine looking man said and shook my hand.

"Pleasure to meet you." I said.

"I'm Irene, I am the History Teacher." another girl introduced herself.

“I’m Chungha, I’m the P.E. teacher.”

Other teachers continued the introductions.

“So, you will be taking class 3-C?” Mr. Wang asked.

“Yes. I believe I will be the homeroom adviser for three months.” I answered and he sighed.

“Goodluck then. That class is the most troublesome of all. Don’t let them bully you.” he gave me a warning look.

“What do you mean troublesome?” I asked and he replied.

“Just see it yourself.” Mr. Wang said and after a few minutes we decided to go to our own classes. Some went straight to their classes while the relieving teachers stayed at the faculty.

Jisoo walked me to one of the classrooms. On top of the door was labled:

3-C.

“Well, I believe I need to go and see my own class. I’ll leave you here Jungkook. Please do your best and be understanding of the class.” she said and bowed.

I looked at the door and took a deep breath. I hope they are not as troublesome as Mr. Wang said.

When I opened the door, I was shocked to see toilet papers flying in the air, chairs and desks are scattered around, an upbeat music was playing and one student was breakdancing in the middle.

One student was not wearing his uniform, instead he was shirtless while a handsome boy was massaging his back.

Three girls were doing their make ups and two students were making out.

One of them is shouting in the middle and asking the class to keep Quiet.

Only when I cleared my throat when they stopped with what they were doing. They all looked at me with confused looks.

“Yes? What can we do for you?” the guy who was shouting a while ago asked. I looked at his i.d. and the name Kim Namjoon was written.

I didn’t answer his question. I just walked in front and put down my book with force enough for those who were sleeping to wake up.

The book came with a thud and silence followed after.

Finally I got their attention.

The girls started murmuring. The shirtless boy then raised his head and looked at me, the couple stopped kissing to stare at me.

The boy who was dancing stopped dancing and turned off the music which came from his phone and the one who was shouting named Namjoon sat on the front chair.

“I am Jeon Jungkook. I am your new homeroom teacher.” I announced and they all uttered their disappointment except for the girls.

“But where is Ms. Kim? We want her!” someone yelled.

“She’s on a leave for three months. She’s currently on a honeymoon.” I answered and the room was filled once again with noises.

“So, from this day forward. I will handle this class. And if you ever do something stupid, I will not hesitate to drop you out!” I said with finality and they all whined.

“You’re a good joker sir. I like you.” the dancer smiled but when I glared at him he looked down.

Good thing that they all got quiet. They must have noticed that I’m not joking around.

“I don’t care if you suck at the academics, we can always work on that. But your attitude is the most important so I want you to give me your respect because I don’t tolerate childish behavior. If you fail to follow my rules, then I will make sure that you won’t graduate this year.”

The class sat properly after I said those words. I can see a hint of fear and worry in their eyes but they recovered quickly.

“I will call out your names. Please introduce yourselves one by one. I need to know each one of you.” I said and they groaned in disapproval.

“Mr. Jeon, we are not 1st graders to have these boring introductions!” one girl said and the whole class laughed.

“Then get out of my class.” I said and they all got quiet again.

Surely, I Jeon Jungkook will not let these students bully me.

I looked at the class record Jennie sent me and started reading names of students “Bhuwakul, BamBam?” I called and a nerdy looking guy stood.

“I’m.. I’m.. Ba.. Bam.. Sir” he said awkwarly and sat up quickly to cover his face. The class started laughing at him and I can’t help but noticed how I put the poor boy in embarrassment. Surely, this kid is very shy and he seemed like the introvert type. I nodded and called the another one.

“Cha Eunwoo?” I called but no one answered. Suddenly the door flew wide open and a handsome young boy came in sweating and panting. It seemed like he just came running from a race.

“Sorry I’m late! Girls were chasing me so I had to take a detour. Forgive me.” he bowed

“What is your name?” I asked him.

“I’m Cha Eunwoo sir.”

“Okay, please take your seat.” I said and he walked to the back to sit there.

“Chou, Tzuyu?” I asked and a pretty girl walked to the front. The boys started cheering.

“Hi Mr. Jeon, my name is Chou Tzuyu. I’m the class muse.” she said and walked back to her chair while waving at her classmates as if she’s a beauty queen.

“Jung Hoseok” I called and the one who was dancing a while ago stood.

“Hello Mr. Jeon. My name is Jung Hoseok. You can call me J-hope becaise I’m your hope.” he said while giving me the brightest smile so I had to smile back. I can say he’s the only person who was able to make me smile today.

“Kim, Dahyun” I called and a girl wearing branded clothings stood. The way she dresses, you can tell that she’s definitely rich. Her jewelries sparked against my eyes and it hurts.

“I’m Kim Dahyun sir.” she talked briefly and I nodded.

“Kim, Namjoon?”

“A pleasant morning sir. My name is Kim Namjoon, I am the class president. You can count on me when you need anything.” he said.

Finally, someone normal in class! I thought to myself.

“Kim, Seokjin?”

“I’m Kim Seokjin, WWH, worldwide handsome sir.” he said and gave me a wink. The girls rolled their eyes on him.”

“Cha Eunwoo is the Most Handsome one. Stop dreaming!” the girl with a short hair said making the class burst out in laughter.

“Silence!” I said and they got quiet again.

“Min Yoongi?”

The shirtless guy raised his hand and rested his head to the desk again to continue sleeping. He looks like the typical troublemaker classmate you see on TV.

“Park, Chaeyoung?”

“Present! You can also call me Rośe” she said. I looked at the girl who was the one kissing his classmate a while ago.

“Park Jimin”

“Hi! My name is Park Jimin sir.” the guy who Park Rose was kissing stood.

So there is a couple in this class? I hope they follow my rules of not doing PDA inside the class because I really hate couples being clingy to each other.

“Yoo Jeongyeon”

“Hi sir! If you need any information about the class, don’t hesitate to ask me. Okay? I just happen to know everything about them.” the short-haired girl said.

Finally, I looked at the last name on my class record.

“Manoban? Manoban Lisa?” I called out.

But no one answered.

The class threw me a guilty look so I looked at the class president.

The class president stood and spoke “Sir, Lisa has been absent for almost a week now.” he explained.

I looked at the class.

“Almost a week?” I asked, raising my brow at them.

“Yes sir.” Namjoon confirmed.

“Well then, tell this Lisa Manoban that if she doesn’t show up tomorrow in class, she will be automatically dropped.” the class groaned in disbelief.

“But sir!” The shy Bam took courage and stood to disagree.

“No buts! School should be given importance and this classmate of yours is just slacking off! That’s it for today. I will meet you tomorrow and be ready for a class recitation.” I stood to walk out of the room. Ignoring the whines of my students behind me.

I know I’m strict. But this is my teaching style. And if they don’t like it. They can quit school as soon as possible.

Author’s Note

Hi guys! I’m back!
I miss you so much! 😘

Dream Girlfriend

Jungkook's POV

"Hi babe!" the most beautiful girl in the world waved her hand at me when she saw me roll my car window down.
She ran to my car and hopped inside quickly.

I kiss Ji-eun's forehead and looked at her in admiration when she started buckling her seatbelt.

Today, I am picking her from work at the entertainment agency for us to have a celebratory dinner of my first day as a teacher.

"So, how's your first day at work?" she asked.

"It was fine. I met different kinds of students. And I can confidently say that I can handle them well." I answered while my eyes are focused on the road. I can't help but smile now that I have something new to tell her.

When it comes to Ji-eun, I would always smile cause she's the only person who can make me smile like this. I hope she's proud of me though.

"That's good." she answered nonchalantly then she took her phone from her purse to message someone up.

I frowned at the sight. She seemed to not be excited with my first hand experiences. Or maybe I'm just being butthurt because I don't usually get the attention I crave from her.

Ji-eun and I have been together for two months now after my years of courting. But I can say that our relationship has not improved a bit even if we're finally official.

Back then she used to be my sweetest noona. Someone I always dreamed of ever since I was a kid. She was my neighbor and she used to play with me. We used to spend time together that my life just revolved around hers. Since then, my feelings for her started growing. The feeling was too strong

that I really wished for her to be mine. I dreamed of her to be my girlfriend. I dreamed of her to be my wife.

My friends told me that this is just infatuation but I don't think so. I know I love her. She's my dream girl and I'm glad she accepted my feelings for her.

Since becoming official, my life has not always been rainbows and butterflies. Because apparently, we fought…a lot. But It is always her who causes the misunderstanding.

I sometimes think that she doesn't really love me just like how I love her. That she just accepted my feelings because to her it is convenient.

Ji-eun has always been ambitious ever since we were young. She said she wanted to be a teacher and I believed in her. I wanted to follow the path she wants to take so that I can get closer to her.

That's the reason why I took Education as a course.

Yes, it was never my plan and dream to become a teacher but when I heard that she wants to be one, I chose that path in a heartbeat.

My parents who are in the business world was against it. They said that teaching is hard and though it is a noble profession, teachers always recieves the least compensation.

But what can I do? I want to get close to Ji-eun in any way. Teaching was one way of getting us closer to one another.

And so imagine how disappointed I was when one day she changed her mind and told me she wants to become an actress instead. She pursued acting and landed few minor roles which made her very happy.

As for me, I continued the course I took and finished it half-heartedly.

Now that Ji-Eun got noticed in her acting, she suddenly wanted to do business and stop acting. I tried to stop her because I think it would be a waste. She's got fans already and she's gotten more popular. But she won't listen to me.

When she wants something, there is no more turning back.

And I hated it. I hated how impulsive she. We are completely opposite in these matter. I have always been responsible on the decisions I make and I make sure to it that I follow what I had set for my future but Ji-eun changes her mind always. She's careless and would switch decisions in a heartbeat.

But even if she's like that, I still try my best to understand her and support her.

That's how much I love her.

I don't care how many romantic dates she ditches, I don't care if she's not listening when I try to start a conversation, I don't care if she refused my marriage proposals for how many times now. As long as she's my girlfriend, I'm contented.

I am happy enough.

"Drop me off at my house, I need to meet my friends from Australia. I promised them we would catch up." she said. Her eyes still fixed on her phone.

"I thought you agreed to have a dinner with me tonight?" I asked calmly. I don't want to piss her off.

"I know but I haven't seen these friends for two months. I'm so sorry babe? I promise I'll make it up to you next time okay?" she promised just like how she usually does.

"It's okay. Just.. Be careful driving later 'kay? I love you." I said.

"I will. Don't worry. I love you too"

With a heavy heart, I dropped her off at her house. Then I called the restaurant to cancel the reservation I set for us.

This is nothing new to me. She's always busy with a lot of stuffs that she puts me on her least priority but I still understand.

As I said, as long as she's with me, I'm happy.

I'm happy, yeah.

I'm happy, I guess?

It was already dark when I started driving back home. As I was driving, I didn't notice the person who was riding a bicycle driving too fast.

When my car hit a thud, that's when I realized my car crashed into something.

I quickly pulled over and looked around for damages or if I hit someone.

My eyes widen and my heart sank when I realized that a person was lying infront of the car. His bike was broken under my car.

I can't see his face because he's wearing an oversized hoodie with an Iron Man print. And when I was about to help him up, he quickly stood and swat my arms away.

"Fuck off!" a woman's voice said. That's when I realized that she was a girl.

"Are you hurt?" I asked in worry looking down at her body. She didn't answer my question, instead she shouted at a running man "Give me back my bag you theif!!!" then she ran limply to the other side and chased the thief who is now running further.

I was startled and suddenly got guilty about what happened to her so I drove my car to where the thief was. But he was too fast and he got lost in my sight. I gave up on my search and tried searching for the girl to apologize and to at least send her to the hospital for what I did but she was no longer around.

I tried searching for her against the crowd but I didn't see her anymore.

What the fuck did I just do?

I need to see her again.

□

Author's Note

My Dear Readers, this chapter and the following ones are aimed to give you a view and information of each of the characters.

Next will be Lisa's POV.

Class Slacker

Lisa's Bedroom

Lisa's POV

"Oh Yes! Fuck me like that! Fuck Fuck Fuck! I'm cumming Robert!!!"

"Uhhhh… I'm cumming too!!!"

I covered my ears in disgust and shut my eyes close. I want to puke just hearing those noises coming downstairs.

Suddenly, my 10 year old Nokia phone vibrated on my table. Good thing the noises finally stopped.

I can answer this.

Chaeyoung calling..

When I pressed my old and cracked phone to answer, her loud voice echoed through my ears.

"Girl! Where the hell are you?"

"At home, where else?"

"Ms. Jennie has been looking for you!"

"Why?" I raised my brow. Ms Jennie looking for me? That's new.

"Because you will recieve an award for being absent for days!"

"Ha-ha! So funny!"

"Seriously Lisa, she wants to see you because she's concerned that you've been absent for days."

"I'm always absent. It's not like she's not used to it." I replied.

"Whatever! Just come early tomorrow please."

“Just say that you miss me.” I teased.

“Hell no! But someone’s missing you of course. He’s been really sad the past few days.”

“Stop!” I groaned and she chuckled.

“What? You know how Bambam feels for you.”

“I swear to God Park Chaeyoung if you don’t stop, I’ll never go to school again!”

“Okay okay… I’ll shut up, just please come to school tomorrow and be early. Okay?”

“Are you planning something stupid Rośe?”

“Of course not! Just come to school. I miss you already and we only got three months left before graduation. We might not see each other after high school.” she said, convincing me.

“Hmmm.. Okay. See you tomorrow.”

“See you Lis!” she giggled.

I heaved a sigh and recalled her words. 3 months left and I will never see my classmates again.

I will never see my Chaeyoung again, the shy Bambam, the kindest Namjoon, the annoying playboy Jimin, the heartless but deep inside soft Yoongi, I will never hear Jin’s corny jokes again, I will never see Eunwoo’s handsome face again, Tzuyu’s beautiful face, I will never enjoy Dahyun’s free food again, Jeongyeom’s gossips and lastly I will never see Hobi’s smile again.

I’m gonna miss them all.

Of course all of them will go to college except me. How can I even afford college when I can’t even afford highschool.

Well I guess I have to make the most of my remaining months in school. I should spend it with my dearest classmates even if I have to wake 24/7 to work and study.

“Lisaaaa! Where the hell is my beer!” I rolled my eyes when I heard my uncle yelling downstairs.

“Wait uncle!” I shouted back. I quickly went downstairs and grabbed the remaining beer on the fridge. Then I ran to the living room where my fat uncle is always sitting.

The combined view of his exposed fat stomach, the smell of alchohol and cigarrette disgusts me so much. And to add to that is the smell of a slut who were just here a while ago.

One pair of slippers suddenly hit my face and I realized it was my uncle who throw it at me.

“The fuck are you slow!” he yelled at me making me clenched my fists on my sides. I swear there will come a day where I’m going to punch this man, that his nose will break and he’ll lose some tooth. I’ve been practicing boxing with a torn punching bag backyards for this purpose.

“I was doing my homework” I lied.

“You dare answer me with stupid homework?! I told you to quit school and work harder! There is no more beer left! So go and work your ass off you lazy bitch!”

“I’m going to work now.” I said.

“Better hurry you Lazy bitch! And bring a slut with you on your way home or else I’m gonna use you instead!” he threatened.

I had to blink my tears away and nod.

I left my home riding my bike. Funny how I call it a home even when if it serves as a living hell.

I will use you instead—

I will rape you if you don’t—

I don’t care if we share the same blood, I will fuck you if you don’t bring me a slut—

These words I hear everyday.

From my uncle who has been my guardian devil for years.

I had no parents. My mother had to leave me to my father’s brother because of her new family. My real father died already and I have no where left to go but to my uncle.

As much as I want to leave this hell, I can't. I can't even afford to buy a decent meal, what more rent a home. Although I can't even call that a decent home. I've been living in the house' attic for years now. I was roommates with cockroaches and rats. But it's better than to stay downstairs and listen to my always drunk uncle who does nothing but fuck sluts.

As a result, I had to work my ass off at an early age 24/7 to feed the devil and pay for sluts, otherwise he would rape me. That's how he threathens me everyday.

Now I'm on my way to my new part time job. I'm excited because it's bit easy than my other part time jobs. I will just babysit today and the pay is really good. I can't wait to start already.

I smiled as I park my bike at the parking lot of the big house. Stretching my tired limbs excitedly.

This is easy. Any work related to kids will always be easy. I love kids, that's why. Well, I can actually do any work. Just say it and I do it.

To name a few I have worked from car washing, shoe cleaning, food delivery, tutoring high shoolers, teaching boxing (being the punching bag), to being a gasoline girl, waitress, masseuse, cook, homecleaner and now babysitting. There are actually more but I forgot about them.

I am very equipped with real-life skills that I guess I can manage to survive my whole life even if I don't finish college.

If I'm just not spending too much for uncle's sluts and alchohol, I would've saved a lot by now. But sadly, 60% of my income goes to my uncle while 20% goes to the orphan children I always spend time with. The remaining goes to my food and savings for urgent school projects.

Good thing, Chaeyoung and Dahyun who were born with golden spoon always offers to finance for my projects in exchange of me doing theirs.

My face is so thick that I will accept any financial help from my classmates in exchange of my services like doing their homeworks, projects and more.

None of them knows my situation though. They don't know that I'm being abused by my own family. They don't know how many sleepless nights I had to endure while working just to survive. They don't know that behind my cheerful facade lies a broken girl. Where no one loves, no one cares and no one prioritizes.

I don't want them to know anything about me. I don't want to be treated nicely just because they pity me or what.

That's why I always wear my mask.

A happy, cheerful mask and hide the lonely girl inside.

They thought that I don't care about school because I'm always missing. What they don't know is between those days, I just can't go to school. It's either I am too hungry for the lack of food, or I am too tired from working overnight or I need to hide the bruises in my body which is caused by my uncle's fists.

Yeah, I'm the Class Slacker and it will remain as that for the coming three more months.

Class 3-C POV

"What did she say?" Bambam asked excitedly.

"She'll come tomorrow. Don't worry lover boy." Chaeyoung reassured her classmates.

They continued eating their lunch at the school canteen. The whole class of 3-C always does this, Spending time together every lunch break or just any break.

Even if teachers see them as problematic students, they cannot deny the fact that their class has the strongest bond.

"Are you sure of this?" Hoseok asked the others. "What if Lisa comes early tomorrow and she startle Mr. Jeon?"

"That's the exact prank we are pulling. I could just imagine how Lisa will react to the sudden change of our teacher" Chaeyoung laughed.

"Even though I don't like that new teacher. I think we should not use Lisa to piss him off." Bambam said in worry.

He is usually quiet but if it concerns Lisa, he will not hesitate to defend her.

The girl holds a special place in his heart and the class even Lisa knows about it.

“Don’t worry, Lisa is always cool with pranks like this. Remember our class use to play pranks on each other and no one gets huffy.” Jeongyeon said.

“Well, let’s hope that Lisa yells at the teacher tomorrow. Guys! That would be epic!” Jimin said.

“Yeah! Can’t wait! I really hate that new teacher. I suddenly miss Ms. Jennie. She’s the best and the hottest. Too bad she married that guy in secret.” Yoongi

“You mean the hot guy? What was his name again? K—”

“You’re kidding right? Ms. Jisoo is always the prettiest and the kindest teacher. She’s the best!” the group had to roll their eyes on Jin who has been infatuated with the teacher for a long time now.

“Nah. Ms. Irene is the best. She’s so pretty and very feminine. If we’re just the same age, I would court her right now.” Hoseok said.

“As if she will look at you? I heard she’s got a millionaire boyfriend. But that guy is already married and won’t offer Ms. Irene marriage so he’s just giving her gifts and he even bought her car the most luxur—” Jeongyeon was cut when they saw their president Namjoon walking to their table.

“Shhhh… The holy boy is here. Keep your mouth shut!” Dahyun elbowed her and the group got quiet.

“Is it the end of the world? Why are you being silent?” Namjoon spoke.

“Nothing. We were just talking about Lisa. We are worried about her being dropped from school.” Jimin said and we nodded.

“Yeah, I remember. I’ll just send her text message later.” Namjoon said. The class worried that Lisa will find out about the new teacher so they had to stop Namjoon.

“I called her already. She said she will come tomorrow.” Dahyun quickly said and Namjoon nodded.

“Good! I miss that girl already. If I see her tomorrow, I will talk to her and convince her to take school seriously. Our new teacher is the type that won’t tolerate her behavior. I’m afraid that Mr. Jeon drops Lisa out and that is very critical because we are graduating. She cannot simply take remedial summer classes this time if she fails.” The president spoke and the class nodded. Not even aware of the class’ planned prank.

Author’s Note

If they are your classmates and you will choose one seatmate, who would you choose and why him/her?

😁😁😁

Teacher VS Student

Lisa's POV

The Next Day

I woke up after 3 hours of sleep. It finally dawned on me how my body was in aching after crashing to a car last night. And the worst part is I wasn't able to get my bag back from the snatcher and it contains my earned money from baby sitting.

Having no money means I can't get my uncle a alchohols and slut and that scares me the most. I know I will get a lot of beating from him or worse, he'll rape me.

But I'm always smarter than that.

I was able to get a slut and just paid her at home by cracking my secret piggy bank. It's a pity though. The piggy bank was very precious to me because it was given by my sweetest classmate Hobi. But what can I do? It's either I broke the piggy bank or lose my innocence to my own uncle.

Though my eyes are not innocent anymore. I have seen my uncle thousand times banging a prostitute and it looks really disgusting. That's why I swear to myself that I will never let any guy touch me. I might not stand the view of a penis when the time comes.

At 5 in the morning, I took a body freezing bath but I didn't dare waking up my uncle who was sleeping on the smelly couch. I really need to get to school before he wakes but the pain in my leg hurts so much.

Damn that guy whoever he is for crashing at me! He's very lucky that I survived the impact. I even looked for him last night to have him pay for what he did but he ran away. Now my bike was was broken and I had to walk to school from now on.

Speaking of being the most unlucky girl in the world. I got injured, my bike broke and my money was stolen all because of that jerk! Now I have to walk to school because I have no more bike.

Poor me

I got to school earlier than usual and looked around the campus where there are only few students walking.

Class 3-C classroom

'I guess Chaeyoung and the others are on the classroom now? They told me to come early right?' I thought to myself. But when I open our classroom, there is no single person inside. I shook my head and looked at the wall clock above the board and noticed it was 30 minutes past six.

'I swear those bitches sat me up! I'm gonna beat their asses later if I see them!'

Knowing I that I can't do anything about it, I just slumped down on my seat which is at the far end corner and rested my head at the desk.

"God! I'm still sleepy!" I sighed and decided to take a short nap while waiting for my classmates and Ms. Jennie.

Jungkook's POV

"Baby, I'm sorry I cannot drive you to work today. I'm so late!" I apologized to Ji-eun on the other line as I wear my shoes in a rush.

"It's okay. I'll just drive my car. I'll hang up for you to prepare." she said and ended the line.

I sighed and just focused on fixing my tie. Too bad I can't see her face early in the morning. I already miss her.

The incident that happened last night caused me a sleepeless night. I'm really guilty for crashing to that girl whoever she is. I got her injured and even her bike got broken. I really hope I can pay for the damaged I caused her.

“Oh shit! My hair is still messy!” I cursed when I saw my reflection at the mirror. I tried to comb it with my fingers to put them in good place. Then I wore my glasses and took my coat on the rack.

After taking my car key, I ran to the elevator and rushed my way to school. It’s just my second day at work and I’m already late. This will leave bad impressions on my work ethics.

When I arrived in school, I was surprised that there were no students inside the classroom yet.

‘Weird? where are they? It’s already 7:30 and they’re still not here?’

When I looked closely, I was surprised to see someone rather sleeping at the far end corner of the classroom.

I can’t see the face so I walked to the student.

When I got closer, I noticed I don’t recognize the student. She’s not from my class. Maybe she mostaken it for her classroom. So I decided to just wake her up and ask her what she is doing inside this room.

I crouched infront of the sleeping girl and stared at her face.

Hmm.. She’s beautiful.

Not the typical beauty I usually see. She’s rather…

Exotic.

Her eyelashes are long, her pinkish cheeks looks so full and soft, her bangs ends on her eyebrows, her plumped lips which is slightly open looks so soft that I automatically licked mine.

‘What the fuck are you doing Jeon Jungkook?!’ I asked myselffor acting weirdly.

I looked closer and realized she was breathing lightly. Her fresh and warm breath fanned my face and I just let it be.

I have never gotten intrigued over a girl in the past except for Ji-eun. And this is the first time I suddenly got interested over a girl years younger than me. I tried to reach a hand to fix a strand of hair which covers her face.

‘You got a girlfriend! What are you doing?’ I asked myself mentally and when I realized what I was doing, I shook my head aggresively as if waking up from induced hypnosis.

When I was about to wake her up, her big round eyes opened and I got scared.

When she realized that my face was so closed to hers, her eyes widened and her mouth opened.

“Ahhhhhhhhhhhh!!!!” her screaming almost got me deaf.

“Wait! I—” suddenly I felt a strong blow of fist on my face.

Did she just punched me?

“What the hell?” I covered my face at the pain this little girl caused me.

Then I heard students clapping at the door.

“Oh my God! Lisa punch the new teacher!” Ms. Park clapped her hands in awe and the rest of the students got in to see. They all started laughing except for the nerdy guy and the class president.

I can tell they were really happy seeing me getting punched. And it makes my blood boil! How can these students act as childish as this!

I looked at the girl who punched me and she looked back at me with a guilty expression.

“You’re a teacher?” she asked guiltily.

“How dare a student like you punch my face!” I yelled at her and she almost shaked in fear.

“I didn’t know!” she defended but it annoyed me more. Who else just punches people on the face when they wake up? No one! Just her!

As I cover my nose which hurts so bad, I realized it was already bleeding.

“Uh oh! Lisa broke Mr. Jeon’s nose!” The shirtless guy spoke and they got quiet.

“I’m…I’m so sorry… I didn’t mean to punch you. It was your fault for getting too close to me!” she said. And I looked at her id.

So this is Ms. Manoban?

I breathed heavily and spoke through gritted teeth.

“Ms. Manoban, to the detention. Now!”

Author’s Note

So, who’s fault was it?

Help Unreached

Jungkook's POV

"Is it bad?" I ask the school doctor when he's done fixing my broken nose.

"Yeah. But it's fine now. You're very lucky you were rushed here quick." Dr. Sehun said whilw checking my nose.

When Mr. Wang said that the class is the Most Troublesome, it never came on me that these students will physically hurt me like this. Now I understand the hype of that class. They really deserve that name.

"Now how am I suppose to go like this? Students will surely laugh at me."

"Don't say that. Students here are respectful, you just happened to be assigned to the worst." the doctor laughed. "So, who punched your face? I bet he's really strong for breaking your nose."

"Not a he but a she." I said recalling the girl who looks like an angel when asleep but an amazon when awake.

"You mean a girl punched you?" he asked in disbelief.

"Yes. Sadly this girl has a strong fists for her slender arms."

"May I know who?" he asked again. I can tell he is really intrigued with what happened to me.

"Lisa Manoban" I said recalling the name on her i.d.

"Oh Lisa? Wow! I can't believe she's as strong as this." he said while holding his chin smiling like a lunatic.

"You know her?" I asked.

"Yes, of course. She used to assist me here at the clinic back then. I don't know what happened but I don't see her often. I

thought she quit school but knowing that she's still here, I'm glad to know." he smiling.

I can tell this doctor is fond of my student. I frowned.

"Dr. I believe school staffs shouldn't get too emotionally invested with students." I warned hoping that he get what I mean. I have a feeling that he likes this student and this is very immoral.

Confusion took place in his eyes but when he realized what I meant he finally smiled bitterly and spoke. "Same goes to Teachers and students." he said and I looked at him.

What does he mean?

Dr. Sehun cleared his throat and continued. "That is when we share the same idea of the word *Emotionally Invested*" he said quoting the words with his fingers.

"I gotta go. Thank you Dr." I said then left the clinic annoyed. Annoyed by the fact that he's implying that I will suddenly like this student.

The hell with that kind of thinking.

I will never ever fall for a student especially if it's this Lisa Manoban who just randomly punches people on the face!

I swear I don't like this girl. Besides, I already have my Ji-eun.

I walked back to the class with slighlty raised temper. I know they were holding their laughters at how I look like but nobody dared to laugh.

I looked around and only one seat was vacant. It was Lisa Manoban's seat. She deserves to be punished at the detention for breaking my nose.

"Be ready for a recitation."

They groaned hearing my announcement but I could only careless. I'm too pissed to be kind at them.

Lisa's POV

“Ms. Jihyo, how long should I stay here?” I asked the guidance counselor who was sitting in front while reading her book.

“Few more hours.”

Seriously? How did I even got here? When it was clearly the teacher’s fault!

Imagine waking up and seeing someone you don’t know with his face just an inch apart from you? How would you react.

Of course my reflexes would kick in. That’s for having an uncle who always threats of raping you. My body is always ready to defend myself from my uncle and he just happened to get close to me while I was taking a nap.

What was he even doing infront of my face?

And my friends didn’t even tell me that we got a new teacher. I bet this is their prank. They planned to startle me with the new teacher.

They just wait for me to get out of here and they’ll see!

Today is another unlucky day for me just because of that new teacher!

I hate him!

I wish Ms. Jennie is still our teacher not that coconut head! He thinks I will just let him bully me just because he’s good looking?

He’s not even good looking enough!

After spending my whole day at the detention, I was finally freed but it was too late for me to go back to class. So I just planned to go to Hope Children. It’s a small orphanage run by mother Yusha. I always spend my time there volunteering in teaching the kids when I have free time.

When I arrived at the small orphanage, I was greeted by warm hugs and kisses from my students. Currently, there are only 5 children left in the orphanage. Most of them got adopted already.

“Teacher Lisa, why are you late?” Lia asked.

“I’m so sorry Lia, Teacher Lisa just got busy.”

“I thought you’ve forgotten about us already?” Yeonjun pouted and I shook my head to disagree.

“That’s impossible! How can I forget cute kids like you!” I said engulfing them all with a tight hug. They are so small that they fit inside my arms.

Yeonjun, Soobin, Yeji and Lia hugged me back but Teahyun stayed on one corner while crossing his small arms over his chest.

“Won’t I get a hug from my baby Taehyun?” I asked but he just turned his head away from me.

“I’m not a baby anymore. And I will not give Teacher Lisa a hug because she’s a bad girl. She’s forgotten about us.” he said almost crying. My heart softened at the sight.

How can you not love all of them when they are as adorable as this? I swear I need to adopt all of them when I get rich.

But how? How can I adopt them when I don’t have a decent job to support them?

“Teacher Lisa will read the story the Garbage Monster. Taehyun wants to hear it right?” I smirked and succesfully got his attention. He turned his head to me and smiled.

“Really? You will read us a story?” he asked excitedly and I nodded.

Soon the children jumped up and down and excitedly settled at the center of the room.

When I took their favorite book from the shelves they impatiently shouted “yeheeeyy”

I can’t help but smile.

They will always be my happy escape when I’m down like this. These children made me realize that at least, somebody loves me.

They love me. I can definitely see it in their eyes. And if I get lucky in life, I wanted to be a preschool teacher. It will always be refreshing to see the young ones hopeful eyes.

I sat in the front of them and started the story

“Nick and Ann would always throw their garbage at….. “

The night ended happily and I tuck the children to bed. They all went to sleep when I remembered how late the time was, my heart sanked and my breathing got heavy.

“Shit! My uncle would kill me!” I bid mother Yasha goodbye and ran as fast as I could to the house even if my leg still hurts from crashing at ancar last night. Hoping that uncle will give mercy on me for coming late.

“Uncle, I’m sorry I got late I was—” A strong forced slap managed to land on my face.

“You stupid stupid bitch! I was waiting for you the whole night! Where the fuck is my slut!” He yelled causing me to sweat in fear as I cover my face.

“I… I will go to the bar..” I said but he was too mad to listen. He pushed me and took his belt. I stepped back in fear.

“Uncle… No.. Please..” I begged for his mercy almost kneeling infront of him.

“You are useless!!!” he said and he whipped his belt on me and landed on my arm.

I cried in pain but he continued whipping his belt that I was cryingn and begging him to stop.

It hurts. The sting from the belt raked through my whole body and finally when he got tired he spoke.

“Go there and be quick! If you don’t return here soon, You know what’ll happen!”

I ran holding my aching body. I sobbed so hard while running. When I reached the dirty part of the city, the prostitutes know already what I came for. Sarah who has been my uncle’s favorite saw me and a pair of worried eyes stared at me.

“Oh my God Lisa! What happened to your face!” She asked.

“Sarah please come with me.” I plead.

“Sorry Lisa but I have a customer now.” She said and paused. “Damn it! How can I say no seeing you like this?” she sighed and carressed my hair. Then she pulled me in for a hug. “I really hope your uncle stops beating you. You’re such a precious girl. Why not leave that place and work somewhere else?” she asked but I shook my head.

“Uncle would kill me before I even get to another place Sarah. Please come with me.” I said.

Soon we both arrived at our house. The fucking started almost immediately after I locked myself in the attic.

I cried so hard.

From the pain, the abuses, the insults and from what happened at school.

My whole body was aching so hard but my heart aches the most.

I can’t go to school tomorrow or they’ll see these bruises my uncle gave me.

I decided that I really need to escape this hell soon. I don’t know how long I can endure this kind of life.

But where will I go? How can I survive alone?

Is there someone out there willing to take me?

Jungkook’s POV

When the class finished. I walked to the detention room to see Lisa. I just decided to talk to her and ask her apology on what happened.

But when I got there, Jihyo, the school guidance counselor was the only one left in the room.

“Where is she?” I asked.

“Oh Mr. Jeon, she just went home.” she said. And when she noticed I wasn’t moving she asked “You need anything from her?”

“Uhm.. Yes. I just want to ask her apology personally.” I said scratching my head.

Her scrutinizing eyes fixed on me and I tensed. It’s as if she’s reading though my soul. She put her book down and turned her body to face me.

“Mr. Jeon, I hope you don’t mind if I say this But I think Lisa will not hit you without a reason”

“Excuse me? What do you mean?”

“What I mean is that maybe she has her own reason for doing that.”

“And what is this reason?” I asked raising a brow. I can’t believe this guidance counselor is defending a student for attacking a teacher.

“Well.. That I don’t know. But I had known Lisa for three years now. She’s usually happy and such. But I can see there’s an underlying problem she refuses for us to see. I can tell she’s going through a problem right now. Maybe it’s from school or from her home.”

When Jihyo said those words, I felt uneasy. I don’t know why but her words bothered me so much. Maybe becaise I’m her homeroom teacher?

“Uhm.. But How can I.. How will I know if she has a problem?” I asked.

“That’s for the homeroom teacher to discover.” she said.

Jihyo’s words kept replaying in my head. There is an itch in me that pushes me to find out. So when I get back to the faculty, I read my class information file and searched for Lisa’s home address.

Then I asked the Principal that I will conduct a homeroom visitation and he allowed me.

When I got in my car, I started driving to the address written.

I want to talk to her parents and find out myself about this student of mine. If something is really bothering her.

But when I was already in front of her house, my phone started ringing.

Ji-eun is calling..

I took the phone call.

“Yes?”

“Babe, can you pick me up at work? My tire is flat. And I don’t want to commute.” She asked and I paused. I looked at the small house in front of me which is Lisa’s and thought,

What do I do?

I want to talk to Lisa but Ji-eun needs me. She needs my help.

“Sure. I’ll be there in 20 minutes.”

“Thank you! I’ll wait for you here. Please make it quick cause I’m hungry.”

I ended the call and sighed.

Why do I have a hunch that someone else needs me more?

I shrugged my feelings off and drove to Ji-eun’s agency fast.

Author’s Note

If you were Mr. Jeon, what will you do?

Faking Own's Feelings

Ji Eun's POV

I waited for Jungkook outside the agency when someone called my name.

"Ji-eun, you're not going home yet?" Jin-goo walked to my side smiling ear to ear.

I tuck my hair behind my ear and looked at the gorgeous man.

"I'm waiting for someone." I answered my co-star who acts as my love interest in the commercial I am shooting.

"You mean you're waiting for that boy?" he asked teasingly.

"Boy?"

"Your boyfriend of course. He looks too young for you. How old is he if you don't mind me asking?" he asked. I can tell Jin-goo's intentions for starting this kind of conversation. He's here to test how I feel. I have grown accustomed to his intentions on me and I just let him be.

"He's 24." I said looking down. My answer made him start laughing.

"He's way younger than you. That makes you her noona?"

"I guess?" I answered not hiding the embarrassment in me.

Jungkook may be special in my heart. But I see nothing of him but but being a little boy who needs attention.

He's been in love with me for years now and I'm so guilty that I don't feel the same. He grew up to be handsome, sweet and caring but it just doesn't click.

I really don't plan on taking his love but he was really persistent that I got tired of turning him down.

When I finally accepted him, he celebrated for months and that was very heartbreaking for me. My conscience was eating

me everyday. Mocking my own self for not being true to my own feelings.

I don't love him as a lover. I just love him as a friend.

And I don't think I can love him like that. But still, I don't want to break his heart. He's been nothing but kind and understanding to me even if I get very impulsive with my decisions in life.

"Ji-eun?" Jin-goo called my attention when he saw me spacing out. "You don't love this boy. Right?" he announced and I worriedly looked around if Jungkook is already here.

"What are you saying? Of course I love him!" I said fidgetting my fingers.

"Okay, if that's what you say so. But hey, it's getting late and he's not yet here. Why don't I just drive you home?" he winked at me.

"But he's comming."

"You can just tell him that you grew tired of waiting. Besides, I know you are hungry. We can grab some food before we go to your house. How about that?" he said and I thought for a second.

Well, I think Jungkook will understand. I can't refuse the food he's offering now because I'm too hungry. I'll just call him later to explain.

Jin-goo and I went to a private restaurant but Jungkook called me on the way. I didn't answer his call. Instead I sent him a text message that I got home already.

"Was that your boyfriend?" Jin-goo asked when he saw me shut my phone because it was ringing non stop.

"Yes, he's sometimes annoying. But I love him." I said.

"Really? But the way you act around him tells otherwise." he chuckled.

"Can we not talk about him?"

"Hmm.. Okay. By the way, tomorrow is our last shooting day. What do you plan to do after?"

I looked at him and decided if I would tell him my future plans but I decided to talk about it instead of talking about Jungkook.

“Well, I’m planning to visit my friends in Australia. We’re actually planning on putting up a cosmetic business there. I’m going to introduce Korea’s beauty secret overseas by starting with Australia.”

“Really? Does your boyfriend know about this?” He asked and I tensed. Jungkook doesn’t know yet that I will be leaving the country.

“I plan on telling him soon.” I said as I sip my drink.

“Will he come with you?”

“No, he has a work here. He’s a teacher.”

“He’s a teacher?” he asked laughing out loud. I grew conscious all of a sudden. Why is he laughing at him being a teacher?

“Why? Is there a problem with being a teacher?”

“Hmm.. Nothing.. I just have stereotyped that only females are teachers but hey..I think it’s cool for him to be a teacher.” he said with a mocking tone.

“Yeah. He is a very good teacher.” I replied shortly.

“Don’t be offended but do you think his job can provide enough for you if you marry him in the future?” he asked.

I know he’s downgrading the work but I didn’t tried to persway him over because I know this guy will just come up with ways to mock Jungkook.

“Maybe teaching is not a highly paying job but he came from a very wealthy family. And being an heir to it makes hisnfuture wife secured financially. Their family owns the Jeon Airlines, the Jeon Hotel chains and the J Casinos.” when I said that he’s jaw dropped open and I smiled triumphantly.

Who knows that this teacher is as wealthy as that. But him being a humble man doesn’t shove his fortunes to people’s faces.

“No way! He’s a big time then! No wonder.” he said looking at me like I’m a gold digger.

“Are we just talking about him the whole night or we’ll enjoy our food?” I asked in annoyance.

“Oh..I’m so sorry. I just got lost. But if he’s not coming with you in Australia? Can I come instead? I am planning to go on an out of the country vacation but I have nothing in mind. Australia seems fun to me.”

“Sure. We can go there together.” I said and he grinned.

“It’s settled then.” he said.

I nod and smiled.

I really need to take a break too. I need to be away from Jungkook and face my own feelings. If he’s still worthy of me because I don’t think I can repay his feelings and his kindness anymore.

Jungkook’s POV

Babe,

I’m sorry but I couldn’t wait for you. Wendy drove me home. Don’t worry I’m safe and fine. Don’t call me because I need to sleep early for my last shooting tomorrow.

-Ji-eun

My shoulders slumped down when I read her text message. I am now outside the agency building waiting for her when I received the message.

“Now what do I do with you?” I asked myself looking at the take out in my hands. A while ago, I decided to buy her a take out first because I know she’s hungry but I got late and now she went home with Wendy.

I’m so guilty. What kind of a boyfriend am I for being late in picking her up?

As I was about to go back to my car, I was surprised to see someone.

“Wendy?” I called out Ji-Eun’s co-star.

“Oh Jungkook! What are you doing here?” she asked but I was confused. I thought she’s with Ji-eun?

“I was looking for Ji-eun.” I said while hiding the pain of being betrayed in my voice.

She lied to me. But why?

“I’m afraid she left with Jin-goo a while ago. Didn’t she tell you?” she said and my heart just crushed at the information.

“Maybe she forgot. Thanks. I’ll get going” I said while ignoring Wendy’s worried eyes.

I quickly rode my car and shook my head endlessly.

I want to confront her for lying but if I do, she will break up with me and I don’t want that.

I will just have to turn a blind eyes on this and act as if nothing happened.

I know people will laugh at me for being being stupidly in love but I can’t risk my relationship with her. I have dreamed of her for years now and even if she’s cheating, I will be fine with that.

That’s how I love Ji-eun.

Author’s Note

This is the one and only POV from Ji-eun to give you a better vew of her feelings.

The question is:
Who deserves who?

Class ATM

Class 3-C Room

Jungkook's POV

When I came to school, I notice that Lisa's seat was empty.

"Where is Ms. Manoban?" I turned to the class president because sadly, he's the only I trust in this class.

"She's not yet here Mr. Jeon. Maybe she's just late." he said.

Feeling a little uneasy of her absence, I focused myself on teaching the class English. Hoping that she will come even if it's late.

But I grew tired of checking the door from time to time yet not a shadow of her came.

I think I have to go straight to their house after class to continue my home visitation.

There is a slight worried feeling inside of me for not seeing her last night. Now, I regretted picking Ji-eun when she would just ditch me with her co-star. I should've just went straight to Lisa's house last night.

During lunch, a staff meeting was called.

I went to the faculty and sat beside Jisoo.

"What's the meeting for?" I asked Jisoo who is busy checking class papers.

"Hmm.. It's about the coming school festival"

"School Festival?"

"Yes, Jackson said they usually held this annual school festivities every January. Mr. Yang will announce later the activities so we should take note." she said and I nodded.

When Mr. Yang arrived, he explained that the school festival is actually the Universitie High School's anniversary. And students are allowed to enjoy a lot of activities for two-week period.

Some of the activities are a beauty pageants, Sports competitions, Talent shows, Field trips, Career Guidance Seminars and Recollection activities for the graduating students.

Homeroom teachers like me where assigned to pick out our best students to compete with the activities and also to take charge of looking after our students for the seminars and field trips.

Mr. Yang emphasized that graduating students should be given priorities in all of the activities because it is their last year at school.

After the meeting, I stayed at the faculty first to decide on who among my students will join some of the contest.

But when I get back and told them about what was planned in the meeting. Most of them expressed eagerness to join. Especially Chou Tzuyu who was really excited with the Beauty Contest. The Bwauty contest was for Male and Female students and I think Tzuyu is perfect for that activity. Although Lisa can join if she wants.

When I thought about Lisa, I suddenly got curious if there's a swimsuit competition in it. But I don't want my students to think wrongly of me so I didn't dare ask.

I had also learned that Tzuyu won the contest for two years straight now. So I decided this:

Chou Tzuyu and Kim Soekjin will join the contest.
Namjoon and Bambam will represent the class for the Science and Math Quiz Bee, Min Yoongi will join the basketball team for 3rd year students, Park Jimin and Jung Hoseok will join the dance contest, Park Chaeyoung will join the singing contest and the four remaining sudents which are Dahyun, Jeongyeon, Lisa and Eunwoo will be encharge of the class booth.

I thought they would disagree with my decision but I was surprised they seemed to be cool about it. I also mentioned the field trip and asked them where they wanted to go because apparently, the class are allowed to decide on it as long as it is within Korea.

Namjoon said they will think about it for a while. Besides, we have weeks to decide before the festivities starts.

Class 3-C POV

When Mr. Jeon excused himself to go to the comfort room, the class became noisy again.

“Guys! I really can’t wait to take the crown!” Tzuyu’s eyes watered in excitement.

“I know right! I know you can do it Tzuyu. You will win the title again!” Dahyun hugged her friend’s shoulder and the other smiled proudly.

“But I heard Nayeon from class 3-A will join the contest this time. I think she will win this year Tzuyu.” Jeongyeon said which caused the girl to slump down her shoulders. Tzuyu has always been threathened of Nayeon’s beauty.

“Hey! Stop discouraging her! She will win that crown! We should be more worried for Seokjin because I think he won’t win.” Dahyun said.

“What the fuck? Are you just questioning my looks? Of course I will win that Mr. SNUHS! Just watch and see. And it would be epic because Ms. Jisoo wil notice my handsome face and she will offer me a congratulatory dinner.”

The whole class rolled their eyes at him for what he said. Too much for being whipped.

“Hmp! Eunwoo, why don’t you just join the contest? I bet you have more chances of winning?” Jeongyeon asked.

“Hell no, I have a phobia for huge crowds right? Especially those girls. I’m so scared of them. I can’t even have a normal day without being chased.” Eunwoo spoke sadly.

True to that he’s been the target of these fangirls for years now which developed fear in him for girls.

“How about you hon, are you ready?” Chaeyoung turned his head on Jimin who’s head is resting on her shoulder.

“Of course I’m ready. I am always ready. You my love? Have you decided on a piece of song yet?” Jimin whispered in her ears causing her to giggle from the ticklish sensation.

“Hmm.. I have a few in my mind but I will still think about it later.”

“hmm..‘kay” Jimin moved his face near her and sealed her soft lips with his. Chaeyoung got shy but she was quick to respond.

When the class noticed them kissing again, they shook their head and continued with what they were talking about.

“Hey, stop kissing! Mr. Jeon will come any minute now!” Namjoon yelled at the lovebirds.

“Then let that teacher see how it is done to kiss. I bet he has no girlfriend with that type of personality.” The shirtless Yoongi replied nonchalantly.

“That would be a waste if he has no girlfriend! I mean look at how hot he is!” Jeongyeon spoke in truth and the girls agreed nodding their heads including Chaeyoung.

“Yes, he’s very hot. Have you seen his muscles under that uniform? I bet he would make a woman lose her brain if she saw him naked!” Chaeyoung said and Jimin frowned at his girl.

“Hey! Stop that! You are not allowed to compliment guys except me!” He said while pouting and the girls started laughing at the poor young man.

“Yeah, he’s so hot that even Lisa was shocked. I bet Lisa will like him!” Tzuyu said and Bambam rose to disagree.

“Lisa will never like Mr. Jeon! That would be unethical for both a teacher and a student to fall in love!” He said with a loud voice while his nose was fuming out of anger with what he heard. To him, Lisa is a man hater. She refuses the attention she gets from men and that will be the same if Mr. Jeon will likes her.

“No need to shout loverboy we both know that Lisa will never fall for him!” Jeongyeom shouted.

“Lisa will never fall for who?” they were all surprised to hear the teacher’s voice at the door, the homeroom teacher was there looking at them coldly.

They all got quiet and one brave man stood.

“Lisa will never fall on the stage if she joins the pageant.” Hoseok tried to brighten the atmosphere by joking and luckily Mr. Jeon nodded.

The class finally continued..

Jeongyoen taught of something while glancing at Dahyun’s direction, she scared to be seen by Mr. Jeon talking inside the class so she just took a paper and write something on it. She passed the paper to Dahyun though Tzuyu and when Dahyun opened it to read, she tensed.

‘Dahyun, treat us later on a karaoke’

That’s what the paper wrote. Even if she is aware of her financial situation now, knowing Jeongyeon’s mouth, she believe she must agree to it. So she still helplessly wrote back:

Sure, I’ll treat you guys to Karaoke later.

She passed the note to Jeongyeon and the girl grinned mouthing “You’re the best!”

Dayhyun nervously took her channel wallet and peaked if she can continue her act.

She sighed the moment she realized that she has nothing more left.

‘What should I do?’ she asked herself. If it’s just Tzuyu and Jeonghyun in karaoke,she can at least pay for it but if the whole class comes with them, she’ll surely can’t afford the bill.

When the class finished, she gathered her notes nervously and hoped that Jeongyeon will keep her mouth shut this time.

But sadly, after Mr. Jeon left, Jeongyeon shouted “Guys! To the Karaoke! Dahyun’s treat!” she sweated a lot and smiled

halfheartely at her rejoicing classmates.

“Wooooo! I’m excited to go! It’s been a long time Dahyun treated us!” Seokjin spoke happily while giving Hoseok a high five.

Dahyun has always been the class ATM. She gained that reputation for always treating the class since 1st year. She was spoiled by her parents because her parents just happened to own the biggest resorts around Seoul. It was all fun and game until their business got bankrupt in the late part of the year. Causing them to lose a lot of money. The once spoiled girl is now learning to be frugal.

Her classmates are not aware of this yet. She didn’t tell them because she’s afraid to lose friends if they suddenly know that she’s broke. So she kept on lying and act as if she’s still the richest in class.

But this situation right now was something she didin’t expected. She knows how much she usually spends when she treats her classmates. Her male classmates are mostly heavy drinkers and that’s what she’s scared of.

“Are you ready?” Tzuyu smiled at her not even aware of the worry in her friend’s eyes.

“Ye.. Yes… I..I’m ready. Let’s go” she said then wiped her sweaty forehead.

Soon the class went straight to a karaoke room. Everyone was having fun except one particular student–-The Class ATM.

Jungkook’s POV

I sent a message to Ji-eun that I will not pick her up today because I’m going on a home visitation.

It’s not that I don’t want to see her. But I really need to see Lisa now. I don’t know why she makes me so guilty even if she’s the one who punched my face.

It’s as if I owe her something.

But before going to her house, I decided to have a dinner first on a restaurant and just go there afterwards.

It didn't escaped my eyes how girls around my age threw their attention at me.

Winking, licking of lips, pulling down their dresses to show me some of their skin was a normal thing I recieve around women. But I almost rolled my eyes when one waved at me.

What's funny to me is the fact these girls are still attracted to me despite my broken nose being wrapped by a small plaster.

I focused my eyes on the food in front of me and ignored the girls.

I am the type of man who will remain loyal to my girlfriend even if she's cheating.

My head momentarily paused and thought of someone.

Lisa.

I really need to talk to her soon. Even if I don't know what to say to her.

So I quickly finished my food and rushed to my car to drive to her home.

And once again, when I was about to knock at the door, I recieved another phone call.

My brows furrowed when I saw that the number was unregistered.

"Hello. Who is this." I asked.

"Is this Mr. Jeon? The teacher?" A matured male voice asked.

"Yes, I am Mr. Jeon. Who is this?" I asked back while looking at the small window in the attic of the house which was softly lighten.

A part inside me grew anxious seeing that my student lives in this old and small house. I bet it would crack down easily if a stong earthquake comes.

“This is Police Officer Kim. Your students commited a violation of running away from a karaoke without paying the owner.”

“What?” I almost yelled at the officer in shock. “How sure are you that they are my students?” I asked defensively.

“Wait, I’ll let one of them talk to you.” He said and shortly after, I heard a familliar voice.

“Mr. Jeon I’m really really sorry. It was not—” I heard Namjoon’s worried voice and that’s when I confirmed that they are really my students.

Fuck this class!

“Where are you?” I asked worriedly.

“We are here at the police station near the school sir. I’m really sorry.”

“Wait there. I’ll come to you.” I ended the call and looked at the small window again.

I swear I’ll go back here tomorrow to see her.

Sighing, I went back to my car to drive to where my students are.

Author’s Note

What do you think happened to the class?
What are your thoughts on Dahyun?

Finally Rescued

Jungkook's POV

"12 Million won?! What the! That's almost 10 thousand dollars!" I almost rip my hair out of frustration.

Of course I can always pay that amount but what the actual fuck?

"Yes, Mr. Jeon. Here is receipt." The owner who was really mad a while ago finally calmed down when I said I would settle this.

But I didn't expect that the bill is as high as fuck!

What did they even eat there? Gold bars? Golden drinks? This is just too much for a karaoke spree!

I looked at all of them and asked "Who's responsible for this?" all of them looked down guiltily. "If you don't answer me, I'll call your parents now!"

"No please Mr. Jeon not our parents please!" They all plead.

"It was Dahyun's fault sir." Jeongyeon looked at her classmate annoyingly. "She said she would treat us to karaoke but in the end she's got no money!"

"Is it true Ms. Kim?" I asked and she nodded.

"I swear I just lost my wallet. My cash and cards were there." she said almost crying.

Seeing the frightened expression on my students face, I sighed and took my wallet from the back of my pocket. I paid the owner quickly and signed the papers for the police to release them out.

When we were finally outside, the tension got heavier.

"You know what, That amount I just paid for you was bigger than my combined salary for three months." I started

and they all looked at me with those puppy eyes.

“Money is not the issue here. What pisses me is the facts that you are still irresponsible at this age.”

“But Dahyun—”

“It maybe Dahyun’s fault but don’t you think at times like this, you should always have plan B. Incidents like losing wallet are inevitable. You should be aware of that! You are closed to graduating but all of you acts like you’re still first graders!” I paused and thought if these students are really sorry for what they did.

“Please write a reflection on what happened tonight and submit it tomorrow.”

I left the students and drive myself home.

It is too late to go back to Lisa’s now. Maybe she’s already sleeping.

Lisa.

I just met her once but she fills my mind lately.

This is another unfortunate night. From the night that I hit a girl on the road, to being punched, to being cheated and now to paying my class’ karaoke expenses. Yeah it sucks to be me.

I think someone up there is preparing me for something better.

In life, it will not always be rainy days right? There will always come a rainbow after the rainy days.

Lisa’s POV

“Lisa, I’m hungry! Get me something to eat quick!” Uncle Robert yelled downstairs.

I ran down quickly and wear my jacket on. I hugged my body as the freezing wind blow on my skin. It was already 10 in the evening and the night is really freezing.

When I arrived at a convenience store to bought my uncle some cupped noodles, I was confused to see a familiar girl

outside the convenience store. She was searching something at the trash can.

I walked out and tried to talk to her.

“Dahyun?” I called. She hurriedly faced me and her hand was folded at her back.

“Li.. Lisa?” She looked pale seeing me there.

“What are you searching at the garbage can?” I asked trying to peak what she’s hiding.

“Uhm.. Nothing.. I gotta go now.. See you tomorrow Lisa.” She said real fast but I managed to grab her arm when she was trying to left.

“Dahyun? Is there any problem?” I asked worriedly. I can tell by the way she looks right now that she’s about to cry.

“Lisa, please let me go. I need to leave.” she said. When I glanced at her hand, she was holding her gucci wallet tightly.

“You can always talk to me right? I’m your friend. I can listen.” I said but it seems she’s not convinced. She’s hiding something. I can tell.

“I promise I will not tell others if that’s what your afraid of. You know me Dahyun.” I said and with that she sobbed in my shoulders.

Dahyun and I went to a nearby park and she told me everything. She told me that their family business got bankrupt and now their lifestyle changed.

“Then what are you doing in the convenience store?” I asked.

“Jeongyeon asked me to treat them to karaoke a while ago Lisa. And I don’t want to disappoint them so I agreed even if I don’t have money. I came up with a plan to act that I lost my wallet so I excused myself to the group. I lied that’s I’m just going to a CR when I really came out to hide my wallet on that trash can” she explained and I remained listening. I don’t want to judge her because I don’t know what she’s going through right now.

“What happened after?” I asked.

“I told them that I lost the wallet and they all panicked. I was hoping that Chaeyoung or Bam could cover up but they were shocked by the amount and they came unprepared.” She said. “So we all ran away from the place but the police officers managed to catch up. We were brought to a police station and it was all my fault!” Dahyun cried again.

“Oh my god! What happened? How did you managed to leave the police station?” I asked while rubbing her back to comfort her.

“Mr. Jeon came to the police station to pay for everything.”

“Mr. Jeon? that jerk teacher?” I asked. I can’t believe he would pay for the class.

“He’s a good teacher Lis, you just got the wrong impression of him. But I can say he just looks really cold but he has a soft heart for us.” Dahyun said and I tried to not roll my eyes at her words.

Mr. Jeon has a soft heart for us? I don’t think so. To me, he’s a jerk.

“How much did he pay for?” I asked.

“Uhm.. 12 Million won.”

“What the hell?” I covered my mouth open when she spoke numbers. “Where did he get the money?” I asked. That’s too much to cover up. That’s more than my one year salary combined.

“I don’t know. Maybe he’s rich or what.”

“What did he say after? Will you pay him after this?”

“No, he just ask for a written reflection from us to see if we were sorry for what happened.”

Now, I feel really weird about Mr. Jeon. Why does it seem like the money is not an issue. If it were me who have students like this, I would faint in an instant.

Thank God I didn’t came to school. Otherwise I would end up in the police station. But what concerns me more right now

is Dahyun. How can she keep this act of hers?

“Dahyun, I really appreciate you for telling me all of this. But don’t you think our classmates deserves to know the truth too?” I asked with a gentle voice.

“But I’m scared! What if they don’t want to be friends with me anymore because I can’t treat them out again?”

“I don’t think they will hate you if you tell them the truth Dahyun.”

“But Jeongyeon will surely laugh at me and Tzuyu might not—”

“Listen. If you were to choose a friend, which one would you prefer, the one who treats you but lies to you. Or the one who has nothing to offer but is true to herself?”

Dahyun’s eyes widened when I asked her that. And that’s the moment she hugged me so tight.

“I will do the right thing Lisa. Thank you.”

I smiled at her and said “You’re such a brave girl Dahyun.”

When Dahyun left, I looked at the clear sky above me. Stars are everywhere tonight. When I looked down, I saw the cup noodles I bought.

Shit!

I forgot my uncle!

I ran and ran to my house and wished that I still have my bike but I don’t have it anymore thanks to that jerk.

When I reached home, I recieved a lot of beating.

But the pain of my uncle’s fists cannot be compared to the comfort I gave my friend a while ago.

I regret nothing.

The Next Day

Jungkook’s POV

“Have you reflected on what you did last night?” I asked the

whole class.

The president stood to give me their written reflections.

“I will read them later. For now, let us continue with the lesson.” I was about to stand when Dahyun raised her hand.

“Yes, Ms. Kim?”

“Sir, I want to tell you and the class something” she nervously looked around and I nodded.

“Sure.”

When she stood at the center of the classroom, all eyes were fixed on her. The way she sweat under her classmates gaze and the way she fidgetted her fingers confirms my theory.

“Dearest classmates, I’m so sorry but I lied.”

I gave her a reassuring look when everyone started to murmur.

“To tell you honestly, I am broke. Our family’s business is facing crises right now and I don’t have money anymore.” When she said this, the class got quiet. Seeing the worried expressions from her friends, she managed to continue.

“I’m sorry if I lied to you. My wallet wasn’t lost. I hid them myself to excuse myself from the embarrassment. I’m so so sorry for doing that. But I understand if you don’t want to be friends with me anymore because I have no more to give. But this is now the real me. It’s better to be honest with all of you than to lie and lost myself in the process.” Dahyun cried infront of the class and everyone got silent.

Soon Jung Hoseok stood and hugged the crying girl.

Dahyun was surprised to recieve this reaction from him.

And just like that, everyone from the class stood to give her a group hug.

The class comforted Dahyun. And they thank her for telling them the truth. Most of them appreciated her bravery.

I just stood at the corner and watch the whole class with smile.

This class is rwally something.

After the class I went straight to Lisa's house. I was really anxious the whole day for not seeing her again.

It was past 5 in the afternoon when I was finally at the door, I knocked and knocked. But there was no answer.

I continued knocking and finally the door opened. Revealing a fat man around 40s. His clothes were dirty and he smell like alchohol.

"What do you want?" he asked.

"Is Lisa Manoban here?"

"She's not yet here. Who are you?"

"I'm her teacher." I said and his eyes showed confusion. I can tell he's not buying it.

"You? Her teacher? I thought she has a female teacher?"

"I am a substitute teacher sir. I'm here for a home visitation."

"Well she's not here." he said and he was about to close the door but I stopped him by putting one foot in.

"Where is she? What time will she be back?" I asked again.

The man nervously looked at me but still he acted as if he can scare me. If this is Lisa's father, I can tell there's something off about him.

"She's working. Don't bother yourself. She usually comes home late."

"She's working?" my eyes widened at what he said.

Lisa, my student is working? What the heck? I looked at the man infront of me to study him more. The father should be working right?

"Now, Please leave. I have something else to do!" with that, he succesfully shut the door in front of my face.

I don't know what's happening to Lisa right now. But I'm sure she's in trouble.

I decided to just go back later at her house. I won't let this day pass without seeing her.

Lisa's POV

It was already 10 pm when I reached home after working at a diner as a dish washer.

When I got inside, I saw my uncle sitting at the couch with a calmed expression.

"Uncle? Have you eaten already?"

He didn't answer my question. He just stared at me.

"Uncle—"

"I didn't know you already have a boyfriend Lisa?"

"Boyfriend? What are you talking about?" I asked nervously. It was my uncle's no. 1 rule to never have a boyfriend and for him to think that I have terrifies me a lot.

"Don't try to lie. He was here a while ago. He even pretended to be your teacher!" He said this through gritted teeth.

"Huh? You mean Mr. Jeon?" I asked confusedly. There's no way Mr. Jeon would come here.

"You dare lie to my face you bitch! I told you to not have a boyfriend but what did you do!" he yelled at me and stood to walk near me. I got scared so I stepped back.

This is the first time he looked at me like this. Like he would kill me.

"Uncle please…"

Uncle's hand slapped my face with great force causing me to fall down.

"I told you to not have a boyfriend!!!" Uncle started kicking me making me gasp out of pain.

When he stopped I looked at him and my eyes widened when I realized he was pulling his zipper down.

Oh my god! No!

“Uncle please.. I’m your niece!”

“I don’t care! You deserve to be punished for breaking rules!”

His hands came to my shirt and with minimal effort he tore them off. I cried when I realized my chest was now exposed.

He pressed my body on the floor and I fought with my whole strength but it was no use. He’s way more stonger than me.

I was crying so hard when he pulled down my pants. I was pinned and my body was aching too much to fight back.

I can’t believe that this man I call my family turned out to be a monster like this.

And this is my fate. I’m about to lose my innocence to my own uncle.

My shirt was torn and I’m left with my panties now.

“Uncle please have mercy!” I cried and begged for him to stop but it seems like he’s going to actually do it.

When he was about to pull his thing out, the door was kicked open.

My blurry eyes made it hard for me to see who just came in but when I blinked my tears away, he was there looking like he would kill someone.

My teacher.

Mr. Jeon

Author’s Note

What will happen to Lisa now?

Changed Impression

Lisa's POV

Mr. Jeon pushed my uncle away from me and made a hard blow of punch on his face that he was thrown to the other side.

My uncle recovered with a broken nose and tried to punch Mr. Jeon back but my teacher was quick to dodge his fist.

Mr. Jeon managed to twist his arm and pin him on the wall. While I was frozen on my spot because of the turn of events.

With a calm voice he spoke. "The police are on their way." he said and my uncle slumped down.

He was so scared that he kneeled in front of Mr. Jeon to beg him to just let this go. But Mr. Jeon looked really pissed. His eyes were as cold as ever.

"You will rot in jail!" the words came out of his mouth and it sounded venomous that my uncle shrinked on his spot.

Soon, the police came and took the monster. One policeman tried to talk to me but Mr.Jeon stopped him. They talk on one corner but I was too overwhelmed to understand what they were saying. So I remained there, at the floor while hugging my knees. My mind is still processing a lot.

"Lisa" Mr. Jeon's soft voice cut me off my trance. When I looked at him, he's trying to offer me his coat while his eyes are turned away. That's when I realized how I looked like.

My shirt was torn and my chest was exposed. I blushed really hard when I realized that Mr. Jeon saw me with just my panties.

I grabbed his coat and wrapped my self with it. Holding the big coat tightly in my chest, I gently said "Thank you."

This is the day, the very first day that I looked at this man with admiration.

I never imagined that a day will come that someone would save me from this hell of a life but he proved me otherwise.

Jungkook's soft eyes turned on me when he confirmed that I was already wrapped by his coat. There was a mixture of worry, sadness and guilt in his eyes that I suddenly became conscious of what he thinks of me.

What will happen now?

Mr. Jeon cleared his throat and offered me his hand.

"Can you stand?" he spoke very softly. I felt very weird inside my chest.

"I.. I can.."

"The police wants to have a word with you about what happened but I told them that you need to rest first. You can give your statement tomorrow. And don't worry about that man. He will be detained." he said and I nodded.

I felt secure knowing that my uncle will be locked up.

But even if I feel safer now, I don't want to go straight to a police station after this. Good thing that Mr. Jeon refused it for me.

"Lisa?" he called.

"Mr. Jeon?"

"You decide if you want to stay here in this house to rest or I'll rent you a hotel room to stay." The word Hotel made me gasped. Mr. Jeon was able to read my worried expression so he shook his head.

"I just want you to rest without remembering what happened. If you stay here, you will just remember everything." he said and finally I got his point.

True to that, I don't want to stay here in the first place. Every corner of this house reminds me of that monster!

"Wait, how about you stay to one of your classmate's house?" when he said the word 'classmates' I almost break down.

“No please! not them! Don’t tell them what happened Mr. Jeon!” I pulled his hands and looked down shocked to see me gripping them hard.

I pulled my hand away when I realized that I just made him feel awkward.

“Uh.. Okay. How about you just stay at my house?” he asked and it silenced me.

Raising my brow I asked ” Your house?”

‘Is it okay to sleep in your teacher’s house?’ I asked myself.

“Yes, I don’t think there should be a problem with that. I live alone and my house is huge. If your not comfortable with me being around, I can leave you at the guest room at peace.”

I don’t know it’s Mr. Jeon’s soft eyes, or if it his calming voice but I nodded and didn’t argue.

I will sleep at his house.

I will sleep at my teachers house and it’s making me feel all sorts of weird feelings.

I was so lost at the moment for staring at his deep and beautiful eyes that I didn’t notice I was already inside his car.

He helped me get in at the gentlest way as if I’m a glass that he’s scared to break.

That’s when I realized that he’s not bad.

I like Mr. Jeon.

Jungkook’s POV

Lisa fell asleep on my car the moment I started the engine. I glanced at her direction and saw that the coat was flung open revealing her bare chest and her long legs came in view while she was only in her underwear.

I tried to look away but my pheriperal vision managed to see a glimpse of her body. I felt really distracted so I heaved a deep sigh and pulled on one corner to fix her up.

My hands travelled to the sides of the coat, without looking down, I tightened the coat more to her body to cover her bare

and smooth skin.

Looking at her face now, I see the dried tears in them. I can't believe she's being abused like that.

I don't know if she's already been raped by that asshole before but it concerns me so much that she had to endure being abused by her own family.

She's young and she should be happy. But she's working and being treated like this.

I swear I will do everything to have that man locked up in jail for the rest of his life.

I tuck a lock of hair on her ear and looked at her face. She's still beautiful even if her eyes are puffy from crying. But flashbacks of being punched kicked in my head so I stay away from her beautiful face to avoid the same scenario.

Now I understand why she punched me that day. She was just trying to protect herself.

And I as a teacher, I failed when I crossed the line.

I looked away and continued driving to where my house is.

Lisa's POV

"Lisa, wake up.. we're here."

"I open my eyes and studied the sorroundings. When I remember everything. I looked down to see Mr. Jeon's coat still wrapped around me. I sighed and waited for him to invite me in.

"Come on.. It's past 12 in the morning. You need to rest." Mr. Jeon's soft and gentle voice succesfully warmed my heart.

He hopped out of the car and turned to my side to help me out. After being beaten and kicked a lot of times by my uncle, my body is exhausted and it's hard for me to stand.

Mr. Jeon noticed my discomfort so he said "Come, I'll carry you." My eyes widened when he suddenly kneeled in front of me while he's back is turned on me.

Is he offering me a piggy back ride?

My teacher?

I can't help but be conscious. I'm just wearing my underwear, I can't do this!

"No, thank y—" Mr. Jeon cut my objection by pulling my hand to his. Suddenly, my chest was pressed on his back. His hands travelled to the back of my thigh and I'm sure he could feel my core against his back.

The position was too awkward that I have to close my eyes in embarrassment. I have never been close to guy like this even to my bestfriend Bambam. But here I am on my teacher's back and he's carrying me without breaking a sweat.

I tried to focus on the beautiful house infront of me.

The huge house was classical in style with the clean integrity of the modern look. It is fresh, unique, simple, and looks positively stunning compared to the modern houses I usually see on magazines. The gorgeous surrounding landscape was simply calming, its beauty and sophistication matches Mr. Jeon's personality.

When we got in, a cozy and warm atmosphere welcomed us. The house looks huge and I doubt he lives here alone.

There was no single picture hanged on the wall but just still-life paintings. When Mr. Jeon placed me on the sofa, he took off his shoes and changed to his slippers which was placed on a shoe rack beside the door. It didn't escaped my eyes that another home slippers was there.

Jungkook followed my eyes to where the set of slippers were and he smiled. He took the slippers and spoke.

"This belongs to my girlfriend. You can use this for now."

A sudden unfamilliar feeling washed over me. It was as if my chest was being twisted. I don't know why I feel this way but I didn't show him that. Instead I said "thank you".

He kneeled in front of me and took one of my foot. Which was bare the whole time. The action surprised me but what surprised me more was when he pushed one slipper on my foot and took the other foot to wear the other slipper.

My ears felt so hot after that. I looked away.

“There, your feet fits the slippers.” He smiled and for the hundredth time I feel weird inside my chest.

Mr. Jeon, helped me to the elevator by holding my waist. I felt ticklish but his warm body sends me electrifying signals that I haven’t felt ever. He smells so good and it’s hypnotizing my soul.

When we were finally in front of a door on the second floor, he gently pushed it open and my heart beated so fast as if we are going to do something there.

Too much for listening to my uncle’s demonic activities that I became a pervert myself.

I looked around the room and wondered if I’m about to stay here.

“This will be your room for the night. I’m sorry if it’s not that huge.” he said then he gently helped me to sit on the bed.

The room was really spacious and clean that I felt embarrassed for myself for sitting here.

Considering myself as a dirt, I deserve to not set foot in this kind of places.

“Mr. Jeon, this is too much of you.” I said and thank goodness I didn’t stutter because of my erratic heart.

“It’s nothing. You need help and I’m glad I just came at the right time. There are clothes in the closet you can use.” he said and my lips turned into an o.

Are the clothes from his girlfriend too?

Mr. Jeon looked at me like he read my mind so he said. “They are not my girlfriend’s clothes. Don’t worry. I usually put them there for sudden guests. They’re for male and female

clothes. Just wear what you think is comfortable. I'll leave you here. If you need me, just knock at the opposite door."

Mr. Jeon left and I limply walked to the closet to see a lot of clothes there. Mostly plain white tshirts and cotton shorts. I removed my coat and my torn tshirt to wear a fresh and clean shirt. Then took the cotton shorts to wear.

I looked around and the room and saw that there was a bathroom inside of it. But my body feels so exhausted to have a clean shower so I just decided to lay on the bed to rest there.

Soon, I was sleeping peacefully.

Jungkook's POV

Oh shit! I haven't asked her if she's hungry or what?

I quickly unbuttoned my shirt and took off my pants. Wearing my robe, I rushed out to knock at the guest room.

I recieved no answer so I just turned away to leave.

Maybe she's sleeping?

But what if she's hungry?

Worried that she's not eaten yet, I went downstairs and took crackers and biscuits as well as a bottled water. Then I went back to her room. I mean the guest room.

When I peaked inside, I saw that she was already sleeping. Her legs were exposed that bruises were very visible in them. I feel really bad for seeing her like this. No one deserves to be beaten like this.

Placing the water and the crackers on the table, I walk back to her and covered her body with a soft and warm blanket.

Goodnight Lisa.

I hope you rest well.

□

Author's Note

Are you liking this soft and gentle Jungkook? Or you like the Jerkook and Juancock more?



Class Hearthrob

Jungkook's POV

I got up earlier than usual hoping that I could talk to Lisa before I go to school.

So I excitedly walked to the guest room to see if she's already awake.

But I see that she was still sleeping peacefully. She was still covered with the blanket I wrapped around her last night as her arms were hugging a pillow tightly.

I stared for a minute before leaving the room without making much noise.

She must be really tired from last night.

I went downstairs to cook Lisa a breakfast. Just simple pancakes, sausages and beans. I made myself a coffee after placing the food on the dining table.

I took a few sips of my coffee and wrote a note to Lisa and placed them near the breakfast.

Lisa,

Eat this to help you gain your strength back. You can skip class today.

Please rest well.

Mr. Jeon

Later that morning

I arrived at school but was called by the principal for an urgent meeting.

"Good morning Mr. Yang, you need me?" I asked.

"Mr. Jeon, I 'm so sorry for the incovenience but I need to ask of you something."

His words worried me. Is it about Lisa? Does he know already that she's staying in my house?

"What is it Mr.Yang?" I asked nervously.

"It's about your class performance. Class 3-C's Quarterly examination result was really low. Only two of the students passed the exam. I'm concerned about these students. What's happening to them? Especially Lisa Manoban's score. She barely got a correct answer."

"Miss Manoban?" I asked to confirm. I am certain her problem at home affected her performance in school.

"Yes, Ms. Manoban, and almost all of your students are at risk of failing the coming exam. If they fail the qualifying exam for college, they will not be accepted at any best performing colleges and universities. Can you please make u follow up on them?"

"I see Mr. Yang. I will do everything that I can to help these students."

"Thank you so much Mr. Jeon."

With a heavy heart I went straight to my classroom. But before I enter the door, I tried to listen first at my students who were already there. I can hear their worried voices out of the door.

"Hey! Did you know that our class got the lowest score from the quarterly exams." I heard Jeongyeon's voice.

"So what?" Chaeyoung's voice replied.

"Aren't you concerned? How can we face college if we have this kind of result?" Namjoos spoke.

"I don't care if I fail that exam. The more I fail, the more I'm happy." Chaeyoung's nonchalant answer made me open the door.

They were surprised to see me.

"Jeongyeon is right. Most of you failed the exam and this could result to you not being accepted to the best universities in college." I said with my voice slightly raised.

“Do you want that!?” I asked looking at Chaeyoung direction but she just rolled her eyes.

“Like I care” she muttered but I heard it.

I looked at the whole class but it seems like they’re not really affected with this. Only Namjoon and Bambam shows concerned expression but te rest didn’t.

“Can you share your thoughts on this matter? Please? I need to hear them from you.” I said with a pleading voice. I hate seeing them being undriven like this.

The battle hasn’t even started and they’re already losing.

“If that’s my fate, then that’s my fate.” Yoongi said.

“Mr. Jeon, I failed and I already did my best. That’s enough for me.” Hoseok said.

“I’ll just wink at the president of the colleges Universities and I’m sure they’ll accept me in an instant.” Jin proudly said.

“I will do my best Mr. Jeon” Namjoon said.

“I’m more concern at my performance for the pageant than this.” Tzuyu replied.

“I can’t afford good universities anyway so I think I’ll just settle for public colleges.” Dahyun said.

“I’m fine at any universities as long as my baby Chaeyoung is there” Jimin replied.

“I don’t know. I just want to go where Tzuyu or Dahyun is?” Jeongyeon said.

“My family wants me to study abroad. So it doesn’t matter if I don’t qualify the exam.” Bambam said.

I sighed and thought for a second. They care less about this matter and I’m so worried.

What future awaits my students if they have this kind of mentality?

“You know what I’m really disappointed that you think like this.” I said. But Yoongi just chuckled.

“Don’t worry about us Mr. Jeon, we can take care of ourselves.” Yoongi said.

I took a deep breath and searched for words.

“Scoring high is not the same as dreaming high. One person could always cheat and get a hundred percent score but that doesn’t mean that he’s future is already bright because he cheated. But when someone dreams high and works really hard for it, good results will come easily.”

“So now I ask of all of you to at least raise your standards higher and maybe little by little work for it. I believe deep down in you that all of you have your own dreams, you all wish to have a family and to raise them and provide for them. But how can you achieve them if you won’t work hard?”

“Just a little sacrifice won’t hurt. The process can be rough and bumpy but the end point will surely be satisfying.”

After I said those words, the class was moved to tears.

“I know you are facing you’re own problems now, but remember that I’m here to help. I won’t stop until I help everyone of you. So don’t be afraid to reach out for me. I’m your teacher and I’m here to guide you until I see that you’re walking the right path.”

The whole class clapped their hands like they just listened to a president’s speech.

I was about to continue my talk when the door flew open with a sweating and panting Eunwoo.

“Mr. Jeon, help!” he said with teary eyes.

“What happened?” I asked.

“Someone sent me this.” he raised a card nervously and walked to me.

When I saw the card I was shocked to see that a message was written there.

“Cha Eunwoo, you are mine! We are destined to be together! I offer you my life and I promise we will soon be together. Forever.”

The class gathered around the teacher's table where I placed the card.

"What the? Is that real blood?" Chaeyoung asked in disgust.

The words are written in reddish color and it smells.

"Yes, it's blood. I'm so scared. I don't know what to do anymore." Eunwoo's shoulders slumped down.

"This is menstrual blood! Eww!" Jin scrunched his nose.

"How did you know that this is menstrual blood when you're a man?" Jimin asked.

"Well, I have a sister who lefts her tampons exposed at the trashbin so I know how they look and smell like."

I raised my brow at the information I got. I can say, it's not always the teacher who teaches the students but sometimes it's the student who teaches the teacher.

"What the fuck! This is real menstrual blood Eunwoo! This girl is nasty af! You have a crazy bitch of a sasaeng!"

"Jeongyeon! Language!" I said and she zipped her mouth. I turned to the frightened young man and asked "Where did you get this?"

"It was in my locker Mr. Jeon. I don't know who sent this. I'm really scared. Please help me."

"I'll try to see if we have CCTV in that area. For now let us continue our class. I'll try my best to catch whoever sent you this okay?"

The class finally continued but sadly, when I went to the lockers area, a utility told me that the CCTV on that area is not working anymore. I tried to ask the faculty to have the camera fixed so that we can track the student's movements.

Whoever this person is threathening Eunwoo, I believe is a crazy fangirl.

Poor boy. His moves are being restricted because of these crazy admirers.

Before I went home, I made sure that Eunwoo can go home together with his classmates.

At least for now he can go home safely but I'm afraid he's still in danger as long as we don't know who sent them that.

When I was about to head home, I remembered that Lisa might be hungry already so I just ordered a take out on my way home.

It was five when I arrive at my house, I excitedly put down the food I ordered on the kitchen counter and rode the elevator to see Lisa in her room.

When I knocked, no one answered.

Is she still sleeping?

The worried me managed to twist the door knob open.

But I frowned when I saw an empty room.

Where is she?

She's not in the bathroom too.

I went downstairs and tried to look for her. Maybe she's just roaming around the house.

When I passed by the living room, I saw a small note.

I walked to it and started reading what's there.

Mr. Jeon,

Thank you so much for letting me stay last night. And thank you so much for the food and the clothes. I will return them after I wash them.

Lisa

What the?

Why did she left?

Maybe she thought that I'm just letting her stay for one night that's why she left early?

With quick movements, I strode to my car and drove it to her house.

She can’t stay there.

What if her uncle bails himself out?

Ughh!!!!

This girl is making me worried for unknown reasons!

Author’s Notes

Here we go again of finding Lisa, so let’s do a guessing game. Where is Lisa?

A. Back at home
B. At the Hope Children Orphanage
C. At School
D. Working again

Class Gossip

Lisa's POV

I went home and took so off the clothes I borrowed from Mr. Jeon to wash them.

Afraid that my uncle will come back, I decided to leave the house for a while until I make sure he stays in jail forever.

After taking some of my important belongings, I walk to Hope Children Orphanage to stay there for the mean time.

I honestly don't know where to go. I'm so scared to stay back at home and I can't go back to Mr. Jeon. He said that I can only stay there for one night and he wants me out the next day.

So I left early without waiting for him. He may just kick me out if he sees that I'm still there, right?

I can't stay at Chaeyoung's because I don't want to worry her. She has so much going on right now and I don't want to add to her stack of problems.

Now, the only place I'm sure I can run to is the Orphanage. Maybe mother Yasha can allow me to stay their for one night or two until I find somewhere else to sleep.

When I got at my safe haven, I was welcomed again with warm and tight hugs by my favorite children. For a moment, I forgot about my problems. Just seeing them smile like this gives me joy and happiness.

Children gives me hope. That's why I wanted to be a teacher.

I want to be a great teacher. Just like Mr. Jeon.

A smile crept to my lips when I remember him. Like I'm daydreaming of a prince charming.

How can a man be so perfect?

Mr. Jeon’s girlfriend is really lucky.

I wonder how she looks like?

Maybe she’s so pretty because Mr. Jeon is really handsome.

Will I ever find a man like Mr. Jeon? I hope so. But it’s impossible for a trash like me to find someone like him.

I don’t even have decent clothes to wear. I bet no one would like me.

But Bambam likes me right?
Nah! Bambam just loves me as his bestfriend not as a girl. Chaeyoung and the others are just exaggerating.

Now I miss my classmates. Do they even miss me? They are so used to me being absent that it doesn’t matter for them if they don’t see me for days.

I sighed.

After teaching the children, Mother Yasha asked me to buy some neccesities for the children. I also asked mother Yasha if I can stay the night and she allowed me.

Thank God!

When I went out of the orphanage, I was surprised to see my classmate peaking side to side at the street while hiding behind a tree.

“Eunwoo?” I yelled for him to hear me.

His eyes widened when he saw me and motioned me to keep my mouth shut.

I got confused so I went to him behind the tree.

“What are you doing here?” I asked.

“Lisa! What are you doing here?” he asked with his eyes still peaking on the street.

“Are you hiding?” I asked the nervous man and he nodded.

“Shhhh.. Keep quiet! They might see me!”

“Wait wait wait! I don’t understand. Why are you hiding? Who are you hiding from? And why do you look scared?”

“I’ll tell you everything but please lower your voice. I’m scared for my dear life.” he said and breathed deeply.

Eunwoo told me everything. From being followed to recieving a card with writings using menstrual blood, to getting phonecalls and all.

I can’t help but be sorry for him. He’s hiding like this and he can’t even move freely because of those girls. I really want to help him. Eunwoo’s handsome issues bugged him for years now. He deserves a break.

“I have a plan.” I said.

“What? You can help me Lisa? I swear to God you are an angel!” he said and I chuckled.

“I don’t even know if this plan would work. But we can try.”

“What is it then?” he asked excitedly.

“I will pretend to be your girlfriend.” I said those words and his mouth dropped open.

“You will what?”

“I can act like your gilfriend in school to stop those girls from chasing you.”

“Lisa, I know you’re hot and I really want you to be my girlfriend but that is too risky for you!”

“You want me to be what?”

“I mean… I don’t think it’s a good idea to act like my girlfriend. What if they threathen you instead? I can’t let you be dragged to this mess I’m in!”

“Believe me, I’ve been through worse. Childish threats like that won’t scare me Eunwoo.” I said and he tilted his head to look at me.

“What did I do to in my past life to deserve a friend like you?” he said and I chuckled.

“Anything for my friends Eunwoo. Besides, I treat you like my little brother.”

“That’s worse than being friendzoned” he said and we both laughed.

“What are you doing here by the way?”

“I’m teaching the orphaned children there.” Insaid pointing at the small building across the street.
“How about you?”

“I was asked by mom to buy some desert for dinner. Our house is just over there.” he said pointing at line of houses nearby.

“Oh really? Then let’s go together. I want to buy something sweet for the children too.”

Eunwoo stared at me in awe and bowed 90 degrees. “Thank you so much Lisa. Now I feel safer because you’re with me.”

“No worries.”

And with that we both walked to the pastry store.

Class 3-C POV

What the fudge?

Is that Lisa and Eunwoo?

Why are they together?

And why are they hiding behind the tree?

Are they dating?

Oh my goodness! This is fresh news!

I took my phone and took shots of them behind the tree.

One picture looks like they’re kissing.

This is the best scoop to post to twitter.

A few crop and filter and it’s all good.

Just the right caption and it will be perfect!

I logged in on my twitter and captioned:

“Finally, Class Hearthrob found his Soulmate.”

A minute after posting, the photo was retweeted and liked by a lot of my followers. Mostly my schoolmates.

I smiled at the attention my post got.

I'm the Class Gossip and I will only bring you nothing but the freshest news and hottest updates.

Jungkook's POV

Lisa was not in her home. Where could she be?

After driving round and round at the same block, my phone rang.

Ji-eun is calling..

"Why?" I asked when I answered the call.

"What do you mean why? Can't I talk to you?" he said with a raised voice.

Even I myself was surprised with how I answered her. I usually greet her with loving names.

Maybe I'm just lost with all these problem from work.

"Uhm..I'm sorry. I was just surprised that you called. I..I thought you're busy."

"I see. By the way, I want to talk to you. I need to tell you something." her words made me pause for a moment.

Is she finally breaking up with me?

Maybe?

"What is it then?" I asked.

"I need to tell you personally. Are you free tomorrow?" she asked.

"I have a class tomorrow but we can talk after." I said and she hummed.

"Listen. I'm so sorry if It's hard for me to get in touch. i'm just busy and—"

"It's fine Ji-eun. I understand." I said without feeling bad. I don't even know why I'm not mad.

Back then I would usually seek for her attention. I will be sad if she doesn't take my calls or what but now… Maybe my class changed me.

Yeah my student changed me. Now my mind is not full of Ji-eun anymore.

"I will talk to you tomorrow okay? I love—"

I ended the call without listening to her words. She confuses me so much and if she suddenly say that she loves me, I don't know what to think anymore.

But too much for worrying about Ji-eun.

My real problem now is searching for Lisa.

I don't quite know why I'm looking for her?

Maybe having a teacher's pet is real.

Yeah.

I think she's the teacher's pet.

That's why I have a soft spot for her.

I'm just worried because she's been through a lot and as a teacher, I need to protect my students right?

Right!

Author's Note

Another Update because my baby Lisa is trending lol

What do you think about the Class Gossip? Have you ever had a classmate like this?

Wrongly Accused

Jungkook's POV

I gave up searching for Lisa and just hopped she would come to school tomorrow so that I can ask her to just stay at my house while her guardian is being temporarily prisoned.

The worst part is, her uncle can bail himself out until we prove him guilty of an attempted rape.

Yeah. Law sucks. But I made sure that he will not afford the bail price. But the court proceedings are still on going and it would usually take months to year to finish. I really think he needs to rot there for doing that to Lisa.

After a long and tiring day at work, I took a hot shower to freshen up.

When I was done changing, I recieved a message from my friend Jisoo.

Jisoo: Jeon

Me: What?

Jisoo: Can you ask your student to take down her post on twitter.

Jungkook: Who?

Jisoo: Jeongyeon. She posted about your dating students and now it created student-wars.

Jungkook: So? What's wrong for posting Jimin and Chaeyoung's photos. The whole campus knows they're dating right?

Jisoo: You don't understand. The name of our school was being mentioned at every tweet. Mr. Yang is so worried that he asked me to take care of this.

Jungkook: Why are they so pressed about students dating? I don't understand. I usually see Jimin and Chaeyoung kissing

out of campus and no one raises a brow.

Jisoo: Stupid. I'm not talking about Jimin and Chaeyoung. I'm talking about Eunwoo. You know how many fangirls he has right? Now they are fighting on twitter because of Jeongyeon's post.

Jungkook: What? You're telling me that Eunwoo is dating someone?

Jisoo: Yes you read it right.

Jungkook: But who is he dating among my students. Tzuyu? Dahyun?

Jisoo: He's dating Lisa.

I squinted my eyes on the phone screen and tried to read it if I was reading it right. Did she just say Lisa?

Eunwoo is dating Lisa?

Jisoo: Jungkook? Please reply back. Tell me if ypu can take care of this.

Jungkook: Send me the twitter account.

Jisoo: @YourSchoolGossip

I didn't reply Jisoo anymore my fingers were in a rush to see the post.

I hope it's not true though.

But when I logged in on my own twitter account, I saw it myself.

Lisa and Eunwoo seemed to be kissing behind a tree.

And for some reason, I froze.

I don't know if I would laugh or if I would cry.

I feel really weird and uncomfortable. It's like I was drawn to war and I can't escape.

After minutes of pacing back and forth inside my room, my hands finally travelled back to my phone and sent Jeongyeon a DM.

"Please take down that post. We will talk tomorrow."

After I sent her that, the post got deleted. But I managed to take a screenshot of it to ask Lisa myself if it is true.

At her age right now, she should focus on studies and avoid dating. She's too young to date.

And Eunwoo, I'm so disappointed in him. I thought he's scared of girls. Then why is he suddenly dating Lisa? This just doesn't add up.

I really need to talk to them tomorrow.

Especially Lisa.

The next day

I was a yawning mess when I arrived at school. I wasn't able to sleep well last night because of that post.

Then, I saw students gathered around the school bulletin looking like they are reading an important announcement. My brows furrowed and it made me curious.

When I got closer, I was surprised to see what they're looking at.

It was a big picture of Lisa.

Ang written on it is:

"The Campus Slut"

My eyes widened when I saw that. I pushed the students away from the bulletin and took that damn picture with so much force.

The students were frightened when they saw me crumpling the picture.

"Who's responsible for this?" I asked and they shook there head.

"Not me Mr. Jeon."

"I just got here Mr. Jeon."

"It was already there Mr. Jeon"

"If I find out who's behind this, I will make sure she gets expelled!"

The students gasped with my words. And they better know that I'm not joking.

The students rushed to their own classroom and I was left there fuming with anger.

When I got inside the class, I got more pissed that Lisa and Eunwoo is not yet around.

Even Jeongyeon was not yet there.

"Where is Lisa?" I asked the president again.

"Not yet around sir. Maybe she's just late." Namjoon said but I know deep down that there is a 90% chance that she will skip class today.

"Where is Jeongyeon and Eunwoo?" I asked not hiding my pissed tone.

"Jeongyeon said she's coming. While Eunwoo usually comes late sir." Namjoon spoke again for the class.

Class 3-C POV

The class' atmosphere was very heavy this time. Mr. Jeon didn't start the class right away. He just waited for the rests of the students to come.

The rest are aware that Mr. Jeon's bad temper came from the trending topic last night.

Jimin whispered to his girl "Babe, you think Eunwoo and Lisa are really dating?"

"I don't know too. I'm confused. I know Lisa doesn't like Eunwoo. She likes no one except me." Chaeyoung replied back in a way of a whisper.

"Yeah.. Lisa hates me too" Jimin chuckled.

"Mr. Jeon looks really pissed. I'm scared." Chaeyoung said.

"Don't be. Mr. Jeon is cool. I'm sure he'll handle this matter calmy."

"Calmly my ass! Look at his face, he looks like he's going to eat someone alive." Chaeyoung said.

“Then don’t look at his face, Just turn your attention to me.” Jimin smirked making Chaeyoung roll her eyes.

Not any minute longer, The door was opened to reveal a surprisingly calm and happy Eunwoo.

Mr. Jeon noticed the sudden change in his expression and thought that the news was really true. So he called him quickly to ask.

“Eunwoo, I need to ask you something.” Mr. Jeon said and Eunwoo who is innocent with the teacher’s burning eyes manage to walk to him.

“Yes, Mr. Jeon?” he asked calmly.

“Are you and Lisa dating?”

Eunwoo’s jaw dropped open. For a moment he can’t speak. He was confused. He thought Lisa and him will start the act next week. But why is Mr. Jeon asking this all of a sudden when they haven’t even started their act. But even if he’s confused, he still answered “Soon”

“Soon?” Mr. Jeon asked raising his brow.

The whole class was still listening to them, when a nervous Jeongyeon finally came.

“Jeongyeon, come here” Mr. Jeon asked the girl and she instantly knew what it is about.

“With all due respect Sir but is there something wrong?” Eunwoo asked when he notice the teacher has been frowning the whole day.

“I want you to explain this.” He said and placed his smartphone with the screenshot of the post to the table for them to see. Eunwoo looked at it and his eyes widen when he saw what the fuss is about.

“Hey! Why would you post this!” Eunwoo asked Jeongyeom.

“What? I just posted what my eyes saw.”

“But the caption is very misleading! What are you thinking? And why did you took a picture like this? This looks like

we’re kissing?”

“You were not?” Mr. Jeon asked the confused man.

“Of course not! Mr. Jeon. Lisa and I were just talking that time.”

“When was this taken?” Mr. Jeon asked again curiously.

Both Eunwoo and Jeongyeon answered “Yesterday”

Mr. Jeon’s expression softened hearing an update about Lisa. Suddenly, he wanted to know when, where and how did they meet up.

“You can explain Eunwoo. I will listen.” Mr. Jeon said with a calmer tone.

“So yesterday, I was asked by mom to buy a cake for our desert but I feel like someone is following me. I was very scared with what happened to me last day about the card incident so when I confirmed that someone was really following me, I ran and hid behind a tree. Then Lisa called me —”

“How did Lisa found you?” Mr. Jeon asked impatiently.

“She was at the orphanage near my home and she happened to saw me behind a nearby tree—”

“Orphanage? Where is this?” Mr. Jeon cut him off again.

“Wait Mr. Jeon let me finish first.”

Mr. Jeon realized he’s being impatient so he just focused on his explanation. Eunwoo explained everything to the teacher and the class. That Lisa tried to help him by pretending to be his girlfriend and they will do the act on monday. Eunwoo expressed his appreciation from the girl’s help and explained that him and Lisa are really just friends.

Mr. Jeon finally realized that he was worrying for nothing. The two are not really in a relationship. So his eyes turned to Jeongyeon.

“It’s your time to explain.” he said.

“Uhm.. I.. I thought they were dating. I’m sorry Eunwoo. I was just mistaken.” she said guiltily.

“But hey, that maybe the reason why no one followed and chased me today?”

“Really?” Mr. Jeon asked.

“But Mr. Jeon, I’m still worried. What if those crazy girls turn their attention to Lisa? She will be in a great trouble.”

Mr. Jeon took a deep breath and said. “I will do everything to help her if that happens.”

The teacher finally focused on Jeongyeon. He thought Jeongyeon should stop posting something like this.

“Jeongyeom, I know trending something under your name is fun. Most people get overwhelmed when they receive attention on the social media. But before you post something like this, you should confirm first if it’s true or not? Your post dragged the name of the school down and the Principal was really not pleased. Besides, you are Eunwoo and Lisa’s friend. You know how Eunwoo suffered from all these fangirls but you choose to write a dating post about him. Do you have any idea how many girls fought under the comment section of your post? And Lisa was even dragged into this. She had her picture posted with the word slut on the bulletin board early this morning. Do you think Lisa deserves this? This were all a result of a fake news.”

Jeongyeon burst into tears when Mr. Jeon said those words. She was so ego-centric to not care about her friends and now she regrets it so much.

“I’m so sorry… I didn’t mean to have it like this.”

“Weapons can harm physicaly but our tongue can do so much more damage because it targets a person emotionally. Same goes for posting something on social media. We may think that it harms no one but no. It will always harm someone. So please reflect on this Jeongyeon.”

“I will. I’m so sorry Eunwoo.I swear I won’t do it again.” the crying girl apologized genuinely and she promise herself

she will not do it again. She will stay out of people's business from now on.

Eunwoo smiled and said "It's okay."

A pair of warm arms managed to hug Jeongyeon from the back and it was the class sunshine Hoseok.

Soon, the class gathered around Eunwoo and Jeongyeon and squeezed the both in a tight hug.

Well, except the shirtless Yoongi who slept 30 mins ago on his desk.

Jungkook's POV

During lunch break

"Eunwoo, can you send me the address of the orphanage where Lisa is at?" I asked the young man when he was about to leave to go to the canteen

"Why Mr. Jeon?" Eunwoo asked while tilting his head to look at me.

"Uhhm..I just need something from her." I suddenly got conscious. Do I sound somewhat weird?

"Ohh.. Okay. I'll write it down for you." he said then he wrote an address on a piece of paper and gave it to me.

"I will go now Mr. Jeon"

"Okay" I said and he left.

Finally, I know where Lisa is.

Author's Note

Lisa being a strict dance mentor at Youth with You is so hot. I love her so much!

FYI, Bamban is absent today

Fighting Threats

Lisa's POV

“

Lisa, Can you throw this outside?” Mother Yasha asked as she hand me a bag of garbage.

“Sure mother.” I went straight outside to do the job when a rock hit my forehead.

The impact was strong but not enough to hurt.

‘What was that?’ I asked my self and looked around, on the opposite side of the road stands three girls. They are the only ones around so I think they’re the one who did it.

“Hey you! Did you just hit me with a rock?” I can say they are the same age as me. It seems like they are watching me the whole time and I have a feeling that one of them hit me on purpose.

“Yes! You want more?” I was surprised to hear their answer but what surprised me more was when they started throwing more pebbles on me.

One girl was holding a small sack filled with pebbles.

“I ducked and covered my head but they went closer to me to throw some more.

What the hell is their problem?

“Stop! What are you doing!” I yelled.

“You bitch!”

“You’re a slut!”

“You deserve to die!”

They cursed and spat words to mock me but I still don’t know what’s their problem with me.

The rocks hit my arms and back which served as my sheild to cover my face and head. And even if I can fight back, I have no reasons to do so. So I just remained covering my body until they stop.

“Please stop!” I said.

“We will kill you first before we stop!” one girl said.

“Teacher Lisa?” My heart thumped out of my chest when I hear Lia’s voice.

Shit! The children will see me.

“Lia, go back!” I shouted and the girls started laughing evilly. They still continue throwing rocks at me.

“But teacher Lisa, they are hurting you.” She said with her teary eyes.

When I saw my precious girl’s worried expression, I thought that they really need to stop.

“Lia, we’re just playing! Now go back and I’ll follow after.” Lisa looked at me with confused eyes. I assured her that everything is fine by smiling at her.

Luckily, Lia ran back inside and that is my queue to defend my self.

I stood and ran to a narrow alley nearby the orphanage making the girls chase after me.

They were still throwing rocks at me but I ran faster. Finally, when I made sure that they were no people close by I turn to face them.

“What do you want? Why are you hurting me? ” I asked not hinting any sight of fear throigh my voice.

“You! You took Eunwoo away from me! We are destined to be together but you ruined everything!” one girl shouted with so much anger in her eyes.

Now I get why they are doing this to me. They thought that I’m his girlfriend or what. But they can never threaten me with tiny pebbles. My body has been through worse.

I was slappped, punched, whipped, kicked by my own uncle. I have a broken rib because he pushed me down the stairs before. He used to splash me with cold water when he wants me up, he used to grab my hair when I mess his coffee and he has done so much more.

I will never be threatened by this pathetic girls.

Their craziness must end now.

“I see, so you’re the one who sent him the card?” I asked crossing my arms over my chest.

“Yes, It is me. Because we are destined to be together. So I used my own blood. To lock a seal of our love” she said and I thought this girl is a psycho and the other girls are her minions who seems to support her craziness.

“You mean the stinky blood from your vagina?” I asked scrunching my nose. The girl who looks like the leader was taken aback.

“You don’t understand. Eunwoo loves my card. He loves me that’s why I did it.” the girl’s eyes were moving to fast in all directions like she’s having a breakdown.

“Eunwoo was disgusted by it you know. Eunwoo doesn’t love you!”

“And who do you think does Eunwoo love? You?”

“Yes. He loves me because I am his friend. And I care for him because he is my friend. And that is something you will never understand.” the girl’s nose was fuming now like she’s about to kill me but I’m still not scared so I continued.

“But if you dare try to hurt my friends, I will never forgive you!” I said these words with strong force as I take a step closer to the girl. Her eyes now showed fear in them but she managed to throw me more rocks.

I didn’t budge. Instead, I walked more to her and blow a punch on her face.

The other girls were shocked with what I did and they tried to attack me. But they are weak and I have more background in defending myself. I dodge their fists and their kicks.

Soon I wasn't able to stop myself from fighting back. I really want to teach these girls a lesson. And that is to never mess with any of my classmates again.

The girls ended on the ground with busted lips and swollen eyes. They were looking at me like I'm the most unbelievable person in the world. And the girl who was shouting at me a while ago is now crying and begging me to stop.

I walked to the crying girl and said "You will forget that this happened and you will stop messing up with me and Eunwoo. If you don't follow what I said, I will do worse than this"

After I said those words the girls ran away as fast as they could away from me.

I know what I did was wrong but someone should stop them. If I don't fight back, the bullying and the threats will never end.

Class 3-C POV

"Before we finish today's class, I have something to tell you." Mr. Jeon spoke.

"What is it Mr. Jeon?" Namjoon asked.

"I propose to have a remedial class with you since tomorrow is Saturday."

The whole class whined when he said that.

"I understand that you want to have a break but the exam is close and we need to focus more on those subjects that you find hard." Mr. Jeon said.

"That's boring!"

"I will play basketball tomorrow"

"I need to practice for the dance contest."

"I have a date with my baby girl"

"Saturday and Sundays are meant for beauty rest"

"I am busy at home."

"I'm too handsome to study."

All of the students has their reasons to refuse but Mr. Jeon who has forseen this made another plan of rebuttal.

“Jisoo, Irene, Jackson and Chungha will also come to help. And I will allow you to have a barbeque at my house after the remedial. How about that?”

The class gasped when they heard him say whose comming with them especially Jin, J-hope and Yoongi.

“Well, I remember that we should really focus on studying, now that the exam is close. I will go Mr. Jeon” Jin raised his hand.

“Uhh.. Basketball is somewhat boring so I’ll just come.” Yoongi scratched his head and Mr. Jeon smiled.

Later, most of the class agreed to come except Chaeyoung and Jimin. They said that it is their monthsary and they need to celebrate it. Mr. Jeon didn’t argue more because he understands. Back then, he was also a crazy lover of Ji-eun that he celebrates even their weeksary.

Suddenly, he remembered that he will meet up with his girlfriend later. He has a slight feeling that Ji-eun will break up with him. But he’s not worried. It’s as if he’s not scared if the girl breaks up with him already.

Jungkook’s POV

Later that night

I arrived at the fancy restaurant where Ji-eun wanted to meet. I kissed her cheek like usual before sitting on the chair across her.

“You want to tell me something?” I asked.

“Woah! Calm down. Are you in a rush?” she chuckled. She’s as beautiful as always. Her movements are very refined and feminine. But no matter how beautiful and perfect she looks now, I feel like the sparks lessened. Unlike before.

“Oh.. It’s not that. I was just curious with why you wanted to ask me personally when you can just send me a message.”

“Even if I’m busy, I still have an obligation to see you.” I clenched my hands when she mentioned the word obligation.

“I’m not an obligation Jie-eun.” I can tell my expression darkened.

“I didn’t mean that. What I mean is your my boyfriend so I need to see you. Right?”

I didn’t answer her back and just waited for her to talk. When she notice that I’m not talking, she sighed.

“Jungkook?”

This is it. She will break up with me.

“Tell me.” I urged.

Ji-eun straightened and took my hand which rests on the table.

“I am going to Australia in 3 days.”

“In 3 days? Why so sudden?”

“I planned on putting up a business there with Joy and Seulgi. And we have planned this a long time ago. I think I will stay there for 2-3 months.”

Hearing this from her hurts. Of course it will always hurt. The way she comes up with decisions without even telling me first frustrates me.

Now she’s leaving me. But what can I do? It’s her decision. Nothing can stop Ji-eun when she wants something.

“Are you mad?” she asked.

“It’s okay.” I answered back and she smiled while squeezing my hand.

Looking at her now, I try to understand how I feel. There’s something in my heart that changed and I don’t know if it’s just because I’m disappointed in her or is it because I got really busy this week that I forgot how to kneel in front of her.

“Is this everything you wish to say?” I asked pushing her to say more. I’m really anticipating the break up question from her.

She paused and thought for a moment. “Nothing more. For now let’s eat.”

Ji-eun and I started eating without talking much.

“Jungkook, How is your teaching by the way? I hope the kids are not giving you a hard time.”

“Kids? They are 18 years old and above. They are not kids.” I said with a slightly raised voice. Ji-eun was surprised to hear me talk back like that.

“Oh..” she said then raising a brow she asked “Is there 18 year old student there who’s now got your attention?”

My eyes widen when she said those words and for some reason my mind flashed Lisa’s image.

‘No. Not her. She’s just my student. She’s a student!’ that I kept telling myself.

“Hey? Are you okay? I was just joking?” she chuckled while wiping her mouth with a napkin.

I tried to laugh to hide my confused expression.

What is really happenning to me?

When Ji-eun and I were done eating, I drove her to her home and rushed my car to where the orphanage was.

When I got there, it was already dark but I can still see the small building with the word Hope Children Orphanage.

I pulled my car on one corner and walked inside. When an old lady opened the door, I asked where Lisa was but sadly the lady said she went out for work.

“What work? And where is she working?” I asked.

“I don’t know where. She has a lot of part time jobs. And usually she comes back really late.”

“Can you please give me her number. I’ll just try to call her.”

“Oh sure. But please come inside first.”

The lady invited me inside a small office and I sat next to her table.

As she was scrolling her phone up to look for Lisa's, my eyes wandered around and noticed an old Nokia phone on the table.

"Wow! I didn't know people are still using this?"

The old woman looked at the phone in my hand and gasped.

"Oh! That's Lisa's phone. How come she left it here? Aishhh that careless girl!"

"This is Lisa's phone? Is she not using a smartphone?"

"That's her phone Mr. I'm afraid there is no use of giving you her number cause she left it here."

I sighed out of disappointment. I thought I was going to see her but I'm really unlucky this day.

I pressed it and sadly it was locked.

Wait! I have an idea! A smile crept though my lips when I thought of something.

"Excuse me Ma'am, but Is it okay if I take her phone with me?"

"Why?" she asked.

"So that I can call her later. I'll just leave my phone here and please tell her that from now on, this will be her new phone." I said and place my iphone on the woman's hand.

"But wai—"

She tried to stop me but I walked back quickly on my car.

I will not let this night pass by without talking to her.

Even just on the phone.

And I will not let her use this kind of phone again.

Author's Note

Another frustrating chapter for you guys lol

Teacher's Offer

Lisa's POV

"

Why would Mr. Jeon change his phone with mine?"

"I told you Lisa I don't know. This is the hundredth time you asked me that." mother Yasha almost rolled her eyes at me.

"But it just don't make sense to me? This is an iphone! Chaeyoung, Bambam, and Dahyun are the only ones who has this kind of phone. This is very expensive mother!" I said looking at phone in my hand.

"I don't understand too. People who are in love can be really impulsive." she said.

"In love? You mean Mr. Jeon? You're mistaken mother Yasha. He's just my teacher."

"If that's what you say so." Mother Yasha's teasing voice didn't go unnoticed. Then she left me there while laughing out loud.

Scratching my head I looked at the phone again and sighed. "What do I do with you?"

Suddenly the phone started ringing.

Oh crap! This must be him!

With nervously shaking fingers, I swiped the phone to answer.

"He.. He.. LLo?"

"Lisa?" Mr. Jeon's voice echoed from the other line. My palm sweated, my heart raced and my face reddened just hearing his voice.

"Mr. Jeon, why.. Why did you left your phone here?" I'm lucky I managed to form a sentence despite being tensed.

"Your phone is cracked. This not good to use." he said.

"But why? What will you use now?" I asked. Don't tell me he will use my old phone?

"I have few phones here. Don't worry."

"Oh…"

"Ahh.. Lisa?.." Now I can hear his tensed voice. God! Is he feeling the same too?

"Ye.. Yes Mr. Jeon?"

"Uhm.. Your classmates are coming tomorrow for a remedial class at my house. You should come too. I mean if your not busy or.."

"My classmates? Agreed to go on remedial?" the world must be turned upside down! I wanted to laugh but I'm afraid of being informal with Mr. Jeon. I can't talk to him like that.

"Yes, luckily I was able to convince them. So, are you coming?" he asked in rush.

"Uhmm.. I'll just try if I can catch up. I have a lot of work tomorrow." I said. I still need to babysit tomorrow. I need to earn more during weekends.

"How much do you earn a day?" he asked and I was taken a back.

"Excuse me?" I know he's rich but it's rude to ask these questions to someone who's not close to you.

"I'm sorry. I'm just.. I just want you to know that you should focus on your studies more than work Lisa. The exam is coming and—"

"I understand Mr. Jeon. I will try my best to go."

"Oh okay.."

Both of us went silent after that. I just waited for him to end the call but he he's not yet saying any farewell word.

We were just there listening to each other's breathing. And as each second goes by, it's becoming awkward.

"Uhm.." I started. I don't want to be rude but my face is now sweaty from pressing the phone on my face.

"Uhm.." Mr.Jeon said back. Maybe he doesn't know how to end the call because he's using my phone and it's not a smartphone?

I grew tired of waiting so I said,

"Mr. Jeon, you can press the color red phone logo to end the call."

"Excuse me?" he asked with his confused voice.

"I said you can push that end call button of my phone if you don't know how to use keypad phones." when I said these ,Mr. Jeon bursted out laughing. His laughing voice sent sweet signals in my system making me laugh back.

"What's funny?" I asked him when his laughter slowly faded.

"Of course I know how to use your phone. I was just surprised that you thought I don't how to use these ancient phones."

"They are not ancient!" I defended. Now I feel embarrassed.

"I'm sorry. I didn't mean it that way." he said appologetically.

"It's okay." I said.

We both got silent again and it started to become become really awkward again.

"Uhm.." I started. What should I say? It seems like he still want to talk or maybe he's just waiting for me to open up a conversation.

I tried to think of something to talk about but my mouth was quicker than my head so I asked,

"Mr. Jeon, how long are your fingers?"

I covered my mouth when those words escaped my mouth.

What has gotten into me?

What now Lisa?

Make a comeback, quick!

"Huh? Why do you want to know?" Mr. Jeon asked and I realized the damage and humiliation has been done.

"Uhm.. I just like your handwriting. Yeah.. That's it. It's related to the length of the fingers right?" I said and thank goodness we are just talking on the phone because if not, I would melt in embarrasment.

"Really? I didn't know that. But to answer your question, my middle finger is around six inches maybe? I'm not sure. I'll try to measure them tomorrow." he said innocently and thank God he didn't realized that I haven't for once attanded his class yet because the only time I got to school with him as a teacher, I spent it at detention the whole day.

But now I'm really blushing. Mr. Jeon will measure his fingers for me?

"Thank you." I simply said, for measuring your fingers. My thoughts added.

"Uhmm..Mr. Jeon I believe it is late and you should rest." finally I found the courage to end the call.

"Oh.. Yeah..I forgot. You need to rest too. Are you sleeping there?" he asked.

"Sleeping where?"

"At the orphanage."

"Uh.. Oh yes.." I said.

"How is the bed there?" he asked and I thought. Why are we having this weird conversation?

"It's good." I simply answered. I don't know if I should describe how hard it is and how small the bed.

Silence again…

"*Uhm Lisa?"*

"Mr. Jeon?"

"Are you staying there for good or you will go back to your house?" he asked with voice full of gentleness.

"I'm still thinking about it. I can't stay here at the orphanage for long. I'm only allowed to stay for few days. Maybe I'll just go back to our old house"

"But isn't it dangerous to stay there alone?"

"*I don't know. But that's the only place I can go now."*

"Lisa, you can stay at my house." I had to cover my mouth after he said those words.

Mr. Jeon is asking me to live in his house? Or just temporarily?

"What do you mean?" I asked my teacher back.

"You have no place to go and my house is wide enough for you to stay."

I thought for a second. This is making me realize that Mr. Jeon seems to want me to move in with him. I know he has good intentions and he just wants to help but it feels not right. I tried to think of ways to refuse and gladly my brain cooperated.

"I'm sorry Mr. Jeon but I think it will be bad for your reputation as a teacher if I stay there. And your girlfriend will not like it for sure." my voice cracked at the word girlfriend.

"Then I will tell her." he simply said.

My eyes widened at Mr. Jeon's words.

"What? Will she be fine with that?"

"Of course. She's kind. Don't worry." Now my chest is suddenly hurting again and I don't even know why.

Why am I feeling this way?

"Just bring your important things tomorrow. That's it good night Lisa."

"Mr. Jeon wait—" I did not agree yet and he just cut me off?

He’s weird.

When I lay on the small bed of the orphanage, his phone beeped.

1 SMS recieved

Lisa, if in case a girl named Ji-eun call you, just tell her that the number is not Mr. Jeon’s propriety anymore.

What the?

What is happening?

Am I dreaming?

So Mr. Jeon just asked me to stay at his house, he gave me his phone and now he said whoever this Ji-eun is that this is not his number anymore?

What’s wrong with this man?

I really don’t understand him.

I swear Mr. Jeon’s mysterious personality is not helping my confused heart.

Wait.

Is Ji-eun the name of the girlfriend?

My curiosity led my fingers to scan his contacts.

Wow! He has only 6 contacts here.

Dad, Mom, Jisoo, Jennie, Mr. Yang and Ji-eun.

Now I’m quite sure that Ji-eun is the girlfriend. And why do I feel like I’m becoming the next gossip girl?

But hey! I’m curious about Mr. Jeon’s girlfriend. I wonder if he has photos of her?

And that led me again to open his gallery.

What the?

There is nothing here.

He doesn’t have selfies or what.

If I am Mr. Jeon, I would take a selfie everyday. His goergeos face needs to be captured.

I sighed and just covered my body with a blanket.

Should I accept Mr. Jeon’s offer?

□

Author’s Note

If you were Lisa, what will you do?

Forced Offer

Jungkook‘s POV

After leaving the orphanage, I went straight at home.

Changing phones with Lisa feels so satisfying in an unknown way.

I stared at her phone in my hand and shook my head.

Why is she even using this?

She’s really weird.

The phone’s small screen is cracked already.

I tried to unluck it using the famous 123 pin and it luckily, it opened.

Why would she even lock this when no one would try to steal it?

I shook my head at my thought. I am being judgemental and it’s not good.

Now I wish the phone has a camera because Lisa’s phone has no pictures in them.

The contacts grabbed my attention.

Joonie, Bammie, Rośe, Chim, Sunshine, Yoongi, Jin, Tzuyu, Jeongyeon, Dahyun, Eunwoo and Mother Yasha are the only contacts here.

Well, this is a longer list than my contacts. Back then, I was too worried for Ji-eun to say that I’m cheating so I deleted all female contacts. Even if her contact has more than 30 male co-stars in them.

Except Jisoo and Jennie because they are my closest friends.

After an hour of waiting, I thought maybe it’s time to call her.

I nervously dialled my own number hoping she's back at the orphanage already.

But I was surprised that I can't call.

What the? The phone has no balance for me to call!

I sighed. Walked to my table. Opened the drawer where there are few back up phones. I took one phone and send Lisa's number enough balamce for me to call.

"He.. He.. LLo?" she answered.

"Lisa?" I had to confirm. What if it's the old woman.

"Mr. Jeon, why.. Why did you left your phone here?" she asked. Her voice is slightly worried.

"Your phone is cracked. This not good to use." I said.

"But why? What will you use now?" This girl really. She's worried, I can tell.

"I have few phones here. Don't worry."

"Oh…" is all that she say.

"Ahh.. Lisa?.." I called tensedly. I don't know why my chest is not calming down.

"Ye.. Yes Mr. Jeon?"

"Uhm.. Your classmates are coming tomorrow for a remedial class at my house. You should come too. I mean if your not busy or.."

"My classmates? Agreed to go on remedial?" Lisa's voice was slightly raised in disbelief. She really knows her classmates well.

"Yes, luckily I was able to convince them. So, are you coming?" I asked in rush. I really want her to come.

Why?

Because she's my student and she also needs the remedial.

"Uhmm.. I'll just try if I can catch up. I have a lot of work tomorrow." I was disappointed by her answer. Why is she working all the time? How much money does she need?

"How much do you earn a day?" I asked, I wish I could just offer her money just for her to come. .

"Excuse me?" Lisa asked in a pissed voice. And for a moment I got scared.

Wait what? An 18 year old student is now making me scared?

"I'm sorry. I'm just.. I just want you to know that you should focus on your studies more than work Lisa. The exam is coming and—"

"I understand Mr. Jeon. I will try my best to go."

"Oh okay.." I said. Hoping that she's not mad at me for being rude.

Both of us went silent after that. I don't know what to say but I don't want to end the call yet.

We were just there listening to each other's breathing. Her breathing sounds so peaceful compared to mine.

"Uhm.." she started. I hope she opens up something. Anything to talk about.

"Uhm.." I had to say back. But I can't think of words to say.

"Mr. Jeon, you can press the color red phone logo to end the call."

"Excuse me?" what does she mean?

"I said you can press that end call button of my phone if you don't know how to use keypad phones." I laughed so hard at her words. This girl is funny. I was born 6 years older than her and she just questioned my knowledge in phones?

"What's funny?" she asked, she's lightly laughing too. And her voice sounds so cute when she laughs.

"Of course I know how to use your phone. I was just surprised that you thought I don't how to use these ancient phones."

"They are not ancient!" she defended.

"I'm sorry. I didn't mean it that way." I said appologetically.

"It's okay." she said.

We both got silent again and my brain search for ways to continue the conversation but I can't think of any.

"Uhm.." she's about to say something. Yhis is good.

"Mr. Jeon, how long are your fingers?" she asked making my brows furrow.

If this are other girls, I would think she's flirting with me. But this is Lisa. She's too innocent for this.

"Huh? Why do you want to know?" I asked.

"Uhm.. I just like your handwriting. Yeah.. That's it. It's related to the length of the fingers right?" But she's not seen my handwriting I believe. She's never been to class after the time that she punched me.

"Really? I didn't know that. But to answer your question, my middle finger is around six inches maybe? I'm not sure. I'll try to measure them tomorrow." I said to give her peace.

"Thank you." she simply said. Now I have to find ways to measure my fingers. Should I measure each of them?

"Uhmm..Mr. Jeon I believe it is late and you should rest." Oh no! She wants to end the call already but I understanfld she needs to rest. I don't even know how hard her work is.

"Oh.. Yeah..I forgot. You need to rest too. Are you sleeping there?" I asked.

"Sleeping where?"

"At the orphanage."

"Uh.. Oh yes.." she answered.

"How is the bed there?" I asked. I just want to know if the bed is comfortable for her.

"It's good." she answered without giving too much details.

Silence again…

"*Uhm Lisa?"*

"Mr. Jeon?"

"Are you staying there for good or you will go back to your house?" I asked gently.

"I'm still thinking about it. I can't stay here at the orphanage for long. I'm only allowed to stay for few days. Maybe I'll just go back to our old house"

"But isn't it dangerous to stay there alone?"

"*I don't know. But that's the only place I can go now."*

"Lisa, you can stay at my house." I really want her to stay here. I can't protect her if she's away.

"What do you mean?" she asked, confused.

"You have no place to go and my house is wide enough for you to stay."

Silence followed after.

"I'm sorry Mr. Jeon but I think it will be bad for your reputation as a teacher if I stay there. And your girlfriend will not like it for sure."

Oh I forgot about Ji-eun. But I think she won't mind. And about others knowing. I think we should not tell the school that she will live here. I'm aware of the scandals that may arise if someone would know.

"Then I will tell her." I said.

"What? Will she be fine with that?" she asked in surprise.

"Of course. She's kind. Don't worry." I assured her. I hope she's feeling fine. I want to tell more about Ji-eun just to lessen Lisa's worry but I didn't. For some reason, it is somewhat weird to talk about Ji-eun with Lisa.

Afraid that she would turn down the offer I said,

"Just bring your important things tomorrow. That's it good night Lisa."

I ended the call without hearing her answer. She will live here and it's final.

But what if Ji-eun calls Lisa?

I draft a message and sent it to her

Lisa, if in case a girl named Ji-eun call you, just tell her that the number is not Mr. Jeon's propriety anymore.

After sending her that, I went to sleep. Hoping that Lisa will stay at the same house for the coming nights.

Author's Note

Now you know what's on his mind
Lol

Class President

Jungkook's POV

"What is this?" my eyes almost fell from its socket when I read the answers of my student from the previous exam.

"Jin, you were asked What is the strongest force on planet? And you answered Love???"

"Uh-huh" Jin proudly smiled.

"And Yoongi, You were asked to describe a relationship where both benefits and you answered Communism?"

"They are all the same. Every word which ends in -ism is a kind of relationship" the shirtless man answered nonchalanty as he lay on one of my sofas.

Shaking my head, I continue to the next one.

"Jimin, the question was Can a man still reproduce with one testicle and you answered No, girls don't find that shit attractive?"

"Because it is. Just ask my girl classmates if they would like to have sex with a man with only one testicle, I'm sure they won't." he confidently said.

"How can you even curse on a written exam?" I shook my head and he just grinned.

"Hoseok, the question was What happens during puberty to a boy and you answered He says goodbye to childhood? Like seriously?"

"Seriously! Do you think like I'm joking sir?" he answered smiling ear to ear.

"What is the highest frequency noise that a human can register and you answered Mariah Carey? Are you being serious Jeongyeon?"

“Sir, have you ever listened to her whistle tones? It is almost like that of a dolphin” she asked me back making me roll my eye.

“Tzuyu, what is this? The question was Where was the Korean Declaration of Independence signed and you answered at the bottom of the paper?”

“Is it wrong Mr. Jeon? Should it be signed at the top or at the back?” she asked guiltily and I heaved a deep sigh.

“Dahyun, the question was what is meant by hermaphrodite and your answer is Lady Gaga?”

“Isn’t Lady Gaga an example Mr. Jeon?” she asked innocently.

“Eunwoo, what ended in 1896, and you answered 1895?”

“Actually sir I was choosing between 1895 or December.” he said while holding his chin.

This is what happens when you’re only handsome. I thought.

Namjoon looked at me worriedly. For sure he knows that I’m about to explode.

The class barged inside my house at exactly 7 in the morning. Namjoon, Jin, Yoongi, Hoseok, Jimin, Eunwoo, Tzuyu, Dahyun and Jeongyeon came.

Jimin said his supposed monthsary date with Chaeyoung was cancelled because Chae was grounded for a reason Jimin didn’t disclose.

Bambam on the other hand is not feeling well that’s why he skipped class yesterday.

The boys were really disappointed when I admitted that the other teachers will not come. Jisoo and the rest said that they will also have to do a remedial for their own classes. And now that it’s only me, I find it really stressful.

Especially that I find out how they answered their previous exams. And the exam was even easy to not score perfectly.

Now these kids are all around my house, as if they are having a picnic, some are having pillow fight, one is sleeping, some are watching TV and now I see Jin is opening the fridge like what the heck?

Manners should be part of this remedial too, I thought while Shaking my head.

My hand scanned more of the exam papers when a name caught my attention.

Lisa Manoban.

I felt sad upon seeing her paper. She got 5/50 correct answers and mostly she left the questions blank.

Jihyo said Lisa was a good performer at school but her performance dropped down this year.

This could be a result of her absenteeism. And that is what I'm worried about.

And the fact that she's not here now makes it more frustrating.

"Mr. Jeon, why are you staringat Lisa's paper?" Jeongyeon curious voice echoed beside me. I quickly put the test papers down and cleared my throat.

"Okay. Now quit playing around, we will start your remedial lesson!" I shouted for all of them to hear.

And the class walked to the living room and we began the lesson, I gave them problems to solve and questions to answer. When they answer it wrongly, I would tell the right answer and would explain it. Namjoon would always help me when some of his classmates won't get my way of explaining.

Looking at him, I am very proud of this man. I know and I'm sure he has a bright future ahead and I really hope his classmates can catch up with him.

Namjoon continued taking over for me as I prepare the food for my whole class. I plan to just do a barbeque outside for them to chill out when the doorbell rang.

I grew conscious when I heard it.

Is it her? Did she finally came?

I walked out of the kitchen to see it myself and was really happy to see her there.

“Hey Lisa! Long time no see!” the class run to her to squeeze her in for a hug.

Lisa’s face brightened seeing her classmates and I can’t help but be happy too.

“I miss you guys!” I hear her say.

“We miss you more!”

I went closer to her to greet her “I’m glad that you came.” the eyes of my students travelled to me making me realize that I’m acting weird in front of them.

“Wow! You’re friends already? Last time I checked Lisa punched Mr. Jeon’s nose?” Jin joked laughingly and the rest of the class laughed too except for Lisa and I who knew a lot had happened after that incident.

“Lisa already apologized. There is no grudge between us. Right Lisa?” I said hoping that she goes along to avoid suspicion from the class.

Lisa nodded lighly and smiled.

“Well now, Let’s proceed.” Namjoon said and the girls pulled Lisa to sit on the nearby sofa.

I looked at her happily as she was talking to Tzuyu.

When she caught me staring at her, that’s my que to go back to the kitchen.

Why am I being excited over an 18-year old girl? This is really not me.

I went on the backyard and prepapred the grill, taking the trays of meat with me I began grilling.

My backyard has a long outdoor table and long wooden chairs on the sides. And the trees in it serves as it’s canopy.

Later on, I called for the class to come and join for a barbeque lunch.

The weather seems to cooperate this day. It is not too warm and it's not raining. It's just the right kind of weather for an outdoor lunch.

Lisa's POV

I can't believe Mr. Jeon would actually prepare this kind of food for the whole class.

Now, I start to admire him more.

Not as a man of course but as a teacher.

His efforts can be really felt through this.

My classmates excitedly jumped in on the food prepared by Mr. Jeon. Soon his backyard was filled with laughters because of Jin's jokes.

I took a glance at the man who is still busy preparing more sticks of barbeque, and that's when I noticed how good his built is.

He is just wearing a plain white shirt and a sweatpants matching with a slippers. I can't help but admire the muscles in him. His chest looks hard and his biceps would flex every time he moves.

His veiny arms also ads up to his sexiness and now I feel really lost until the same eyes I am looking at locked with mine.

My breathing hitched and my mouth felt dry.

He was looking at me with his warm eyes and I don't know if I would look away or not.

But the coward me pushed me to look away. Now I continued eating without glancing back at him.

Even though I can feel his eyes are still on me.

It was already 2 when we were done eating. My classmates and I helped Mr. Jeon in cleaning up. Then we gathered around the living room again to continue our class. That's when Mr. Jeon decided for us to have a short nap.

The girls settled on the sofa to take a nap while the boys slept on the carpeted floor.

Being inside Mr. Jeon's house gives me an overwhelming feeling and that makes it hard for me to sleep.

So I stood and walked out to have some fresh air.

"You're not sleeping?" I turned to my back right away when I heard his voice.

"Uhm.. Sleep won't find me." I replied.

Mr. Jeon's eyes lingered on me weakening my knees making me lean on the wall to balance myself out.

"Is there any problem?" he asked with his manly voice.

I stared back at his eyes and answered. "About your offer, I.. I.." I can't say the words because I'm too shy.

"You agree on staying here?" he asked with a hint of excitement in his eyes.

"If it's okay with you sir. I.. I can work in return. You can ask me to do anything well except my.." the stupid me now regretted the last words.

"Except your?" he raised his brow.

"Nothing. You can ask me anything sir." I said.

He stared at me confusedy and later on his lips tugged upwards.

"Don't worry. I will not ask you that." he said making me blush.

Oh my God! He got what I meant?

I mean why did I even say that?

Now he must be thinking that I'm a pervert or what.

I just nodded and bit my lip in embarrassment.

"Mr.Jeon, thank you." I said.

"For what?"

“For helping me that night, for letting me stay, for the phone and now for helping my classmates. But I really want to return your phone back. I want my phone back. It is still working.” I said.

“Helping you and your classmates is a normal thing to do for a teacher. And don’t worry about the phone. I have 5 of them” he said.

“But—”

“Lisa, go and take your nap, we still got a long of lessons to catch up later.” he said with voice full of authority.

I nodded and walked back inside.

Class 3-C POV

It was already 4 when the class continued the remedial session.

All of them are finally getting major points on every subject. Thanks to Mr. Jeon and Namjoon.

They were still at the living room when the doorbell rang.

Mr. Jeon quickly stood to open, but he was surprised to an angry looking woman outside.

Without saying anything, the woman barged inside the house. Scanned the class and shouted, “Joonie! What are you doing wasting your time with these pea-brained students?”

Namjoon’s eyes widen seeing his mom inside the teacher’s house.

“Mom! Why are you here?” he asked slighlty glancing at Mr. Jeon.

“I’m here to pick you up. You have to focus on your studies alone. You are way ahead of them and you don’t need to stoop on their level.” Mrs. Kim said looking at the students as if they disgust her.

“But Mom!” Namjoon’s eyes got teary after what his mom said.

“No buts Joonie! Your future is almost bright but if you continue sticking with these low life friends of yours, they will drag you back!”

“Excuse me ma’am but I think you are crossing the line.” Mr. Jeon didn’t hold himself back this time. He knows there’s something wrong with the Class President and now he’s sure that Namjoon’s perfect scores are always forced by his perfectionist mother.

“And who are you to say that I crossed the line for my son? You are just a teacher and I’m the mother. He follows what I say!” The woman looked at Mr. Jeon from head to toe in a mocking way.

“Namjoon is at the age where he can take care of his own future. He is not wasting his time being here. Instead he’s developing his sense of responsibility being the class leader that I’m sure you forgot to teach him.”

“Excuse me? How dare you question how I teach my son? When you are just an underpaid substitute teacher. My son’s future is brighter than your stupid job!”

“Mom! Please stop!” a teary eyed Namjoon shouted. He’s at the verge of crying because of his mother.

“Now you’re defending this teacher of yours Joonie? Come on! Let’s go home! You need to study more to get a 100 percent score to get in the best university in Seoul. Something your classmates will not even get even if they work their butts off now studying!”

“Mom stop please! I can’t do this anymore.”

“What are you saying Joonie!”

“I’m not perfect mom. I can’t be perfect anymore! I can’t obey you in everything. I can’t stand the pressure you have put on my shoulders since I was young.” this time Namjoon didn’t stop crying.

“Joonie, you’re embarrassing your own mother!” the woman tried to silence his son but he kept going on.

“I cheated! I cheated a lot of times!”

Everyone inside the living room gasped when he said those words.

“Can’t you see mom? I cheated that’s why I always perfect exams. I cheated because I had to. I cheated because I need to be perfect for you. I cheated because you can’t accept my flaws! I’m not perfect mom. I’m just a human. But you, my own mother made me do this!”

His mother’s eyes softened. She didn’t know she was this harsh. She didn’t know that her son is already hurting. And now she made him do this. All because she’s been obsessed with his bright future when all this time, she was ruining it.

“I didn’t know.” Mrs. Kim stepped closer to his crying son.

“But Mr. Jeon changed everything mom. He made me believe that I can dream high and work for them even just little by little. For once he said that he doesn’t care about our academic standing, because we can always work it out. He’s not forcing us to be perfect but he wants us to our best that we can. Mr. Jeon taught me to be responsible for my own future mom. He’s been my inspiration. Not only to me but to my friends too. So please stop insulting him. He deserves to be praised.”

Mr. Jeon’s heart warmed at the young man’s words. He didn’t know he’s became an instrument to these young children. And that’s when he decided that from now on, he will try his best for the class.

“I’m.. I’m sorry Joonie. Mom is so sorry. Please stop crying.” she said while pulling her son into her arms.

The class looked at the mother and son. Now they know that everything can be settled with just communication.

Mrs. Kim turned her attention to Mr. Jeon and bowed at him in 90 degrees before saying “Mr. Jeon, I apologize for my rudeness. And thank you so much for looking after my son. From now on I will listen to him and I will trust him more.”

Mr. Jeon smiled at the woman. “I will do my best as their teacher Ma’am.”

That moment, the woman left his son and his classmates alone. They continue their lesson until it was already 8 in the evening.

One by one, the students left Mr. Jeon's house.

When it was only Eunwoo and Lisa left inside, he asked her "Where is your house? We can go home together." he said but Lisa shook her head.

"You go ahead. I will ask Mr. Jeon some questions first." she said. The guy looked at Lisa confusedly.

"Are you sure? But it is dangerous to go home alone?" Lisa tensed. How can she make the guy go away without telling him that from now on, he will live at Mr. Jeon's house?

"It's okay. I swear." Lisa said. After constantly assuring him that she will be fine. The guy finally left making it Lisa the only person now in the living room.

"Eunwoo really cares for you." she turned quickly to Mr. Jeon who is now looking at the door with a colder expression.

"Yes. Maybe he loves me." she joked innocently but that just worsened Mr. Jeon's bad mood.

He didn't laugh nor say anything. Instead he proceed to the kitchen to make him and Lisa a dinner. Leaving a dumbstruck Lisa alone.

Lisa tilted her head at how Mr. Jeon acted.

"He's really weird." she muttered.

A while ago, he was smiling and now he's frowning.

What's up with Mr. Jeon?

Author's Note

What do you think of Mr. Jeon?

Which exam answer is your favorite so far? 😂

By the way, If you see mispelled words please forgive me. I'm too lazy to edit. Lol

The plot of the Class President was inspired by a kdrama which I forgot the title lol

Knowing Her

Lisa's POV

I was waiting for Mr. Jeon to give me instructions on what to do.

A while ago, he just left me at the living room to prepare something for dinner.

I really want to ask him now if I should help him with the cooking but he's not talking. His lips are tightly closed. His eyes are not leaving the pan.

And I am just here looking at him as he cooks some chicken, some potatoes amd vegetables.

Now, this is really awkward.

He's not even looking at me or what.

But after 3 more minutes of waiting, I can't hold back anymore.

"Uhm.. Mr. Jeon, how can I help y—"

"Just sit there." he pointed at the dining chair with a blank expression. Still he's not looking at me.

Is Mr. Jeon in a bad mood?

I wonder what pissed him though?

Is it Namjoon's mom?

But she apologized already.

I took light steps on the table and sat on one chair. Then I waited for him to finish.

When he was done, he placed the chicken and some vegetables on the table, then he finally sat across me.

"Here, let's eat." Mr. Jeon said. His eyes focused on the food.

Although it's very awkward to eat with him, I didn't say much more and just followed suit.

Mr. Jeon is surprisingly quiet. I wonder if this is his real personality when a few are around.

There is probably more of his side that I don't know and haven't seen yet and that is one reason why I should always take consideration how I act around him.

"Mr. Jeon, thank you for the food." I said placing my chopsticks down.

Finally he raised his head to look at me.

"You're done already?" he asked, confused.

I just nodded and smiled lightly.

"Is.. Is the food bad? I mean I can still cook other food if you don't like this one." he stood.

"No.. No.. It was really good Mr. Jeon."

"Then why eat less? If it's good?" he sat back down still with his worried eyes.

"I'm full already." I lied.

"Lisa!" he warned when he guessed that I'm lying.

"I'm sorry. I'm just.. I just don't feel comfortable eating with you." I said, looking down.

"Why?"

"Because.. Because you're not talking to me. I feel like you don't like me being here. If you find me being here an inconvenience, I can just go back home and—"

"What are you saying? Of course that's not true. I asked you to stay here that means I want you to be here. Don't go back to your house Lisa. We already talked about this." he said. Now I noticed that his eyes has softened.

"But, a while ago you were silent and—"

"I'm just not in the mood. Because you.. You"

"Me? What about me?" I asked pointing at myself.

What did I even do to piss him off?

Mr. Jeon groaned in frustration and said “Forget it. Just please eat more. I’m sorry if you feel uncomfortable. I’ll try my best to get rid of my emotions.” he said and I nodded.

I don’t understand what he meant by getting rid of emotions but I continued eating anyway. I haven’t eaten a food as good as this for years and now Mr. Jeon just offered me this. I feel so honored.

But I don’t plan on staying here for free. I want to do something for Mr. Jeon in return. Anything just to unburden my stay here.

“I’m glad that you eat a lot.” he said and I blushed in embarrassment.

Oh my god! I ate all the food!

This is very embarrassing for a girl to eat like a man.

Mr. Jeon noticed that I got shy so he smiled.

“From now on, I want you to eat good Lisa.” his words almost brought me to heaven, that my insides are exploding. If that’s even a good explanation.

Oh Ms. Ji-eun, you are so lucky to have this man!

“Uhm.. Mr. Jeon?” I asked when we began clearing up the table.

“Yes?”

“Can I also cook?”

“You? You know how to cook?” he asked raising his brow as if not believing that I can cook.

“Yes, I know. I have worked a lot of times as a cook. I may not know fancy dishes but I know how to cook the basic and simple ones.” I said. Walking to the sink to wash the dishes.

“Oh really?” he asked looking so surprised.

“So that’s your work? You cook?” he asked walking beside me and turning his body slightly to me as I do the washing.

“Hmm.. Not all the time. I work on other stuffs too.” I said.

“What other stuffs?” Mr. Jeon’s eyes fixed on me while I managed to avoid his intense gaze by washing.

“Sometimes I work as a dishwasher like this.” I said pointing at the plates. “Then I babysit kids, I do car washing, I tried shoe cleaning and I’m really good at it” I said smiling proudly.

“Then I work as a food delivery girl, I sometimes tutor shoolers just the basics like reading, I beacame a gasoline girl, a waitress at night, I’m a good masseuse too” I said earning an excited look from him.

“Then I sometimes cook at the diner near the school then I do homecleaning. Actually, there’s a lot more Mr. Jeon, I just forgot.” I explained.

Mr. Jeon smiled so sweetly at me after I said that. “Wow! You’re a very hardworking girl. Lisa”

“Thank you!” I said proudly.

“Your guardian, he’s not your father right?” he asked.

“No, he’s not. He’s my uncle.” I said.

“Your real uncle?”

“Yes, my real uncle.” I replied as I finished my washing.

Mr. Jeon’s curious eyes didn’t go unnoticed. I know he wants to ask more but I’m already done with the washing. When he saw me finished he said,

“Lisa, are you tired?” he asked.

“Uhm not yet. Why?”

“Can you tell me more about you. I mean if you’re not sleepy yet. We can talk for a while.”

Oh god.

I can’t explain but Mr. Jeon is really making me feel like there are butterflies inside my stomach. I feel like I’m happy.

Yeah, happy.

I am happy.

“Sure.” I said.

“Okay.” he grinned excitedly. ” Go ahead to the guest room, from now on that will be your room.”

“Oh.. But where are you going?” I asked.

“I’ll just make us a coffee.” he said then paused. “I’ll just follow you in your room.”

And then again, his words made me nervous.

I really think I’m being pervert when he is around but what can I do? My brain is processing his words differently as if we are going to do something else on that room.

Oh my god Lisa! What are you doing fantasizing about your teacher!

I was just standing their looking lost when he cleared his throat.

“We will just talk. Don’t worry.” now he answered my pervy mind.

“Oh.. Okay..” I said then turn my back to go to the guest room.

Guest Room

When I got inside, I checked my self first. Looking at the mirror, I fixed my hair and my checked my teeth.

I know I’m being weird but I don’t want to smell or look bad if he’s around.

I check my clothes. Simple shirt paired with a black pants and a white sneakers. I really look plain.

“Well, as if I have a choice.” I said referring to what I’m wearing.

“What choice?” Mr. Jeon’s voice echoed through the room, startling me.

“Oh.. You’re here.” I said.

“Here, drink your milk. I don’t want you to drink coffee because it will be hard for you to sleep later.” he said.

“Thank you!” I said as I take the glass of milk.

Nervously, I sat on the bed. Mr. Jeon does the same but he sat at the corner far away from me. Maybe to give me space.

He sipped his coffee then asked “Lisa, where are your parents?”

Of course he will ask this. I have anticipated this question already.

“My mother left me my uncle’s care because she has a new family. My father died a long time ago. Since my mother left me, I haven’t seen her yet.” Mr. Jeon’s eyes softened more. I know he pity me now. But I really don’t like people feeling sorry for my story.

Jungkook’s POV

“How long has your uncle been abusing you?” I asked her.

“Since I was young.” she answered briefly.

I really want to ask her more. In what ways does he abuse her. But I don’t want to trigger bad memories on her.

“Lisa, is it okay if I ask you how your uncle abuses you?” I said. Lisa sighed and drank the glass of milk in one go.

“He makes me work all the time. I’m the one who feeds him. Buy him drinks and pays for girls to fuck.” when she said the word fuck, her eyes widen and looked at me apologetically.

“I’m sorry for saying that word Mr. Jeon” she apologized.

“It’s okay.” I said. Besides, the word sounds good to hear when it came from her mouth.

Oh shit.

Jeon, What are you even thinking?!!!

I mentally curse at myself for thinking like that.

This is a young girl I am talking with, I can’t just associate her words with my matured thinking.

“So yeah, if I don’t follow his orders, he would threaten to rape me.”

“What?” that piece of shit! I swear I will do everything to lock him in jail forever.

“Mr. Jeon? Are you okay?” Lisa asked while looking at my hand. I didn’t know I was gripping the mug too hard already.

But remembering the time that I saved her makes me wonder if he has abused her sexually.

“I’m okay. I just can’t believe your own uncle would do that. But has he ever tried to do that other than the time that I caught him?” I asked and she shook her head.

“No, that was the first time he attempted to sexually abuse me. Because he was really mad at me that night.”

“Thank goodness nothing happened.” I said and she nodded.

“Thank goodness you came at the right time Mr. Jeon.” she slightly bowed her head to thank me.

“But why was he mad at you enough to harrass you like that?”

“Uh.. Uhm.. Because.. My uncle got mad knowing that I have a boyfriend. That’s why. He strictly prohibits me to have a boyfriend.” she chuckled bitterly while shaking her head.

“Oh..” is all I had to say. I didn’t know she has one. I thought she’s single.

And honestly. It’s kinda disappointing.

I mean. She’s young. She should just stay away from guys to focus on school.

“So.. Uh.. Who is your boyfriend.” I finally find the courage to ask. I don’t even know why I’m tensed around her when she’s just my student.

“Me?” she asked while looking around as if there are other people inside her room.

“Yes you.”

“I don’t have a boyfriend Mr. Jeon. I never had one because I’m afraid for my uncle to know.” she said.

“Oh.. I thought..” I smiled knowing that.

“Well, I think at your age right now, you should refrain from being in a relationship because it can distract you from your studies and sometimes being in a relationship will just hurt you in the end and also men these days especially those of your age ends up being jerks and they would cheat on you and they will leave you when the time comes and also younger guys with the same age as you are not yet responsible with decision making they are impulsive and does a lot of shits and i just don’t want you to get hurt because you have been through a lot and you are still young you will meet the right one when the right time comes and also having a boyfriend can also harm your—”

“Mr. Jeon, I get what you mean.” Lisa’s voice cut my short explanation making me look at her.

“Oh? Really?” I asked and she chuckled softly.

“Yes, I will avoid being in a relationship.” She said and finally it was time for me to smile.

“Good.” I said, nodding my head continuosly. “Good. That’s good. That’s good Lisa.”

I’m just concerned you know.

“Besides, no one has ever said they like me.” Lisa made my eyes go wide.

“Seriously?” I asked. That’s impossible. They must be blind for not seeing how beautiful she is. I mean look at those big round eyes, that cute nose, those soft-looking plumped lips, that gorgeous smile, those curves, those leg—

“Sadly and I haven’t seen any man worth liking yet.” she laughed and I frowned.

“Ever?” I asked raising a brow.

“Ever.” she answered surely.

Well that’s sad. I thought..

“Mr. Jeon, I feel sleepy. Is it okay if I go to sleep now?” she asked innocently, not even aware of how my chest is weirdly aching now.

“Oh.. Okay..” I quickly stood and took her glass. When I took the glass on her hand, our skin lighlty brushed sending shivers down my spine.

What is this?

Why am I feeling this?

I quickly walked to the door trying my best to shrug off the feeling inside me.

“Goodnight Lisa.” I said looking at her for the last time. She looked at my occupied hands which holds both her glass and my mug and she rushed to me to open the door.

“Good night Mr. Jeon. Thank you again” she said and I lightly nodded.

I don’t want to open my mouth to talk more because my heart is obviously racing and I’m sure I will just stutter if I utter any words.

This is the night where I questioned my real feelings for Ji-eun.

Author’s Note

I’m so sorry for the very late update.

I hope y’all forgive me.

But have you ever wondered why Taehyung is not part of the cast? 😁

Providing Care

Lisa's POV

When I open my eyes, the clean and wide room was the first view I see. I automatically smiled when I remember that my last night was spent here. At Mr. Jeon's guest room.

I can't help but thank God for giving me this once in a lifetime opportunity of meeting a man as great as Mr. Jeon.

Last night, he was really caring and gentle with me which is now added to my long list of reason why I admire him. I mean my teacher.

Hoping for another day of interaction with him, I quickly went to the bathroom for a bath. Of course I need to bath. Who knows if Mr.Jeon suddenly hugs me or what.

Haha my imagination is unbelievable really.

I took a warm shower and cleaned myself well. When I was done with my bath and my toothbrushing, I wore my usual home clothings which were tightly packed on my backpack.

I had to carry a small backpack yesterday because I don't want my classmates to know that I am moving in at Mr. Jeon's house. That would surely be a scandal especially if Jeongyeon knows.

But Tzuyu told me yesterday that Jeongyeon is now trying to change by avoiding spreading gossips and rumors. Tzuyu also added that Jeongyeon has deactivated her twitter account.

And it's funny because I don't have a twitter account to know these things because my previous phone is not a smartphone.

Now that I look and smell decent, I went out of the guest room to look for Mr. Jeon. It's already 8 in the morning so I guess he's already up.

But when I went down, he was not there. Not in the kitchen, not in the living room, not in his gym, not in the backyard. He's no where to be seen.

Well I guess he's a heavy sleeper during sundays?

I went back to the house and decided to clean it. I made sure everything is perfectly clean from all the four corners of the house.

Then I went to the kitchen to make us some breakfast.

Looking at the fridge, I grabbed something to cook.

I really want to make him the normal breakfast like bacon, pancakes, eggs but for some reason, my hand picked ingredients to make a beef soup with veggies for a nutritious choice.

And now I feel really weird for prepapring a nutritious soup for breakfast only for Mr. Jeon.

Maybe my mind is processing ways of taking care of him because he's been so good to me.

After cooking, I grew anxious of waiting for him to go down.

I don't want the soup to get cold so I ran on the stairs to go to his room. I avoided the elevator because I think it is power consuming to be using the elevator when you're just going on the second floor.

Once I was in front of his door which is just across mine, I pressed my ears on the door to listen if he's awake already. But sadly, the room is quiet.

"Mr. Jeon? Can I come in?" I asked.

No answer.

I knocked again.

"Mr. Jeon? Are you awake?" I asked again but still no answer.

I didn't wait for him to answer anymore because I felt strange of not seeing him so I pushed the door open which is

luckily not locked the whole time.

Mr. Jeon's Room

And there I saw him.

I blushed when I realized that he's not wearing any shirt. His lower body was cover by a blanket but his chest and abs were exposed.

Oh God! How can a man's body be this perfect?

I walked to him and tried to wake him up for breakfast but when I got closer, I noticed that he was breathing heavily and sweating a lot.

Oh no. He's not okay!

Is he sick?

I sat on the corner of his bed and pressed my palm on his forehead to check him, that's when I knew he has a high fever.

"Mr. Jeon? Are you alright?" I asked but he just groaned.

"hmmm"

"Mr. Jeon, wait here. I'll be back quick!" I said and went down now using the elevator, I took a towel and cold water to compress.

I ran back to him and started wiping his body with the cold cloth. Every time my hands would move, he would moan.

I didn't stopped wiping him until his body temperature went down.

I looked at the perfect man in front of me while admiring his features. He's effortlessly breathtaking even if he is sick.

It was already noon when I decided that he needs to eat so I reheat the soup I made and took medicine and a bottle of water for him to drink. Imagine how I look like carrying all of these things as I go upstairs. Thanks so much to those who invented elevators, I thought .

When I got inside Mr. Jeon's room, he's still sleeping. But I really need to have him eat or else he cannot take the

medicine.

“Mr. Jeon, wake up” I said but he didn’t.

My hand went to his strong arms and shake them lightly. “Mr. Jeon, please wake up. You need to eat.” I said but he just lazily groaned.

“Mr. Jeon! I swear if you don’t wake up, I will leave you here and I will go back to that shitty house so you will be alone! No one will take care of you—”

“Who says you are going home?“his sleepy voice cut my threats.

He heard me?

Oh my Gosh! What now Lisa?

A while ago I act so tough but now my tongue seemed to be stucked and it won’t move.

Mr. Jeon’s puffy eyes opened and looked at me. “You are not going home! understand?” he said.

And just like a little girl, I politely nodded. Then he closed his eyes to go back to sleep.

But then I raised my brow and put my hands on my hips. This man cannot simply use his charms on me!

“Mr. Jeon! How can you be so stubborn! I said you would eat. If you don’t—”

“Fine fine.. I’m sitting.. See?” he said as he quickly sat up.

I pressed my lips tightly to avoid my embarrassing self from smiling ear to ear at him.

“Here, you eat this.” I said, handing the bowl of soup to him.

“I thought you said you will take care of me? Why are you not feeding me then?” a smirk formed on his lips and I rolledy eyes.

But deep down I’m screaming.

What the hell?

It just sounds flirting to me! Gosh!

“Okay, I will feed you but you need to finish all of this!” I said with a warning voice.

The man grinned showing his cute bunny teeth.

“Ow! It’s hot!” he complained.

“Oh.. Sorry Mr. Jeon!” I panicked.

He moved his burnt tongue out and I had to look away because he looks so hot.

Seriously Lisa?

I took another spoonful of soup and lighlty blow it,

“Here” I said

Then our eyes met. I didn’t know he was already staring at me intently and now I can’t take off my eyes away from him.

Mr. Jeon’s face seemed to be getting closer to mine. And as if a spell casted that I cannot break, I wasn’t able to hold my self back.

His eyes were looking at the depths of my soul through my eyes but then his gaze moved down to my lips.

I had to bit my lip out of anticipation.

Our nose was already touching when I felt a hot liquid soaked my pants.

When I looked down, I realized that the soup on the spoon wetted my pants.

“Oh.. Sorry” I said looking away. And moving my face further from him.

Mr. Jeon also looked away then he cleared his throat.

“I.. I will just eat by myself Lisa.” he tensedly said and I had to give him the bowl.

Well, that was really awkward.

I stood and said “after you’re done eating. Please take that medicine. I will just change my pants.” I walked out without looking much at him.

When my weak body was finally out of the door, I didn't stop my self from covering my blushing face.

Did we just?

Almost kissed?

Or it was just my imagination?

Now, I can't fight the growing feelings inside me anymore.

I know deep down in me that my feelings for Mr. Jeon is not just an admiration for a great teacher but a special feeling for great man.

Later that night, I had to check on him again to see if he's gotten better

Mr. Jeon stayed in his room for the whole afternoon and the awkward me only went back at 3pm to give him food and another medicine to take.

Now that it's past six in the evening, I had to check on his temperature again and ask him if he's hungry already.

When I got inside, Mr. Jeon was sleeping.

I walked closely to him and pressed my palm on his forehead.

He's still hot but not burning like this morning. He seemed to be sleeping peacefully so I don't want to wake him up. I just decided to leave him there to rest.

When I was about to turn to leave, a strong pair of arms managed to pull me down.

That's when I realized I was already wrapped around Mr. Jeon's strong arms.

My eyes widened and my heart thumped out of my chest crazily at how we look like.

My body is now pressed to his hard ones and the fact that his breathing is so warm makes me lose all my sanity.

"I tried to scoot out of his arms but tightened his grip to my body as I was on top of him.

“Don’t move” his husky voice said. His eyes were still close as if he’s dreaming.

“Mr. Jeon.. I need to—”

“Don’t move please. I need you” he said groggily.

I got confused and thought he must be dreaming about his girlfriend. Of course the butthurt me frowned. “Mr. Jeon, this is Lisa” I said to remind him that I’m clearly not his girlfriend for him to need.

“I need you….Lisa.” he muttered.

Okay..wait what? He need what?

“Mr. Jeon?” I asked again.

“Lisa please don’t move. I need you… I feel cold” his words were so clear that I asked myself if he’s just dreaming or what.

But when I realized that he said that it’s me who he needs, I didn’t moved anymore.

I just wrapped around my arms around his neck and that’s when he finally smiled.

The next thing I knew, we were already sleeping as our bodies are pressed on each other.

Author’s Note

Is Lisa being a bad girl for doing this to Mr. Jeon even if he has a girlfriend?

Meeting The Girlfriend

Lisa's POV

The next day, I woke up next to Mr. Jeon.

At first I was confused why I am in this room and why we are next to each other but then I realized that he pulled me to him last night.

His body feels so comfortable to be with so I slept peacefully next to him. But right now, his hold on me loosened and I can feel that his temperature has gone back to normal. So I pushed my self away from him just to save us both from the embarrassment if we see each other like this.

I finally got out of his grip. One last look at the man and I decided to go out of his room.

Today is monday.

And this will be the first day for a very long time that I decided to focus on my schooling.

Of course I would still work at night and then I would help Mr. Jeon here in this house.

Anything I will do just to help myself survive.

I took a bath and wore my uniform. When I went down, I made Mr. Jeon some breakfast and I ate some bananas and bread.

I wonder if he would come to school today tho? He's still sleeping and it's already past 8 in the morning. He will be too late to attend our first period.

But even if Mr. Jeon won't come, I still have my subjects with Mr. Wang, Ms. Jisoo, Ms. Irene, and Ms. Chungha.

Now I finally miss Ms. Jennie but she's happily enjoying his honeymoon with the hottest Mr. Kim. And I hope they are having the best days of their lives as loving husband and wife.

When I got out of the house, I was surprised to hear voices of people outside the gate.

Scared that they might be thief, I hid behind the bush on the garden.

But who would try to steal at almost 9 in the morning?

“What if he’ll get mad?” a familliar voice said.

“No, he won’t. He’s the best teacher you know! He will never get mad at his students!” another familliar voice said.

“We will just try to see if he is okay.”

“But the gate is locked?”

“Guys this is a bad idea!”

Let’s jump over the gate. This is just a piece of cake.”

And I finally guessed what’s happening.

My classmates are outside!

What if they saw me? I would be dead meat of course!

Soon, I saw a pair of hands at the top of the gate.

Oh no! They are trying to sneak in!

I decided to go back to the house to hide in my room as these jerks are still inside.

They can’t see me here.

I ran to my room and finally I pressed my ear to the door to hear if they got in successfully.

Soon I heard their voices outside as if they are searching for Mr. Jeon’s room.

I quickly locked my room to avoid being caught. Then my doorknob jingled.

“Mr. Jeon? Are you here?” I heard Jin’s voice.

Oh shit.

After his constant attempts, he finally stopped.

Then I heard them opened the door across which is actually Mr. Jeon's room.

"Mr Jeon? What happened to you?" I heard their worried voices outside. So I took my chances on performing my other plan.

I got out and quietly mixed with my classmates.

The girls were at the back so it's easy to blend in while the boys got closer to Mr. Jeon's bed.

Gosh! I am really lucky that they came a little later. Because if they came here an hour earlier, they would catch us hugging in the same bed.

"Please don't leave us Mr. Jeon! We need you! You're too young to be gone in this world!" Hoseok faked cried and I tried my damn best to stifle a laugh. The rest of the class are weeping too.

They're acting like Mr. Jeon just died and when Mr. Jeon woke up seeing all his students crying he got really confused.

"What are you all doing here?" He asked covering his body with his blanket.

"You were absent so we got worried. We all decided to pay you a visit Mr. Jeon to see if there's something wrong." Namjoon said and Mr. Jeon smiled at the sweetness of his students.

"Of course I am fine. But yesterday I had a fever and I would still want to rest now." he said and my classmates expressed their sentiments on the matter. Like he should rest well, eat well.. Blah blah..

And I really want to laugh because no one notices me yet.

"Oh shit! Lisa! You startled me!" Chaeyoung said while smacking my arm.

The rest of the class' eyes travelled to me with confusion.

Including those awkward look from Mr. Jeon.

I know I had to lie and I should do it effectively. Otherwise they will suspect me of staying here.

“How long have you’e been there Lisa?” Bambam asked. His eyes were confused.

“I was with you the whole time! Gosh!” I said rolling my eyes dramatically.

“No way?” they all said and I just acted as if I’m not lying.

“You’re just to used to me being absent that’s why you sometimes forget that I’m around.” I said using my I’m-not-important-classmate-voice card to them and they finally believed me.

Well, that was easy.

Mr. Jeon threw a look at me as if he was shocked that I convinced them.

Then he cleared his throat to earn my classmates attention.

“You guys worry too much. I’m fine. Don’t worry about me.” Mr. Jeon smiled amusely then the whole class gathered closer to him, I just followed what they’re doing when Jimin said “Mr. Jeon, can we give you a hug?”

“Of course” he said chuckling.

And that’s it. The whole class hugged Mr. Jeon tightly. Well except me, I hugged him the whole night already.

When Eunwoo noticed that I was left away, he pulled me to them making me part of the giant group hug.

We were all laughing when a voice spoke.

“Oh! What a full crowd!” A woman’s voice said.

We turned to the owner of the voice and that’s when I witnessed a very beautiful woman standing by the door.

“Ji-eun?” Mr. Jeon asked.

Now I finally saw her.

The owner of Mr. Jeon’s heart.

Almost everyone gasped and cleared the way for her to move in.

I looked at her in a manner of admiration and at the same time jealousy.

Yes. Jealousy. I will lie to myself if I say that I'm not jealous which is wrong because I am nothing to the man but just a student.

I took a deep breath and acted as of I'm not moved by this.

When the beautiful woman walked to him, she simply kissed his cheek as a greeting and my pathetic self wasn't able to look away.

Mr. Jeon's expression seemed to be a mixture of guilt and confusion.

Then he looked at me with an unreadable expression.

That was my turn to look away.

"I didn't know you had visitors." she softly said.

"We will go now Mr. Jeon. I hope you rest well." Namjoon said in behalf of our class.

I didn't wait for him to reply back, I just rushed myself away from that room.

Soon, my classmates and I were already out of his gate.

"Holy shit! I didn't know Mr. Jeon is so lucky to have a girlfriend like her!" Hoseok said.

"I know right. How did he even court an actress like her?" Jeongyeon said and we all turned to her.

"Actress?" I asked to confirm.

"You don't know? She is a successful rising actress. She even starred at kdramas and she's really good!" Jeongyeon said which worsened my insecurity more.

I didn't know Mr. Jeon has an actress for a girlfriend. Besides, I don't have a TV at home to keep me posted on this stuffs.

"She's really pretty though." Tzuyu said.

"But not as pretty as Ms.Jisoo" Jin interrupted.

“Yeah..not even as hot as Ms. Jennie.”-Yoongi.

“No, she’s not even as beautiful as my Rose.” Jimin cut them out.

“Stop! We both know I’m not pretty” Rose pouted.

“Aww.. My baby..who said that you’re not? You are the most beaut…..” Jimin had to continue his long lines of flirting and we just have to roll our eyes at their sweetness.

“Lisa is still better.” I was surprised when both Bambam and Eunwoo said at the same time.

Both the guys looked at each other confusedly. Even me got confused.

“Yeah yeah… I know you guys have your own standards but Mr. Jeon’s standard is the one and only Ji-eun, kdramas sweetheart. A lot of actors are fighting just to have her as their partners and she’s very on demand. If you would just see how good looking the actors are around Ms. Ji-eun, even Mr. Jeon’s is a no match.”

I frowned when Jeongyeon said this. I don’t care how good looking these guys are around Ms. Ji-eun, but she should just focus on Mr. Jeon because he is the most perfect boyfriend he will ever had.

“Still, she will never find a man as great as Mr. Jeon.” Dahyun speak my mind and the rest nodded.

“I’m sorry to cut you out but we really need to get back to school. We still have our periods for the other teachers.” Bambam interrupted.

“Yeah.. Bambam is right. Besides, we need to give Mr. And soon to be Mrs. Jeon some time alone.” when Namjoon said those words, I can’t explain the way my chest ached.

Maybe I should stop myself from getting too close to him.

Because as what Mr. Jeon said, men in general will just disappoint me and will just hurt me.

This is my fault too. If I just acted way civil around him, then I would’ve stopped myself from liking him too much.

I sighed and started walking back to school with my classmates.

I was very much down the whole class period from meeting Ms. Ji-eun back at Mr. Jeon's house. Good thing, Chae never left my side and she was talking with me the whole time. Making me forget the scene a while ago. Especially when she kissed him.

Chae even sat beside me saying that she missed me so much making Jimin a jealous baby because Chae's attention was on me the whole day.

After the class of Mr. Wang, I gathered my things and was about to go to my first part time job when the teacher called for me.

"Ms. Manoban, can I have a word with you?" Mr. Wang asked.

I had to look at Chae for her to go home without waiting for me. My friend got the signal so she nodded and left together with my other classmates.

"Yes Mr. Wang? What is it?" I asked walking to him.

"Ms. Manoban, I'm very concerned with your standing in my subject. I hope you can talk to me if what parts you find hard so that I can help you with it." he said.

I smiled knowing that I am really lucky to have this kind of teachers who cares for the betterment of their students.

"I'm happy to be receiving your help Mr. Wang but Mr. Jeon is already holding remedial classes for our class every saturdays. There is no need for you to be concerned." I said and he sighed.

"I know he is already holding remedial classes for your section but your case should be treated with most priority. You lacked compared to your classmates and I believe if he continues tutoring you together with them, the progress of yours will be slow." he said slowly to make me understand.

I know that my classmates are really not doing good in in class except Namjoon and Bambam but I am on another level

of a lost case.

Mr. Wang's expression shows worry and concern and I don't want to let him down.

"What do you suggest that I do Mr. Wang?" I asked my Math teacher.

"I will have to tutor you every end of your class on a one on one basis." he said.

"But I don't have money to pay you?" I said in worry. I know that these one on one tutorial has a price on it and I'm sure I can't afford it.

"Who says you will be paying? I will teach you for free. You don't have to worry." he said smilingly.

"Well that's relief but I am concerned to be taking your time Mr. Wang." I said looking down guiltily.

If I had just worked hard with my performance, nothing of this will happen.

"It's okay. As your teacher, I have the responsibility to look after you." he said and I smiled.

"Thank you so much Mr. Wang." I said bowing my head.

"Your welcome. So? Shall we start now?" he said and I nodded.

Mr. Wang started with the easy parts which I still find hard to understand. Math is my worst subject but after having a one on one explanation from the teacher, I was able to catch up at least 5% of the lessons that I missed.

The tutoring went really smooth that I didn't realized it was already dark outside.

Author's Note

What do you think will happen next?

Killing Time

Jungkook's POV

When the whole got out of my room, I was left alone with her.

"Your class seems to be fond of you." Ji-eun said and I nodded.

"They are and they are the sweetest." I said as I stood to get a shirt to wear.

"Hmm.. That maybe a reason why you seemed to be distracted this days?" she sat at the bed and cossed her legs to look at me.

"Distracted?" I turned my attention to her.

"Yes, back then you would call me almost every hour but now you managed to survive the whole weekend without calling me." she said in a teasing way.

"I remember back then you would hang on me everytime I would call you." I annoyingly said. Now I wonder what she's trying to imply?

"You know that I am busy with work." she stood, defending herself.

"And I never complained." I added. "I would always understand. I would always adjust Ji-eun. That is how I love you." I said and she looked down guiltily.

I know and I can feel she doesn't feel the same. But I still did my best to get her attention, to get her love.

"Listen, I don't want to argue with you Jungkook. I came here to say that my flight will be in two hours. And I will be gone for days so I really don't want to fight."

"Today is your flight? Right away?" I asked. "Why didn't you tell me you're leaving today?"

“I told you that I will leave the night we had dinner last friday, don’t you remember?” She said making me realize that she’s right.

“I’m sorry I forgot” I said apologetically.

“You seemed to be forgeting a lot about us these days?” she asked again.

“I had a fever last day. And on saturday I spent them on having remedial classes.” I explained. I don’t want her teasing about me forgetting about us. It’s really frustrating that she makes it look like I’m the one at fault now.

“You had a fever? But you’re too old for that.” she said nonchalantly while looking at her wrist watch. “Oh, I’ll be late. Will you drive me to the airport or I’ll go ahead?”

“I’ll just drive you.” I said. Afraid for her to be late at her flight, I quickly rushed out.

“Seriously Jungkook? You are driving me to the airport like that?” she said looking down.

I take a look at what I’m wearing. When I realized I’m just in my sweat pants and tshirt.

“But I will just drive you to the airport? Must I change my clothes?” I asked.

“Of course. Jungkook I am an actress and how you look will always matter because of the medias folwing me around. What will my fans say if they see my boyfriend looking like this?” she said with a a disgusted tone while pointing at what I’m wearing.

“Oh.. Okay.. I understand. I’m sorry.” I said trying my best not to cry right now.

I quickly changed in the bathroom to something decent and when I got out she smiled.

“That’s perfect. Now our clothes matches.” she contentedly smiled.

Moments later, I was already parking at the airport.

“Baby, I’ll go ahead.” she said as she removes her seatbealt.

“What? But I will come with you inside.” I said.

“No need. I’ll just call you when I arrive in Australia.” she gave me a quick peck on the cheek and with that, she hopped out of my car.

I sighed as I as I look at her retreating back. Suddenly cameras are around here and she waved at them like a superstar.

What’s the point of dressing up when I can’t even walk her inside the airport?

It’s as if I’m a dirt she’s afraid for other’s to see.

I don’t even know how I survived this kind of relationship.

Ji-eun and I’s relationship seems to look perfect on the surface but we both know that she’s not contented with me.

I know she’s not. Because if she is contented, she will not go out on dates with her co-stars.

I used to remember back then when she finally said Yes to me, I was so happy that I kissed her cheeks.

But the same day when I was about to pick her up from a shooting, I caught her hugging her co-star. Then the same cheeks that I kissed was also kissed by that same man.

That day was the first time that I became a great actor.

Yes. An actor.

I acted as if nothing happened. I even shook the guy’s hand even if they both tensed when I saw them there.

And after that, there were more instances of betrayal. Just on a short period of two months, she was able to crush my heart over and over.

But still, the pathetic Ji-eun-is-my-life me never stopped on showing her that I love her.

I tried to understand. Because somehow I was hoping that she could change. And to be honest, I still want our relationship to work out.

But then, something inside of me changed.

I can’t quitely pinpoint what and how but right now, I’m not afraid if she breaks up with me.

Actually, I am just waiting for her to break up with me because I think it is very rude for a guy to initiate the break up.

But I was surprised she’s not breaking up yet?

Now I get more anxious.

And Lisa…

Shit! I forgot about Lisa!

I looked at my watch and it was almost 12 noon. I believe she went to school.

Should I go there to find her?

But that would be weird if my students see me at school when I just said that I will take a rest for the day.

Did she even take her breakfast?

Was she mad at me?

I mean I pulled her to me last night right?

I’m not sure how she thinks about me after forcing her to sleep with me but I was herally cold last night and her warmth gave me comfort.

Now I’m so worried.

I’m worried that she will be mad at me for doing that.

Who in all the world is a teacher like me who just grabs students to hug?

No one? Just me.

Of course she’ll get mad.

I drove back to the house and I automatically noticed Lisa’s cooking on the dining table.

Mr. Jeon,

Eat all for this for you to gain back your strength.

Lisa.

So she’s not mad?

I grinned and took the piece of note to put on my pocket.

I better need to hide notes like this if they’re coming from Lisa.

Looking at her simple dish, I smiled again and dived in.

She can really cook well. Very impressive for a young lady.

And that’s when I realized that her future husband would be really lucky.

When I thought of Lisa marrying another man, I shook my head continuously to shrug the thought.

No way she’s marrying another man. She’s too young for that!

She will avoid having a boyfriend. That’s what she said.

When I finally finished my food, I looked at the clock and it’s just past one in the afternoon.

What time will she get back?

I believe her class for Jackson will end at 4 pm?

Just three hours more and she will finally get back.

And why am I even excited? i asked myself.

Maybe I just want her here because…

Because the house is a little dirty.

Yeah.. Maybe she can help in cleaning.

That’s it.

That is why I want her to be home already.

But the time is ticking too slow and 4 pm seemed to be far away.

I tried washing dishes and after that it’s just 1:52

I tried cleaning the backyard and after that it”s just 1:55

I tried changing the bed sheets and after that it’s just 1:59

I tried working out at my own gym and when I was done it's just 2:14

I tried cleaning the windows and it's just 2:16?

What's the hell is the problem with this clock!?

Is this broken or what?

I annoyingly looked at the wall clock in the living room and checked the time on my phone.

The time is the same though.

But why is it running too slow?

When will Lisa be back?

And why did she even went to school now that I'm not there?

I ruffled my hair and sighed. I decided to just kill time by doing all sorts of activities I can think of.

After working myself out from cleaning to car washing, my body felt exhausted so I took a nap on the living room. Hoping I could wake up when Lisa arrives.

When I woke up, it was already 6 in the evening. Confused, I looked around the house for Lisa but she's not yet here.

What is happening? Where is she? Why is she not home yet?

I didn't wait any longer and took my phone to dial her number.

Ringing…

And why is she not picking up?

Finally it connected!

"Lisa? Where are you?" I asked worriedly.

"Mr. Jeon I'm so sorry. I forgot about the time." she said, her voice was too low as if she's afraid for someone to hear.

"Tell me. Where are you Lisa?" I asked again.

"I'm still here at school"

“What? But it’s past 6?what are you doing there??

“Mr. Wang is tutoring me.” she said making me frown.

What the hell?

“What did you just say Lisa?” I asked. “Did you just say that you are in school with Jackson?”

“Yes, Mr. Jeon. I still have a problem to solve, I’ll go straight at your house when I’m done here.” she said then she ended the line.

What the fuck?

After knowing where she is, I took my car keys and walked out of the house.

I will take her home whether she solves that problem or not!

Author’s Note

Uh oh!

Holding Hands

Lisa's POV

Imagine how shock I was when Mr. Jeon showed inside the class out of nowhere.

"Mr. Jeon? What are you doing here?" Mr. Wang asked as if he can't believe that he's here.

Mr. Jeon's eyes were so sharp and the scary that a part of me believes that he is about to kill someone.

"Lisa, Let's go." Mr. Jeon said with a threathening voice.

"Hey, we are not done yet." Mr. Wang chuckled bitterly slightly pushing Mr. Jeon's chest away.

Mr. Jeon turned his attention to him and answered. "She's is my student. You don't have to be so concerned."

"But she is also my student. I am just helping—"

"I can help her myself, Wang!" his jaw clenched as he walk to my math teacher.

What the hell is happening?

I don't understand?

Are my teachers fighting?

Mr. Wang glared back at Mr. Jeon and for a moment I forgot the solution to the problem.

"Mr. Wang, Mr Jeon!" I called but they ignored me.

Because they were just there doing a glaring contest.

"Excuse me.. Mr. Wang I—"

"Not now Lisa!" Mr. Wang cut me off. His eyes still not leaving Mr. Jeon as if they are threathening to kill each other mentally.

I didn't know they have a grudge to one another. I thought they were friends.

I turned my attention to my teacher and said "Excuse me.. Mr. Jeon? I—"

"Not now Lisa!" he also cut me off. Leaving me dumbfounded.

I got worried looking down on my paper.

How can I answer this?

Jungkook's POV

"

I didn't know you would turn out like this?" Jackson said with a small voice.

"Turn out like what?" I asked the now smirking man.

"This kind of teacher." he said looking up and down at me. "Someone who would set an eye on his student" he said and my eyes widened.

What the fuck?

Is he referring to Lisa?

I don't like Lisa…

I don't like her…

I don't like my student…

Yeah, I don't like her…

"I don't know what you're talking about."

"Of course, you will deny but it's very obvious Jeon. You like your student. You like her right?"he said walking closer to me. I had to look at Lisa if she heard it but luckily her eyes and attention were focused on the paper on her desk.

"I'm just here to take her because it is late and her family is already waiting for her. As her homeroom adviser, I am in charge of her Jackson. And the fact that it is already late and the school is almost empty is enough threat for her to stay." I explained and he scowled.

“What do you mean threat? Are you referring to me as a threat?” he asked pointing at himself.

“Yes you. How can you even spend time with a female student at this time alone?” I asked.

“I’m just doing my best to help her Jeon! She has a low—”

“I can help her on my own!” I cut him.

“She needs a real math teacher. You can focus on your English.”

“Oh come on. Just fuck off Wang! Even if I’m an English teacher, I am just as good in Math as you.”

“But I can teach better in Math.”

“Just what exactly do you want with her?” I asked annoyed. It’s as if he’s keeping her here to spend some time together.

“I have no bad intentions. It is only you who is thinking like that!”

“Thinking like what?” I asked him.

“Whatever it is on your head!” he said and I rolled my eyes.

“Enough talk. We are going.” I said turning my attention to Lisa. But when I saw her, I felt like my chest was stabbed with the sharpest knife.

Lisa was crying.

“Lisa?” I quickly ran to her. “What happened?” Did we frighten her? I kneeled in front of her and she raised her head with her eyes full of tears.

Jackson also went closer to her. And as if he would steal her, I moved more closer.

“Lisa, why are you crying?” I asked worriedly.

“This is your fault!” Jackson glared at me again.

“No it’s not! This is your fault!” I said back.

“Stop you two!” suddenly Lisa yelled.

“Lisa.. “

“I was calling for both of you but you were just talking to each other and you were just ignorig me!”

“Why? What’s wrong? Here I am. I am listening already. What ‘s the problem? Tell me” I asked, concerned at her sudden outburst.

“I.. I.. I forgot the solution!” she said and she started crying again.

My eyes fell on Jackson and he looked at me too.

He was about to help her when I stopped him.

“I will take care of this” I said then helped the crying Lisa up like she’s a little girl.

“Okay. I won’t argue anymore. Just make sure she understands everything. I will go now Lisa.” he said then he finally left us.

Lisa was still crying when I gently placed my hand at her small back to pat her.

“Shhhh.. Stop crying already. I will help you solve that at home. Come with me”

“I’m so disappointed at you Mr. Jeon!” she spat.

“Disapponted at me? Why?” I asked, confusely.

“Because you don’t care for me. You just yelled at me when I needed your help. Is it because of her? You suddenly forget about taking good care of me?”

“What are you even saying?” I don’t understand you Lisa?” I asked my head is trying it’s best to understand where her outburst is coming from.

“You wouldn’t know Mr. Jeon because you just don’t care. Just because you were happy with an actress doesn’t mean that you will forget about your student!” she yelled with her closed eyes and just like that, she ran away from me.

What the hell?

What did just happened?

I got confused but I still managed to chase after her.

When I spotted her out of the school building, I didn't wait any longer.

I ran to her and grabbed her hand then I pulled her to my car.

"Mr. Jeon wait.." she tried to swat my hands away from her wrist but I just continued pulling her.

"Mr. Jeon—"

"Be quiet. We will talk at home."

"But—"

"I said we will talk at home Lisa."

I said using a warning and threathening voice. Finally, she got quiet and didn't fight more.

And right now, I don't understand what just happened.

I was supposed to be mad at her for spending time with another man while I was just at home patiently waiting for her.

But it turned out that she's mad at me for unknow reasons. I don't even understand her words a while ago.

But I don't like seeing her cry like this. That's why I need to clear things between us to make her smile.

Lisa's POV

When he parked the car at the garage, I tried to unbuckle my seatbelt, but a strong and big hand stopped me in doing so.

I turned my head at the owner of the hand and that's when I realized that he's there staring at me intently with an intense expression.

I was supposed to be mad at him but I don't have the right because that was his girlfriend and I'm just a no one.

"Lisa. Tell me. What do you think about me." he asked. And that was the moment that my heart almost thumped out from my ribcage in a crazy manner.

Mr. Jeon's eyes didn't left mine as he waited for my answer. His lips were slighlt parted making me see a glimpse of his tongue.

“You? I mean.. You are a great teacher.” I said. And he frowned.

“No. Not like that. What I meant is what do you think about me…. as man?”

“Well.. I.. Uh.. You are..”

Should I tell him that he is perfect. That he is hot. That is very handsome?

“You are a kind person.” I answered the safest way.

“That’s all?” he raised his brow to confirm. But I cannot just tell him my long list of reasons why I like him right?

“That’s all.” I said.

Soon, I felt Mr. Jeon’s hand in mine.

I ooked down at our hands and he slowly intertwined his fingers on mine.

I blushed so hard because of that and for some reason, I got afraid to look at him.

I’m afraid that his heated eyes will somehow burn me.

“What are you doing?” I asked looking at our hands.

“I remember you were asking how long my fingers are.” he said looking at our hands admiringly. His hand is really big and his fingers are really long.

“My answer is this.” he said raising our intertwined fingers. “My fingers are long enough to hold yours.” he said and my ears felt so hot hearing his words.

“Whatever it is that you’re thinking is not true. I will always care for you Lisa.” he said. “So please stop crying and just smile for me. I don’t like seeing you cry.” he said. His words managed to warm my sad heart.

I finally smiled at him and he had to smile back.

That moment, I forgot about how jealous I was at Ms. Ji-eun.

□

Author's Note

I can't wait for my baby girl's birthday!!!

Coincidence

Lisa's POV

Mr. Jeon finally let go of my hand. "Come now. You must be hungry." he said and we got out of his car.

When we got inside his house, he went straight to the kitchen to cook something for us to eat.

"Mr. Jeon.. I'm just wondering if I can help you?" I asked.

"It's okay Lisa, I will do this. You can just go to your room for you to change." he said glancing down at me.

Oh Yeah.. I'm still wearing my uniform.

"Thank you sir." I said then went upstairs using the stairs. When I went inside the room, I strode to the bathroom to take a warm bath.

As I am cleaning myself, I can't help but reflect on my own feelings.

My hands travelled to my chest and touched my beating heart.

There is no way that this feeling is just normal.

I can feel it deep down in my heart that my feelings for Mr. Jeon is growing as the days goes by.

And as much as my conscience tells me to stop, I can't help it. My whole being is being sucked into this rabbit whole that I can't seem to pull myself up.

I like him.

I really really like Mr. Jeon.

He treats me really well. He saved me from getting raped, he took me in, he's feeding me like I'm his family. And his gentle words would always calm my anxious heart.

How can you not like such a man?

He is just too perfect to not like.

And now he's even cooking for me. At the car he held my hand, and just a while ago he picked me at school.

He's been nothing but kind and caring to me. And I feel guilty because I accused him a that he doesn't care about me just because the whole day I was very jealous of Ms. Ji-eun.

But in reality, my feelings won't matter anyway. He has a girlfriend. A beautiful actress in his arms and I bet he is really happy being with her.

How can I even match that kind of beauty?

When I am nothing but just this?

I looked at myself in the mirror and no matter how I look at myself. I'm still plain and simple.

Not as beautiful as Ms. Ji-eun. And definitely not on the same league as Mr. Jeon.

When I saw my fingers getting pruney, I realized that I have been in the shower for so long.

I quickly walked out of the bathroom, then the door opened.

"Lisa, food is rea—"

Mr. Jeon's mouth hunged open. His eyes landed on my body. I looked down also and realized I am just wrapped with a towel.

But the towel was too tiny. Just enough to cover those things which I need to cover.

His eyes were wide and looked so lost as he stare at me.

When I confirmed that he was looking down at my legs, I quickly pulled down the towel to cover some more.

Mr.Jeon finally blinked as if a spell was lifted. He turn his eyes away from me and cleared his throat. "I.. I'll just there.. I mean I there.." he scratched his head and cleared his throat again. "I mean I will just wait At… At.. The.." he stuttered again.

“Shit!” Mr. Jeon muttered and he quickly left out of the room.

I was weirded out by his expression and I walked to the mirror to see my self. Why is he overreacting.

It’s as if this is just the first time he saw a girl wrapped in a towel.

But when I looked at the mirror, the towel was really drenched that my body can almost be seen inside. It was like I was wearing a see though dress and Mr. Jeon’s eyes just got blessed.

Oh God!

He shouldn’t have seen this.

Jungkook’s POV

Lisa’s image kept replaying on my mind over and over again and as if a mantra I kept saying,

Delete image

Delete image

Delete image

Delete image

But still, it keeps popping on my head.

The way she looked so wet. Her hair was messily resting on her shoulders. Her glistening body with water. Her amazing curves which I definitely saw as if the towel was see though, her very long legs.

I can’t help but bite my lip as I remember her visual. And now I am trying my damn best to keep my self sane.

This is actually the first time I have seen a body of woman in real life with only small piece of clothing. But even if she was covered, she still makes me go crazy.

If I was just not taller, I bet I could see a glimpse of her thing down there. And good thing I didn’t, I would actually faint for sure if I see a woman’s part.

Although I have seen them before on Men's Magazines and pornographic sites but I haven't seen an actual one

But hey! What am I even thinking?

I really need to stop this right now.

She is my student. And I'm becoming a pervert towards her?

How can I be like this?

How can I even feel the earthly needs of a man towards Lisa when I don't even feel this way on my own girlfriend.

And what's weirding me out more is that when it comes to Ji-eun, I can always bare it if she's around other guys. I can always accept her eve if I know that she's cheating.

But when it comes to Lisa, I feel different. I hate it when I see other guys gets her attention. Just like how I'm so pissed with Eunwoo and Jackson.

If it's Lisa, I think I will never bare to see her being with another guy.

I don't know of I'm just being protective as her teacher but I just don't want her around any males in general.

Ji-eun can always cheat if she wants too but not Lisa. I just want her attention to myself.

"Mr. Jeon?" an angel's voice cut me off my thoughts.

"Oh.. You're here" I said. Looking down at her body, she's already wearing her plain clothings.

But no matter how plain her clothes are, she would always look like a princess.

Lisa sat down across me and we began eating.

"Mr. Jeon, about the math problem—" she said.

"I will help you with that later but I will have to shower first. Is it okay Lisa?"

"Oh.. Yes.. It is.. Thank you very much." she said.

“By the way Lisa, do you know how to drive a car?” I asked and her eyes widened.

“Me?”

“Yes you. You’re the only one Lisa here remember?” I said as I chuckle.

Lisa scratched her temple and shook her head. “I don’t know Mr. Jeon. I haven’t tried driving a car before although Bambam would always ask to teach me but I refuse him because I’m scared.

“Bambam? Your classmate?” I asked.

Don’t tell me..

“Yes, Bambam is my closest male classmate Mr. Jeon.” she said happily as she picks some vegetables with her chopsticks.

Bambam huh?

Must I be threathened?

“Why Mr. Jeon?” she asked in curiosity.

“I’m just thinking about having you use one of my car. The smallest one.” I said and her jaw dropped open.

“No way!”

“Yes way Lisa. But sadly you don’t know how to drive. So I better teach you first.” I said.

Actually she can always have a proper training with professional driving trainers but I want to do it myself.

“You are a funny joker Mr. Jeon.” she laughed out loud not taking my words seriously.

“I’m serious Lisa. I want you to use that car so you should do your best to learn how to drive.” I said and she looked at me in disbelief.

“Mr. Jeon, this is just too much. I can’t accept this offer. I’m sorry.” she said making me frown.

“This is not too much Lisa. I have a lot of cars that I don’t use. It will be a waste if they will just stay at the garage

forever. Besides, I don't want you walking to school or anywhere you work." I said.

"Mr. Jeon, I am working as a dishwasher and those kind of jobs doesn't go well with a person who is driving a car."

"Lisa! I said what I said. You are going to drive that car whether you agree or not."

"Mr. Jeon, you really don't have to. I always enjoy walking and besides I am not always walking. I used to have a bike but it just got broken so here I am walking now." she said.

I suddenly remembered the incident when I crashed to a girl and broke her bike.

"You have a bike?" I asked nervously.

She better not be…

"Yes, I once have. I love it very much because it was really convenient to use around town. But one night a car just suddenly crashed on me as I was going home. It got my leg injured but thankfully I didn't die."

Oh shit.

That was her?

I froze under my spot when I heard her story. There's no way this is just a coincidence?

I was the one who hit her that night?

I tried to hide my guilt in me and asked "What happened after?"

She thought for a moment and said "My bag was stolen by a snatcher. And all that I earned from babysitting was there. But because I got hit, my leg got injured and I wasn't able to catch the snatcher. I ended up going home with no more bike and no more money. My leg was also hurting but I was more scared at my uncle." she said.

Making me mentally curse at myself.

"What happened with your uncle?" I am too worried that she will say he beat him up because she has no money to offer

to him.

“I had to break my piggybank Mr. Jeon, it was the only way I can pay for my uncle’s slut. If I didn’t have that piggybank, he had probably raped me that night.”

Lisa’s words pierced through my conscience.

How can I let her be in that situation?

And to say that I’m guilty is an understatement.

“Are you mad at the person who was driving the car?” I asked and she nodded with her brows furrowed like she’s holding a grudge at me.

“I hate him for being careless.” she said looking at me and I gulped.

Right now,I cannot just tell her that it was my fault. I don’t want her to get mad at me. But I want to make up for everything that I did.

I decided, I will replace her bike with a car.

And I will replace her poggybank with a savings account.

That’s the only way I can make up for her.

Author’s Note

Hi guys! I’m so sorry because I think this will be my last update for the day. I will just see you on saturday.

Happy Birthday Lisa!

#LalisaManobanDay

reached 4.5 Million tweets and by far broke the record for having the most tweeted birthday hashtag by a Kpop Idol.

She is now followed by my other loves:
2. KimTaehyung -3.7 Million Tweets
3. Jeon Jungkook-3.5 Million Tweets
4. Park Jimin-3.3 Million Tweets

Lisa was my rabbit hole to KPOP. I admit I was once a hater of KPOP. Until I saw her, everything changed. She's the reason for my happiness and her story motivates me to work hard everyday.

Also if without her, I wouldn't know BTS. My most amazing boys and also Jennie, Rośe and Jisoo.

If not for her, I wouldn't be here in Wattpad to write stories, I wouldn't have a Twitter account, I wouldn't have an Instagram account, A weibo account and more.
Lisa has been my source of joy, her smile alone is my everything and she's my role model.

On her birthday, I just want her to achieve everything that she dreams of because she's really working hard for it. I hope that Lisa, along other kpop idols recieve their needed respect and support from all the fans.

I just love this amazing girl so so much!!!

Missing Bestfriend

Lisa's POV

The next day was a normal day for both Mr.Jeon and I. I woke up to see him cooking breakfast for the both of us.

Making me remember that last night, he came to my room to help me with the Math problem Mr.Wang gave.

Surprisingly, Mr.Jeon was really good at Math. As if he's a Math Major hinself. I was able to pick up everything that he taught me.

I solved the problem effortlessly through his guidance and when I finished, he checked it and told me I did it right.

I was very happy last night. I feel really lucky because I was tutored by my own teacher without asking me something in return.

Living with Mr.Jeon feels like I'm a princess and for the first time after years of being abused by my uncle that I really feel at peace.

All thanks to Mr. Jeon's kindness. And again, as days goes by, My feelings are deepening for him.

The feeling is terrifyingly exciting but I am very much aware of the dangers of it.

Mr. Jeon has a girlfriend.

They are in a relationship for I don't know how long. But I can feel that she is very special to him.

So what I am feeling right now should be kept aside in order to not ruin their peaceful relationship.

I don't want him to know how I feel. Because I don't want him to be awkward around me. I am already contented with what we have right now.

This teacher-student relationship is conveniently working for me. I can get to spend time with him everyday.

Yes, I am fine with this.

(A/n: Mr. Jeon's Kitchen)

Mr.Jeon's finally noticed me standing by the door of the kitchen, a smile plastered on his face when he saw me.

"Good morning! How long have you been there?" Mr.Jeon asked as he was stirring his coffee. He's now wearing his formal attire for school and when you look at him, you would really say that he is a respected teacher.

"I just got here. I'm so sorry for waking up late." I say walking closer.

"No worries. I hope you had a good sleep. I just made us a breakfast. Let's eat so that we can go to school together." he said walking to sit on the chair.

I sat to the opposite and looked at him. "Mr.Jeon, we cannot go to school together. No one should see us right?" I reminded and he sadly nodded.

"But how can you go to school now?" he asked worriedly but I returned his worried expression with a smile.

"Mr.Jeon,as I said I am used to walking. The school is just near and it's still early. I can have walking as an exercise."

"But you'll get tired if you go there walking." he said shaking his head to disagree. "Oh I know! Just ride a taxi and I will follow it." he excitedly said as if it was the best plan but I just chuckled.

"Mr. Jeon, I don't want to spend to much on taxi. I will just walk."

"Who says you're paying? I will pay for it." he said with a stern voice.

"Mr.Jeon let me remind you that I came here to work for a free stay not to be spoiled by you. I really appreciate your kindness but sometimes it's just too much." I said guiltily and he looked at me with a frown.

“This is not too much Lisa.”

“Mr.Jeon just please… Stop being too kind or I won’t—” I won’t hold myself from falling for you more. That’s what I wanted to say but I don’t want him to know that.

I am just a student he feels obligated to look after.

“Or you won’t?” he asked to keep me going while raising his brow.

I bit my lip and said “Or I will be the most spoiled student of Class 3-C” and faked a smile.

Mr.Jeon sighed at my answer and opened his lips to talk. “Okay. I will allow you to walk. But only this time when you don’t know how to drive yet.”

“You’re seriously making me use your car?”

“Yes Lisa, we have talked about this.”

“But I didn’t say yes.”

“Please stop arguing and finish your food.” he said shutting me off. There’s something about the way he talks that makes me submit to him. Maybe because he is older than me and he is my teacher so I decided to don’t argue anymore.

My way to school was the funniest and most awkward walk that happened in my whole life. Because as I was walking, Mr.Jeon’s car was following me in the slowest manner that he can drive.

I tried to shoo him away to go ahead but he didn’t so now we arrived at the school at the same time. As I walk, he rode his car.

When he got out of his car, he tried to look around first and when he was sure that no one is watching him, he threw me a quick smile.

I was taken aback by the sudden action but it was to quick for me to respond. Then his eyes travelled forward and began walking inside the building as if he doesn’t know me.

Soon the class started. But I was sad not seeing Chaeyoung at class.

I looked at Jimin who's seat is just in front of me.

Leaning closer to his back, I whispered,

"Hey Jimin!"

"Jimin!" I called a little louder and finally I got Jimin's attention. But so does Mr. Jeon's.

When I looked at my teacher, he was now staring coldly at me.

Oh gosh.

"Ms. Manoban, do you need anything?" he asked in a slightly pissed way.

I looked at Jimin and he threw me a "don't-drag-me-to-this-mess" look. Then I looked back at Mr. Jeon. His eyes were moving to me and Jimin as if he's suspecting us of doing something.

"I uh..nothing sir." I said.

"Focus on the lesson Ms.Manoban" he said as he go back to the front. I tried not to roll my eyes at him for calling me out.

Why is he even strict at me in class when he can't even be strict with Yoongi being shirtless, Jin constantly checking his face in the mirror and the girls whispering to each other?

Why notice only me?

Even though I need to ask Jimin where Chae is, I can't freely talk at him when Mr. Jeon is here.

Right. I'll just talk to him later after class.

It was lunch time when I finally found my way outside the canteen. A while ago, when we were at Ms.Jisoo's class, I asked Jimin where Chae is but he said Chae is not feeling well. So she can't come.

I got really worried so I'm here now trying to dial her number up using the phone Mr.Jeon gave.

The line kept ringing but no one was answering. But when it got connected, I almost jumped out of happiness.

"Chae? where are you?" I asked excitedly.

“Lisa, I can’t take this anymore. I want to die!” I heard from the other line.

“I’m sorry what?” I asked confusely. It is definitely Chae who sounds as if she’s been crying.

“Lisa, I will end myself now! I don’t want to live anymore!” she shouted and I panicked.

Oh no! This is about her parents again.

“Chae..calm down..please calm down.” I said ever so gently trying my best to calm her down.

“Lisa, I’m not important. My parents doesn’t love me!”

“Chae please calm down. Your parents loves you. Don’t say things like that.”

“If they love me, why are they divorcing Lisa? Huh? if they love me enough, they will never do this!” she said. I can hear her weak sobs on the other line and it hurts my chest so hard. She’s my best friend and now she’s hurting all because of her father’s fault.

“Listen. I will go to you. Wait for me there Chae. Okay? Don’t do anything stupid” I said in a rush.

I pushed the phone on my pocket and started walking with fast steps out of the canteen.

But when I turned to one corner, I was surprised to see two people on a covered part area just outside the canteen.

Clenching my fists I tried to hold back my anger and walked closer to hear what they are doing.

“hmm…she won’t know” the girl who looked way younger than us said us she pulls Jimin’s neck to her.

“But my classmates might see us. And I have a girlfriend.” he said with a low voice.

This jerk! I thought.

“But she’s not here now?” the girl seductively said.” And my house is empty later. We can do it there.” she added.

“Sounds tempting.” Jimin said and the girl tiptoed to meet his height then she began kissing him.

Jimin returned her kisses.

I froze on my spot seeing them both there.

I was about to walk to them to confront him when I suddenly remembered Chaeyoung’s words.

I need to get there fast. Chae needs me. I will deal with Jimin later.

One final look at the two who were making out and I finally turned my heel to the other direction to rush to my bestfiend.

Author’s Note

Sorry for the late and short update.

Should Lisa tell Chaeyoung about what Jimin did?

Class Rebel

Lisa's POV

After minutes of running, I finally reached Chae's house. I was panting so hard when the servants allowed me in.

"Where is Chae?" I asked worriedly.

"She's in her room Lisa. She won't talk to us. Please make her go down." Alicia, The old lady who has been serving Chae's household for decades now said.

"What happened?" I asked. Although I know it is about her parents.

"Her parents were arguing about the divorce earlier this morning and Chae heard them. Then she confronted her parents but they seemed to not care about her feelings. Both of them left for work and now Chae's here. She's been crying in her room for hours now. I'm so worried about her Lisa. Please help your friend." she said. I looked at the old lady and nodded.

"I will try my best Madam"

I reached the door of her room.

"Chae, it's me Lisa. Please let me in." I said while knocking.

The door opened making me witness a crying Chae. Her eyes are already swelling from crying.

"Lisa!" Chae ran to my arms and hugged me tightly while sobbing.

I placed my hand at her back and started rubbing to give a little comfort.

"They are divorcing Lisa." her voice echoed in her room.

"Please stop crying Chae. I'm here now." I said as I walked her to her bed.

We sat down together as I took her hand and she began telling me what happened.

“So you’re telling me that your father will leave you because of another woman?” I asked in disbelief.

I have known for a long time that his father has always caused a problem in their family for always having another woman. And Chae is the one who suffers the most.

She’s an only child. They are really rich but her mother is too stressed by his father’s sinful acts that she would always focus on their businesses.

That made Chaeyoung a lonely child. But recently, she started pulling out attention from her parents by doing rebellious acts.

She’d try to do her worst at school just so she will have the worst grades. She thought that failing in class will somehow make her parents realize that she needs them.

She thought they will get back together and help her when they see that she’s having a hard time. But right now she was so wrong.

Her low performance didn’t help in solving her problem. Clearly, her parents marriage is not working anymore.

But I did not expect that this will lead to a divorce. Her mother has always fought for the marriage for years now and maybe this time she’s had enough.

“Yes, he will leave us and mom finally agreed to it I thought she would still fight for the marriage but I heard the woman was pregnant and that made it easier for him to toss us aside.” Chaeyoung sobbed again in my shoulder.

Right now I just realized how a cheating can do so much damage in a person’s life. Her mother who used to be so cheerful before is now indifferent and would only careless about Chae.

I really hate his father for cheating and as I think about him, I was reminded of Jimin kissing another girl a while ago.

I stared at the crying girl.

Should I tell her?

She needs to know right?

Yes. I should tell her.

When I opened my mouth to talk Chae's voice beat me to it.

"That's why I'm so thankful to you Lisa. You are the only one who cares for me." she said and I smiled. "You and Jimin are the only one who understands me. If without you and Jimin, I would probably lost my mind now." she said smiling as she wipes her tears away.

Now how can I have the courage to tell her about Jimin's cheating when she's praising him like this?

"Chae, I hope you won't be offended but does Jimin really love you?" I asked nervously and she laughed so hard. She laughed as if it was the most stupid question she heard.

"Lisa what are you even asking? Of course he loves me. He even said he would marry me if we finish college. You see how romantic he is?" her face lit up as if Jimin is the best man out there.

Seeing how happy she is with Jimin, I can't bare to break her heart. I suddenly got scared.

I don't want to ruin her happiness. But as her friend I need to protect her too.

I better talk to Jimin alone about this and warn him to stop with what he's doing. Because even if he's known to be a playboy, deep down I know he loves Chaeyoung.

I just need to talk to him. Right. I will talk to him.

When she realized that I was lost with thoughts, she sighed and spoke "I know you don't like Jimin Lisa. But please try to at least like him for me. He's a very nice guy. He makes me really really happy." she said smiling ear to ear.

"He is so sweet and he's so good in be—." when she said the last part, she covered her mouth quickly as if she just spilled her deepest secret.

I was surprised too that my tongue got stucked. But when it dawned on me,

“Hey! Park Chaeyoung! Did you had sex with Jimin?” I asked while putting my hands on my hips.

Her eyes widen and she blushed so hard.

“Don’t you ever lie to your bestfriend!” Squinting my eyes on the lady as if warning her.

She slowly nodded.

“Oh my god! Why would you do that? I thought you’re reserving yourself for your future husband?” I glared at her and she guiltily looked down.

“There’s nothing to lose Lisa, Jimin will be my future.” she said, her voice sound so sure with every words.

“How sure are you that you will end up together?” I asked. After seeing Jimin with another woman, I believe their future together is as impossible as my relationship with Mr.Jeon.

I shook my head at the thought of me and Mr.Jeon. Why can’t he even leave my mind even just for an hour?

“I’m sure about him Lisa and she’s sure about me. Besides, I enjoyed doing it.” she chuckled and covered her face shyly as she recall their intimates making me roll my eyes.

She saw me rolling my eyes making her smirk and said “You know what Lisa, why don’t you try it too?” Chaeyoung asked.

“Try what?” I asked her.

“Sex. Duh? It’s good. I think you’ll like it.” she said in a shy manner.

“Hello? Chae? Where are you? I can’t see my innocent Chae here.” I teased her while looking around making her smack me in the arm.

“Girl stop! I’m still your Chae but there’s just something that changed you know. I finally felt the pleasure of being a woman.”

“Oh God stop!” I said covering my ears. She laughed so hard in return.

“One day you will feel it too when you finally had your first sex.”

“Why are we talking about sex now? Besides, I will never have it yet. I don’t even have a boyfriend to do that with.” I asked the palyful girl.

“Then just do it with Eunwoo or Bam. So that those annoying lovers of yours can die peacefully and they can stop asking me questions about you.”

“Seriously? Eunwoo and Bambam?” I said rolling my eyes. I don’t even like those two and they don’t like me too. Well, I like them but It’s kinda like brotherly love.

“You have no idea how much those two drools for you.” she laughed and I had to smile. I realized this sudden change of conversation lighten up her mood a bit.

“I can’t with you anymore Park Chaeyoung.” I said in annoyance.

“Wait, how about Mr.Jeon?” she asked and the name alone almost made my heart jumped out of excitment.

“What about Mr.Jeon?” I asked trying to sound as if I’m not interested but in fact I want to know my bestfriend’s thought about him.

“I mean why don’t you do it with him?” she asked and my eyes flew wide open.

“Chae, what are you saying? He’s our teacher!” I try to warn but she just smirked.

“But he’s hot and to be honest. I kinda ship you two.” she said giggling like a girl who just saw her long time crush.

“You’re weird. We are totally opposite. I’m a student and he’s a teacher. There is no ‘US’ Chae” I said, emphasizing the word US.

“But I have a feeling that he kinda like you.”

“Stop.”

“What? When we visited his house that time that he was sick, he’s been glancing at you the whole time. And when his girlfriend came, he was still looking at you. Lisa, I can feel he really likes you.” she said and I shook my head.

She’s impossible.

“And, what if he likes me? He has a girlfriend.” I said and she got quiet.

“Oh gosh! I’m so sorry. I shouldn’t push you to a man who has a girlfriend. That is a very terrible thing for me to do.” she said shaking her head dramatically.

“You’re not terrible. You are the best.” I said to comfort her. She’s getting sad again.

“I am terrible. I was pushing you to have sex with a man who has a girlfriend. It is very unfair for that actress Ji-eun that I am shipping her boyfriend with another girl. If it was Jimin to have sex with another girl, I would die I swear.” Chaeyoung bursted out her feelings.

I looked down and guilt started flowing over me.

I want to tell her what Jimin did but I’m much of a coward to break her heart.

What should I do now?

Class 3-C POV

After the lunch break, students came back to their respective rooms to continue their class.

When Mr.Jeon came in he scanned the whole classroom and his brows automatically furrowed when he can’t seem to find the person he’s looking for.

“Namjoon, where is Lisa?” he asked.

“I don’t know sir. I haven’t seen her since our last period before lunch break.

Mr.Jeon felt uneasy hearing this especially when he realized that Jimin is no where to be seen too.

“How about Jimin?” he asked the president again.

“Same sir, last time I saw him was before lunch break.” he answered. And for some reason his chest twisted. As if something bad is going on.

The entire afternoon, he didn’t find peace in teaching.

He was too lost of thinking where Lisa is and also where Jimin is.

Jungkook’s POV

When the class ended, I quickly drove back home to see if Lisa is back at the house.

I was too worried and anxious for not seeing her the whole afternoon but when I saw that Lisa’s school shoes was at the shoe rack, I smiled ear.

She’s here. I excitedly ran to the elevator to see her upstairs. I think she’s there.

Now I’m infront of her door. Contemplating if I would open it or not. Because of the last incident, I am hesitant to open it. Who knows if she’s just wrapped in a towel again?

I don’t want to see that again.

“Lisa, are you here?” I asked as I knock on the door.

No answer.

Now I’m more worried.

“Lisa? Are you inside? I’m coming.” I said and continued,

“So please…please wear some clothes.” I warned.

I breathed in and out before opening the door. My other hand covers my eyes to not see Lisa if she’s naked or what.

“Lisa?” I called again. When I recieved no answer, I peaked to look. But she was not there. Her room was empty and even when I checked the bathroom, it was also empty.

Where is she?

I tried to think of places where she could be at.

I swear to God if she’s with Jimin!

That one is a playboy.

Once again, I walked out of the house and rushed to my car. Not even changing my uniform, I began my search for Lisa.

Author's Note

Well well well…how are you guys?
I missed you 😘

Class Playboy

Lisa's POV

Chae and I spent the whole afternoon watching some Netflix in her room.

As we were eating some Ice cream she said "Lisa, stay the night here please?" fluttering her eyelashes at me with her puppy eyes.

"Uh..but.." I began searching for words to turn the offer down. I can't possibly stay in her house because of Mr.Jeon. I don't know if he'll agree if I stay out for the night.

"Please Lisa? I'm really sad right now and I can't contact Jimin. Maybe he is so focused with Mr.Jeon's class. He really likes the teacher you know." she said innocently.

My mind is already running with Jimin having heated scenes with that bitch of a woman.

Seeing her as fragile as this. I can't stand to turn the offer. I'll just explain to Mr. Jeon later on a text that I will not be home or I should go home first to ask permission personally.

"Okay okay..but I need to go home first. I still need to change my uniform." I said.

"No way, I have a lot of clothes. Just pick whatever you want." she said while looking at my uniform.

I know that she'll offer me this but I really want to go home first. It's not that I don't like her clothes but I really want to see Mr.Jeon first before the day ends.

But what can I do? I have no more alibis.

"Okay, but promise me you will stop crying." I said.

"I won't. You're here now and I have Ice cream. This is enough to keep me going for the day. But I really miss Jimin." she sighed.

Her sigh made me sigh too. If she only knew what that jerk is doing right now.

Then shortly after watching more scenes of Crash Landing on You, Chae covered her mouth as her eyes watered.

“Is something wrong?” I asked her worriedly.

But she didn’t answer as she ran to her bathroom. I followed after her in worry.

“Chae, what’s happening?” I asked her as she keeps puking on the bowl while holding her stomach.

No way.

There is no way she is pregnant!

I said as I shake my head.

Class 3-C POV

The lady began undressing after Jimin’s eyes but he beat her to it.

“Sasha, we cannot do it here.” he said while looking around.

The two are now on his car which is parked at the school’s parking lot. It is just 3 in the afternoon but they have been having a heated making out session.

It was actually not his intention to hook up with the girl but the girl was really persistent in getting under his skin. And the fact that his girlfriend is not around made him do this.

“Why not?” she asked rather annoyed.

“We’re at the school’s parking lot. Someone would see us?” he said.

The girl rolled her eyes. “So what? You’ll leave me hanging? I swear my panties are soaked. You should take care of this.”

“Not my fault if you’re so horny.” he said, also annoyed. He’s not even hard even if they made out the whole afternoon.

“Now you’re being rude! I will let this go but you need to come at my house later. Parents are not there.” she said. “Shit!

How can I go back to class when I'm so wet like this!" she said as she fixes her button of her uniform.

Jimin didn't speak. Instead she just looked at the girl with now messy hair. Her lipstick is smudged and her lips were swelling. It's really obvious what she just did.

"I'll try to go." he lied. There's no way he would go.

"You must. You should show me what you got down there" she said glancing at his bulge. Then she hopped out of his car.

She was still out of his car fixing her scarf when Jeongyeon who was walking by the parking lot to go home earlier saw her.

Jeongyeon's brow furrowed knowing who the car owner was. Then it dawned on her that maybe Jimin and the girl did the deed inside his car.

It was very obvious by the way the girl looked like.

Suddenly, her being the gossip girl kicked in, she hid behind a car and took a picture of the girl making sure that Jimin's car is visible.

Then she waited for Jimin to come out. But then shortly after the girl left left, the car left the parking lot too.

"Oh shit! Jimin is cheating!" she covered her mouth at the realization. She knows already that she needs to get out of people's businesses but cheating is just something she would not turn a blind eye on. Especially if it's her sweet friend Chaeyoung being cheated.

"She deserves to know. I will tell her this." she said nodding her head continuously as she was looking at the picture of the girl with wrinkled uniform, messy hair and smudged lipstick.

Jimin on the other hand decided to go home and not come back to the class. He felt really guilty with what he did. He is sure that this is because of Chaeyoung.

Back then when he was still in elementary, he was bullied a lot by his classmates for being fat.

Yes, he was obese when he was young and he used to cry everyday for being called fat, pig and more humiliating words.

The insults was just too much that it ruined his self-esteem and self confidence. He thought of himself as the ugliest human being back then.

The bullying went on until middle school and the pain never subsided. Especially when he met his first girl crush.

He proposed to the girl using all his saved money to buy some flowers, chocolates and those cute stuffed toys. It was the first time he found the courage to confess to a girl after a very long time of being shy.

But when she asked the girl to be his girlfriend, the same girl who he dreamed of is the same girl who broke his heart the most.

She threw the stuffed toys on his face. She stomped on the flowers and said. “Remove your fats first before dreaming of me you pig. You think I will like you just because of this?” the girl who looked at him in disgust said those words and it pierced through his soul.

The slightest self confidence he has left in his body got crushed because of that incident.

That time, he cursed himself for eating a lot. For loving food so much. For being lazy to exercise.

But he decided that crying will never solve his problem.

He began working out and took serious diet. And after months of self discipline, he was able to achieve the perfect body he’s been dreaming of.

His body toned down and now has mucles everywhere. His change of looks also changed the way the people acts around him.

No one bullied him since that day. And the girl who mocked him is now begging for his attention.

His change of looks also changed his perception of himself. It has now over compensated. He began playing with girls. He

played with their feelings He began hurting them. He didn't take those girls seriously.

And when high school came, he was named the school's no.1 playboy. Jimin would leave those girls after he's taken them.

But it all changed when he met Chaeyoung. For some reason, she's the only girl he can't hurt. He fell so hard for her that he courted her for months. The girl was too shy and too pure for him to ruin.

Now he is so inlove with her that he stopped playing with other girls.

Except now when he kissed that girl. That's the only fling he had since they've been in relationship. But he has no plans of fucking her later. It was just tempting a few hours ago.

He admits that Chae's problems at home is taking a toll on their relationship.

She would always cry and he would always be there for her but sometimes Chae forgets too that he needs her just as she needs him.

But she loves Chae so much to hurt her.

Now he just regretted kissing that girl. He decided he will not do it again. He will never cheat again especially that he knows that her father is a cheater.

Jimin felt guilty and sad for her girl. He should show her some more love because Chae needs him.

Good thing nobody saw.

That's what he thought.

Jungkook's POV

"Hello Lisa? Where are you? I've been looking for you. Why are you not answering my calls?" I asked her when she finally picked up my calls.

"Sorry Mr.Jeon, I am here at Chae's house. I cannot go back to the house tonight." she whispered.

Maybe she doesn't want Chae to hear our conversation.

"Why can't you go home?" I asked trying to hold back my hot temper on her. I've been in a bad mood the whole afternoon because of Lisa's absence.

"Chae needs me Sir. My bestfriend needs me now. I'll just come home early tomorrow to catch up for school."

"What? I—" then she hunged up.

This girl is really giving me a headache.

Why can't she just stay at home? And why does Chae needs her?

Chae should ask Jimin's help not Lisa.

Why bother her?

Now I won't be able to see her.

Questions after Questions ran though my mind.

And why am I even pissed if Lisa stays the night out?

I don't know too.

I just want to eat dinner together and maybe spend some time catching up her missed lessons.

But now she's at Chae's and I have to spend the night alone.

Why is she even choosing her classmate than her teacher?

Author's Note

What can you say about the Class Playboy?

Teacher's Side

Lisa's POV

"Are you pregnant?" I asked Chae. As she was gargling with the water to clean herself.

"No. I think I just ate too much ice cream." she said but I don't believe her.

"Park Chaeyong, are you lying to me?" I pressed her more using my mother-like tone.

"Of course not. I really am not pregnant. We are using protection and will your please lower down your voice. Servants might hear you." she said.

"I swear I will kill Jimin if you are." I said, my eyes not leaving the girl.

"I'm really not Lisa. Stop overreacting and even if I am pregnant I'm sure everything will be fine because Jimin will take care of me."

"But you're so young to be pregnant. And how are you even sure about Jimin taking care of you?"

"Lisa, please believe me. He loves me. He even took me last week to his family. That's how serious he is with me." she said smiling again.

"He did?" I almost scoffed out of disbelief.

"Yes, so now keep quiet and I want to continue watching the drama and will you please change your uniform now. I have pretty pajamas you can use." she said chuckling as if she has no problem.

This girl really. One moment she was crying and now she's laughing.

I just really hope she's not pregnant.

The Next Day, I left Chaeyoung while she still sleeping.

It was just 5 in the morning when I left and arrive at Mr.Jeon's house past 5.

I arrived fast because I can walk freely and easily with my white sneakers. I had to use this because my school shoes hurts my feet.

When I got inside, I made sure to cook Mr.Jeon a breakfast. I need to make up for him for not coming home last night.

To be honest, I am scared of what he thinks of me sleeping on other people's houses. But I think he's not mad.

Why would he care if I sleep the night out. It's not like I'm his girlfriend right?

After making breakfast, I walked to my room to take a bath and when done, I got back to the kitchen to check if Mr.Jeon is awake and now eating.

And there he was, looking at the food, a smile was placed on his lips.

"Good morning!" I greeted and his attention went to me. He smiled cheekily and ran to my direction making me step back.

I was surprised with what he did after.

His arms wrapped around me drawing me to his hard chest.

What the?

Is he…is he hugging me?

It felt like a dream to be hugged by him that I want to pinch my face if this is true.

This is not the first time that I got closed to his body but the last time was clearly because he was sick and he was cold. I was just there to warm him up.

But this time, this time is just different. He consciously hugged me and I just stayed there engulfed in his arms.

Finally he let go and looked at my face "Are you okay? I was worried." he said checking my body for something I don't know.

“I am fine, Mr.Jeon. I’m sorry if I got you worried.” I said awkwarly. How can this man worry so much about me?

“Oh..I see..that’s good then” he said while scratching his head. Maybe he realized that what he did was really weird.

“I have prepared breakfast. Let’s eat Mr. Jeon” I suggested to at least lessen the awkwardness between us.

He smiled and nodded.

As the both of us were eating, he asked “Lisa, why is your school shoes at the shoe rack?”

“Oh..I had to use my sneakers last day because my school shoes are not comfortable and it hurts when I walk.” I said and he nodded his head continuously while muttering something I can’t hear.

“Why Mr.Jeon?” I asked.

“What’s your shoe size?”

“It’s 240 mm” I answered back.

“Okay.” he said nodding his head.

An hour later, Mr.Jeon and I were already inside the classroom.

I was talking with Dahyun when Jimin came.

He walked in as if nothing happened.

‘This jerk’ I thought.

I saw the my english book and was about to hit his head with it when I was stopped by Mr.Jeon’s glare.

He is looking again at me and Jimin and I grew stiff under his gaze that I sat back to my chair to forget about the grudge in me.

You just wait until later Jimin! Until Mr.Jeon is not around.

The class ended smoothly and when Jimin went out I quickly rushed outside to talk to him. Sadly, Chaeyoung didn’t came to school today.

Class 3-C POV

Lisa ran to chase after Jimin without noticing that her teacher, Mr. Jeon was following her through his eyes. He was confused with Lisa's sudden weird actions of always seeking for Jimin's attention.

He was about to chase after her when Jackson came to ask him to just continue the tutorial with Lisa because Jackson has to attend a Math faculty Meeting.

Mr.Jeon assured the other teacher that he can take care of Lisa regarding the subject.

That eased Mr.Wang's worried feelings towards the girl. So he said thank you to Mr.Jeon.

Meanwhile out of the school building, Lisa was able to catch Jimin

"Hey Jimin!" she shouted for him to hear.

Gladly, no one is around to hear them.

"What now Lisa?" he asked, clearly annoyed.

"You were cheating." she said with a very low voice but Jimin heard the words clearly making his heart beat fasten at fear.

"Lisa please…" he worriedly walked to her with begging eyes

"Please what Park Jimin?" she asked crossing her arms on her chest.

"Please don't tell her. I swear I regretted it. Please don't Lisa." he almost kneeled in front of her but she just scoffed.

"Why should I follow you? You were cheating on my bestfriend. Do you have any idea how much she's been crying because of her family problems?"

"I know and I'm so stupid and I don't deserve her but please Lisa. I love her so much."

"You wouldn't cheat if you love her!"

"I'm so sorry. I know It was really stupid of me to be tempted but I genuinely am guilty for what I did. Lisa I love

Chaeyoung please don't make her leave me."

Jimin was not even aware that he's tears were already falling.

That was the first time in his life that he really got scared of losing someone.

He will not be able to take it if Chaeyoung leaves him. She's his only one apart from his family he cares the most.

Lisa on the other hand felt torn between hate and pity after witnessing his playboy classmate cry after her. He's not even aware that he was already kneeling in front of Lisa begging for her mercy.

The sight hurt her eyes so she said. "Okay fine. I will not tell her." Jimin's face lit up after hearing those words.

"But you will tell her yourself." the once smiling face of Jimin turned into a frown.

"Jimin, you made a mistake and you should ask for her forgiveness. Not me. I'm sure she will forgive you if you will just be honest." Lisa said making the man nod.

"I will. I will tell her. Just please let me explain to her" he said then he hugged Lisa out of gratefulness for giving him consideration.

The act didn't go unnoticed by Mr.Jeon as at that time he was walking out of the building.

Mr.Jeon felt his blood boiling at sight of Lisa hugging another man.

Jungkook's POV

"Lisa!" I called the girl who has been giving me a hard time for the past few days.

Lisa and Jimin turned their heads to me. And just like that Jimin left without saying anything.

My jaw clenched just by looking at him. Are they having an affair?

“What were you two doing?” I asked her.

“Nothing Sir. We were just talking about something.” she said.

“I didn’t know you refer the act of hugging as talking?” I said in apissed tone. I am so annoyed right now.

Why am I even annoyed?

Because she’s my student and she was hugging his classmate who has a girlfriend.

That is very wrong.

This is why I am annoyed.

“We were just talking.” she said with a serious face.

Then I realized that Lisa is not in a mood to talk today. It’s as if she’s got a problem going on.

“Do you have a problem Lisa?” I asked and she shook her head.

“Mr.Jeon, I should go home now. I will just walk and see you back at the house. Please take care on your way.” and just like that, she left me there.

Making me look at her retreating back.

When I got home, Lisa was already there at the living room sitting rather lost in her thoughts that she didn’t even realized that I sat next to her.

“Lisa?” she almost jumped out of the sofa when she realized I was there.

“Mr.Jeon you startled me!” she said clenching her fist on her chest.

“You seemed lost in thoughts. Is there any problem? You know I can listen right?” I said in a gentle way.

Whatever it is that is worrying her, I need to know.

“Mr.Jeon, if you witnessed someone cheating and the one who cheated was genuinely sorry. Must you take an action and tell the other person that the lover cheated?” she asked.

Her words were vague making it hard for me to decide on the situation but hearing the word cheating drew me back to the time where I saw Ji-eun cheating with my very own eyes.

“Mr.Jeon you don’t need to answer that. I’m sorry.” she apologized when she noticed my gloomy expression.

“It’s okay. But I am not in the position to advice on this because I am not sure with the situation. But to be honest, I really hate cheating people. I think besides confronting them, they should admit it themselves to their lover if they did the act. It is better to tell your boyfriend that you cheated than him confronting you. That way, she is genuine.” I answered referring to Ji-eun.

I never confronted her those times because I was waiting for her to tell me herself. Also I was too coward to face an argument with her because I don’t want her to leave me.

“I don’t understand the last part Mr.Jeon but I agree that the cheater should admit it themselves. Thank you so much for this.” she said smiling.

“Who is cheating by the way?” I asked. And she just shook her head.

Moments later, we began to just sit there comfortably. Her presence alone even if she’s not talking makes me happy.

“Mr.Jeon?” she called. Our heads are slightly resting on the sofa.

“hmm?”

“How will you feel if your teenage student got pregnant?” her question almost made me jump out of my seat.

The fuck?

“Who is pregnant?” I asked in so much worry looking at her tummy.

Is Lisa pregnant?

Why?

Who?

How?

“No one sir. I was just asking out of curiosity.” she said chuckling because of how I panicked.

“Lisa, don’t play with your teacher’s feelings!” I warned. She almost gave me a heart attack.

I swear if Lisa is pregnant I’m going to kill whoever did that!

“I’m not playing with your feelings. I’m serious about yo..I mean I’m just seriously just curious.” she said making me notice how her cheeks blushed and so she looked the other side.

What does she mean by serious about me?

I wanted to talk more when Lisa stood and said “I will cook our dinner now Mr.Jeon.”

Then she left me there dumbfounded again.

What’s this girl doing to me?

Author’s Note

Are you not even surprised that Mr.Jeon’s class are always absent and cutting classes everyday?

😂😂😂

Class Missunderstanding

Lisa's POV

Mr.Jeon and I were silently eating dinner, when the doorbell rang. We looked at each other and for a moment I tensed.

Is it Ji-eun?

Does she know that I live here?

What if not?

Mr.Jeon looked at me calmly and stood. "I'll go get it." he said and I nodded nervously. He went out to see who is there so I just waited at my seat.

Why am I even acting like a mistress or something when we're not in any romantic relationship.

Basically, I am the only who has kept feelings for the man but Mr.Jeon's loyalty is to his girl.

It just happened that he is very kind and caring to me.

Yes, he's like that to all his students not just me.

That is even why my classmates likes him very much.

As I observe, there were so many changes on the behavior of Class 3-C.

Most of my classmates are very attentive now. They seldom cut classes and even if one would absent, he sure has a valid reason.

Just like now, Bambam and Chaeyoung were absent because of their family problems.

I am happy though that I have comforted Chaeyoung enough and probably Jimin will take part in correcting his mistake.

But I'm also sad that I cannot get to comfort Bam. He is my bestfriend too but I cannot help him with his problem.

I have heard that his family is migrating to the US which saddens him the most.

I know he doesn't want to leave South Korea. He's been attached to us already.

And it will be very impossible to change the decision of his parents.

"Lisa, are you done eating?" Mr.Jeon asked when he came back from the door.

"Yes Mr.Jeon. I will wash the dishes first." I said and stood to clean the table but he somehow managed to pull me by my wrist.

"I'll do the washing later, come here first." he said pulling me to the living room.

I am weirded out by his sudden excitement but I realized why he was pulling me when I saw a shoe box on the coffee table.

Don't tell me…

"Good thing the delivery was quick. At least you have something to use tomorrow to school."

I was surprised and overwhelmed by this.

This man is just too much. How can he be so sweet?

I can't help but look at his handsome face as he let me sat on the couch. He kneeled in front of me as if he was going to propose.

My imagination got me feeling giddy inside. He open the box and took one shoes in.

Ahhh…I just wish it is a box of ring.

Then he smiled "There, it fits." he said, as if feeling proud of himself.

I can't help but smile at the man too. How can he order shoes without me knowing.

“Mr.Jeon, this is already too much. How can I ever repay you.” I said while shaking my head. The school shoes was really comfortable as if I’m not wearing any shoes at all. I bet I can walk faster with this.

“You don’t have to pay for anything. I just want you to wear school shoes at school” he said.

“But I think it will be a waste. We have less than three months left before the graduation.” I said.

“Don’t think much. We got 10 weeks more before the graduation.” he said and he sat next to me.

Hearing the word graduation made me realize that Mr.Jeon’s services in school will soon end. I don’t know what will happen after.

Will he kick me out after the graduation?

Where will I go after that. I’m sure I cannot go to college because I have not enough money.

“Mr.Jeon?” I asked nervously.

“What is it Lisa?”

“Does your..does your girlfriend know already that I live here?” I asked and his smile was replaced by a frown.

Now I regret asking the question.

Am I being nosey?

Mr Jeon thought for a while before answering “I forgot to tell her.” he said then he stood.

“Lisa, is it okay if you do the dishes tonight. I just need to call someone.” he said, leaving me there while taking his phone.

By that someone, I am sure that it is his girlfriend that he wishes to call.

My heart is aching out of jealousy again. But I really have no right to be jealous. I should have known from the very start that Mr.Jeon and I’s relationship will never be more than just a student and a teacher relationship.

Jungkook's POV

"Ji-eun?" I asked when she picked up.

"Finally you called. I've been waiting for your call." she said. Her voice sounded as if she was relieved.

"Really? Why?" I asked. This is new. She's never waited for my calls back then.

"Of course because I miss you. I'm just sorry I can't call you because I got really busy. Actually, Joy and Seulgi were helping me out with the location as to where to put up the cosmetic line. And you would be surprised that we found the best one just around the city. I can't wait for you to come here and see it yourself." she excitedly said.

"Me? will come there? In Australia?"

"Of course you are. You'll support the grand opening right? and by the way let me tell you about…."

Ji-eun kept talking about her experiences there but my mind cannot process every single word.

I am suddenly weirded out by the change of the atmosphere between us. It's as if she cares for me now which is really new.

All I thought is that she will be breaking up with me as soon as she sets foot away from me. But it turned out differently.

The way she talked to me makes me confuse too. I have this two sided feeling in me.

One is to break up with her

and one is to give us a chance.

She's changing. Maybe..just maybe I can finally get what I wanted from her–her love.

"Love? Are you listening?" she asked.

"Yes..ah..yes I'm still here." I said.

"I thought you were not. So how's your life there? Your students? Your work?" she asked curiously.

Now she sounded like she's really interested with my life.

What happened to her?

Why change?

Why now?

Now I'm confused.

She's confusing me.

But Lisa..

I'm sure I like her. Not just as a student but as a girl.

But Ji-eun is changing and I think I should assess my feelings well.

What should I do now?

"Uhm..Ji-eun, I have something to tell you." I said.

"What is it?" she asked. Her voice was laced with worry as if she's expecting me to say some bad news.

"I let my student live in the house because she has no place to go and—"

"She? You let a girl live inside your house?"

"She's just my student and I need to help her."

"I don't know Jungkook. This is very wrong. You're a man and that is a girl. Chances are you will have sex with her." she accused so surely.

"What are you saying! You of all people should know how I respect women. How can you just say that?" I asked in a pissed tone. I have never for once took advantage of any girl even my girlfriend. We barely even kiss what more with my own student.

"Still, I don't like her being there. Please Jungkook. If this is your way of making me jealous then fine. I am jealous. Just please kick her out. I don't want her there." she said almost yelling at the other line.

"Clearly you're not in the mood to talk right now. Let's just talk some other time when you're not jealous." I said and ended the line.

I know I should be happy that she is acting this way. At least I made her jealous but her reaction got me annoyed instead.

I cannot kick out Lisa.

Over my dead body.

She will stay with me no matter what. Even if it costs my relationship with Ji-eun.

Class 3-C

The next day, Mr.Jeon was preparing to start his lesson when Jimin came,

“Here comes the cheater” Jeongyeon muttered but it didn’t go unheared by the whole class. Including Jimin who grew stiff at her mocking words.

Jimin automatically looked at Lisa as if asking her if she’s the one who told Jeongyeon.

But Lisa was surprised too.

She was very sure that she didn’t tell anyone about what she saw.

“What are you saying Jeongyeon?” Jimin confronted the girl but she just rolled her eyes.

“You of course. You were cheating!.” she said making Jimin pale.

He got nervous more especially so that he has not told Chaeyoung about it yet.

He was still planning for ways to tell her without making her cry.

“Lisa, I thought we already talked. Why did you tell her?” Jimin asked.

“I didn’t. I thought I’m the only one who saw.” she said shaking her head.

“So, you two were hiding this from Chaeyoung? What kind of a bestfriend are you Lisa?”

Jeongyeon’s accusing tone made Mr.Jeon stand from his seat. He doesn’t like it when Lisa is being accused with something.

‘So, this is why Lisa has been acting weird around Jimin lately?’ Mr.Jeon thought.

“I was never hiding this from her Jeongyeon! I just wanted Jimin to tell Chae himself!”

“Tell me what?” the whole class froze when Chaeyoung’s voice echoed inside the room. As she was already there at the door with confused look.

It is clear to her that the three were arguing based on their facial expressions.

“What is happening?” she asked looking at Lisa, Jimin and Jeongyeon.

The other students were tensed too. Even Yoongi woke up from his deep slumber and watched in excitement how this chaos will turn out to be.

“Ms.Park, go to your seat now. We will start the class.” Mr.Jeon tried to divert the tension but Chaeyoung remained in her spot.

Even Hoseok stood to help Chae sit but she just swat his arms away.

She knows everyone was hiding something from her.

“Baby..listen..I..” Jimin walked to her to explain when Jeongyeon beat him to it.

“Chae, your boyfriend is cheating. Look at this!” she said, showing her the picture which serves as an evidence.

Chaeyoung’s expression changed from confusion to anger with what she saw. And with that she slapped Jimin’s face real hard.

“How dare you! You piece of shit!” she yelled at him and ran away.

In that situation, Mr.Jeon was too surprised to act and control everything. This is beyond his reach anymore and he

thought only Jimin could fix this problem.

Right after she ran, Jimin chased after her. Leaving the whole class in tension especially between Jeongyeon and Lisa.

“Listen, I don’t like students having misunderstanding in my class so we will talk about this matter later. I want you all at my house to discuss this issue. For now, let us continue with the lesson.” he said and both Lisa and Jeongyeon sat back on their chair.

Author’s Note

What do you think of Mr.Jeon’s feelings?

Does he love Ji-eun more or her feelings for Lisa is deeper than what he feels for his girlfriend.

Torn Feelings

Class 3-C POV

After Class, the whole class gathered at Mr.Jeon's house except Bambam and Namjoon who where absent and the couples Jimin and Chaeyoung.

Mr.Jeon, made sure that his class is not tensed so he prepared some snacks for them to at least lesses the awkwardness.

Actually the whole class was casually talking and enjoying their time together except Lisa and Jeongyeon who's been quiet the whole time.

Dahyun and Tzuyu in one corner are busy talking about the coming pageant, Hoseok, Eunwoo and Jin are busy eating while shirtless Yoongi is having a nap.

Only Lisa and Jeongyeon are quiet. Mr Jeon noticed this so he said. "Jeongyeon, Lisa I had hoped you can at least talk about what happened. If it's okay with you. I want to hear your sides."

Lisa momentarily looked at Jeongyeon and explained everything. She explained that he saw Jimin kissing in the middle of talking with the crying Chae. That she did not tell her because she knows it is not the right time for she has a lot of problems going on. She explained that she confornted Jimin but Jimin regretted it and decided he will tell Chae himself."

The whole class finally understood what happened including their teacher who realized he has been jealous for Jimin over nothing.

When Jeongyeon heard this, her heart softened at the girl. All along she thought that Lisa cares for Jimin's feelings more than she cares for Chaeyoung's.

"I thought you both were hiding this from Chae. Now I understand that you just don't want to hurt her but Lisa, Jimin

needs to learn his lesson!”

“I know but Chae’s been hinting to end herself if Jimin leaves him. I can’t bare to hurt her like that. I was so afraid for her to hurt herself so I choosed to be silent. And Jimin is genuinely sorry. He said he would tell her himself to explain his mistake.” Lisa added.

Mr.Jeon was torn between the two students. He understands Lisa’s reasoning but he also understands Jeongyeon.

“I agree with Lisa” Tzuyu raised her hand as if they were voting.

“No, Jeongyeon is right. We should be honest with our classmates even if it will hurt them.” Dahyun said.

“I agree with Dahyun.” Jin said while munching some crackers.

“Shut up! You’re not even listening. Lisa’s explanation is better.” says Eunwoo.

“This dude? We all know you will always pick Lisa under any circumstances.” Yoongi rolled his eyes.

“Eunwoo loves Lisa, Eunwoo love Lisa” Hosoek sing songed the words to tease the young man and almost all of the class laughed at him.

Well except Lisa who got awkward and Mr.Jeon who is somewhat fuming but still managed to control his pissed emotion.

“Please take this matter seriously.” Mr.Jeon glared at the boys who were teasing each other.

“As I was saying, we should at least let Jimin handle the situation himself.” Lisa said.

“But what if Jimin won’t tell her?” Jeongyeon asked making Lisa’s brows furrow.

“Then I have no choice but to tell her.” Lisa said.

Her answer finally convinced Jeongyeon and got her nodding.

Mr.Jeon was about to say something when the door opened.

They were all shocked to see Jimin and Chaeyong there.

Holding hands and laughing while walking to them.

“Hey guys! We heard from Mr.Jisoo we’re supposed to meet here.” Chaeyoung said.

She excitedly sat beside her girl classmates.

And Lisa was surprised when Chae hugged her.

“Miss you baby girl!” she said wrapping her arms around Lisa’s body.

“What’s happening? Are you guys okay?” Mr.Jeon asked the couples who just came in.

“Yes sir, we are okay.” Jimin said with a relieved voice.

“Well that was fast.” Jin chuckled.

“How?” Jeongyeon asked, confused. She thought the two would break up.

“Well this jerk explained to me that he kissed another girl but he said sorry so we’re good. But if he happens to do it again. I swear there’ll be no more second chances.” she said her voice threathening making Jimin nod.

“Never. I will never do it again.”

The class was relieved to hear the two solve their problem on their own. Now they realized that they have nothing to worry so Hoseok shouted “It’s party time!”

The rest of the class clapped their hands and continued their talks. Jeongyeon reached out to Lisa and the two finally made peace.

Mr.Jeon was so happy seeing the class like this but still he needs to give a word to Jimin so he called the young man.

“Jimin, can I have a talk with you.” he said. Walking out of the house to the front yard.

Jimin follwed him and he is sure that Mr.Jeon will talk about what happened.

When they were finally facing each other, Mr.Jeon said, “I hope you have learned your lesson.”

“I know Mr.Jeon. I’m very sorry for causing trouble at the class earlier. The class has to be interrupted because of me.” Jimin bowed his head to the teacher to say his deepest sorry.

“You were lucky that your girlfriend forgave you. Chaeyoung is very kind. I hope you won’t abuse her feelings for you in the future.” he said and Jimin nodded.

“Being cheated is the worst feeling a person could actually feel. I have been cheated Jimin and it’s the worst experience. So please reflect on this and give your relationship some loyalty.” he said.

The words he uttered was also a slap on his own face. Because he knows he is now being unloyal to Ji-eun for he is developing some feelings for another girl.

“I understand Mr.Jeon, I have learned my lesson today and from now on, I promise to be loyal to my girlfriend.

Jungkook’s POV

I can’t think clearly.

I am having mixed thought about my own feelings.

I am torn between my love for my girlfriend and my feelings for my student.

I kept rolling on my bed for an hour now because I can’t sleep. My mind is running thoughts about two girls and It’s so confusing.

Ji-eun, she’s the girl who made me chase and go crazy for years.

I did my best to get her.

I was very happy when she accepted me.

She was my dream girl.

She’s the perfect girl for me.

That’s what she is.

While Lisa.

Lisa turned my world upside down.

She's different.

She's very unique.

And for some reason, I am very drawn to her.

She's like a magnet which pulls me and never let's me go.

She always makes me feel jealous when she's with another man.

And just seeing her around the house makes me really happy.

At this point, I don't know what to do?

But all I'm sure of is that I want to make Lisa happy.

Do I love Lisa?

I'm not sure yet

What if I love her?

What does that make us?

Must I court her?

But she's my student.

She's too young to understand how I feel.

I don't even know if she likes me too.

I could just wish she has at least some feelings for me.

But what will happen to me and Ji-eun now?

Should I break up with her instead?

It's as if it's taking her so long to break up with me.

But I don't want to be a jerk and just break up with her over the phone.

If I do it, at least I need to go to her and break up with her personally.

Yes, I will have to go there I guess.

Maybe on the weekend when there is no classes.

My thoughts were cut when I heard light knocks on the door.

I jumped out of my bed knowing that it is Lisa.

“Yes?” I asked when I open the door.

She looked shy holding a piece of paper. “Mr.Jeon, can you check my answer?” she said handing me the paper.

“Come on in.” I said widening the door to make her come.

Lisa slowly walked inside.

“Sit on the bed.” I said and she looked at me hesistantly.

“Why?” I asked her. She seemed to be thinking of something.

“Nothing sir.” she said and finally sat at the edge of the bed.

The way she looked while sitting there makes me imagine how she’ll look good lying there.

Oh God.

What am I even thinking?

I tried to scan her answer to her math assignment but my eyes would land constantly on her.

She was innocently fidgetting her fingers. Her legs were tightly closed as she’s afraid that I’ll attack her or something.

I could only wish.

“Mr.Jeon? Is the answer okay?” she asked, cutting me from my perverted thoughts.

“It is okay. You’re doing well Lisa.” I said and she smiled proudly at me.

“I’m going now Mr.Jeon. Thank you.” she took the paper and was about to leave when I stopped her.

Lisa’s POV

Mr.Jeon surprised me when he grabbed my hand making me

face him.

“What is it?” I asked the man who was staring at me. His eyes were somewhat lost and I can’t read what’s going on in his mind.

“Lisa..” he uttered.

His voice sounded like he’s desperate for something.

“What’s the matter Mr.Jeon?” I asked worried of him.

But he didn’t answer. He just stayed there holding my hand while looking straight into my eyes.

I can’t help but be conscious as to why he is looking at me like this.

“Lisa…can I? Can I..?” he asked, his voice pleading.

“Can you what Mr.Jeon?” I asked back. What does he want?

“Can I get a hug? I’m just..a little sad.” he said.

He looked so cute when he said that, I didn’t think too much and just wrapped my arms around his neck.

His arms automatically encircled around me pulling me closer to him.

I can feel the warmth of his body. His hot breath on my shoulder and it made me so happy.

This is by far the best feeling in the world, hugging someone you really like.

But I know deep down inside of him, he’s just doing this because he’s missing someone.

He misses his girlfriend that’s why he is sad.

He just misses his girlfriend’s embrace and I just happened to be here.

And the reality hurts.

“Is Mr. Jeon feeling better now?” I tried to tease to hide the jealousy in me.

“I am. Thank you Lisa.” he said smiling warmly at me.

That night I didn’t fall asleep as I have realized my feelings for him is getting deeper and deeper.

Author’s Note

Guys, are you bored with the story being slow like this? I mean I don’t want them to jump on the bed quickly just like how they did in my previous books.

And the students has each chapter for a story meaning we still have Bambam,Tzuyu,Yoongi Jin and J-hope left. But along those chapters feelings will blossom so please be patient.

Thank you!

Class Introvert

Jungkook's POV

Wednesday Morning

"Jungkook!" Jisoo called me when I was walking to my class.

"What is it?" I asked, slowing down.

"Mr.Yang is asking for your presence. They are at the Principal's office."

"They?" Who wants to see me aside from the principal?

"Bhuwakul's parents are here. They have an important thing to discuss with you." she explained.

Bambam's parents? What do they want?

"Thanks Jisoo. I'll go there." I said.

"Oh by the way Jungkook, Jennie wants to catch up with us. They're finally back at the country from the honeymoon. Are you free this weekend? They invited us for a lunch." she asked.

I considered the offer for a while. At first I wanted to refuse because I wanted to go to Australia to talk with Ji-eun but I also want to meet Jong-in.

"Yes, I am free just send me the address."

"Got it. I'll tell Jennie." she said.

I bid a good bye to Jisoo and knocked at the Principal's office.

"Come on in" Mr.Yang's voice echoed." I opened the door to Principal's office and saw two old couples with Bambam sitting on the guest chair in front of Principal Yang's table.

"Good morning Mr.Yang, You were looking for me?" I asked.

“Yes Mr.Jeon, sit here please.” he said pointing at the chair next to Bam.

I sat on it and Bambam gave me a tight lipped smile. I smiled too and bowed at the couples who were sitting across us.

‘This must be his parents’ I thought

“So, I’d like you to meet Mr. And Mrs. Buwahkul. They are here to ask some favor from you.” Mr Yang introduced.

“Nice to meet you Sir and Ma’am. I am Bambam’s Homeroom teacher.” I explained.

The father smiled at me and said “Such a fine looking teacher. Bambam is always praising your teaching style at home that may also be one reason why he doesn’t want to leave this school.”

I was surprised when I heard this that I looked at Bambam’s direction to confirm if he’s really leaving. Bambam just nodded bitterly as if he is against it.

“If you don’t mind me asking Mr.Buwahkul, where are you going?” I asked.

“We are going to migrate to the US. And sadly Bambam has to left this weekend.”

The man’s words saddened me so much.

“Why leave that soon? Why not at least wait for him to graduate?” I asked the couples but they just shook their heads.

“Mr.Jeon, we have put up a business there and it will have to operate soon. We cannot leave Bambam here alone. He needs to go with us. We understand that he is fond of you and the class but we really need to take him.” the mother explained.

“Well.. is it okay with you Bam?” I asked the sad young man.

“I have no choice. I will just go Mr.Jeon.” he said looking down.

“Mr.Jeon, I believe it will be a waste if Bambam would be dropped because he has still remaining months to study. That is why we called you to consider in passing him by giving him online tasks. Since Bambam has been an excellent performer in class, we should give him a chance right?” Mr.Yang explained.

“I have no objections to this. Bambam has to at least do some online or modular studies to catch up with his classmates.” I said making the couple nod.

“We have no problem with that Mr.Jeon. we are sure that Bambam can do his responsibilities in school even if he’s miles away.” Mr.Buwahkul said in a calm tone.

“Okay, I will prepare modules and online assessments for him. Don’t worry, I will take care of this. I will make sure he still gets his diploma after 3 months.” I said.

“Thank you so much Mr.Jeon for your consideration. This is a great help to us.” the mother said.

“I believe everything is settled. Mr.Jeon, you and Bambam can now proceed to your class.”

After bidding the Principal and Bambam’s parents goodbye. Both of us started walking to go to our classroom.

We were few meters near the classroom when he spoke “Actually, I really did my best to stop them but I ended up agreeing to their plan. Mr.Jeon, I will miss my classmates and also the teachers here including you.” Bambam said with teary eyes.

His voice is really down and I can’t do anything but to just pat his back to offer some comfort.

“You are such a good man. Don’t worry, I believe you will meet new friends there and I’m sure you will have fun in no time. Besides, we can always do a video chat with your classmates.” I said and he smiled.

“Thank you so much Mr.Jeon. I really appreciate your kindness to us. But I have something more to ask you and I hope you can help me on this.” he said.

“What is it?” I asked excitedly. I can do anything for him. Just to make him happy for his last remaining days in school.

“Mr.Jeon, I have this girl that I like..no..not just like..I love her.” he said smiling ear to ear. His happiness radiated in me and I can’t help but genuinely smile back.

“And?” I urged him to continue.

“Back then I used to admire her but little by little my feelings has grown deeper that I didn’t know I have already fallen in love. But I was too shy to admit and confess and now I regret not expressing my feelings for her. Now that I’m leaving there is no more chance for us to be together.” he paused and scratched his head in a shy manner.

“It’s a pity because all along I thought I can make her my girlfriend and I can marry her someday. But life has a different path for me. Maybe we are not meant for each other.” he explained.

“Whoever this girl is, she is sure to be lucky to have you.” I said patting his back.” So,what favor are you asking then?”

“I want you to help me set up a romantic date on this girl. At least I want to be happy before I leave. Mr.Jeon, can you give me any idea to prepare a romantic date with her? I have to ask you because I know you have an experience in dating.” he said in an excited way.

“Sure, I can help you with that. I can help you look for the romantic location, food to eat and more.”

“Really?” he asked in wide eyes.

“Of course. Anything for my students.” I said.

“Well I should ask her soon. I’m so excited Mr.Jeon.”

“Me too. I can’t wait for your date to happen.”

Lisa’s POV

When I got home Mr.Jeon was already at the kitchen preparing a dinner. I was late than usual because I had to visit the

orphanage. Because I know thos angels will be throwing tantrums if I don't visit them soon.

"Oh Lisa..come here and sit. The food will be ready any time soon." he said.

I didn't changed my uniform and just sat in the chair to wait for him.

When he was finally done, he served the dinner and we started eating.

"This is very good Mr.Jeon. You are really good at cooking." I said.

"Your cooking is way better than mine. Your future husband will be lucky." he said laughing. And I shook my head to disagree.

"More like unluckly because I'm too plain." when I said those words,Mr.Jeon stopped laughing to look at me.

"What are you saying? You are not plain Lisa!"

"I am. I wish I am as beautiful as Ms.Ji-eun and as wealthy as her." My words came out as insecure as how I feel.

Mr.Jeon's eyes softened and shook his head. "No, you are beautiful Lisa. Stop wishing to be someone else. Everyone has their own beauty and yours is something to be proud of."

His words made me blush and feel butterflies inside. This is actually the first time someone has called me beautiful and the best part is that it came from the man I admire the most.

How I wish I can always get to hear him say that I am beautiful. Even though deep down, he's just saying this to comfort me.

I never for once believed in myself especially my physical appearance.

My silence probably worried my teacher more so he leaned over to grab my hand.

I watched how his big hand held mine.

“Lisa, I repeat you are beautiful. I hope you believe me.” he uttered each word as if he means them so I didn’t say more and just nodded.

Mr.Jeon and I began eating again and as I silently enjoy the food, I can’t help but realize that we are acting as if husband and wife.

We prepare each other’s food, we eat together, we sleep in the same roof, we hug and we hold hands.

I don’t know if this is cheating against his girlfriend because Mr.Jeon has no feelings for me but the fact that I have feelings for the man is unfair to Ms.Ji-eun.

Maybe I should stay away from him to stop myself from falling more?

“Lisa?”

“Uhh..ahh..Yes Mr.Jeon?” his voice cut me off my thoughts.

“Do you have any idea who Bambam likes? I mean if has he ever told you about the girl that he really likes?”

Bambam? I thought for a moment before answering “I don’t know Mr.Jeon. He’s never told me before that he likes someone. Why?”

“He just asked for my help to plan a romantic date with this girl he loves.” he explained.

“Really? That jerk! He hasn’t even told me that he loves someone now. I’m gonna scold that guy tomorrow!” I said and he just chuckled.

“Why don’t you just help me plan about the date.”

“Me?” I asked pointing at myself. “Why me?”

“Because you’re a girl. You can share what a girl wants in a date. That way we can help Bambam.” he said.

Sounds a good idea. I want to help my bestfriend too.

“Okay, but as for me, anything is good Mr.Jeon. I don’t think I have any idea, it is better to ask Jimin’s help but I can help with the manpower or what.”

“Manpower? We are planning a date not constructing a building, Lisa.” he said while chuckling

“I mean I can carry the props or whatsoever.”

“No you won’t be carrying anything. I would rather have you sit down than carry things.” he said with his strict teacher’s voice.

“Don’t underestimate my strength Mr.Jeon, I maybe thin but I can break noses.” I said and he laughed so hard.

“Yeah yeah..I know how strong your fists are. But even if so, I don’t want you getting tired.”

“Okay..I won’t argue anymore.” I said. When it comes to argument, I will never win against this handsome man.

Both of us became silent after that.

Mr.Jeon and I proceed with the cleaning of table and washing the dishes. And that night he came to my room to ask me if I need help with my assignments.

Luckily, I have finished them all including my Math assignment.

Mr.Jeon said I am finally getting better at school. All thanks to him who adopted me and saved me from my worst uncle.

Author’s Note

Who do you think would Bambam ask on a date?

Asking Out

Class 3-C POV

The next day, the whole class was present because they heard the news that Bambam will be leaving on sunday.

They couldn't bare to miss the two remaining days at school with Bam.

"I hate you!" Tzuyu kept smacking Bambam's arms as she wipes her tears away. "Why are you leaving us?"

"Please srop crying you guys. You are only making it hard for me to leave." Bambam who is now having a hard time looking at his crying classmates can't do anything but shake his head.

"Well if the business fails, we still have a chance to see you right?" Namjoon said lightening up the mood for everyone.

"I know it's bad to wish for it to fail but I really hope it fails so that I can get back here." Bambam bitterly laughed while glancing at Lisa who is also crying.

Lisa thought Bambam can prevent his parents from leaving but it turned out that the young man can't convince his parents as well.

Now all she can do is cry for she will miss her bestfriend so much.

"I guess we just have to make the best of Bambam' remaining two days in class." Hoseok suggested.

The class agreed to spend time together that day. They made sure that Bambam will enjoy the company together.

Even Mr.Jeon planned on having a karaoke on friday night but Bambam said he has other plans.

Bambam has planned on preparing the date for his dream girl and friday is his only time to ask her out.

So when friday finally came.

He nervously looked around the class hoping for the perfect timing.

Mr.Jeon has helped him already plan the romantic date. The teacher reserved a dinner for two at a restaurant which is located on top of a building where you can see the city lights.

The teacher planned it to be simple but heart warming for Bambam and his girl.

He was really happy helping the student. For him Bambam deserves to be happy because it's his last day at Seoul.

When the class ended and everyone walked out, Bambam looked at Lisa who was gathering her things to proceed to Mr.Wang's tutorial class.

Good thing, Mr.Jeon and the rest of the class left already.

"Bam? Are you not going home yet?" she asked, confused as why the guy is not yet standing from his chair.

"Not yet, I…I…still have…I still have to ask you something." he said in a rushed manner.

He paled.

His hands were nervously sweating.

His body is slightly shaking.

He can't breath.

He can't talk.

Because When it comes to Lisa, he is always like this.

He's afraid to tell her his feelings because he's afraid to be rejected.

But now is not the time to be coward.

He needs to make this happen.

For he knows there's no more next time.

"Okay, what do you want to ask Bam?" the girl asked, not even aware of how Bambam is having a hard time speaking up his thoughts.

Bambam stood from his chair in all his might, he opened his mouth with closed eyes and said, “Lisa please go out with me on a date.”

The questioned left her all flustered.

‘Did he just ask me out?’ Lisa asked herself.

When Bambam recieved no answer he said.” I hope you would accept my offer. You can consider it as a friendly date. I just want to spend my last day here with you.”

Lisa was too embarrassed to talk but still she managed to nod making the guy happy.

“Thank you so much. I’ll send you the address later. Take care on your way Lisa.” he said the words were so quick and he ran out of the room leaving her alone.

Lisa doesn’t know what to do. Who to talk to and for sure she cannot go to Mr.Jeon to ask him advice on this.

She knows that Bambam was planning for a romantic date with his dream girl but she didn’t expected that the girl he was referring to was actually her.

Or she is just mistaken?

After the tutorial with Mr.Wang, Lisa went directly at Chae’s house and told her everything.

“Oh my God! Bambam finally got the courage to ask you out?” she asked, covering her mouth dramatically.

Lisa just nodded her head.

“What did you say?” the girl excitedly asked.

“I don’t know what gotten into me but I agreed.” Lisa answered.

“Well you should accept it. Tomorrow is his last day here and he wants to spend it with you. As his bestfriend you must make sure he is happy before he leaves.” Chae explained.

“But It would be awkward. I never for once thought about Bam and I having a date. He’s like a brother to me. As if I’m commiting an incest.”

“I know but just give the guy a chance Lisa. Bam is a great guy. Handsome, smart, rich, kind. He is almost perfect. If I were you I would be happy that he likes me.”

“What else can I do. Ahhhh Bambam! Why are you doing this?” Lisa yelled frustratedly and Chae just only laughed at her.

“So I guess we better decide on what to wear. You can use my dresses.”

“Eww..I would never wear a dress especially if it’s just Bambam I’m seeing.”

“This bitch! What do you plan on wearing on your date? Your baggy pants? Your hideous iron man shirts?”

“Hey! They’re not hideous! they are my precious Iron Man shirts.”

“They are and Lisa you are not a child anymore so might as well wear some clothes appropriate to an 18 year old.”

“Whatever Park Chaeyoung.” she answered nonchalantly. To Lisa, it is not that she doesn’t want to wear those girly clothes, she just has none of them because they are expensive.

Lisa could only afford tshirts and second hand pants.

Chaeyoung ignored the girl and just went to her walk in closet to pick something for Lisa. When her eyes landed on something, she said “This is perfect.”

Chae emerged from the closet carrying a mini red dress making Lisa eyes widen.

“What the heck is that?”

“Shut up! You are wearing this tomorrow Lisa and I have a shoes that could match this one. You’re very lucky we both have the same shoe size.”

Lisa tried to decline her offer but Chaeyoung persisted and soon she got Lisa agreeing on wearing the dress.

Chaeyoung said that Lisa must come to her house tomorrow before the date for she will do her make up.

Lisa on the other hand agreed on wearing a make up as long as it is very light.

Lisa's POV

When I got home, Mr.Jeon was already eating.

"Mr.Jeon, I'm sorry I was late I was at Chae's"

"It's okay, come here and eat. I started eating without you because I'm a bit hungry." he smiled showing his bunny teeth.

Both of us ate silently but I didn't told him about the date.

I didn't told him that he actually planned a date for myself and Bambam. I don't know how Mr.Jeon will react if he finds out. Because back then he said I should refrain from dating and just focus on my studies.

But this date for me is just like a friendly one so he must not worry. Besides, Mr.Jeon shouldn't worry if it's Bam because he is the most caring and gentleman I know.

"Lisa, if you need anything about your assignments just come at my room."

"Yes, Mr.Jeon."

Jungkook's POV

Saturday morning

I came down to see Lisa preparing a breakfast. I will never get tired of admiring her beauty. She looked so beautiful while cooking that I suddebly wished my lifetime could be spend waking and seeing her like this every morning.

Just imagine Lisa cooking for you while you hug her back to steal kisses on her cheeks.

I could only imagine.

"Good Morning!" I greeted, smiling widely at her.

"Oh you're awake. I'm doing breakfast today. Just sit there Mr.Jeon." she said.

I excitedly waited for her to finish, when she was done, she sat and we started eating.

“You really are the best in cooking.” I complimented. How can she cook better than me.

“Nah..you just have no choice.”

“You really are Lisa. I hope you can always cook for me like this.” I don’t know how future will lead us but I really wish to never part from her.

“If you want me too, of course I will.” she said smiling back.

Her smile is blindinly beautiful that I cannot look away.

Lisa caught me staring but insted of looking away, I just remained looking at her.

Surprisingly, she too stared at me.

As if being hypnotized, she asked out of the blue “Why are you so handsome?”

The words flattered me so much. I felt happy being complimented by her.

I can’t believe she will find me handsome. I always hear compliments around women but it’s way better when it comes from Lisa.

“Thank you.” is all that I say.

“Uhm..by the way Lisa, I actually planned on teaching you how to drive today but I remembered I will go out for a lunch with your teachers Jisoo and Jennie and also her husband.”

“Oh really? Can you please send my regards to Ms.Jen? I really miss her.” Lisa’s face lighten up hearing Jennie’s name which made me thought if she prefers her orginal homeroom teacher than me.

“Do you like Jennie?” I asked curiously.

“Yes of course. I like her so much. She’s so pretty and hot.”

I know I shouldn’t be jealous but I became conscious of my stand as a substitute teacher to her.

“Then who do you like more as a teacher, me or Jennie?”

The question made Lisa scratch her head.

Now I’m afraid she’ll pick Jennie than me.

“That’s a hard question Mr.Jeon because your teaching styles are different. I can’t compare both of you.”

“Then just pick who you personally like more. Don’t worry, I wouldn’t be mad if you don’t chose me.”

As if.

Lisa breathed deeply before answering “I like you Mr.Jeon”

My mind processed her answer differently as if she likes me just as how I like her.

“You..you like me???” I asked in disbelief.

Lisa likes me???

“Yes, I like you as a teacher.” she said clarifying her answer and I just had to nod.

One day Lisa.. One day.. You will like me more than just being your teacher.

Author’s Note

Taennie shippers, I’m sorry for disappointing you in this book but I have other plans for the man.

I hope you understand.

Friendly Date

Jungkook's POV

At Lunch

Jisoo and I patiently waited for Jennie and her husband in a restaurant where we usually eat out when we were still in college.

"Where is your girlfriend? You should have brought her with you." Jisoo asked while sipping her tea.

"She's in Australia." I replied shortly. And even if she's here, I wouldn't bring Ji-eun with me on lunch with my friends.

Ji-eun doesn't like being around them and I don't know why. All she says is she's not comfortable with Jennie and Jisoo when in fact the girls would warmly approach her everytime.

"She's getting more popular now. I have seen her billboards around the city and they're really pretty." Jisoo would always admire Ji-eun and she would always say that I'm lucky to have her.

If she only knew the heartaches Ji-eun has caused me, I bet she will stop saying these things.

Finally, a beautiful lady came walking at us while waving her hand.

"Jennie!" we both welcomed the girl who has now tanned skin maybe because of her honeymoon spree.

"I missed you!!!" she squeaked while hugging Jisoo.

"And you too Jeon!" she said giving me a hug too.

"Come let's eat. We already ordered food for you." Jisoo said and we all sat down.

“But I thought you would bring your husband? Now I’m stucked with girl talks.” I said rolling my eyes.

“He can’t come because he has some business to attend to. And don’t you ever complain Jeon! I still haven’t forgiven you for not attending my wedding!”

“I told you Ji-eun needed my help that day that’s why I couldn’t come.”

“You’re always choosing Ji-eun!l all the time! can’t you at least give your friends your attention?” Jennie complained while pouting.

“Jungkook said Ji-eun is in Australia that’s why he came with us today.” Jisoo announced excitedly.

“Good then! Jeon is ours for the day!” Jennie clapped her hands happily.

“I thought you like Ji-eun? Why are you being happy that she’s not here?” I asked.

“It’s not that we don’t like her. It’s just that when she’s around, you become this obsessed puppy with wagging tail running around her feet.”

“Hey I’m not like that!”

“You are and it’s not healthy. If I were you, I would break up with her. Are you not even disgusted how many man’s lips she has kissed for her dramas?” Jennie said, scrunching her nose.

“Can we not talk about that. I came here to have an update about your married life not about my relationship.” I defended.

Jisoo nodded. “Jk’s right. How was your honeymoon? How is he on the bed? Are you pregnant already?” Jisoo asked questions after questions and as a man, I am not comfortable with this type of conversation where you would listen to how sex has within females.

“Hey hey…those are insider’s question Jisoo! I cannot tell you how good and how we did it. All I can say is I am very happy and I felt like I’m a queen.”

Jennie proudly told us how her husband spoils her in everything while they were travelling abroad. She said they will continue their travel after they finish taking care of her husband's businesses here.

The man was known to be a CEO who fell in love with Jennie at first sight. Now, Jennie is living the life she always wanted.

"How is my class by the way? Are they giving you a hard time?" Jennie asked making me shook my head in disagreement.

"No, I like that class." I answered thruthfully. So far, they are the best thing that happened to me.

"Really? That's weird. Nobody likes that class because they are very problematic."

"At first I had a hard time with them but later I realized that they are all good. Just naughty sometimes but nothing I can't handle." I aanswered remembering how Lisa punched my face and broke my nose.

"I'm so proud of you Jeon. Thank you for being understanding. And please be gentle on Yoongi." Jennie said as if she know the young man's background.

"Yoongi? Why?"

"He's the trouble maker of the class, he bullies a lot of students before but he has a lot going on in their home. I recently discovered that his father would always hurt him physically. It stemed from the broken marriage of Yoongi's parents. Yoongi has a lot of branded clothes from his mom but his father who hates to be reminded of his wife, would rip those shirts and throw them away."

"What the hell?" my blood is boiling hearing this. I didn't know Yoongi has this problem at home.

"Yes, so please be gentle with him and also Tzuyu. that girl is pressured a lot by her mother. Her mother is known to be the director of Korea's pageant Foundation. Her mom is a bitch of a perfectionist who controls Tzuyu since birth. She's not

allowed to make mistakes Jeon so please make her feel that she can commit mistakes sometimes.”

“That’s horrible for a mom!” Jisoo exclaimed. And I nodded.

“That maybe why she’s so pressured with the coming pageant.” I said.

“Oh yes, she is. Good thing, the girl is pretty and well trained on those things. She can handle herself well with these kind of events. i’m jist worried if one day she’ll lose.” Jennie explained as she chews her food, making her look like a puffy-cheeked cat.

“Thank you for informing me this Jennie.” I said.

“I’m worried about those students.. Oh and especially Lisa.”

The name caught my full attention making me ask, “What about her?”

“My husband and I used to see her late at night doing man jobs not caring for her safety. I don’t know why she needs money that much but it’s just alarming that at her age, she is working her bones out.”

I lightly nodded at Jennie’s words. I know about this already. I know how hard she works and I will never let her work again. I’m going to support her for a lifetime if I need to.

“Jeon? are you listening?” Jennie waved her hand at my face as I was lost in thought

“I..uh..I am listening”

“As I was saying, please do a follow up on Lisa. I am worried about that girl.”

“Okay okay..I will.” I said nodding my head.

My friends must not know that Lisa lives with me to avoid scandals. So I just pretended that I didn’t know much about Lisa.

Jennie Jisoo and I spent the whole afternoon chatting about all sorts of things. That I forgot that I was supposed to go and check Bambam’s date.

Class 3-C POV

“Oh my God! You look like a human now!” Chaeyoung covered her mouth as she was impressed with how the make over with Lisa turned out.

“Stop. I look like a clown with this make up!” Lisa said as she tries to wipe the make on her skin but Chaeyoung was able to stop her by grabbing her arm.

“Don’t you dare wipe that Lisa!”

“But..”

“Believe me you look great. Please be confident about yourself.” Chae encourage her while fixing her lightly curled hair.

Lisa replied with a deep sigh. She could not believe she would dress up and wore make up like this just for her bestfriend. But for the sake of making Bambam happy, she didn’t talk anymore.

Soon, she left Chae and head to the restaurant where Bam is at.

When she stepped in the building, she was ushered to the rooftop where she immediately witnessed a very romantic setting.

The awkwardness that she felt doubled when her eyes landed on Bambam who looked so good with his dark blue button down shirt.

The man who she treats as her brother finally got the courage to walk to her and take her hand.

Lisa felt his hand was cold and sweaty meaning he is also tensed as her.

“Thank you for coming Lisa. This means so much to me.” Bambam nervously looked at her and added “By the way, you look so beautiful.”

“Anything for you Bamie.” she smiled. They both sat at a table for two with perfect lightings sorrounding them. Food

was placed on the table as a light music was playing. No one was there except the two of them.

Lisa decided to lessen the awkwardness by talking about a lot of things.

Random things that they both enjoy but as she was laughing at the old memories, she noticed that Bambam was already tearing up.

Confused, she looked at the man to get a better view of his face. “Are you crying?” she asked.

“It’s just..it’s just so heartbreaking that I had to leave.” Bambam said while looking away. He is shy for Lisa to see him like this but the girl was very understanding about his feelings.

Lisa stood from her chair and pulled the chair beside Bambam’s. She thought this way, she can comfort him more. Lisa took Bambam’s hand and said “Cheer up. It’s not the end of the world. We will see each other again, right?”

This stopped Bambam from crying. He faced her and said “Lisa, this is the only time that I will say this…. I know you care for me like I’m your brother. But to me, you are more than that. Since we were in middle school, I fell for you. Everytime you are around girls, I only see nothing but you. That’s when I realized how I really feel.” Bambam paused as Lisa was listening intently.

She was overwhelmed with the confession but she has already prepared herself for this as she was spoiled by Mr.Jeon.

“Lisa, I love you.”

Lisa felt her ears grew hot, her heart beat fastened and her breathing hitch. As this was the first time he heard someone said those words to her.

“I love everything about you Lisa. You are so beautiful inside and out and I really want you to be mine. Mine to love, mine to care, mine to hold. But sadly, I had to leave and all I could do is memorize your face, your voice, your laughter, your everything.”

“Bam…”

“I don’t ask you return my feelings. I just want to free my chest from keeping this secret for years now. Lisa, thank you for everything.”

Lisa happily wrapped her arms around her friend to express how she appreciate his courage.

Soon both of them spent the night together, they savoured their food, they talked about a lot of things, they enjoyed the night.

As the two of them were chatting, they didn’t notice a group of youngsters watching them on a corner.

It was Jin, Namjoon and Hoseok.

“Guys! I took the best photo look!” Hoseok happily waved the phone on his hand.

The two gathered around them and smiled in awe.

“Wow! Bambam would cry if he saw this. This will be our gift before he leaves.” Namjoon explained looking at the taken photo where Lisa and Bambam were having a friendly hug.

“Yeah. This is an epic photo. Have you taken some other pictures aside from them hugging?” Jin asked.

“Of course. I have here decent looking pictures.” Hoseok showed them pictures of the two eating, laughing and just chatting.

“Good, because Mr.Jeon asked me to send pictures of Bambam’s date because he can’t come. We’ll send the decent one later.

“Oh shit, Mr.Jeon just texted asking how the date went by?” Hoseok panicked reading the teacher’s message.

“Give me that. I will send him a reply.” Namjoon took the phone and typed a message.

Everything is good Mr.Jeon. Bambam and Lisa are having a good time.

he pressed the sent button and was about to attach a photo of the date when Jin sneezed.

Namjoon was shocked that he pressed the wrong photo to send.

It was too late when they realized that they just sent Mr.Jeon a photo of Lisa and Bambam, hugging.

Author’s Note

Prepare for a jealous bunny on the next chap

Jealous Teacher

Jungkook's POV

When I got home, it was already dark. And I was surprised that Lisa was not home too.

Where could she be? She didn't tell me she will leave today?

Maybe she's at Chae's again. I wonder why she always spends time with her when they are always together at class.

Is my company not enough?

All along I was hoping I can come home to her cooking and her beautiful smile. Sadly not.

I walked in my bedroom and changed to my comfort clothes when I remember about the date.

Wanting to hear how Bambam's date turned out, so I sent a message to Namjoon.

I had to ask his help in watching over Bambam's date so that he can help in my place when things go wrong.

Also, I am excited to see who his date is. Bambam texted me that the girl agreed and I was beyond happy that the plan is turning out well.

I took my phone and typed a message,

Namjoon, how is Bambam's date going? I hope everything's fine there?

I smiled sending the message. I can't wait to hear an update from him.

When my phone beeped, I quickly swiped it to read.

Everything is good Mr.Jeon. Bambam and Lisa are having a good time.

Huh?

I tried to reread the message if I'm just having hallucinations of Lisa but it's really Lisa which is written.

Lisa?

What is Lisa doing there?

Maybe Namjoon just had a typo.

Not long after, an image was sent.

I pressed the image to load but when I saw it,

I dropped my phone.

What the fuck?

My eyes lingered on the phone' screen which surprisingly didn't broke. I took my phone back and stared at the image again.

This is Lisa?

Fuck! This is really Lisa?

But why?

Why are they hugging?

Shutting my eyes closed, I tried to think properly.

Is Lisa the one Bambam has mentioned that he loves?

Oh shit.

Did he confessed?

Did she accepted?

Are they official now?

What the actual fuck?

I just sat up a date for Bambam and my Lisa!

How come she didn't tell me?

I swear to God!

Lisa better explain this!

I grabbed my phone and started heading outside.

I want to see her.

I need her to explain her side.

She just cheated on me.

But she's not my girlfriend.

Yeah…she's not mine.

She can date anyone she likes.

But still!

I don't like it!

I hate it!

I hate how I feel!

This is actually the first time I felt this.

As if I'm being stabbed in the chest and I find it hard to breath.

Why can't she just stay here and focus on me?

Why entertain others?

And why are these men and women around her all the time?

Why Lisa? There are other girls around him. Why fell for Lisa?

Questions started running on my head that I didn't realized I was inside my car for minutes now.

When I heard a car parked outside, my heart almost stopped beating.

Soon, the gate opened to show Lisa wearing a sexy mini dress. She's very beautiful this night as she was wearing a light make up.

I smiled at the beautiful sight, but when I remembered where she came from, I realized she dress up this good for him.

She wants to impress him?

That's why she's wearing this revealing dress?

She even wore make up for him!

She went inside the house with careful steps as if afraid to see me.

See? She's guilty because she did wrong!

I followed her inside but her light steps turned to quicker steps. Too quick that she was already in her room.

I looked at her door and contemplated.

I know I won't be able to sleep without hearing an explanation. I believe I deserve a valid reason from Lisa.

Can I come inside?

What if she's naked again?

But I need to hear her side.

My emotions took over so I opened the door to her room.

and there she was taking off her dress.

Both our eyes widen.

As I stare at her exposed chest.

Lisa covered them immediately. "Mr.Jeon, I'm changing." her cheeks reddened in embarrassment.

I know I'm supposed to look away but I really need her explanation so I didn't.

Lisa's POV

"Where were you?" he asked. His fists was clenched on his sides and I can't help but be frightened by his burning eyes which's not even blinking and just staring at me.

"Mr.Jeon, Can you look away." I said while holding my dress tightly to my chest as the straps were already undone.

But he just took steps closer that I had to back away.

What's happening to him?

Is he mad?

“Lisa, I am asking you where were you!” his voice was not loud but came out as a threathening one.

Should I tell him?

What if he gets angry with me?

“I was..I was at Chae’s” I aswered truthfully. I was really there before the date.

“And?” he asked taking one step closer.

“And..” I can’t look at his eyes anymore so I looked down.

“I had a date with Bam.” the words came out as a whisper. I looked at him tonsee his reaction.

With my answer, his jaw clenched, his eyes narrowed at me. And both of his arms trapped me on the wall on my back.

I didn’t even realize I was already leaning on a wall when I took steps backward.

As if I’m a prey cornered by a lion.

“Mr.Jeon…”

“Why? Why would you date him?” he asked, his voice sounded desperate and helpless.

“Because..because he asked me—”

“Do you like him? Do you like him too?”

“What? No..he’s just my friend.” Mr.Jeon’s breathing calmed down a bit but he asked me again,

“Then why were you hugging?”

“Huh?”

“Answer me Lisa. Why are you two hugging? I saw a picture of you. You were hugging him!” he asked, his voice a little louder and demanding this time that it made me nervous.

Why is Mr.Jeon acting this way?

He should know that it was only a friendly date.

“Mr.Jeon, that was just a hug to comfort him because he was crying for he is leaving tomorrow.” why am I even

explaining these things to him?

He's acting like a jealous boyfriend.

He breathed in and out before turning at me again. I was still cornered as if afraid that I'll escape.

"You..you..Why are you making things hard for me Lisa?" Mr. Jeon asked. I looked at him confusedly. His expression showed a mixture of pain and desperation.

"What do you mean making hard—"

I wasn't able to finish my question as my lips was sealed by him.

My eyes were wide open not believing what is happening.

He is kissing me?

His lips..his soft lips..was brushing against mine.

I can taste his warm breathing and his sweet lips.

My knees weakened and I almost melted as I felt his lips doing light movements.

Mr.Jeon's eyes were shut closed but I didn't closed mine.

I don't even know how to respond so I just stayed stiff as my heart is breathing crazily against my chest.

The feeling was so magical that I can't explain.

And I don't want to wake from this beautiful dream where Mr.Jeon is kissing me.

Thank God I didn't slumped down when he pulled away.

Mr.Jeon looked me in the eye with his calmer expression and said with a dominating tone "From now on, I don't want you giving attention to other guys. Do you understand Lisa?"

My mind was taken aback but my heart willingly submitted.

"Yes, Mr.Jeon."

That moment, he smiled as if satisfied by my answer.

But when he looked down, his expression changed. As if frightened, he looked away.

I followed his eyes and that's when I realized that the dress I was tightly pulling on my chest was now on the floor.

Oh God.

Now I was left with just my underwear.

"I'm sorry for looking." he shyly said and with that he ran away from the room not even glancing at me.

I had to cover myself again with the same dress.

Mr.Jeon's taste has lingered on my lips and I think it will be hard to sleep tonight.

Moments later, I was already on my bed and kept rolling and rolling on it while touching my lips because I still can't believe what happened.

I can't believe Mr.Jeon would kiss me?

Why did he kiss me?

That was my first kiss.

Mr.Jeon is my first kiss!

And why did he acted that way?

Is Mr.Jeon developing feelings for me?

Nah..that's impossible.

Maybe he was just tempted because he's missing his girl.

After all, he is a man with this kind of needs.

Author's Note

What do you think is happening to Mr.Jeon now?

The Orphanage

Jungkook's POV

The next day

I was hesitant to go out and see Lisa.

I mean I just kissed her last night and I don't know how she feels about that.

Is she upset?

Does she hate me now?

I understand if she would.

What kind of a teacher even am I for kissing her.

Oh God.. Just remembering those lips… If I could just kiss them forever.

And I've seen her chest and her almost naked body too.

That got me sleepless the whole night. As I said, I've never seen a woman's body in person and I just got lucky for seeing Lisa's.

My mind was running thoughts about her last night that she literally gave me a hard time.

Good thing shower fixes things like that.

'Cause I don't want to get off with it by imagining her. That would be disrespectful to a girl like her.

When I finally found the courage to go down, she was not there but there was a food on the table.

Where could she be?

I looked around the house and finally saw her at the laundry room doing laundries.

"Lisa? What are you doing!" I panicked when I saw her by the washing machine putting my dirties inside.

“I’ll be doing the laundries today Mr.Jeon.” she answered smiling.

She smiled at me?

She’s not mad that I kissed her?

I thought she’s going to ignore me for kissing her.

“Lisa about last night—” I tried to explain but she cut me off.

“It’s okay Mr.Jeon. I understand.” she replied back as she press some buttons on the machine.

“What do you mean you understand?” how can she remain calm after what happened last night.

Lisa finally turned her head at me “I understand that you just miss your girlfriend that’s why you kissed me” her words sounded as casual as if it’s not a big deal and to be honest, I am hurt.

She continued doing the laundry as I stare at her.

So she’s thinking that I just kissed her because I miss Ji-eun. Which is not true.

I kissed her because I like her but I cannot explain myself to her now because it would look like I’m playing with her and my girlfriend.

If I have to confess that I like Lisa, I must break up with Ji-eun first. That way, I can focus all my attention to her. And that way it will not sound like she’s a rebound.

But how about Ji-eun? Do I still lover her?

I don’t know.

I’m not sure.

But between the two of them, I’m more scared to lose Lisa.

I really need to talk to Ji-eun as soon as possible and have a decent closure on our relationship.

I cannot let Lisa freely roam around the city being single. Eventually, men will fall for her and I’m afraid she’ll fall for someone too.

“Mr.Jeon, you need to eat now, I’m sorry I had to eat ahead.” Lisa said cutting me off my thoughts.

I simply nodded and walked to the dinning area.

When I was done eating, I sat at the living room to read some news when Lisa walked to me.

“Mr.Jeon, can I ask you something?” she asked hesistantly.

“What it is?” I asked putting down the neswpaper.

“Can I go to the orphanage later?” she asked nervously as if I would not let her.

Orphanage? Why go there when it is sunday?

Should I allow her?

“What are you doing there?” I asked.

“I’m just going to visit the kids that I am teaching. I kinda miss them.” Lisa explained.

Of course I don’t want her to go. I was actually planning to just spend time with her today but I don’t want her to be upset if I’ll force her to just stay with me.

“Okay.” I said half-heartedly. My permission got Lisa smiling ear to ear then she started running upstairs.

I can’t help but smile. I have known that Lisa spends her free time at that orphanage to teach the kids for free and that makes me admire her more.

When she got down, she’s already changed into more decent clothings.

I called her. “Common’ I’ll drive you there.”

“No sir, I’ll just walk—”

“No, I will drive you there and I’ll pick up you later Lisa. You got it?”

Lisa simply nodded her head.

We both walked outside to ride my car then I drove her to a kiddie shop where you can buy all sorts of kiddie toys and sweets.

“What are we doing here Mr.Jeon?” she asked.

“Let’s buy your kids some goodies.” I said and Lisa happily smiled.

After buying some, I drove her straight to the orphanage.

Lisa looked around before asking “Do you want to cum inside?”

“I’m good. Just text me later if you need me to pick you up.” I said smiling at her.

Lisa smiled back and stepped out of my car.

“See you later Mr.Jeon.“she happily said and ran to the small bulding.

I just stared at her retreating back as I calm down the fast beating of my heart.

Now I have confirmed that I really like her so much.

And my feelings for her is far more deeper than how I feel for IU.

I think I need to end my relationship with her. It was just a one sided relationship anyway and now that my feelings are slowly fading, there is no more need to keep it going.

Lisa’s POV

Again, I was surprised by warm hugs and kisses from the cute babies.

“Teacher Lisa, read… read us a story please.” Yeonjun said as he excitedly pull me on one corner where the books are.

“Na’a, teacher Lisa will teach you Math first before we go on reading.”

Yeonjun and the rest pouted because just like me, they hate Math too.

“Aissshh..stop pouting you kids, if you don’t follow teacher Lisa, I will not give you sweet treats later.”

“Sweets???” Lia and Yeji asked at the same time and I nod.

They all jumped around excitedly while shouting “Sweets! Sweets! Sweets!”

“Yupp! But that is if you’ll behave and listen to teacher Lisa well.”

“Is teacher Lisa finally good at Math?” Taehyun asked with a teasing smile and I can’t help but chuckle.

“Yes I am. Teacher Lisa’s teacher is so good in Math that’s why.” I answered referring to Mr.Jeon.

“You have a teacher? Is she pretty like you?” Soobin asked curiously and I shook my head.

“No, he is a man so he’s not pretty. But he is hadsome.” I replied proudly as if I own the man.

“Will Teacher Lisa and her handsome teacher marry and have kids?” Taehyun asked as he pout.

I blushed so hard when he said that. Me and Mr.Jeon will marry and have kids? I could only imagine.

“No we are not marrying. And where did you learn these things Taehyun? You’re too young to know about marriage and stuffs.” I asked eyeing the little boy. He shifted as if uncomfortable with my gaze and that’s when Lia shouted.

“Taehyun said he will marry teacher Lisa when he grow up!” the girl was laughing at the confession which made Taehyun reddened in anger.

“You! Why don’t you shut yout mouth—”

“Hey hey stop! Aisshh these kids. No more playing around and find a comfortable spot. We will start with your lesson” I said with a straight and stern voice.

The kids sat up straight and started listening to me.

When the children were having a break and eating the sweets which Mr.Jeon bought, Mother Yasha called me.

“Yes, mother?”

“Lisa, I just want to thank you for coming here always. And I’m sorry we cannot give you any money for the services you

offer here.” the old woman apologized.

I quickly shook my head and said “What are you saying mother? I came here to teach them for free. It is a voluntary service and the smiles of the children are already enough for me. You don’t have to worry!”

“You are so kind Lisa. Thank God there are still people like you who never leaves these children” Mother Yasha’s welling eyes didn’t go unnoticed. I have a feeling that she is having a problem right now.

“Is everything okay?” I asked.

She took a deep breath first before speaking “Lisa, I have something important to tell you.” I nodded and straightened up to listen.

“The foundation who is financing the needs of this orphanage are on a crises now. The director of the foundation is under a lawsuit for using the funds in gambling. Now that the credibility of the director is under question, the persons who worked for the foundation are starting to leave one by one. That means in no time, the orphanage will be shut close.”

“What? But how about the children? Where are they going?” I asked in panic.

I swear I will lose my mind if something happens to the kids.

“Maybe they will be transfered to some other orphanages but I believe they will be divided and we might not see them again.”

“What? No!—” before I could finish my sentence, a mailman suddenly knocked on the glass door.

“I’ll get it Lisa” Mother Yasha was quick to open the door and get the mail.

She sat back on her chair and opened the letter.

“What is it?” I asked curiously. Mother Yasha’s expression turned darker when she read the writings on the paper. That’s when I know that it is a serious problem.

“Lisa…” she handed me the peice of paper.

My heart sanked just reading the big bold letters.

Notice of Building Demolition

What is this?

I read the paper which says that the building will have to be demolished and reconstructed into a commercial area in ten weeks time.

“Mother Yasha what’s happening?”

“The foundation was not able to keep up with the monthly rent Lisa. Now the land owner decided to just use the building along with the sorrounding area as a commercial center.” she explained.

“What? But why? What will happen to the orphanage now? To the children? We cannot let them just do that!” I stood from my seat in disbelief.

This cannot be happening!

Why? Why demolish this place?

This place which serves as a home to the kids?

This place which serves as my safe haven.

This place where I get to bond with them.

Why do they have to suffer in the end?

“We cannot do anything about it Lisa. I heard that the land owner is a cold and greedy businessman. Even if we ask him to move the date of the demolition, he will not change his mind.”

“No, I will not let this be! Even if I have to beg the land owner just for the orphanage to stay as it is, I will do it!” I yelled.

Mother Yasha shook her head and worriedly said “No one can change Mr.Kim’s mind.”

Her words didn’t threathen me as with full conviction, I reread the notice to know the name of the person who is resposible for the demolition.

My eyes scanned the bottom where a name was printed and signed,

Kim Taehyung
CEO, Kim Real Estate and Development

I will go and talk with this old man!

Author's Note

Sorry for the very late update. The rest of my day will be spent in writing more chapters.

Btw, As I said, I have other plans for my bias in this book. Lol

Lost in Love

Jungkook's POV

"Is something wrong?" I asked Lisa when I picked her up from the orphanage. She seemed to be down tonight.

"I am fine Mr.Jeon." she replied trying to mask her sad voice with glee.

It was already late when Lisa messaged me to pick her up and I think it will take long if we cook our dinner so I asked,

"Lisa, let's just eat outside?" I offered making her turn her attention at me.

"Huh? But what if people saw us? What if my classmates or my teacher or your girlfriend—"

I shut her by placing a finger on her lips.

"Shhh.. Stop worrying. We are just going to eat. There's nothing wrong with that." I explained hoping to calm her down.

"But I'm not comfortable. Let's just eat at home. I'll just cook something for you." she restlessly offered and I cannot help but sigh.

"How about we just order some take out and eat somewhere private?" I suggested.

"Hmmm..but where?"

My mind searched for places where I could take Lisa without her worrying too much. Suddenly I remembered one.

"Do you like stars?" I asked.

"Yes, I love them. Why Mr.Jeon?"

"Then we wilk eat under the stars." I said as I started driving.

After taking some take outs, I drove Lisa away from the city. 30 minutes of driving, I finally found a perfect spot. It is on top of a hill where people would usually go for star gazing. And luck is with me tonight because it seemed like there are no people around.

When I turn my eyes to Lisa to help her with the seatbelt, I noticed that her eyes and mouth are widely opened. As if she's in an amusement Park.

Cute.

She's amazed by the location, I could tell.

"Mr.Jeon this place is awesome!" she said as she quickly remove her seat belt. She was about to go out when I grabbed her wrist.

"Lisa, we will just stay inside the car. It just rained and the grass are wet so we will have to just eat here."

She got disappointed at first but recovered quickly and smiled.

"It's okay, I can still see the stars here." she said.

"Good. I hope you liked it." I said.

"I like it Mr.Jeon. Thank you so much for taking me here!" she said clapping her hands as she stares at the stars.

"Are you hungry? Would you like to eat now?" I asked the beautiful girl, whose eyes are still focused outside.

"Not yet. I'm not yet hungry. You can go on and eat ahead Mr.Jeon." she said. But I don't want to eat alone. I want her to eat with me. So I shook my head.

"No, I'll just wait for you."

"Are you sure?" she asked as her eyes shifted on me.

The moment when our eyes met, I felt a sudden change of emotion.

Her beautiful face makes it hard for me to pull myself together.

As if induced in hypnosis, I looked at her face. Her big round eyes down to her soft lips which I just kissed last night.

Lisa noticed this making her bite her lower lip.

Just then I felt a strong amount of need to kiss her again, to own those lips again and without further notice, I leaned closer to her.

The panic in her eyes didn't stop me from moving closer. I need her.

When her lips are just an inch apart from mine, I smelled her fresh scent.

One thing that I have noticed in her is she always smells good even if it is at the end of the day.

The urge of wanting her blocked my reasoning of what is right and wrong making me finally indulge in the warmth of her lips.

My lips were now on hers. As I move them slowly hoping to not frighten the girl.

On the other hand, Lisa was stiff as if not knowing what to do.

I wonder if she has not experienced kissing before.

Maybe. She's got no boyfriend yet so I need to teach her.

"Close your eyes and follow after me" I whispered in her mouth and slowly she followed.

Lisa's lips started moving in an awkward and shy way but I continued guiding her.

Her hands travelled to my neck as if allowing me to move more as I trap her slender body with my arms.

When Lisa was finally following the rythym, it was then that I decided to push my tongue inside her mouth which earned a soft moan from her.

The sound of her moan sparked a heat between my thighs making it hard for me to focus more.

I felt lost in her as I continue carressing her mouth with my tongue. Then I felt Lisa's tongue lightly moving with mine.

Oh god!

The feeling of tasting her lips from the fast beating of my heart almost sent me to heaven.

As if not contented, my lips travelled to the spot under her jaw as I carress her waist with my hand and hold her neck with the other.

Lisa throw her head back as I place wet kisses on her neck down to her clavicle, down to her chest.

Her skin was so smooth and smells so good as if drug that I can't stop myslef from kissing.

Both of us were breathing heavily as the car soffocated us from the heat.

I was about to lift her shirt when her hands stopped me.

That's when reality pulled me to my senses.

"Don't" she said. Clenching her fists at the sides of her shirt.

What did I just do?

I looked at her face as she's shown mixtures of emotion. That's when she said "Mr.Jeon…I am not your girlfriend." her words were laced with pain as if I just hurt her.

For a moment, I can't talk.

I don't know what's running in her head. And even if I wanted to explain, I know what I did was very wrong.

I know Lisa hates me now. She might think that I'm a cheater and I'm just using her.

But it's not the case. As I cannot suppress the feeling in me anymore and I know now that this is love.

I love her.

I love Lisa.

But why can't I have the courage to tell her this.

Maybe it is because I don't know how she will react.

I'm so scared that if I somehow confess, she will feel awkward and would leave me.

I can't lose her.

The thought of her disappearing in my life scares the shit out of me.

"I'm sorry Lisa." I said as guilt wash over me.

"It's okay. I understand." she said while looking away. Tucking a hair to her ear she fixed her shirt which crumpled.

"One day, I will fix things and I will explain everything that I feel." I said referring to my break up with Ji-eun.

Lisa lightly nodded and focused her attention again at the stars in front.

After eating, we travelled back home in silence.

Lisa was quiet the whole time as if she seemed lost in her thoughts.

I'm afraid that she must be thinking about my actions a while ago.

To be honest, I am relieved that she managed to stop me.

I feel like I was too lost in my emotion a while ago that I just wanted to consume her. I wanted to feel her. I wanted to do more than just kissing.

This is the first time that I craved for a women's body but sadly, I cannot do it because she's my student and she's 6 years younger than me.

Lisa didn't speak even when we got inside the house. She shortly excused herself and went straight to her room.

I felt uneasy after that. I really made a huge mistake for kissing her again.

Lisa's POV

I plopped down the bed as I calm the fast beating of my heart.

Mr.Jeon kissed me again and I feel like a shit for kissing him back even if I know he has a girlfriend.

What kind of a person I am for doing it? I feel so guilty now.

If he's only single, I would willingly give my self to him.

But why? Why is the world so cruel that the only man that I like is unfortunately in a relationship?

Why can't I just have him?

Why can't I just love him and own him.

"Love him"

The word slipped out of my tongue so easily.

Do I love him?

Do I love Mr.Jeon?

Maybe…

But he's not available and he's out of my league. Only actresses like Ms. Ji-eun suits him.

Not me.

I am plain, I am poor, I am average in everything. Nothin is special about me.

I forced myself to sleep as bitterness filled my system.

But everytime I remember Mr.Jeon's kisses, sleep will leave me.

Suddenly I felt getting hot as I recall the heated moment in his car.

His lips on my lips, his lips on my neck, his lips on my chest. It felt so good to be kissed by him that part of me regrets stopping him from doing more.

Ahhh!!! He's making me go insane!

And the fact that I am torn with my feelings as I worry about the demolition of the Orphanage is not helping.

I have decided that tomorrow after class, I will go straight to Mr.Kim and force him to stop the demolition.

Author’s Note

Short update for you.

CEO Hunting

Class3-C POV

"Dude this is cool!" Hoseok clapped his hand in awe as he stare at Yoongi's new tattoo on his back.

Yoongi just smirked while showing his eagle tattoo on his back as his classmates gathered around him.

It is monday and the class is now back to normal even if Bambam was not there anymore.

"Ahh..Why can't I have a tattoo as cool as that? I want some jellyfish on my arms but my mom won't let me have one." Jin said.

"What the fuck? That's weird!" Jeongyeon said and the girls started laughing.

"Why not? Jellyfish is awesome and cool you know. They are even deadly because of their deadly sting." Jin defended.

Suddenly, Mr.Jeon came inside the class holding some books on his arms.

Making the class rush to their seats to attentively listen.

Mr.Jeon cleared his throat and looked at the direction where Lisa is sitting.

But the girl's attention was not on him but on the note on her desk.

Mr.Jeon sighed and recalled the moment earlier back at home where they silently shared a breakfast.

After that, Lisa walked to school with the same down expression without talking to him.

This made him decide to act casually around her as he is still in a relationship with Ji-eun. But once everything is done between them, he planned to pursue Lisa immediately.

This way, he can make sure that he is being fair to the both of them.

He will go to Australia on Saturday just for the break up to happen.

“Class, The School Festival shall start in few days. I believe each of you are prepared with the individual task I assigned.” Mr.Jeon said while raising a brow.

Everyone in class nodded.

Mr.Jeon looked over Tzuyu and recalled what Jennie had told her. That is to tend to Tzuyu’s needs for the pageant to make sure that she will win because of her mother.

So he asked “Tzuyu, are you ready? The pageant will be two days from now.”

“Yes, Mr.Jeon. I am so ready.” she answered with confidence.

“Good but I will still have to train your way of answering questions. I will hold a tutorial for you after class.” Mr.Jeon said and the girl nooded.

That moment, Lisa was silently listening as Mr.Jeon and Tzuyu are talking. She can’t help but be jealous of the attention her classmate is getting from the teacher.

But she masked down the jealousy inside by reading her notes which she can’t understand because her mind is filled with the thoughts of her teacher.

After class, each of the student left in pairs. Jimin with Chaeyoung, Jeongyeon with Dahyun, Namjoon with Hoseok, and Eunwoo with Jin and Yoongi.

Lisa was surprised that the teacher, Mr.Jeon left her with Tzuyu to practice in another room. This got her jealous more.

As a result, she decided to just skip the tutorial with Mr.Wang.

That’s when she remembered that she was supposed to look for Mr.Kim, the CEO who threathens to demolish the orphanage.

Just remembering this, her blood boiled and without waiting any longer, she walked straight where the Kim Real Estate and Development building is at.

Lisa's POV

This is probably the worst day!

Mr.Jeon managed to ignore me today when last night he just kissed me?

How dare he ignore me like that!

And now he's even with Tzuyu to practice on what? Answering questions?

Pshhh..

What a lame excuse. If I know he likes Tzuyu too.

So that's maybe it. Now that he has kissed me, his attention turned to someone else.

I can't believe Mr.Jeon would be a womanizer after all!

I was fuming with anger and jealousy when I reached the place.

It was almost dark when I looked up the tall building with the words *Kim Real Estate and Development.*

The more that I rolled my eyes when I read the name of the building.

Now I'm gonna show that old man that he cannot simply destroy the home of my children!

I'm going to make sure that his bald hair, his fat stomach and his stinky breath will leave the orphanage alone!

When I got inside the building, people who wear wearing suits all at once looked at me as if I am lost or what.

But I remained calm and walked to the receiving area.

"Good afternoon Miss, do you have an appointment?" one of the two ladies in the receiving area asked.

"Uh..is the CEO here?" I asked.

The ladies looked at each other and stiffled a laugh.

What's funny?

"Miss, you seem to not have an appointment. You can go back when you have one." she sassily said and asked the person on my back to come forward.

I panicked because of this.

What now?

I don't have an appointment and this girl seemed like they won't tell me where Mr.Kim is.

I looked around when I noticed the men in suit going in an elevator.

That's when I planned to just search the man alone in this very big building.

"Wait!" I said when the elevator was about to close.

One man managed to open it still for me.

"Thanks" I said.

There were exactly two men in suit inside the elevator. They started pressing buttons to which floor they are going.

Not knowing which floor to go, I decided to ask them where Mr.Kim's office is.

But one man spoke "Dude, Mark got fired today."

"For real? Why?" the other man asked.

"Yes, Mr.Kim fired him on the spot when he was delivering his report."

When the names was mentioned, I listened attentively hoping I could get information of the old man.

"That man is heartless! I heard Mark worked for that report for 1 month straight just barely eating and sleeping just to impress the CEO and he will just fire him like that?" the man uttered in disbelief.

"Yeah, I'm even nervous now. He just called me to attend the briefing tonight and I'm so damn scared to mess up." one

guy said.

The man's word provided me information. Enough information where to locate Mr.Kim.

"Goodluck man!" one guy said before the man.

When the elevator stopped at the 30th floor, the man who will see Mr Kim stepped out and I followed after him.

He will be seeing Mr.Kim. I believe I will meet the man if I follow this guy.

I continued following the man without him noticing.

Soon, he reached a glass door and came inside. When I was about to step in, one man who looked like a security stopped me from moving any further.

"Where are you going? Mr.Kim is not allowing solicitors at this moment." the man said making my brows meet.

Do I look like I am begging for money?

I didn't answer him. Instead I pushed him so hard and I successfully pass through him.

I opened the door to see several men in suit watching a nervous looking presentator in front talking.

But my sudden appearance stopped the presentor from talking as he looked at me. All eyes in the room turned on me with weirded out expressions.

I scanned around the room looking for a typical old CEO looking man with bald hair, fat stomach and double chin but it seemed like the room is full of old men except the presentor, the man in the elevator and the handsome man in the middle.

Their expressions looked as if surprised to see me as their mouth formed into an O.

Suddenly, I felt a man from behind me grab my arms.

"Ms.This is not a place for young ladies like you to tresspass." The security who I pushed awhile ago said.

Soon, more securities gathered around me as they pull me outside.

I panicked and looked around more. When I was almost out of the room I shouted at the top of my lungs. “Mister Kim! Whoever you are, I swear I will not let this pass! You evil old man!”

All the persons inside the room where somewhat shocked to hear my words.

That’s when the handsome young man who was sitting in the middle stood.

With an amused look he spoke “Let her be. Bring her to the office.” his deep voice sent shivers down my spine and even the people around him looked down as if afraid for what will happen next.

Good thing, The securities loosened their grip on my arms.

“The meeting is adjourned for now. Let’s just continue the meeting tomorrow.” he spoke again and the presentor who was nervously sweating a while ago sighed in relief.

The Man walked out of the room. And the securities guided me to another office.

I didn’t speak more as I wait for what will happen next.

When I got inside a huge office, the same handsome man was already sitting in the middle of an office table.

His eyes showed indifference as he look at me. A smirk was shown on his lips.

I got confused who the man was so I asked, “Are you Mr. Kim’s secretary? tell him that I need to speak with him!” I commanded.

The Man started laughing after that. His laughter filled the office as I stare at him.

“What’s funny?” I asked in annoyance as I cross my arms on my chest.

“You are looking for Mr.Kim you say?” he asked with a playful tone.

“Yes!” I answered.

“Well, you are now talking to Mr. Kim.”

Oh shit!

□

Author’s Note

Sorry for the late update. By the way I’ll update later before I sleep. Thanks for the comments.

Evil CEO

Lisa's POV

Oh shit!

He is Mr.Kim?

Nah! I think he's just joking, right?

"You? You are Mr.Kim?" I scoffed.

The handsome young man stood and without saying a word walked closer to me.

That's when I realized that there was a hunged portait of him in the office. With the initials K.T.

Holy shit!

So he's really the CEO?

My eyes scanned the handsome man from head to toe in disbelief.

But he looks too young to be a CEO. It seems like he is the same age as Mr.Jeon.

Now I'm doomed.

I gulped and nervously looked at the man who turned out to be the one I am looking for.

He finally stopped walking infront of me.

The next thing I know, one of his hands was already reaching at my stomach. I planned to back away but then I noticed that his hand grabbed my i.d.

He flipped my school id and smirked. "Lisa Manoban?"

I froze more. I know he is now pissed at me for calling him as a secretary but I didn't know who he was. I thought the CEO is an old man. Not this.

“So Ms.Manoban? What urged you to come and mess with my important meeting?” he asked. His voice is laced with annoyance but his face shows blank expression.

“Mr.Kim, I came from the orphanage.” I said as I straightened my back. As if acting all tough.

“Orphanage?” his brow raised then his face lit up. “Oh that small orphanage? What about it?”

“I came here to tell you that you should stop the demolition. It is a home of orphaned children and if you demolish it, there’ll be nowhere place to go for these kids.” I explained my voice is almost pleading. Different from how I acted tough a while ago.

I need to earn his agreement on this matter otherwise, I will not be seeing the kids again.

“So, that’s all that you came for?” he turned his back uninterestedly and sat back on his chair.

“Yes, so could you please—”

“You know what Miss, I don’t like it when people order me around.” he said with stern voice.

I paused and searched for words to answer but he was quicker to say “Business will always be business. I don’t care if I sacrifice homes of thousands of people as long as I gain profit from it.”

His words got my ears heating up. As I clenched my fists and grit my teeth.

I can’t believe a man as cruel as him actually exist!

“How dare you say these things! Can’t you even emphatize with people around you? These innocent children will lose their home in exchange for money? I wonder how you were raised by your parents that you turned out to be as worse as this.” I said looking up and down at him. “You maybe rich and handsome but your attitude rots. And I swear I will not let you demolish that place! Over my dead body Mr.Kim!” my frustrations got the best of me that O didn’t stop myself from talking.

Now Mr.Kim is looking at me with wide eyes and hunged mouth.

“Goodbye Mr.Kim, Goodluck with this business of yours.” and with that I left him as my nose is fuming with anger.

Taehyung’s POV

What the?

The girl just left.

I’ve never meet a bold and daring woman as her my entire life.

She even called me old man, a secretary and evil?

This is actually the first time I was humiliated by a girl and worse is that she’s just a highschool student who just came here and ruined my plans for the night.

Taking my phone, I called the secretary over.

“Yerin, can you check the date of the demolition for the Hope Children Orphanage?” I asked her when she came inside.

Yerin browsed my schedule on her folder before answering. “In ten weeks time Mr.Kim”

“Oh that soon?” I asked as I rub my chin to ponder.

“Yes sir, do you have alter plans for this?” she asked.

“No, let the demolition plan continue” I replied back. “Oh and by the way, give me all sorts of information about this girl named Lisa Manoban. Make sure you get her number, address and all the important details.”

“Copy Mr.Kim.”

I watch as the secretary leaves.

Lisa Manoban huh?

Now I want to play.

Jungkook’s POV

When I got home, Lisa was not around.

“Where could she be this time?” I asked myself.

I decided to just cook dinner as I wait for her.

I got really busy with tutoring Tzuyu that I forgot to give a word with Lisa at school.

The pageant is nearly coming and I want Tzuyu to be trained properly in answering questions. Otherwise she’ll lose and it may take a toll on her self-confidence.

I was almost done plating when I saw Lisa pass by the kitchen without even glancing at my direction.

“Lis—”

She walked straight to the stairs and ignored me.

What’s her problem?

Is it still about the kiss?

But I apologized already right?

I knocked on her door hoping that we could eat together but I didn’t recieve an answer.

Surprisingly for the very first time she locked her door as if not wanting anyone to talk to her.

Her behavior got me so worried that I wasn’t able to sleep well that night.

What’s her problem?

My love is upset at me?

What should I do?

The next day

When I got up, Lisa was already gone. Her school shoes was not in the shoe rack meaning she left already.

Which is weird because we usually go to school together. Even if she’s just walking while I am driving.

When I got to school, Lisa was already seated on her seat.

“Good morning class!” I greeted hoping for her to look at me but she didn’t even glanced at me.

The whole day, I was really restless.

Lisa is making me go crazy on her.

When the class finally ended, I walked to her hoping to ask what is wrong but Tzuyu’s voice stopped me.

“Mr.Jeon, shall we start the tutorial now?” Tzuyu asked. I helplessly look at Lisa which is now looking at me and Tzuyu.

She took her things and muttered “Tutorial my ass” then she head out of the classroom.

I was taken aback by Lisa’s words that I almost rushed out to chase after her but I realized that the rest of the class are still inside so I didn’t.

I turned my attention to Tzuyu. “Okay. Let’s start.” I said and the girl happily jumped up and down in excitement.

Author’s Note

Prepare for the wrath of a jealous Lili on the next Chapter

Jealous Lisa

Jungkook's POV

When I got home, Lisa was already eating.

A smile crept to my lips with this.

The sight of her eating made me happy. As she just sit their peacefully like a patiently waiting wife.

She noticed my presence but surprisingly, Lisa didn't even greet me. She was just focused on her food.

"Good evening Lisa!" I greeted hoping to start a conversation with her.

No answer.

I looked at the food on the table which actually looks mouth watering so I dived in in a heartbeat but I frowned with how the taste is.

It taste so bitter when it's supposed to be sweet.

I glanced at Lisa and asked "Lisa, why is this one bitter?"

By that question her eyes moved to me. With her coldest expression she said "I don't think it is bitter. Maybe you just had enough of my cooking that's why you don't appreciate it anymore!"

Huh? What does she mean?

"Of course that's not true. I love your cooking Lisa." I gently said hoping to ease her. She seemed to be really offended by my comment.

As a waynto not offend her more, I just ate the food that she cooked. Forcing myself to believe that the taste is good.

Lisa noticed my sour expression so she raised her brow.

“If you don’t like my cooking then just order a take out, cook the food yourself or find another woman to cook for you!” she snapped and stood to grab her plate and walked to the sink.

I was dumbfounded with Lisa tonight.

What’s her problem?

This is not usual.

The worried me walked to her side to ask if something’s bothering her.

“Lisa, do we have a problem? You know I will listen” I asked the girl who I find her actions hard to read.

She just finished her washing and walked out of the dinning area.

“I have no problem.” I hear her said.

Okay Lisa is really upset. I can see it. I can feel it.

So I chased after her as she was now walking up the stairs which is weird because she can use the elevator.

“Lisa…” I called.

“Lisa talk to me.”

Damn. How can she walk this fast?

She just proceded to her room and when she was about to shut the door close, one foot of mine managed to stop it from closing.

I was able to push the door and got in looking at a pissed looking but cute girl.

“Can we talk?” I asked as I close the door.

“What for?” she asked crossing her arms on her chest.

“Lisa, what’s your problem? Why are you like this?”

“Like what?” she asked back, with brows meeting.

“This? You’re upset? Right?”

“Who won’t be upset when you just came home late?”

“But I had a tutorial with Tzuyu”

“Is Tzuyu’s problem enough for you to ignore me for two days?”

“What? I’m not ignoring you Lisa.”

“Yes you are. You won’t talk to me like the usual. You were always with her!”

“It’s because I don’t know how you feel about me. You’ve gone silent mode after the kiss and I was too afraid of your reaction.”

“So you would rather ignore me?”

“Of course not. I was just preoccupied with Tzuyu’s—”

“Tzuyu Tzuyu why are you always speaking of Tzuyu?”

The words got me silent at first.

This could not be.

She’s jealous?

Oh god. She’s jealous.

Finally I made her jealous?

I know I shouldn’t be happy but this is Lisa who really made me jealous for a long time when she’s with other guys. So getting her jealous is new.

“Lisa, are you jealous?” I asked with a teasing smile.

Her face got red and she quickly turned around “Of course not. Why would I be jealous? I’m not even your girlfriend to be jealous, what right do I have to—”

She finally stopped talking when I wrapped my arms around her.

I was hugging her back with gentleness but I know she was surprise by it.

“Lisa, you don’t need to be jealous. Tzuyu is just a student whom I need to guide. Just like how I guide your other classmates.”

I turned the girl to face me while holding her waist to have her closer to me.

Looking at her eyes, I can tell she's supressing her feelings inside. I am not actually sure but the fact that I got her jealous tells me that she somehow feels something for me too.

"Lisa, are you still upset?" I asked.

She breathed in before answering "Yes"

"Then what can I do to make you forgive me?" I asked as I pull her body closer to mine.

"Just promise me that you won't ignore me again and send me a message if you will be late in coming home." she said while pouting.

"Okay, I promise that Lisa. But can i kiss that pout away?" I asked.

"Huh? Hmmnnn" Lisa's jealous lips was shut again by mine.

I kissed her again but this time Lisa was responding to the kiss.

The subtle movements of her lips brought fire in me.

I kissed her while holding her waist, Lisa's hands travelled on my shoulder as I walk us to her bed.

The bed squeaked when both of us landed. Lisa was beneath me as I was on top.

Now my body is pressed to her as I deepen the kiss.

Kissing her feels so good. And I think I will never get enough of her.

I had to support my weight by my elbows as she clung her arms to my neck.

"Mr.Jeon.." She wined when I pulled from the kiss to look at her face.

Her eyes are visibly hinting need and desire as if mirroring mine.

“Let me kiss you more Lisa.” I asked with a needy voice as I press my pelvis to her.

Lisa willingly nodded and pulled me to her lips once again. I pushed my tongue inside while my hands travelled to caress the outline of her body.

I was feeling so hot that my pants keeps tightening.

My tongue stroking every corner of her mouth as Lisa do the same with slight movements.

As our kiss deepen, the more that I feel that I need more from her. And I know she feels the same.

The temperature of the room grew heavier this time.

And I wanted to satisfy my need with Lisa but my mind is still functioning properly, telling me that this is not the right time to proceed to the next level.

I pulled from the kiss and looked at the girl beneath me.

The girl who now owns my heart.

The girl who I wanted to be mine.

Lisa does the same.

Her big round eyes stared at me innocently.

Then she asked with confused voice, “Mr.Jeon, what..what are we?”

The question was a slap to my face. As I don’t know what to say.

Lisa looked hurt when I kept silent but gladly I found my tongue.

“I want you to be mine Lisa.” I answered with a sure voice

With this her eyes widened. “But…your girlfriend—”

“I’ll take care of it. I will talk to her personally to end things.”

“Wait..” she sat back from her lying position as I do the same, both of us are now sitting on her bed.

“What do you mean talk to end things? Are you breaking up with her?”

“Yes.” I shortly answered.

“But..but why?” she looked so confused.

“Because I want to end things with her.”

“Is it because of me?” she asked guiltily.

“Lisa just let me do this and trust me okay?”

She got quiet for a second before asking,
“When are you going to talk to her?”

“This saturday I will go to Australia to talk to her.”

“She’s in Australia?”

“Yes, and I don’t want to break over the phone Lisa. I need to see her for the last time. I hope you understand.”

Over the years, Ji-eun plaued a big role in my life and I believe she deserves the proper closure which I’m sure she will be happy with. She doesn’t even love me in the first place.

Lisa got quiet as if lost in thoughts.

“Hey…what are you thinking? Lately I get scared easily when you suddenly became quiet.” I said as I hug her shoulders to pull her to me.

“I..I just feel guilty. I ruined a relationship.” she said while looking down.

“What? No.. Lisa you didn’t do anything wrong.” I said as I hold her by her chin to look at me.

Lisa sighed before saying “I just don’t want to hurt people.”

“Please stop thinking about that. Just think about us. How do you feel about me?”

When I asked her that she blushed real hard and played with her fingers.

“I.. I like you Mr.Jeon.”

Oh my god.

Lisa likes me?

“You sure you like me?” I had to confirm and she nodded.

Her answer made me really happy.

“I feel the same Lisa. So let us have this mutual understanding.” I said as I took her hand to play with it.

Lisa now smiled at my answer.

“I can’t believe you will like me.” Lisa shook her head in disbelief.

“Huh? Why?”

“Because I am ordinary—”

“Shh..please stop thinking like this about yourself. You are perfect Lisa.”

“No, I’m not..I am just—”

I shut her whinings with another kiss.

Lisa and I kissed for another time.

To drown her insecurities down, I kissed her with full of emotion, love and care.

Now that I have known that she likes me too, gave me more reasons to break up with her Ji-eun.

I can’t wait any longer to spend the coming days with Lisa.

That night was the very first night that I felt at ease.

I slept in my bed with a smile on my face as I feel contented of everything we have right now.

Author’s Note

Hi guys, do you want some sound effects during smut? Or No?

I’m kinda planning on having one if you’re comfortable with it.

😂😂😂

Btw, shoutout to those who frequently commments. I love you so much!

School Scandal

Lisa's POV

"

"Good morning!" I geeted Mr.Jeon when we both open the door of our rooms at the same time.

How can a man look so good even when he just woke up?

"Good morning, did you have a good sleep?" he smiled as he reach for my hand to hold.

"I had the best sleep last night." I said.

"Me too." he said as he squeeze my hand.

We both crossed the way to the elevator and stairs when I got pulled by him.

"Is anything wrong?" I asked.

"We'll use the elevator" he said and I just followed.

"Why do you always use the stairs Lisa?" he asked when we got inside. His hand is still holding mine.

"Because it's energy saving." I answered and he laughed. "Why are you laughing?"

"Nothing, you're just cute." he said.

When we got down, Mr.Jeon said that he will cook the breakfast today.

"Why won't you let me cook this time?" I asked.

"I'm still not sure how you feel about me. After tasting your cooking las night, I realized I shouldn't get you jealous or you'll purposefully mess with your cooking." he laughed and I blushed.

True to that, I cook awfully last night on purpose because I want him to taste how bitter I feel when he spends time with

other girls.

“Good. You better not make me jealous Mr.Jeon for the next time, I will burn the kitchen down.” I joked and he laughed more.

“You know you’re so cute when you’re jealous that I want to do it again.”

“Don’t you dare. Or you want to see me giving attention to my male classmates?” I teased and his expression darkened.

Uh oh! I just pissed him big time.

“I already told you to not mess with your teacher’s feelings Lisa” he warned and I know he’s not joking.

“Okay okay..I was just joking you know.” I chuckled.

I can’t help but appreciate how we can casually talk about our feelings now, unlike before.

I didn’t even know he likes me and he’s serious with me until he told me that he will break his relation to his girlfriend.

I got really lucky for having Mr.Jeon like me but still I feel bad for Ji-eun.

“By the way, can you stop calling me Mr.Jeon, it’s weird that you call me that everytime I kiss you.” he said making me blush.

I suddenly remembered the kisses that we shared last night.

“Huh? But what should I call you?” I asked.

“I don’t know..Jungkook, Jk, baby, whatever those couples call each other.” he answered as his eyes were still focused on cooking.

Are we a couple? I thought he will settle things with Ji-eun first before we become one?

“Mr.Jeon, I don’t think that’s a good idea. If I suddenly call you Jungkook when we’re at school, people there will be suspicious. I’ll just call you Mr.Jeon for the mean time.” I answered.

“You got a point.” he said while rubbing his chin.

Soon, both of us began eating. But this time Mr.Jeon drove me to school.

He did not allow me to walk anymore but he dropped me off a little farther from the school gate.

Class 3-C POV

The whole class was busy preparing for the school festival.

Yoongi was out on the gym practicing basketball.

Jimin and Hoseok were at the dance club to practice.

Namjoon was busily studying for the Quiz Bee at the library.

Tzuyu and Jin was busy with the pageant's blocking on stage.

Chaeyoung is at the music club practicing her piece of song.

While Lisa, Jeongyeon, Dahyun and Eunwoo was busily transforming their classroom into a booth.

The theme was to make the classroom into a maid cafe where they will be serving teas and cute cupcakes for the whole SNHSU. Whoever gets the most profit will win the booth competition.

So the catch was to make the cafe cute to attract more students into eating there.

Now, the four of them are really having a hard time because they lack man power as the others are busy with their own contests.

Mr.Jeon on the other hand was also busy at the faculty for preparing the festival programs.

Lisa who found the boxes at the back of the room,decided to bring them outside to clear more space.

Eunwoo saw this and got worried about her girl crush so he helped her carry the boxes outside.

"Thank you!" Lisa smiled when they finally carried all the boxes out.

"Anything for you Lisa." Eunwoo smiled back.

Little they did know that Mr.Jeon was already watching them.

His cold eyes was not leaving Lisa who is now smiling ear to ear at the handsome classmate.

“Lisa!” he called.

His voice got Lisa’s attention and when she saw him with his pissed expression, she knows already what caused it.

“Mr.Jeon?” she lowkey answered hoping for Eunwoo to not notice the teacher’s annoyance.

“I need to speak with you alone.” he said emphasizing the word alone.

“The teacher is calling me.” Lisa excused herself to Eunwoo who at that time understood what is happening.

Eunwoo has observed the biased treatment of their teacher to Lisa and he often catches him looking at the girl.

He knows that there is something going on between the two.

But he just pretends to not know this to save Lisa from scandal.

Lisa followed her teacher in one vacant classroom.

Mr.Jeon shut it close before her and said with a warning tone “Lisa, I already told you to stay away from boys.”

“He was just helping me.” she explained.

“I want you to stay away from him Lisa. Don’t make me say this twice.”

“Fine fine..I will.” she said raising her hands defeatedly.

Mr.Jeon smiled in triumpth and looked around the empty classroom. “Can i kiss you?” he asked.

This made Lisa nervous as she also looked around. “Mr.Jeon, what if someone sees us?”

“No one’s around.” he whispered.

Lisa bit her lip and nodded.

Mr Jeon closed the distance and kissed the girl in rush.

“There. My day is complete.” he said smiling like a bunny.

“You are so bold for kissing a student at school Mr.Jeon.” she teased him and he just chuckled.

“That’s because you’re so irresistible.”

“Where are you getting these lines?” she asked laughing.

“From my heart” Mr.Jeon hesitantly answered as if cringing at the lousy lines.

“Stop” Lisa can’t help but to laugh at his lines.

“You know I’ve been practicing sweet pick up lines for you but you’re just laughing at them.” he pouted.

“Why are you even practicing sweet pick up lines? That’s not so you Mr.Jeon.”

“Because you’re young and I thought you will like these things which youngsters use to impress girls.”

“No, I don’t like them. I just like the normal you. So please don’t force to learn these things.” Lisa explained.

“Really..good then..I cringe at some of the lines that I read.” Mr.Jeon said as he pull Lisa to him by her waist.

“Mr.Jeon, we’ve been missing for so long. My classmates will get suspicious so I better go back.” Lisa worriedly said.

Mr.Jeon just sighed and said “Okay but no more talking with male classmates alright?”

“Alright!”

Mr.Jeon boldly kissed Lisa again in the lips and she giggled in return.

For them it was an exciting feeling kissing while hiding from the rest of the world.

As everyone in school is busy practicing and preparing for the coming festival, Mr.Jeon and Lisa would meet at some vacant classrooms from time to time to kiss in secret.

Mr.Jeon knows the danger of what they are doing but he can’t resist kissing the girl. Besides, he makes sure that no one is around before she meets Lisa.

It was already 4 in the afternoon when everyone gathered in their classroom.

“Wow! This is so cute!!!” Chaeyoung squeaked when they witness the classroom transformation. Because now it looked like a real maid cafe.

The class happily shared their experiences during practice as they were waiting for Mr.Jeon’s instruction.

Mr.Jeon was still at the faculty when Jeongyeon dropped the bomb.

“Guys guys! I have to tell you the newest rumor which is now proven true.” the gossip girl announced, taking all the attention of her classmates.

“Geez, what is it this time?” Namjoon asked.

“There has been a scandal between a teacher and a student awhile ago.” she said.

Lisa’s heart almost dropped at Jeongyeon’s word.

She wondered if Jeongyeon was referring to her and Mr.Jeon who has been secretly kissing the whole day.

She felt her whole body tensed as she waited for her next words.

“What? Who?” Jimin asked as the whole class was intrigued.

Lisa on the other hand shut her eyes waiting for her name to be uttered but another name was mentioned.

“It was a scandal of Ms. Chungha.”

All of them gasped.

“What???” the whole class asked at the same time.

Even Lisa was surprised.

Later, Jeongyeon explained that Ms.Chungha has been in a relationship with a senior student. The school found out about it and fired Ms.Chungha on the spot. The parent of the student filed a case against the teacher and the student was expelled.

The news made Lisa worried to the core. She cannot express how scared she was. As she too was just kissing a teacher a while ago.

When Mr.Jeon finally came to meet the class up, she noticed Lisa's restlessness.

That very moment, he knows that Lisa had known the news about Chungha already and she's probably scared.

Now Mr.Jeon is thinking of ways to continue their blossoming relationship without anyone knowing.

Author's Note

In your country, is teacher and student's relationship allowed?

Class Beauty

Jungkook's POV

"Mr.Jeon, Have you heard about what happened to Ms.Chungha?" Lisa asked the moment we got inside the house.

Her voice was slightly shaking and her body is trembling in fear.

"Who told you?" I asked. I wonder how the information got to Lisa when the whole faculty was briefed to never mention the news among students to avoid the scandal from spreading.

"Jeongyeon" she answered and I almost rolled my eyes. That girl really.

"Yeah..I've heard about it but hey. Stop worrying nothing will happen." I said to comfort her. I held Lisa by her cheeks as I carress it gently.

"What if they found out about us? We were just kissing in one room and an incident like this happened. It is the same case as us." Lisa replied with the same resltess voice and I just had to stroke her hair to calm her down.

"Listen, it will not happen to us. We will do something about this. I guess from now on, we have to act more casual in school. Besides we can always bond together when we go home. Are you fine with that plan Lisa?" I asked.

"Yes, anything just to spare us from scandal. I don't want the same thing to happen to us." Lisa's eyes were almost watwring this time.

"I know. I assure you it will not happen. And Lisa we got 10 weeks before your graduation. After your graduation we can freely show this relationship to the world." I explained.

"10 weeks?" she asked.

“Yes, less than ten week Lisa so hang on okay? We can do this.”

Lisa finally smiled after hearing my words. She then clung her arms around my neck as I snake my arms around h waist giving her a soft peck on the lips.

Later that night, We were eating when we talked about the coming festival.

“How was your cafe preparation by the way?” I asked.

“It was fine I guess. I just hope some students will choose our cafe tonorrow. I have seen the cafe’s of other sections and they’re really amazing than ours.”

“Don’t worry, if no one come to your cafe, I’ll buy everything that you guys are selling.”

“Aishh..I don’t want you to do that. I want real costumers. I will wear a black maid outfit tomorrow Mr.Jeon. good thing the school provides costumes for this.” she said.

Lisa continued sharing her thoughts about the coming festival while I listen to her in amusement. As her eyes would sparkle everytime she gets excited over something.

She’s so relaxing to just look at and listen at. That I don’t mind listening to her stories 24/7.

Class 3-C POV

The next day

1st day of School Annual Festival

Everyone was busy with their assigned task. All of them were on each and every post doing their responsibilities.

Namjoon is now present at the Quiz Bee Competition with Mr.Jeon by his side.

Lisa, Dahyun, Jeongyeon and Eunwoo were dressed in a maid costumes inside their maid cafe.

A lot of costumers are in line now hoping to get inside.

When Namjoon won the Quiz Bee, Mr.Jeon left the man to his mother for them to clebrate alone.

As he walk back to their class to check on Lisa's group, he noticed the long line of mostly male students eager to get a glimpse of what is going on inside.

He got confused as to why there were so much in line so he stayed there to listen as the male students where talking.

"I can't wait." One male student said.

"I want the black maid to take my order" Another one said.

My Jeon's forehead creased. As he has heard from Lisa last night that her costume is black while Jeongyeon and Dahyun wears pink.

"No, the black maid is mine." Another guy said.

Curious as to who this black maid is and why she's creating buzz among the costumers, he walked straight to the classroom.

And that's when he witnessed a full pack of students inside the cafe.

He scanned the room to search for his girl and that's when he spotted her talking orders from a group of male students who is obviously just checking her body out.

At first, Mr.Jeon wanted to scoop their eyeballs out for checking out his girl like hungry piranhas. But he stopped himself from getting jumping on the male students as he was reminded that he is a teacher of the school.

But looking at Lisa now, he can't blame these men for drooling over her.

Her maid outfit looks too revealing as it shows her long long legs. There is also a heart shaped hole on the cest part and her curves are complimented by the design of the dress. Other than that, Lisa's natural charisma adds to her over-all aesthetic.

Mr.Jeon just stared at her helplessly. As his blood was awaken by his earthly needs. If only she could wear this in bed with him, he sure will reach heaven in seconds.

"Mr.Jeon, would you like to come inside?" Eunwoo's voice cut him off his thoughts.

The teacher quickly withdraw from staring at Lisa and said, “No, I’m fine. I was just checking on you guys. But I can see that you’re doing well. Keep it up.”

He glanced for the last time at Lisa and left.

Now his mind is full of thoughts on how to have the girl wear more decent maid costume for tomorrow.

The day ended with great sales from the cafe. Lisa and her group reported their first day profit to Mr.Jeon.

Mr.Jeon was very proud that the first day of the school festival turned out well.

Jimin and Hoseok won the Dancing competition, Namjoon won the Quiz bee, Chaeyoung got the 2nd place in the singing competition, Yoongi’s team won the first basketball round against the freshmen team and Lisa’s group got the highest sales among all the competing sections.

But he still feel anxious for tonight will be Tzuyu’s Competition. And Jin’s will be tomorrow.

Mr.Jeon and the rest of the class gathered inside the gym to watch the pageant and support Tzuyu.

Lisa sat one row behind her teacher as Mr.Jeon sat beside his co-teachers Jisoo and Irene.

Lisa observed her man and realized that he’s worried about the competition so she sent him a short message to calm him down without others knowing.

Tzuyu will win. Don’t worry.

Mr.Jeon felt his phone vibrate so he took it to read.

He smiled when he read the message. He realized that even just a short message from Lisa can lighten his mood so much.

He slightly glanced at her and mouthed “Thank you”

Good thing, the class were too focused on the stage to notice their secret exchange.

Soon the Pageant started as beautiful girls lined up in front wearing their swimsuit outfit. Lisa glanced at Mr.Jeon to see if

her man is staring but she got disappointed when she saw him focused at the girls.

Lisa got irritated and jealous so she texted him again.

YOUR EYES!

Mr.Jeon read the messaged and froze on his seat.

To be honest, he's scared to death reading her message.

So he followed the girl's wish and just looked down on his phone and played games the entire time to not make her jealous.

Finally when the girls wore their decent gowns, he was able to look at them.

Tzuyu was confident the whole night until her eyes meet a pair of eyes.

Her mother.

She got nervous all of a sudden when she saw her mother sitting in the front row as if a VIP.

Her mother's presence lessened her focus that's why when she was asked a question, she blanked out.

The crowd started laughing and she almost walked out.

But then, she saw her teacher in one corner with hopeful eyes. Mouthing "Focus, you can do this."

Mr.Jeon's action encouraged her a lot.

She began to focus on what he has taught her and with that she was able to answer the question eloquently.

She finished answering the question remembering the words of Mr.Jeon during their tutorial. That she must not be afraid to commit mistakes.

And that time, Tzuyu look at her mother with pride of herself. She's not afraid if she'll lose this time. As long as she did her best.

The moment of Truth has finally come for the contestants as the host held the envelop with the name of the winner.

Mr.Jeon and the class knows that there's a high chance of Tzuyu winning but also the performance Nayeon from class 3-A was equally good.

And the new Ms.Seoul National University High School is none other than…

Chou Tzuyu!

Tzuyu cried out of joy as the crowd cheered for her.

Mr. Jeon felt so happy and proud as he look at his student.

It is now three years in a row that she has won.

Tzuyu's mother came to her side when she recieved her crown, bouquet and sash.

"I trained you well" the beautiful mother who would pass as Tzuyu's twin said.

But Tzuyu shook her head while waving at the crowd "No mom, It is Mr.Jeon who trained me well" she said, her vkice full of lride for the teacher.

After the contest, the whole class parted ways.

Mr.Jeon lowkey waited for Lisa in his car so that they can go home together. When Lisa got in, she worriedly looked at her man.

"Hey, what happened? What did you talk about with Tzuyu's mom?"

"Nothing to worry. I just had a talk with her about her way of pressuring Tzuyu on competitions like this. The woman thanked me for guiding Tzuyu well." Mr.Jeon answered thruthfully.

Lisa smiled after hearing this. It's as if Mr.Jeon solves most problems of his class. Lisa is aware that Tzuyu's mother is a perfectionist. However, Mr.Jeon calmly talk to her about it.

"You know what? I'm really proud of you." Lisa said earning a chuckle from her man.

"Proud of me? Why?" he asked.

"Because you're such a great teacher Mr.Jeon."

“No, I’m not. I’m barely even starting.” he humbly replied.

“Yes you are you deserve the best trophy in the world.” Lisa opened her arms to express how wide the world is.

Mr Jeon laughed again after this then turned on Lisa to say in deep and husky voice “You’re the only trophy that I want”

Lisa grew shy again under Mr.Jeon’s hot gaze. But the teacher eased her shyness away by pulling her into his arms. Caging her there as if someone would take Lisa away from him.

“You are mine young lady.”

“I am. Who say I’m not?” she giggled inside his strong arms.

Mr.Jeon let go of her when he remembered something.

“Lisa, don’t you have any other maid costume?” he asked.

“Hmm..no more..why?” she asked.

“The one you were wearing a while ago at the cafe was too short and shows a lot of your skin. I don’t like it.” he said while crunching his nose.

“Why?do I look bad?” she asked in a sad voice.

“No, it’s the opposite. I found out that men would line up just because you’re wearing that.”

“What are you saying? They are lining up because the food we serve are delicious. Not because I’m wearing a maid outfit.”

“No Lisa, those piranha boys just comes to your cafe to check out on you so just please use other costumes. With skirt which ends up on your ankle.”

Lisa scratched her head as there were no more costumes left for her to use. The school provided enough numbers of costumes for the students and there are no excess to it.

“I’m sorry Mr.Jeon but I really don’t have other costumes to change with.”

Mr.Jeon sighed after hearing this and said “Okay, I guess I’ll just have to buy everything you will sell tomorrow for your cafe to close quickly.”

“No way!” Lisa playfully smacked his arms and he just laughed.

“Lisa?” he called when his laughter subsided.

“Hmmm?”

“Can you keep the maid costume with you when the festival ends?”

“Of course. It will be given to us for free. Why Mr.Jeon?” she asked innocently, not even aware of the kinky thoughts which is running on the teacher’s head.

“For future use.” he shortly answered. Lisa didn’t understand but she just nodded.

Then she asked “Mr.Jeon, why are you not driving yet?”

“It was a long and tiring day for the both of us. I believe we both deserve a kiss as a reward for our hardwork.” he said and Lisa couldn’t agree more.

A moment later, the two were already sharing a slow but passionate kiss inside the car.

Author’s Note

The side stories are almost done. After this we can finally focus on Liskook Moments.

Class Bully

Class 3-C POV

Second day of the School Annual Festival.

Today the school was filled with loud music from the different activities being held on every corner.

The students were enjoying their day in school from eating food that were being sold by Maid Cafes, to watching talent shows, to cheering for the sports fest.

While the teachers of SNUHS are busy in facilitating the events.

Mr.Jeon, the homeroom teacher of Class 3-C has now finalized some of his tasks so he decided to visit his classroom where Lisa is.

The thrill of seeing the girl that he loves in secret feels so satisfying for him. That's why he would secretly take glances of her any chance he gets.

If only that Lisa is not his student, he'd probably kissed her in front of thousands of people. But knowing the risk, he chosed to be more careful in showing his affection for her.

Mr.Jeon walked to where Class-3C is. As he got close, he saw the same long line of male students patiently waiting to get inside. He rolled his eyes at the sight because he knows that his Lisa is the cause of this.

As he was getting more irritated, he planned for a way to shoo the students away and have Lisa by himself.

Mr.Jeon took his phone and typed a message.

Gather the whole class, I'll treat you all at the Maid Cafe.

He sent the message to his most trusted student.

Namjoon who was watching Yoongi's play read the message and smiled. He really appreciates their teacher's

generousity. So he forwarded the message to the rest of the class.

Jimin and Chaeyoung recieved the message as they were enjoying their time alone walking around school. But seeing that their favorite teacher wants their presence, the lovebirds went straight to the meeting place.

Hoseok, Jin and Tzuyu also got excited when they read the message.

Who would say no to to Mr.Jeon's offer?

Soon the rest of the students gathered outside the classroom. Mr.Jeon who was patiently waiting smiled upon seeing them and said. "We will occupy the cafe for today. Order anything that you like. Everything is on me."

The students excitedly went inside while cheering for Mr.Jeon.

"Sorry for having you wait but the cafe is temporarily closed for now." Mr.Jeon announced at the students who were lining and they groaned in disappointment.

The rest of the costumers find their way out to give them space. This made the teacher really happy because now he can see Lisa without any piranha around her.

Lisa who was then busy preparing orders was shocked when she saw that there are no more students inside the cafe. But was replaced by her classmates.

Her eyes landed on Mr.Jeon who was now smirking at her.

Lisa rolled her eyes.

This man really? How can he do this?

After settling on their own tables, the students of Class 3-C started ordering.

Eunwoo,Dahyun and Jeongyeon were the ones taking order while Lisa was still behind the counter to process them.

Mr.Jeon who was sitting on a solo table called for Lisa to have her take his order.

Lisa nervously looked around as if scared of getting close to the teacher. She decided to ignore him hoping that others would just take his order.

But he kept on calling her to the point that it was too much so she took a deep breath and walk to the teacher while gritting her teeth.

(a/n: Imagine Lisa wearing this. With inner of course. 😂)

Mr.Jeon's eyes widened when he saw the same maid outfit she was wearing yesterday. He licked his lips as he felt his throat dried while he stare at her body.

"May I take your order sir?" she asked casually as she glance at her classmates. Good thing that the rest of the class are busy talking with one another.

So far, nobody notices what is going on between them.

"Uhm.." Mr.Jeon held his chin as if choosing from the options of muffins and cupcakes but Lisa knows that he's just playing around.

True to that, his attention was on Lisa's close presence not on the menu.

"I recommend this one sir." Lisa leaned to the menu to point at a Banana Milk tea. Her fingers slightly brushed his skin making it hard for Mr.Jeon to focus more.

At that point, he just wanted to pin her on the wall and kiss those plumped lips hungrily. But hsadly, he couldn't do that.

"Mr.Jeon?" she grabbed his attention again. Finally the teacher went back to his senses.

"Uh..oh yes. I want that one." he said as he straighthen his position while sitting.

Lisa quickly left the teacher to get his order.

Eunwoo who was silently watching the two cannot help but notice how his teacher would stare at her with admiration.

He got worried for them. As for him Mr.Jeon is his best teacher and Lisa is his crush. He doesn't want anything bad to

happen between the two so he wanted to talk with Lisa about it to warn them to be more careful.

For Eunwoo, as long as Jeongyeon is around, the two should be alert at all times.

As the whole class was happily bonding inside the cafe, Ms.Jisoo came running to them and called Mr.Jeon in a rush.

“What is it?” he asked his friend who is now panting from the long running.

“Yoongi assaulted one of the members from the opposing team on basketball. The student was rushed to the hospital as he’s unconscious.”

Mr.Jeon’s heart stopped beating for a second.

How could a terrible thing like this happen?

“Where is Yoongi?” he asked.

“He’s at the principal’s office. Mr.Yang wants you to come.”

He turn to Namjoon to have him look after his classmates and then he rushed to the Principal’s Office where Yoongi is at.

When he got there, he saw his student silently sitting in one corner as Mr.Yang was asking questions on him.

“What happened here?” Mr.Jeon asked.

Upon hearing his teacher’s voice, Yoongi felt at ease as if his teacher came to his rescue.

Even though he’s not vocal about it. Yoongi has a soft spot in his heart for his teacher.

He appreciates everything that Mr.Jeon has done for his class that is why he sweared that he will do everything to protect his teacher.

Yoongi recalled what happened a while ago at the gym. As his team was having a minute break, he heard one member of the opposing team curse at them.

Yoongi who’s now trying to avoid trouble ignored the guy.

But the guy saw him and mocked him more. He called their class the worst class and that Yoongi's classmates are all stupid.

When Yoongi heard him say shit about Class 3-C, he confronted the guy calmly as he was being careful to not cause trouble for Mr.Jeon's sake.

The guy who's name is Kevin didn't stop from provoking Yoongi. He was very entertained that he can bully the school's number one bully. As if he can dethrone him of the title, he continued calling his classmates names to piss Yoongi more but when the guy mocked Mr.Jeon, that was it for him.

Yoongi forgot about his pledge to get away from trouble. He can't let other people insult his classmates especially his teacher, Mr.Jeon. Yoongi started beating the guy. He didn't stop punching his face even if it was bleeding already.

He didn't stop kicking him even if the guy was begging him to have mercy.

That time, everything turned black for him. No one was able to stop his rage as the guy was already on the floor barely moving.

"Yoongi? Are you alright?" Mr.Jeon's voice cut him off his thoughts. His face looks distraught as he stare at him.

"Mr.Jeon, Min Yoongi assaulted a senior student during the basketball break. The student he assaulted was seriously injured and is now being treated at the nearby hospital." Mr.Yang explained.

Mr.Jeon cannot believe what he heard, he has been with Yoongi for almost 3 weeks now and he's aware of his reputation of being the bully. But he never for once saw this side of him where he could seriously hurt another student.

He knows that deep down in him, Yoongi is kind and will never do this without a reason.

But as a teacher, he needs to be fair and listen to both sides. He cannot just simply confront him nor comfort him.

“The parents of Kevin Chu are on their way here and also Yoongi’s dad.” Mr.Yang added.

Yoongi’s eyes widen after this. He doesn’t want to see his dad. Because even if he explain to him what happened, he will not listen for sure. He’ll just beat him up again.

And he was never wrong. When his father came, he smacked Yoongi in the head so hard and yelled “You brat! How many times do I have to beat you for you to stop humilliating me?!”

The principal, and the teacher were shocked by how his father handled the situation. Instead of listening to his own son. He quickly judged him.

Mr.Jeon finally got in the way and stopped his father from beating him up.

“Mr.Min, please calm down. We are here to settle things.” Mr.Jeon calmly explained even though he is already fuming inside.

Just then the furious parents of Kevin Chu came. The mother started crying in front of the principal saying that her son was unfairly assaulted. That her son Kevin is an angel and a role model to his class and he does not deserve what happened to him.

Yoongi only rolled his eyes for he knows how jerk her son is.

Sadly, Mr.Yang seemed to favor the side of the Chu family and would not even ask for his explanation.

Mr.Jeon observed this. It seemed like his student is alone in this matter that even his own father wants to beat him.

“Yoongi, I believe you need to speak your side. What happened?” Mr.Jeon asked calmly.

Yoongi looked at his teacher and started explaining everything. Mr.Yang listened to him well but Kevin Chu’s parents won’t accept the explanation. They still insisted that it was only Yoongi’s fault and not their son’s. While Yoongi’s father couldn’t care less.

The only good news is that Kevin is now okay but should still stay at the hospital to rest.

“Mr.and Mrs Chu, I trully understand how you feel about your son. But at this point we could only listen to both of the students to further understand what really happened. Now that Yoongi has explained his side saying that your son taunt and provoked him, we should also listen to your son’s explanation on this. But this is not the right time as he is still recovering. I believe we should settle this matter on the following days.” Mr Jeon slowly suggested his opinion.

But the woman raised her brow and said “How can you just let this go? As a teacher, you shouldn’t favor him just because he is your own student. We came here to claim justice for our son. Not to be told by a teacher like you with what and not to do!”

“Honey, calm down.” Mr.Chu calmed his wife who is now fuming with anger.

Mr.Jeon just sighed and asked “When you came here, what exactly do you expect to happen?”

“Well, we want to have the boy expelled and pay for the hospital bill for our son.” she confidently said as if it’s possible.

“What? are you serious? You mean I will be paying for your son’s bill when he’s a scumbag?” Mr.Min asked in diselief.

Mr.Min and Mrs.Chu started arguing over the matter with loud voices that even the principal was silenced.

Yoongi guiltily looked at his favorite teacher and blamed himself more for causing trouble. He hates that his teacher seemed to be having a hard time fixing this matter.

But in the end Mr.Jeon cleared his throat. “Silence!” his voice was stern and with full authority which earned silence from both parents.

Then he asked “How much?”

“Wha..what do you mean?” the woman was surprised to hear him say this.

“I am asking you how much should Yoongi pay for the hospital bill.” Mr.Jeon asked again.

The woman was silent at first thinking that maybe the teacher is just joking. If she will set a price, she’s sure he won’t be able to afford it because he’s just a teacher with low salary.

So she raised her brow and smirked “10 Million won” she estimated the numbers. And waited for the teacher to complain but she was surprised when the teacher didn’t.

“I will have it sent to your bank account tomorrow.” Mr.Jeon said.

His words earned gasped around the room.

“What? Are you serious?” Mr.Min asked. He could not believe this teacher will do this for his own son.

The Principal on the other hand remained silent and just trusted his teacher’s way of solving this problem.

“Well..well..then good. It is settled then” the woman thriumpantly smiled.

Yoongi could only shook his head. How come Mr.Jeon offer such amount of money just to settle his problem?

“I am serious.” he answered Yoongi’s father. “But all of this in a condition.” he added.

All of them patiently waited for his next words.

“Yoongi must receive a punishment for assaulting Kevin, from now on, he will be removed from the basketball team and apologize to Kevin for what he did.” Mrs.Chu smiled after hearing this. She seemed contented that at least the boy will be punished.

Yoongi looked down with a sad face. He is sure sad because he loves basketball so much but it was his fault so he must not complain.

“Kevin must also apologize to Yoongi for provoking him.” Mr.Jeon added and the smile of Mrs.Chu turned into a frown. But she chosed to be quiet for the sake of 10 Million won.

“As for Mr.Min..” he looked at Yoongi’s father who seemed lost while pointing at himself.

“Me? Why me?”

“As a teacher, It has come to me that you would abuse your son physically. I hope this changes from now on. Children usually imitates what their parents do. If you communicate with your son through your fists, your son will also do the same way of communicating to others. What happened today is an example of that. Instead of Yoongi talking with Kevin about the insults, he chose to use his fists as an answer. Where do you think did he got this behavior Mr.Min?” Mr.Jeon asked.

That moment, Mr.Min felt like he was hit by sharp daggers with just hearing the teacher’s words. He looked at his restless son with blood stains on his knuckles. And it dawned on him that this was actually his fault.

His fault because he only teached his son the way of the fists. Just because his mother left them, he blamed everything to his son. He would beat him up everyday and now his son beats others too.

Mr.Min guiltily looked at Yoongi. How can he be this cruel to his innocent son?

Is it too late to change for him? He asked himself.

By then his eyes softened and said “I understand Mr.Jeon. I’m sorry for causing this trouble. I will make sure that I can pay you back even little by little.”

“It’s okay. You don’t need to. It was partly my fault anyway for not watching the game. I could have prevented this from happening if I was just by his side.” he said.

“Thank you so much for being good to my son.” he said and looked at Yoongi. “Common, we need to clean you up.” The father reached his hand to his son.

Yoongi almost flinched when he felt his father’s hand on his shoulder. He got confused at first at his father’s calmed expression but he just followed him.

Moments later, it was only him and Mr. Yang inside the office.

“I appreciate your ways of solving conflicts Mr.Jeon. But do you really need to spend such amount of money for that student?” he asked.

“For me it is worth it. Yoongi’s father needs to learn his lesson since it is his fault in the first place.”

Mr.Yang just nodded. He looked at Mr.Jeon with pride. He believes that this teacher can be a role model to everyone.

Little did the Principal knows that Mr.Jeon is not the perfect teacher as he seems. As he is also commiting immorality by falling in love with his own student.

Author’s Note

Sorry for the small Liskook moments here.

I’ll make up for you on the following chapters.

Night Together

Jungkook's POV

"Hey, Are you alright?" I was welcomed by Lisa's worried voice when I got home.

She quickly took my slippers for me to change and she helped me take off my coat.

"I'm okay Lisa. I'm sorry I had you come home ahead of me. I had to settle things in the office. I said as I lean to kiss the top of her head.

"It's okay. You must be tired. Come, I cooked dinner for you." her caring voice didn't go unnoticed and I smiled at her.

Lisa would be a good wife, I see.

I snaked my arm around her waist as we walk together to the dinning table where she has already prepared mouth watering dinner.

"This looks good!" I said as I sat on my usual seat. Lisa took my glass and poured some water in it.

"I know you are hungry so you must eat well. By the way Jin won the competition. I feel bad that the two of us wasn't able to watch and support him." she said while offering me the glass of water.

"Thank you Lisa. Yeah I heard he won. Don't worry. We'll make up to him Lisa." I said and I started to eat.

"Uhm..what happened to Yoongi then?" she asked. Her voice a little bothered.

I don't want Lisa to worry so much so I explained what happened. When I mentioned that I paid for the hospital bill she was really surprised by the numbers.

"Mr.Jeon, why are you being generous all then time? Nothing will remain of your salary if you continue doing this." her cute brows were meeting while looking at me this time.

“It’s nothing. Don’t worry.” I sjrugged.

“Don’t worry. Don’t worry. You are always asking me to not worry when you’re always missed up with problems. Let me just remind you that I am here to lessen your burden and help you with your problems but you keep on treating me like a damsel in distress. Mr.Jeon, your problem is my problem too.” Lisa huffed and crossed her arms on her chest when she finished bursting out her emotion.

I can’t help but smile at her.

How can she be so cute even when she’s scolding me?

But seriously, I am really lucky to have her. This is actually the first time I felt someone worry for me and it’s really refreshing.

“Because I am really okay. Money doesn’t matter at times like this.” I shortly replied. I really don’t want to tell her that such amount is small for me. I am not the heir of our family’s business chains for nothing.

Lisa looked at me suspiciously as if she’s thinking about something then she pointed her hand at me and said “Mr.Jeon, are you perhaps part of a Mafia or something?”

“Excuse me?” My eyes widened at her accusation.

“No offense but I really find your lifestyle extravagant compared to those usual teachers. You have a huge house, you have lots of cars in the garage, you paid for my classmates Karaoke, you paid for Yoongi’s, you treated the class to the cafe, you treat us on a barbeque. I mean these are things which normal teachers can’t afford. But you..”

I could only sigh. At first, I have no plans on telling her my background because I think it’s not important but she deserves to know because she is my girl now.

“Lisa, teaching is not my only source of income. Let’s just say my family owns a lot of businesses and I happen to be the only son. I have shares in all of it that is why I have extra.” I explained.

Lisa’s eyes grew wide after hearing this.

“Woah! Mr.Jeon you’re like those perfect male lead for kdramas then?” she said in awe.

I laughed hearing this. She really is cute. Everything she does is cute.

“But still, you should not waste money on things like this. If I’m your wife I will not let you spend too much on—” Lisa stopped talking and covered her mouth quickly.

“What was that? If you were my WIFE then?” I asked, teasing the shy girl.

So she’s thinking about the future already? Well why not?

In all honesty, I want her to be my wife when the right time comes.

Lisa just covered her face and said “Nothing, I was just..”

Her reaction made me reach out for her hand and say, “If we stick on together, that’s not impossible to happen.”

Just imagine how red Lisa’s face has gotten now. It makes me want to tease her more.

“Mrs. Lisa Jeon sounds good right?” I teased her again.

“Don’t get my hopes up Mr.Jeon.” she bitterly answered and continued eating.

Lisa got pissed with what I said so I got worried.

“Hey? Are you mad? I’m sorry I was just teasing you because you look so cute when you’re blushing.” I appologized gently.

“Just please don’t say words which will get my hopes up. We are not even official yet. It just made me realize that I am not your girlfriend and I am far from being it.” Lisa looked down sadly.

I realized that what she said was true. Because even if we are kissing and doing all sorts of what couples do, I am still officially Ji-eun’s.

So I stood from my seat to walk to her. Then crouched infront of her.

“Lisa, I’m sorry. Please don’t think of this relationship as if it’s impossible. I’ve already said that I will break up with her. Please be patient on me.”

Lisa just stared down at me. “When?”

“Tomorrow, I have a booked flight to Australia.”

“What? You’re really serious?” she asked with her mouth wide open.

“Yes I am serious. I am serious about you so please don’t feel bad.”

“How long will you be gone?” she asked. Her eyes showed sadness.

“Two days only Lisa. I will leave you allowance to spend if you ever need anything.”

“Two days? That is too long. I have grown accustomed to you being around. I’m afraid I will miss you if you go for that long.”

“Don’t worry..I’ll call you when I get there. I’ll video chat you at night. Is it okay Lisa?” I asked. It took her seconds before nodding.

“I will miss you. I hope you get back to me.”

“Of course I’ll get back to you. From now on, I want you to think that I am only yours Lisa.”

Lisa finally smiled this time and leaned to give me a hug.

I nuzzled my face on the crook of her neck and smelled her fresh scent. Moving to her ear I whispered “Since I will be gone for two days and you will miss me, why don’t you spend the night at my room this time?”

Lisa pulled away from the hug immediately after I said those words.

Her hands moved to hug her body “Mr.Jeon, are we.. are we going to—”

If I only could.

But I shook my head. “No, Lisa we are only sleeping together. Not that.”

“Oh..” she said as if relieved by my answer.

“So…let’s start cleaning up so that we can go to bed.”

Lisa and I cleaned the table and went back to our rooms to freshen up.

She didn’t say a word but I can feel her excitement through her body language.

Knowing that Lisa will be sleeping with me tonight, I took a long shower and brushed my teeth to smell good for the girl.

As I lay on my bed to wait for her, I heard a soft knock from outside the door.

“Come on in” I said.

Lisa’s POV

I nervously looked around his room first. Then spotted him lying on the bed.

For some reason, I am really nervous.

I have slept with him already when he was sick but he was almost unconscious that time so this thing right now is somewhat new to me.

“Come here.” he said patting the space on the bed next to him.

I had to gulp first before walking slowly to him.

Mr.Jeon’s eyes are not leaving mine which made me really concious about how I look since I’m only wearing my plain white shirt and cotton shorts to sleep.

“Mr.Jeon, is it really okay for me to sleep he—”

I gasped when I was pulled to the bed with him.

“What—”

“Shhh…stay still..let’s just cuddle” his gentle yet manly voice almost gave me goosebumps. And it doesn’t help the fast beating of my heart because I landed on top of him.

As Mr.Jeon's arms are wrapped around my body to keep me in place. With this position, I could even feel the hardness of his chest.

"Mr.Jeon, I am heavy for you" I said as I try to push myself away from him but he just tightened his grip at me.

"You're very light Lisa. You should eat more to gain more weight." he said, as his eyes are closed while just feeling me against him.

"Am I too thin for you?" I asked feeling insecure. I am aware that I don't have the curves that would satisfy a man like him.

"You are but still you are perfect Lisa." his answer hurt me a lot. I know he's only saying this because he doesn't want to make me feel bad.

So I pushed myself away from him and lie on the bed far from him while turning my back on him.

"Hey…come back here." he said pulling me again to his side by my waist but I didn't.

"Lisa? Why? What's the problem?" his worried voice echoed on my ear. That's when I realized that he was already pressed against my back.

"Mr.Jeon please stop lying and saying that I'm perfect when I'm clearly not."

"But to me you are very perfect and I'm telling the truth. I like you the way you are Lisa." he then turned my shoulder to face him. His hands cupped my cheeks and he repeated the words

"You are perfect for me." he poked my nose with his forefinger and smiled sweetly.

"So don't feel bad about yourself. I don't like it when you do that. I want a confident Lisa. Okay?"

The mixture of his soothing voice and loving words convince me so I hummed in response.

He’s right. I should really start having confidence in me. I must keep my insecurities aside and just accept my flaws.

Mr.Jeon leans in and brushed his nose against mine. I find the action really sweet so I smiled.

“You make me happy Lisa.” Mr. Jeon said as he leans closer. He closed his eyes as I patiently waited for those thin soft lips on mine.

And when our lips touched all the remaining worries I have in my body disolved.

We huddled close, lips entangled, nose brushing as his hand guides me by my cheek while the other is on my back.

My hands were on his chest as we silently savored each others lips.

He soon deepen the kiss, claiming me with full of warmth and gentleness.

I felt so happy and contented having him this close to me. But I was too greedy and had the urge to claim him more.

I tilted my head and fought back through the kiss which shocked Mr.Jeon.

He moaned inside my mouth and it turned me on so much.

Part of me wanted to feel him more. As if I was drawn to him that I want him to bury himself in me. My hands travelled to his hair and tugged them lightly pulling him more to me.

I want him.

I want him to claim me.

But Mr.Jeon parted from the kiss and looked at me with loving eyes.

With heavy breathing he said, “Not yet the right time.”

I flushed red when he those words. I don’t know if I will be hurt because he refused me or of I will be happy that he respected me.

One of his hand managed to caress my cheek which is now burning with embarrassment.

“Doing it right now will be unfair to you.” he paused as his fingers travelled to my lips.

He lightly brushed his thumb on my lower lip and continued, “One day, you and I will do it and by that time I am completely and officially yours.”

“Will you wait for me tell I get back Lisa?” he asked while his voice was pleading for an assurance.

“I will patiently wait Mr.Jeon.” I replied.

“Thank you.” He miled once more and pulled me closer to him.

In the end, I snuggled in his arms. His chin rested at the top of my head and moment later, I hear light snores coming from him.

I feel at ease just hearing his soft breathing and the fast beating of his heart.

Morning came and I was waken by the emptiness of the bed. I looked around and realized I was inside Mr.Jeon’s room.

Where is he? I asked myself as I rub my eyes open.

Then he emerged from the door wearing his formals.

“Good Morning yound lady! I made breakfast for you.” he walked to me to kiss my cheek.

“What time is it? Are you leaving already?” I asked.

“It’s already 9 and my flight is past 10 so I need to go now.”

“But won’t you have breakfast with me?”

“I will just gab some on my way to the airport. Here’s for your allowance. Don’t hesitate to buy anything that you need.” he said handing me a small leather pouch.

I was shocked to see cash and cards inside.

“Mr.Jeon this is too much for an allowance.” I said as I try to give it back to him but he pushed it back to me.

“Lisa! Please don’t be stubborn and accept it. Spend it anyway you want. Treat your students some ice cream or

anything they like.” he said usong his strict teacher’s voice again.

In the end I defeatedly sighed and accepted it.

“You will call me when you get there right?” I asked again.

Why do I feel like this trip of him will not turn out well?

I really feel so anxious having him left me but this trip is for the both of us so how can I complain?

“I will. I’m going now. Please take care of yourself, okay?” he said and leaned in to kiss me on the lips.

But I shut my lips close because I feel shy to kiss him when I just woke up.

Mr.Jeon noticed my hesitance so he chuckled on my lips. As if reading my mind he said, “Don’t be shy. Your breath smells good.”

Then just like that, he was able to deepen the kiss.

Mr.Jeon bid me goodbye through the car window and just like a patient wife I waved my hand to him as I stay by the door.

The car soon disappeared in my eyes.

I went back inside the house and ate breakfast alone. Looking at the space where Mr.Jeon usually sits, I can’t help but feel sad and empty.

As all I want right now is Mr.Jeon’s presence.

Clasping my hands as if praying, I uttered, “Ms.Ji-eun wherever you are, please just let Mr.Jeon free. Give him to me and I will love him with all of my heart.

I will love him…

Love?

Yeah..

I love him…

I already love Mr.Jeon.

And if fate brings us back together, I will tell him that.

I will tell Mr.Jeon that I love him.

Author’s Note

Let’s do a guessing game.

What do you think will happen next?

A.Ms.Ji-eun will realize that she loves him and will not let him go.

B. Ms.Ji-eun will let him go because she doesn’t care for him anyway.

Refusing Boyfriend

Ji-eun's POV

"Ahh..this is very relaxing. I wish I can always have this relaxing massage at least once a week." Seulgi said as she lie on her stomach.

My friends and I are currently enjoying a relaxing massage at a famous Body and Wellness Spa located at the heart of Sydney.

"Then let's go here next week." I said.

"Na-a, Kyuhyun will be here next week. He has planned for us to travel to New Zealand for me to spend time with his family. That guy is really sweet." Seulgi chuckled softly. Kyukhyun is her long term boyfriend who lives in New Zealand.

I turn my attention to Joy who's eyes are closed from concentrating on the massage. "So it's just Joy and me then?"

"Ji-eun have you forgotten? It's Sungjae and I's anniversarry next week. I will have to go back to Korea to spend time with him. I have told you about this remember?" I frowned.

How about me? I have nowhere to go next week?

I can't help but feel jealous at the attention my friends are getting.

I suddenly remembered Jungkook.

Since the last time Jungkook and I talked, he hasn't called me yet which is really weird.

I know he's trying to ignore me so that I will chase after him but No. I will not lose to him.

I'm sure that between the two of us, it is him who will aproach me first. Not the other way around.

But I cannot tell my friends that Jk and I had an argument. I don't want to lose face because of this.

They both know that Jk is whipped for me and he will do anything for me. They even told me that I'm so lucky to have him.

It brought me back memories where he would send me flowers of different kinds everyday. He would even shower me with the most expensive rings and gifts. But now he's ignoring me and I hate it.

If my friends know about our status now, they will laugh at me for sure. So I don't have a plan on telling them this.

I will just keep saying that Jungkook still calls me everyday and would still send me gifts.

Acting is my job, so it's easy for me to act around my friends.

"By the way Ji-eun, How's Jk? Are you two guys alright? I can't see him calling you lately?" Seulgi asked

"Yeah..He used to call you every hour right and it annoys you." Joy laughed so hard recalling those times where Jk would bare standing in the rain just to wait for my shooting to finish.

"Uhm..uh..we're fine..He's still the same annoyingly whipped guy. But I just try to understand him because he loves me so much." I said.

"Geez. You're really lucky to have him. I mean he's so hot and fucking rich. Girls would drop their panties just to get him." Seulgi joked and we started laughing.

"Sorry for those girls though. Jungkook wants no other one but me."

My muscles are still hurting from the last night's activity.

"Miss, Can you apply more pressure on my calves it really hurts" I asked the massuesse.

"Yes Ma'am" she answered and continued the relaxing massage.

“But hey. Your boyfriend is really hot. I’m really curious… how’s he on bed?” Joy asked me this time.

I looked around first as I’m scared of paparazzis or medias to hear about what we are talking.

“Hmm..nothing has happened yet. But I think Jk’s a vanilla.” I guessed and both of my friends started laughing.

“What the? That’s disappointing if he is like that. He should use those muscles well.” Seulgi joked.

“He’s just a boy. Give him a chance.” I said.

“But seriously, Jungkook must improve his performance in bed if he wants to come close to—

“Shhh..someone might hear you.” I silenced Joy right away. I don’t want her to drop names because fans might just be lurking around.

“No one is around we can spill anything here.” Joy said.

“You said Mr.Goo is a little kinky and rough right?” Joy gave me a teasing smile.

“Not only that. He’s the best in cunnilingus too.” I added.

“Better than the last one?” Seulgi raised her brow.

“Uh-huh”

“Girl! You really are lucky! Why do best men falls for you everytime?” Joy whined but I just shrugged.

Well this is me. You can’t blame me if I can attract only the best.

I unconsciously bit my lip when I remembered the steamy nights I shared with Jin-goo.

He’s a really good performer. Sadly, he has to come back to Korea for a shooting.

Now I have to spend the coming nights alone. But at least he has left me good memories in bed for two weeks so who am I to complain?

I could still feel his burning lips on my skin. His tongue on my….

(Phone Beeped)

A message?

I reached for my phone to read and was surprised to see the sender.

Ji-eun,

I'm on my way to Australia. Send me your address.

-Jk

I smiled reading the message. It's been a week that I haven't heard from him. Finally my friends will stop teasing me.

"Speaking of the devil, my boyfriend just happened to follow me here in Australia just to see me."

"Oh my god! For real?" Seulgi gasped.

A smirked formed on my lips and said "Of course. Jk won't survive a week without seeing me so now he's followed me here."

"Woah..he's really whipped for you. I bet he has another surprise for you. What could it be this time? Another marriage proposal?" Seulgi curiously asked.

I rolled my eyes when I was recalled by how many times Jk has proposed for marrage.

Poor guy.

But I don't regret refusing the offer. He wants kids with me like what? I'm at the peak of my career and he expects me to be a loyal and patient wife who will tame loud children?

No way.

"I don't know. I'll just update you guys next time we meet." I said and sent Jungkook the address of the apartment I'm staying at.

After spending the whole day at the spa, I recieved another message from Jungkook that he's on the way to the apartment that I am staying.

I fixed my self first at the spa's comfort room but then I saw something real shocking.

“Oh shit!” I cursed when I saw a purple hickey on my chest.

Ughh stubborn Jin-goo! I was clear in telling him ‘no sucking on my exposed skin’!

What if Jungkook sees this?

I mentally cursed at myself but then I decided to cover it up by make up.

A little use of my own beauty products and it was gone.

“There. This is better.” I said nodding at my reflection.

Not sooner when I got in the apartment, I heard a knocked outside the door.

This must be Jk.

I stood to open the door and it was really him.

“Let me guess, you finally realized your mistakes and your here to apologize, am I right?” I asked the boy but he just pass through me and walked inside.

What the?

“Hey Jungkook!” I called him as I shut the door.

I followed him and finally he faced me.

“Ji-eun. I have something to tell you.” he said with a guilty face.

“What?” I grew tensed and worried at his serious expression as if he’s about to tell me some bad news.

I thought he came here to kneel infront of me, to ask for my forgiveness but he just sat on the chair next to the bed and looked at me.

“Ji-eun, I want to break up with you.”

The words sounded alien-like to me.

I looked at him confused.

Is this really Jungkook? This can’t be him!

Jungkook will never say this.

Jungkook loves me.

Jungkook wants my attention.

Jungkook wants to marry me.

Jungkook is crazy for me.

But this man right here says he wants to break up?

He's joking right?

Right. I think he is.

I started laughing out loud. "Jungkook stop joking around."

"Ji-eun, I'm not. I am serious. So please accept this. I hope you forgive for not taking care of you well. For not making you happy enough.

My mouth hunged open upon hearing him.

He's really serious?

But why?

I am hurt.

Not because I love him. I don't love Jungkook in all honesty but still, I hate it that he's the first one to dump me.

Me of all people? Men are going crazy for me but Jungkook wants to leave me?

I want to laugh at what os happening.

"Ji-eun? Are you alright? I hope you're not mad." he asked looking at me with his sorry expression and I hate it.

What will I say to my friends now? The media?

That Ji-eun, the popular actress just got dumped by his rich boyfriend?

Maybe this is his way of getting back on me.

No, I will not let him humilliate me this way!

"No Jungkook! We are not breaking up!" I said with full determination.

We will break up when I want to. Not now that he wants it.

"Huh??? But why?—"

“You are mine and it will stay as that.”

“Ji-eun please—”

“Fine. Fine I love you. I love you with all of my heart if that’s what you want to hear. Just don’t break up with me.” I lied.

I had to. I know he has soft spot for my words.

Finally Jungkook’s eyes softened when he heard those words.

“Ji-eun, I’m sorry but I really can’t do this anymore.”

His reaction got me more frustrated.

What does he want?

I already said I love him right? What else?

And it dawned on me.

That must be it.

Of course he is a man. And I haven’t satisfied his needs yet.

Yeah…maybe that’s the reason why.

Well I can give him that.

I am lonely and alone this night anyway. Maybe I could use his help.

I took a deep breath and started removing my clothes.

“Ji-eun what are you doing?” he asked with his worried voice.

“If you’re breaking up with me because I can’t satisfy your needs, then let’s do it.” I said as I successfully remove all of those which covers me.

I stood in front of him completely naked as Jungkook’s eyes widen.

“Ji-eun….

Author’s Note

Sorry IU fans for making her bad in this story. (It's just in this story tho)

What can you say about her feelings for Jk?

What will Jk do?

A. Remain as a gentleman to Ji-eun and push her away.

B. Go with the flow and cheat on Lisa.

Surprise Visitor

To my readers:
Thank you for the comments on the last chapter. I really like it when you interact with the story.
I love you so much!

P.S. I don't want to spoil you but please trust me. It is worth it.

Lisa's POV

When Mr.Jeon left, I decided to spend the morning cleaning the house.

I walked to Mr.Jeon's room to take his dirty clothes to wash them.

"These are not even dirty enough. How can his clothes smell so good even if he has used them?" I asked myself.

Yes, I'm talking to myself now.

I am alone inside a big house and the only thing that I can hear is the fast beating of my heart.

My heart.

My heart which is now owned by Mr.Jeon.

I love him.

And I'm so happy that my first love is as perfect as him.

It's been three hours since he left and he hasn't called yet.

How many hours does it take to fly from Korea to Australia?

I really hope he calls me soon.

I miss him so much.

I took one of his tshirt which smells just like him and put it on the bed.

I want to sleep wearing it later. At least it can make me feel like he's here with me.

Then I went down to do the laundry.

I washed all the dishes.

Mopped the floor.

Clean the yard.

Fold our clothes.

I checked my phone.

No call yet.

This is so boring.

My eyes landed to the leather pouch which Mr.Jeon gave me for an allowance.

Right.

I will just go to the Orphanage today!

I want to spend it with the kids.

I took a bath and went out on a covenience store to buy some ice cream.

Mr.Jeon told me that I can buy the kids some ice cream right? I'm sure they'll be happy to see this.

When I was few meters away from the Orphanage, my eye caught something.

Who's car is that?

I watch the luxurious car parked just outside the orphanage.

"Do we have a visitor?"

I asked myself again.

I rushed inside to see what's happening.

But when I got inside, I dropped the ice cream that I'm holding.

What the fuck is he doing here?

My mouth hunged open as my eyes almost fell from it's socket seeing Kim Taehyung playing with the children.

"What are you doing here!" I ran to the children and hid them on my back. My arms were wide open to protect them from him.

Mr.Kim could only laugh seeing my reaction.

"Chill! We're just playing" he said raising his hands in the air as if surrendering.

"Teacher Lisa, is he the teacher you are marrying?" Lia asked and I almost puke infront of them.

Marry Kim Taehyung? Seriously?

Never even in my dream will I marry an evil man like him.

What I want to do right now is to slap his smirking face for coming at our orphanage.

How dare he come here and play with the kids when he just threathened to demolish this place?

"What do you want?" I asked him.

"As I said, I came here to play. Right kids?" he asked the innocent children as if I can't read that he has a hidden agenda.

I was about to push him out of the Orphanage when Mother Yasha came.

"Oh Lisa you're here. Come and help me prepare the food Mr.Kim brought. Is this your ice cream on the floor? I will take this to the fridge." she said and she walked to where the dinning area is.

I looked back at Mr.Kim dumbfounded and this shit just had the nerve to wink at me?

I swear my blood is boiling now!

"Come with me kids. I told you to stay away from strangers!" I reminded them as I guide them to walk away from the man.

"But Mr.Kim is a good guy" Yeji.

“Yeah..we like him! He’s cool!”

“Shhh quit talking!” I said as I pull the children to the dining area where Mother Yasha was already preparing a table full of food.

“Do we have a feast?” I asked.

“No Lisa. Mr.Kim just wants to treat us late lunch today.” she said and I rolled my eyes.

The children excitedly sat on their chair as it is their first time to eat such kind of delicious food.

They usually eat porridge and bread because of the lack of fund.

I didn’t notice that Mr.Kim has already followed us to the dinning table. A smirk was still plastered on his beauti— I mean evil face.

I could just roll my eyes in annoyance over and over again.

But when the children started eating, I almost cursed.

“Children! What are you doing?! What have I teached you? Is this a good manner you’re showing right now?”

They looked at me with mouth full with food. Then they guiltily stood and formed a line.

“Mr.Kim, from the bottom of our hearts, we want to thank you for the food you shared today.” Yeji said.

“May you be blessed for your generousity a thousand folds.” Soobin added.

Then the children started praying before the food.

Now it was my time to smirk at the evil man. I can tell he was silenced by the kids.

See Mr.Kim? That’s what manners is.

Mother Yasha who was not even aware of the tension between me and the evil man asked Mr.Kim to eat with them.

I expect him to refuse but he dared to sit and and even look at me, “Ms.Lisa, aren’t you going to join us?” he asked with his innocent voice.

If not for the kids and Mother Yasha being around, I would cuss out already.

“Teacher Lisa, sit with me please” Taehyun pleaded.

Knowing that the kid is the most emotional, I defeatedly sat next to him.

Soon the children excitedly dived in.

You can really see in their faces that they were happy for the delicious food.

But I have no appetite to eat. Mr.Kim’s presence took my appetite away.

I looked at the man who would take glances at me so I stuck my tongue out on him.

He was shocked with what I did but later he started laughing.

“Children, when you are eating, make sure to not stick your tongue out okay because it is bad.” he said trying to piss me off.

“Yes Mr.Kim” The children said in chorus.

He then turned at me and smiled sweetly.

Ughhh! I hate him so much!

“Oh Lisa by the way, Mr.Kim came here to say that he is planning to cancel the demolition if things turns out well.” Mother Yasha excitedly announced.

I turn to him and ask “Is this true?”

“Yes, Ms.Lisa” he answered while smiling proudly.

Mr.Yasha and Mr.Kim started talking about the orphanage’ history but I didn’t join the conversation as I was torn between trusting him and suspecting him for another scheme.

But knowing his reputation of being evil, I know I shouldn’t trust him.

When Mother Yasha and I were cleaning the table, Mr.Kim joined the kids again on the classroom to play with them.

“I don’t trust that guy.” I said.

“Why Lisa? He seemed to be nice. He was polite the whole time and he even reconsidered the demolition.” she defended.

“Still, I can still feel that he’s up to no good.” I said.

“Lisa, it is not good to be judge people. Please give him a chance. Even the children likes him now.” Mother Yasha tried to convice me but still.

I just sighed and finished the cleaning.

Mr.Kim left few minutes ago which is good.

After letting the children eat their ice cream, I bid them goodbye.

When I got out of the building, I was surprised that the car was still there.

This is Mr.Kim’s right?

I walked to closer to the car and almost jumped out in heart attack when the door opened.

Mr.Kim got out of his car and faced me.

“This is a cute place” he said while looking at the building.

“Fuck off! Don’t act like you’re an angel! I know you.”

“Such a sharp tongue for a beautiful young lady.”

“Cut it! I’m not playing with you. What do you want?” I asked frustratedly.

“Nothing. I was just bored and I wanted to play.” he said while walking to closer to me.

I stepped back in defense “About the demolition, you were lying to mother Yasha when you said
You will cancel it, right?” I asked and he started laughing.

“I underestimated you. I didn’t know you were this smart Ms.Lisa”

“You jerk! Why are you lying to them? What do you want?” I asked again. He is really irritating the shit out of me.

“The rent for the commercial building is really high that even if the Orphanage pay for their piled up monthly rentals, it will still not compare to the amount that I will get if I demolish this place.” he explained and like I care about his earnings.

“So? If you will still continue to demolish this place, why go here?”

“Nothing, I just want to check out if I will give this place a chance but it seems like the teacher is really mad at me.” he said as he looked into my eyes.

I looked away quickly as I remember Mr.Jeon’s words “Don’t get close to other men”

Even if he’s not here, I would still follow what he want.

And I don’t want him to be jealous over any one.

“I have the reason to be mad at you. You see this is the only place where I get to see them. If you take this place away, it’s as if a part of me was taken too. They are very innocent Mr.Kim. they don’t deserve to lose their home.”

As if he was hit by my words, his eyes softened and said “Okay, I will stop the demolition in one condition”

“Anything, ask me anything and I will give it to you just please spare this place.” I said.

“Anything?” he raised his thick brow.

“Anything, well except my body of course.” I said and he started laughing.

“Of course not that. I want other else.”

Then a smile formed on his lips.

Taehyung’s POV

“Where to go now Mr.Kim?” Baekhyun, my assistant which now serves as my driver asked.

“Let’s go back to the office. I have a lot of work to finish.” I said.

Well I just happened to use my whole day playing with the children in the orphanage so now I got a lot of work to catch up.

But now I realize, the children are not bad.

And Lisa…

I don't understand her but I've never met such kind of a woman before.

She's strong, smart, straightforward and—

I was suppose to piss her but I ended up being impressed by her.

And the kids too.

As I said, they are not bad..

Maybe…

I took my phone and dialled my secretary.

Mr.Kim?

Yerin, please have the demolition on the Orphanage cancelled.

Are you sure Mr.Kim?

Yes. Thank you.

I looked out of the car window and recalled my deal with Lisa.

[Flashback]

"Okay, I will stop the demolition in one condition" I said.

"Anything, ask me anything and I will give it to you just please spare this place." Lisa's voice was almost pleading.

"Anything?" I asked.

"Anything, well except my body of course." she said and I started laughing.

Too bad, I thought I can have a taste. But it's not that I wanted in the first place.

"Of course not that. I want other else." I said.

I smile at her and she asked. “Then what it is?”

Her question came out as if threathened but still she seemed determined to get what she want.

I looked at her in the eyes and cleared my throat.

“I will stop the demolition if you will accept something that I will offer to you in the future and you’re not allowed to refuse.” I said.

She scowled and looked at me as if I’m impossible.

“What will you give that I have to accept Mr.Kim?”

“You will see in the future.” I shortly answered as I look at my wrist watch.

Fuck! I’m late.

“Are you playing with me? I swear I have no time for your antics. If you want to demolish—”

“Aishh..keep quiet please. Your nonstop talking is hurting my ear. And I already said what I said. We have a deal now and you’re not allowed to refuse.” I said and I walked back to my car.

“Hey Mr.Kim! I’m not yet done!” she yelled But I just continued walking.

“Hey!”

[End of flashback]

“Mr.Kim, are you sure that she is worth it?” Baekhyun asked.

I remember how she passionate she is in teaching the student some manners and how angry she was at me for threathening their home.

“She is.” I replied.

Author’s Note

Whoever can guess Taehyung’s plan is the most genius of all the geniuses.

I’ll try to update one more chapter before I sleep.

Crying Tears

Lisa's POV

That jerk Kim Taehyung! What is he even planning now?

I will make sure I'll find out and stop his schemes.

I was too consumed of my irritation towards the man that I didn't even notice I was already infront of Mr.Jeon's house.

It was already 7 in the evening, when I got home.

I checked my phone.

Still no text or calls from him.

Maybe he's still on the plane that's why he can't make a call.

I tried to busy myself down by making myself a dinner.

I cook a new recipe which I learned from the cook book that I was reading.

I think Mr.Jeon will like it.

He always loves my cooking.

I can't wait for him to have a taste of this.

Lately I've been reading a lot of cook books to improve my skill in cooking. I want to impress him more.

When I was done eating, I cleaned the table, washed the dishes. Walk the stairs.

Fuck this is boring!

What am I going to do?

My life is not as boring as this when Mr.Jeon was around.

I did everything I can think of to entertain myself but I still end up missing him.

I walked to his room and saw his shirt on his bed which I put there awhile ago.

Yeah..I remember I'm supposed to use this to sleep.

So I took it to wear. It ended up on my thighs as it was really big. I look silly cause I look so small in this.

Now I can smell him just wearing the shirt. Mr.Jeon's scent is heavenly good and I'm so lucky that I get to enjoy his scent.

I snuggled myself to bed and shut my eyes close hoping that tomorrow I will receive an update from him.

But morning came and still I didn't recieve a message from him.

I started to get worried.

What happened?

Is Ms.Ji-eun not letting him go?

Please don't be.

It will break my heart if they still end up together.

But if it's not the case, then what's taking him so long?

I decided to call his number. But sadly, it won't reach him.

I'm so worried.

What if he had an accident?

Please no.

I would rather have him be with Ji-eun than an accident.

I tried to call him again but still I can't reach him.

I felt so helpless.

I didn't know what to do.

I tried to stand and take a bath to freshen up my head which is running worst scenarios.

I tried to busy myself with some household chores.

I did everything just to occupy my head with positivity.

Mr.Jeon said this relationship is possible if we stick up together right?

Yeah, I should trust him. He will come to me.

He will.

I fell asleep in the afternoon by thinking about him.

And I woke up still thinking about him.

About my love..

I touched my chest and started asking more questions,

Why do I feel so empty without him?

The pain inside me is eating me slowly. That I think I will go crazy any minute now.

It was almost dark when I hugged myself in bed.

My mind was consumed with thoughts of him again.

My sunday was spent just thinking about Mr.Jeon.

I miss his smile.

I miss his voice.

I miss being inside his arms.

I miss his loving kisses.

I miss talking to him.

I miss everything about him.

I fell asleep and when I woke up, Mr.Jeon was already beside me.

He is sleeping peacefully as he was smoring lightly.

I felt so happy that he’s finally here.

So I reached out for his face and caressed it gently.

He smiled with his still closed eyes.

He’s probably tired from the travel and I better let him rest and just sleep.

I snuggled inside his arms and pressed my ear on his chest.

His heart is beating peacefully.

I can’t help but be smile just staying here.

“Mr.Jeon, I love you.” I uttered the words I have been wishing to say.

His breathing hitched for a second before replying..

“I love you too….

Ji-eun”

I froze.

I feel like my heart was crushed into million pieces when I heard those words from him.

I started crying…no sobbing.

I felt my tears wet my palm, my clothes.

I was crying so much until I open my eyes.

A dream?

It was just a dream but it felt so real.

I looked around the dark room. Mr.Jeon is not home yet.

Does my dream mean he still loves her and they are still together now?

Maybe..

Tears started running again on my cheeks.

I felt so crushed that I can’t breath.

I didn’t notice that the door opened already.

“Lisa?”

“Oh my God Lisa? Why are you crying? What happened?” Mr.Jeon’s worried voice echoed around the room.

For a moment I thought I am dreaming again.

I could only look at his handsome face. His eyes full of worry as his hands cupped my cheeks.

I couldn’t answer as I was overwhelmed with feelings.

Is this real? He’s here?

“Who hurt you? What happened?” his jaw clenched as he stared at me.

“Please stop crying Lisa. I am here my love.”

My love…

The words I so long to hear from him.

“You love me?” I finally found my tongue.

“Yes, I do. And I’m here now. Please don’t cry.” his words filled with sincerity.

He loves me?

Mr.Jeon loves me and he’s here now!

I felt his arms embraced me tightly. Then one of his hands move to rub my back.

“My love, I am here now. Please don’t cry. I swear I will never leave you again.” he said before kissing my forehead.

He caged me inside his arms and held me close to him.

At that moment, all the pain in my heart vanished.

Author’s Note

So, Are we having an official couple now?

Short update but don’t worry, I’ll keep updating this day.

What Happened in Australia

Jungkook's POV

I watch Lisa sleep. As she's now lying on my chest sleeping like a baby.

She finally calmed down and stopped after minutes of crying.

I reached for a hair strand to tuck behind her ear as I watch her beautiful face. I noticed how her eyes are swollen from too much crying.

I wonder what happened to her?

A while ago I came back home hoping to see a happy and excited Lisa but I was surprised to see her crying.

My heart ached so much seeing her like that.

She was hugging her knees as she was wearing my shirt which looked so big on her.

At that time I just wanted to embrace her and never let her go.

I hate seeing her cry. I just want her to smile all the time.

I don't know if it was my absence which caused her to cry like that. I really wanted to ask her but as if I'm a pillow, she fell asleep the moment I embraced her.

She looks tired so I just let her be.

And I can't bare to watch her like this.

I could've flew back to Korea earlier if not for Ji-eun.

Ji-eun…

I shook my head when I remembered what happened to us.

She really gave me a hard time.

I look at the sleeping Lisa again as I recall what happened.

[Flashback]

It was already past 9 in the evening when I arrived in Australia.

I breathed in and out before knocking on the door of the Apartment which Ji-eun sent.

This is it. I will finally break with the girl I had loved for years.

And I'm determined to do this for my future with Lisa.

Lisa is my life now and I will do anything for us to be together.

The door opened and Ji-eun's beautiful but scowling face welcomed me.

Her arms were crossed on her chest as she asked, "Let me guess, you finally realized your mistakes and your here to apologize, am I right?" I didn't answer and just pass through her to go inside.

I want to talk to her decently inside her house.

"Hey Jungkook!" she yelled behind me as she shut the door.

Then she followed me inside.

I took a deep breath and faced her before dropping the bomb.

"Ji-eun. I have something to tell you." I said guiltily.

"What?" she grew tensed as she waited for my next words.

“Ji-eun, I want to break up with you.” I finally said.

She looked at me confusedly.

As if not believing me, she started laughing out loud. “Jungkook stop joking around.”

She doesn’t think I’m serious?

“Ji-eun, I’m not. I am serious. So please accept this. I hope you forgive for not taking care of you well. For not making you happy enough.”

Her mouth hunged open upon hearing me.

Hurt was clearly shown on her face.

I got worried so I asked, “Ji-eun? Are you alright? I hope you’re not mad.” I feel sorry for her but I want to be free for Lisa.

Then her expression darkened.

“No Jungkook! We are not breaking up!” she said with raised voice.

“Huh??? But why?—”

“You are mine and it will stay as that.”

“Ji-eun please—”

“Fine. Fine I love you. I love you with all of my heart if that’s what you want to hear. Just don’t break up with me.” she said while walking closer to me.

If I was the old Jungkook who was crazy for her, I would probably jumped out of happiness by now. But she’s not Lisa. Lisa’s love is the only thing I want right now.

“Ji-eun, I’m sorry but I really can’t do this anymore.”

She seemed to be frustrated and thought for a while.

But what happened after was really shocking.

Because she started removing her dress.

“Ji-eun what are you doing?” I panicked. I don’t know what to do.

“If you’re breaking up with me because I can’t satisfy your needs, then let’s do it.” she said removing her underwear.

She stood in front of me completely naked and my eyes widen.

Shit.

“Ji-eun….” I uttered.

My hormones kicked in seeing a naked woman in front of me.

She walked closer and pushed me on the bed.

I just blinked because I can’t process what is happening right now.

“Ji-eun…” I called out.

She crawled on top of me and for a moment I feel lost.

The woman who I dreamed for years now is naked on top of me.

Her hands travelled to the my belt. But my hands was quicker.

So I grabbed her and flipped us over.

Now I am on top of her.

She smirked and licked her lips.

“Hmmm..come on Jk, dominate me and fuck me hard.”

It was really tempting for a man.

But the reality is…she’s not my Lisa.

If this is Lisa, I would probably lost my shit now and fucked her hard but this is just Ji-eun.

I looked at her in disbelief and reached for the blanket under her.

Then I quickly wrapped her with it and covered her body. She tried to squirm her way out of it but I just held her there.

“Jk, what are you doing?” she wined, completely disappointed.

“I’m the one who should ask you that Ji-eun! What are you doing? Don’t you have any shame left? You’re a girl and you should protect yourself. Why are you throwing yourself at me like this? This is stupid Ji-eun!” I bursted out.

I just lost all the respect I have for her.

For two months of dating her, I didn’t tried to take advantage of her because I respect her. Now I can’t believe that she will do this.

Ji-eun just rolled her eyes “You’re so boring you know! I really can’t stand your principles anymore!”

“So you would rather have a man take advantage of you because it gives you thrill?” I asked in incredulity.

How did I even fall for this girl?

“Yes, and will you please let me go.” she said as she struggle to get away from my grip.

“We are over Ji-eun and this is final.” I said with finality.

“Fine. Go ahead and fuck yourself. I’m sure you will end up begging for me to accept you back in a week or so.”

Her words were clear enough that she freed me.

And I’m satisfied with it.

I stood and was about to left when Ji-eun’s voice stopped me.

“You left your phone” she said and the next thing that she did was throw my phone away. It hit the wall so hard.

When I rush to grab my phone, the screen was cracked.

“Why did you throw this?” I asked Ji-eun who has now freed herself from the blanket.

I looked away seeing her naked again then she laughed so hard.

“You’re rich. You can replace it anytime you like”

I took the broken phone with me and left her there.

How will I call Lisa now?

I promised her that I will call if I get the chance.

But I just decided to go back to airport.

My flight back home was delayed And it was so frustrating because the 11-hour flight will take longer.

I hope she's fine back at home. I hope she's eating well.

I badly want to see her now.

I want to tell her that I'm free.

I want to ask her to be my girl.

I want to kiss her, to hug her.

I want to eat her cooked food.

I want to spend the coming days with her.

And when I get home. I promise that I will tell her that I love her and hopefully she loves me too.

[End of Flashback]

I carressed Lisa's hair and whispered "I love you Lisa"

Her lips tugged upward as if she heard me on her sleep.

That's right. Dream about us baby.

Author's Note.

Dearest Readers,

You really underestimated Mr.Jeon. The title of the story is not Great Teacher Jeon for nothing. His character here is close to perfection that he can even resist Lisa for his principles.

😂😂😂

Btw, Be ready for the next chapters. It will be filled with sweet moments and intimate scenes.

Together Again

Lisa's POV

"Good morning Lisa! How was your sleep?" Mr.Jeon asked the moment I opened my eyes.

I blinked.

He's here?

Right! he came back last night.

The sight of him lying beside me felt like a dream and I still couldn't believe it.

Without answering his question, I automatically wrapped my arms around his torso and burried my face on his chest.

"Hey..hey? You must've really missed me a lot?" Mr.Jeon chuckled softly and kissed the top of my head.

"I thought you're not coming back. I was so scared." I answered.

He pulled away slightly to look at my face.

"Why would I do that? I told you I will come back right?"

"But I had a dream. A bad dream." I said. I couldn't say that my dream was about him saying that he loves Ji-eun because I would sound pathetic.

"So that was the reason why you were crying last night?you dreamed that I will never come back?" he asked.

"Yes. I thought you and Ms.Ji-eun are back together and—"

"Lisa what are you saying? I already said that I want you and I don't want to do anything with her anymore.You should know that I'm a man of my words."

He's right. I should've trusted him more.

"I'm sorry Mr.Jeon for not trusting you enough."

“It’s okay. But promise me that from now on, you will never doubt my feelings again. ‘kay?”

Right. I remember last night he told me that he loves me. Is it perhaps true or It was just another dream?

“Mr.Jeon, last night you told me that you…you love me? Is it true?” I asked shyly. I don’t want him to laugh at me for asking this but I really want to know.

His fingers moved to my chin to raise it lightly “I do. I love you you Lisa.”

“Since when?” I asked.

He paused for a while as he search for an answer, “I don’t know when it is exactly but all I know is that I really do love you now and I hope there’ll come a day that you’ll learn to love me too.”

I look at the man who is now looking at me with his hopeful eyes.

Is he serious?

“There is no need to wait for that day.” I smiled.

“Huh? Why?”

“Because I also love you”

With this, Mr.Jeon’s face lit up “Really???”

“Yep!”

“Yes!” Mr.Jeon almost jumped out of bed because of this. “So, that means you are officially mine now?”

“I mean, why not. I have always wanted to be yours.” I answered honestly.

“Wait..but I wanted to court you first.” he said while shaking his head.

I laughed so hard at him. What’s the point of courtship when we both love each other? “No need, I will end up saying yes anyways.”

“Then good. But let us still do it.” he said.

“Do what?” I asked. I don’t understand what he’s saying.

“The usual lines.” he said before clearing his throat. “Hi, I’m Jungkook and I’m single, will you be my girlfriend?”

It was a silly line but still I answered. “Of course, It would be an honor to be your girlfriend.”

Mr.Jeon finally pulled me in for a hug. “You just don’t know how much you make me happy Lisa.”

“You make me the happiest too Mr.Jeon.”

“It’s still weird that you’re calling me that.” but then he pulled away from the hug and looked at my eyes.” I love you Lisa.”

“I love you too.”

With a teasing smile, Mr.Jeon asked, “Since you are officially mine. Can you give me my first official kiss?”

I was almost nodding my head when I remembered that I just woke up and I need to brush my teeth first. So I shook my head no.

Mr.Jeon frowned. “Why won’t you kiss me?” he asked as he pout.

“I just woke up and I..”

“Oh..that? but I told you already that you don’t smell bad. Common, give me that he kiss.” he said as he pucker his lips.

But I got shy and moved away from him. “I’m sorry Mr.Jeon, I just can’t.” I said and ran away from him to the bathroom.

I could only hear his laughter outside.

This is hard.

I need to be conscious at my scent at all times because Mr.Jeon seems to like the idea of being physically closed to one another.

When I was done brushing my teeth, I walk back to him.

Mr.Jeon was still lying on my bed. His eyes were fixed on his phone. Then he looked at me “Lisa, I just called Jisoo that I

will take a leave today. I still have a jetlag from the flight."

"Oh..yeah..I almost forgot it's monday today." I rushed to get my towel when Mr.Jeon's voice stopped me.

"Where are you going?" he asked.

"Uhm..to prepare for school?" I answered unsurely.

"What? No..please stay with me."

"But my classmates they'll look for me."

"Let them be. They wouldn't know we're together anyways. Just please spend the day with me. I missed you."

My lips curved hearing this. Mr.Jeon misses me just like how I missed him?

I guess I was just being silly for crying for him last night.

"But today is the 3rd day of the school festival. I'm afraid I'll miss something?" I said as I walk back to the bed.

"You'll miss nothing there. They're just preparing for the ball tommorow. The cafes just operated for two days right?" he said.

"There will be a ball tomorrow? I didn't know about this?" How come we have a ball for a School Festival?

"Yes, tomorrow night is the ball for graduating students and right now these students are just probably preparing for what to wear tomorrow." he shrugged uninterestedly.

I thought for a while. I don't have anything to wear too?

"What should I wear then?" I muttered but Mr.Jeon heard it.

Raising his brow, he asked, "What do you mean? You are going?"

"Of course. It's for graduating students right?" I replied excitedly. This will be the first time that I will attend a ball. My only problem is what to wear, but maybe I can borrow from Rose.

Mr.Jeon sat from his lying position while wearing a deep scowl "No way you are going. You'll stay here Lisa." he said and I was like,

“Seriously?” I sat back too. Dumbfounded by his words.

“Seriously.” he smiled and pulled me to lie again to the bed with him.

“But I want to go. You are coming too right?” I whined.

“Yes, I am going but I will go home after I show up to the faculty. You can just wait for me here.”

Huh? I don’t understand. He’s going but he’s not letting me come?

“Mr.Jeon, why can’t I go if you are going? And it’s a party for seniors right? I should be there too.

“Aishh..Lisa just please obey me. I said I don’t want you to come.”

“But why? I really don’t understand?”

He sighed deeply before looking into my eyes. “Because I’m afraid that men will come around you. And I don’t want to see you dance with anyone else Lisa. And being your teacher, we can’t dance together. It will just be frustrating for me.”

“That’s it? But that’s impossible Mr.Jeon. No one will ask me to dance, I’m sure of that.”

“No. You will stay here and that’s final. I’ll try my best to go back and maybe we could spend more time together.”

“But—”

“No buts.”

“Mr.Je—”

He silenced me again with his lips. Why does he use this tactic all the time? And what’s even frustrating is that he knows how powerful his kisses holds. That I will always end up submitting to him.

His lips tasted so sweet and felt so warm that my whining was consumed.

He tilted his head to gain more access to my mouth so I parted my lips to welcome him.

Oh god. What a heavenly feeling.

“Hmn” he moaned as his lips and tongue carresses every corner of my mouth.

Then he moved to my ear and whispered, “You will stay here, understand?”

His warm breath fanned my ears, sending shivers through my whole existence.

“I understand.” I answered defeatedly while breathing heavily.

He smiled. Convinced by my answer.

“Good girl.” he said before continuing the kiss.

But the truth is I have no plans of being a good girl now. I will attend the ball tomorrow and just hide the entire not from him.

Yeah. That’s a wonderful plan.

Author’s Note

Sorry for the very very late update.

But the question is, will Mr.Jeon find out about her plan?

First Ball

Lisa's POV

"*Hello Lisa?"*

"*Chae, why didn't you tell me that we will be having a ball?"* I whispered on the phone as I glance at my sleeping man.

Mr.Jeon was too tired from the hours of travel that he fell asleep again after eating. But I made sure to cook him the best tasting and most nutritious food to help him recover.

"Girl, Mr.Jeon told us about it already right? Oh wait..I remember you were absent that time."

"So that's why I don't know." I shook my head. This is my punishment for being absent as always.

"Yes, As a matter of fact I'm here at a dress shop with my mochi. We're trying to pick something to wear for tomorrow." she explained.

Though my friend was not bragging, I can't help but feel jealous. Because even though Jimin is a jerk, he still supports Chae on this. While I..

"How about you Lisa? Do you have a dress or gown for tomorrow?" she asked making me bit my lip as I'm too shy to borrow stuffs again from her.

My silence was understood by her. Of course, she wouldn't be my bestfriend for nothing. So she said, *"Don't worry Lisa, I'll get something for you."*

"Really?" I squeaked but then covered my mouth quickly when Mr.Jeon shifted in his sleeping position.

"Really. I know you have nothing to wear." her understanding voice echoed in the speaker of the phone.

“Oh my God Chae thank you so much! I swear I will pay you back.” my heart is filled with gratefulness this time. I know it seemed like I am taking advantage of my friend but I really wanted to go on a ball. This will be my first and probably my last because I won’t be attending college.

“No need to pay me. I just want you to come. And if you need someone to do your make up, we can do each other’s make up tomorrow. Let’s prepare at my house.” she excitedly suggested.

The thought of attending a ball excites me so much. I have seen those events only on dramas and I really want to go. But Mr.Jeon won’t let me so I’m gonna break some rules this time.

Just this time.

I bet he won’t be that mad.

Besides, no one will ask me to dance anyway.

“Okay. See you tomorrow Chae and thank you so much!”

I stared at my sleeping boyfriend again.

I can’t believe that this man will be my boyfriend in the end.

Just how lucky I am.

The whole day was spent with me and Mr.Jeon cuddling and talking about a lot of things.

I asked him how the talk between Ms.Ji-eun and him go but he didn’t give the details.

He just told me that he’s free and I shouldn’t worry about her anymore. But part of me tells me that I must not lose guard.

I have a feeling that she will still try to get him back. Which I really pray not. Mr.Jeon is mine now and I will fight for him no matter what.

The Next Day

I watch as Mr.Jeon fix his hair through the mirror in his room.

Last night, I stayed in his room to sleep because he said he wants to cuddle. So I willingly slept with him.

“What time is the prom Mr.Jeon?” I asked.

He looked at me through the mirror with a disappointed face. “8 pm. And will you please call me Jungkook already. I’ve been saying this the whole day.”

“Oh..sorry..Ju..Jungkook. But it’s just 6 PM?” I asked acting like I’m sad that he’s leaving already when the truth is I can’t wait for him to leave. Chae’s been texting me now to come.

“Mr.Yang asked all the teachers to come earlier to help for the program. But don’t worry. I’ll be back around 9. And I have cooked dinner for you already. You must eat well okay?” he explained as he walk to sit beside me on the bed.

“Hmm..‘kay. Take care on your way Miste..I mean Jungkook.” I said. When will I get used to calling him by his name?

“I will” he answered before pressing his lips to mine.

When I was sure that his car left, I quickly hailed a cab to head to my friend’s house.

Yeah.. No walking for me today because I’m in a rush. I need to prepare for the ball in a short amount of time.

“What took you so long!” Chae welcomed me with a long face. She was dressed already and she looked damned stunning.

“Oh God! You’re so gorgeous!” I gasped looking at her. She’s wearing a floor length yellow dress and her straight hair was loosened on her sides.

“I know but enough of that and let’s get you ready. We barely have less than two hours to prepare.” she said then started pulling me to her room.

“I’m sorry I just got stuck in traffic.” I lied.

We finally reached her room and she made me sit infront of her vanity mirror.

“It’s okay. I’ll do your make up now.” she said and she started applying colors on my face.

“Where’s Jimin?” I asked.

“Oh, he will go straight at the ball. I told him that we will go together.”

“Oh..I see.”

It was already 7 when she was done doing my make up. “Lisa, this is the dress that I bought for you!” she excitedly lifted the dress on a hanger and my eyes widen.

Oh my god!

“That looks expensive!!!”

“No it’s not. Common, I want to see you wear this already.” She tried to push me to change.

“But there’s a slit. I don’t have anything other than my underwear to cover myself.”

Chae rolled her eyes and looked st me annoyingly. “You are not suppose to cover yourself when wearing slits. It’s not even that long.”

“No, I think my panties will be seen if I move too much.”

“Then lucky are those who will see.” she said smirking.

“Chae!”

“Chill Lisa, I’m sure the venue will be dimmed. No one will see your precious iron man panties.” Chae’s laughter echoed in her room.

“No it’s not iron man! It’s sponge bob!” I defended.

“Oh God? What the hell are you planning for your life Lisa? You are 18 already! I told you to stop wearing these kind of panties!”

I just shrugged.

“I’m really glad you don’t have a boyfriend because if your boyfriend happens to see you wearing those, it would turn him off for sure!”

Turn off? Will Mr.Jeon be turned off if he sees my underwear?

I don't want that to happen!

I want him to look at me like I'm a real woman.

"But I have nothing else." I looked down sadly.

"Well, you are lucky because I just bought new sets of lingeries and underwears!" Chae squeaked excitedly as she ran to her shopping bags on one corner.

Now it was my time to raise a brow "Hey Park Chaeyoung! What are you planning for buying lingeries huh?"

"He-he" she grinned when I caught her red handed.

"This is Park Jimin's doing right?"

"Lisa, stop acting like my mother. You should know that sex is inevitable between couples. Believe me, you will do it too if you ever have your first boyfriend."

The thought silenced me off.

I mean..

Will Mr.Jeon and I?

But it seems like he's the type who is formal and would not do such thing.

No he's not like that.

He treats me like a baby not a woman.

But I wanted to.

If it's him.

I want to try how it feels to have sex.

I have watched a porn before when I caught my boy classmates watching it at school.

I thought they were watching anime because there was a sound of a girl crying and whinning but when I peaked on the phone screen, I was shocked to see what is happening.

Imagine how hard I smacked the heads of my male classmates. And Bambam got the worst beating from me.

“Here, wear this.” She said as she throw me a set of black lingerie.

“What is this?” I raise the provocative lingerie infront of my face as I shook my head.

“Just wear that one. It is better than your spongebob.”

I tried to refuse her but in the end, I ended up wearing the lingerie.

This is really embarrassing.

I bet I will have to just stand on one corner to prevent the slit from opening.

Class 3-C POV

Lisa and Chaeyoung arrived at the venue for the ball past 8 in the evening.

And All eyes in the room turned to them immediately.

One of those were Jimin who instantly winked at his girl.

“Oh wow Lisa, you look like a human now.” Jimin teased her.

“Oh wow Jimin, you look taller now.” Lisa snapped back making the guy frown.

Chaeyoung just laughed at her bestfriend and boyfriend’s exchange. This is nothing new to her because Lisa and Jimin are the actual representation of a dog and cat relationship.

“Come here baby. I bet you’re done babying your friend. Time to baby me.” he said as he pull Chae on one corner away from Lisa.

Lisa panicked because she has nowhere to go. The place was filled with senior students from other sections and she’s not very familliar with them. It was also the fact that she’s hiding from her boyfriend that she cannot simply roam around.

Also her dress feels uncomfortable to move.

She was about to walk away when a familliar voice stopped her.

“Lisa?”

She turn to search for the owner of the voice and found the class hearthrob in his dashing suit and tie.

“Eunwoo?”

The guy walked to her while looking at her with adoring eyes.

He was awestrucked again by his crush and he felt lucky because he’s seemed to be the first to approach her. Even though a lot of men are just waiting for the right time to get closer.

“Are you alone?” he asked.

“I’m..uh..with Chae.” she nervously answered while looking around. Afraid for her teacher/boyfriend to see her talking with a male classmate.

“She’s with Jimin right?” he said pointing on one corner where the couples where dancing to a love song.

Lisa gulped silently as it dawned on her that almost everyone inside the room were now dancing.

She was hoping that Eunwoo will not ask her to dance or she will not see the morning. Mr.Jeon clearly said ‘No getting near male classmates’.

But the joke is on her because Eunwoo was actually planning to ask her for a dance.

There were two reasons to this. One is that he wants to spend time with Lisa and the other is that he wants to warn her about whatever relationship she has with their teacher.

“Will you dance with me?” he asked.

Lisa stepped back and was about to refuse when two more senior students walk to her.

“Lisa, Will you dance with me?”

“Please dance with me miss.”

The students ask at the same time.

Lisa could only stare at the palms reaching out for her hand.

But Eunwoo beat her to it and took her hand instead. “We are dancing right Lisa?” he smiled at her.

Lisa was left no other choice but to choose her closest among the three.

So she nodded and walk to the dance floor with him leaving the two students in disappointment.

When they reached the middle of the room, Eunwoo’s hands rested on her hips making her blush.

Lisa on the other grew stiff. She doesn’t know where to put her hands at.

This is her first time to dance with a man and she doesn’t know what to do.

Eunwoo noticed this so he said,

“Here” he guided her hands to rest on his chest as his hands travelled to rest again on her hips.

The sweet song that was playing on the background kept the atmosphere romantic especially for couple students.

But at that time, even though she was facing the class hearthrob, her heart was still yearning for her teacher.

They danced in silence as she was awkward and nervous.

Not even aware of the pair of raging eyes which were locked on her the whole time.

Author’s Note

Prepare your holy water.

Sweetest Punishment

Jungkook's POV

"We'll just have to keep the romantic musics playing and then we'll announce the star of the night in an hour or so." I instructed Jisoo.

"Copy Jk, by the way, you seem to be in a rush. Are you going out somewhere?" she asked.

"I have something to finish back at home." I replied shortly. A smile managed to escape my lips thinking about that girl who must be waiting patiently at home.

I can't wait to see her now. Two hours had just passed but I miss her already.

The venue of the Ball was spacious enough to hold the numbers of seniors students. I look around and observed the couples who were having a good time in either just drinking or dancing.

I see a lot of flirtings too and I can't help but be jealous that I am not in their age. I would love to flirt Lisa if she's just my classmate.

I wonder if Lisa would love this kind of events. I honestly feel bad for not allowing her to come. But I am too jealous and worried for other students to take advantage of the situation and dance with her.

The female students were beautiful in their dresses but I bet if Lisa's just here, she would make an impact amongst them.

If I'm just not jealous, I would probably buy her the best dress than any of these students can wear.

But in the end, I just made her stay at home and promised myself that I will make up for her for being a good girl.

Maybe I can take her out on a late-night date later.

She'll love the idea for sure.

I checked my watch again, it was past 8 in the evening already and I am in a rush to go home. I'm too worried that Lisa get's bored and would hate me for taking so long.

But when I was about to look for Mr.Yang to ask a permision to leave, my attention was grabbed by the gasps and murmors which erupted inside the venue.

My eyes followed where most of the senior male student's eyes were fixated. It moved to the entrance where I first saw Chaeyong but what caught me off guard was the student who walked in with her.

I squinted my eyes first to the familliar girl in red who looked beautifully stunning and attention grabbing. But she was too far that I can't register who she was.

I tried my best to remember her, but when she rolled her eyes at Jimin, that's when I realized that the girl was definitely my girlfriend.

What is happening?

I was confused for a while. I thought I am just hallucinating because I miss her so much but she really is Lisa.

She is there.

Wearing her elegant yet seductive dress. The slit which opens to her long legs is not doing any justice to my poor heart.

(A/n: Imagine her wearing this. Sorry for my crappy edit)

My mind and heart became hazy after seeing her like this. For a moment I dreamt of just lifting that skirt to have her wrap those legs around my waist.

I imagined of having her pinned on the wall as I attack those neck, shoulders and chest. I imagine of kissing those lips, the sweetest and softest lips my mouth could ever taste.

But my imaginations was cut when I saw a man—No my student walk to her.

What is happenning? I wanted to walk closer to her especially when two more male students get near her as if they were asking her for a dance?

I blink and recalled the talk I had with her. She said she will stay at home and wait for me but surprise is on me as she's here holding the hand of the class hearthrob as they now walk to the dance floor.

Eunwoo's hands rested on my girlfriend's hips making me clenched my fist. I thought of just breaking someone's face right now. And fuck it more when he grabbed Lisa's hands to have it rest on his chest.

I'm gonna give this guy an F.

F for fuck you.

This boy is surely having a death wish from his teacher. I was almost forgetting that I was a teacher when I planned on jumping on them.

"Oh look! That's Lisa right? She look so pretty in that dress." Jisoo's voice rang beside me. Stopping me from my thoughts of assault.

I could only look at the two with so much jealousy. Why did I became a teacher of her in the first place? I'm supposed to be dancing with her. I'm supposed to be swaying her body here and there.

This is exactly the reason why I didn't want her to come.

I thought we had a deal. But I didn't know Lisa has this rebelious side in her.

I swear she'll be recieving a punishment later!

"They look so good together, right Jeon?" Jisoo again. Why is my friend annoying me so early in the evening?

I rolled my eyes at her words. '*Look good together my ass'*.

I watch them dance and I got more pissed when I realized that both of them were in a serious talk. Eunwoo would look at her with concern on his face, say some words and Lisa would nod in return.

What are they even talking about?

The torture of seeing your girl dance with another guy was unbearable anymore. So I went on one corner and decided to dial her number.

I watch as they stop the dancing when they hear it ring from her small purse. Lisa guiltily left him and walk to one side to see my name flashing on her phone screen.

Her face paled as she looked around. Maybe looking for me. But then she decided to take the call.

"Mister Jeon" her nervous voice echoed in my ear.

"We are going home." I coldly say.

"Miste—Jungkook I—"

"Get in the car. Now."

I tap the end call button as I watch her defeatedly sigh. With slumped shoulders, she walked out of the venue.

"I'll go ahead. I'm not feeling well." I lied at Jisoo who was still there enjoying watching the students dance.

"Oh okay…"

She was about to say more but I was really in a rush to get home and deal with Lisa.

When I reach the parking lot, Lisa was already outside my car. Her eyes scanned mine but I didn't talk. I just unlocked the car and both of us got in.

"Jungkook I was—"

"Not here." I said, maintaining my attention on the road.

The drive back home was silent. Lisa kept looking back at me and her fingers on her lap.

I know she's nervous or maybe afraid of me but she really disappointed me this time.

We finally reached the house, I walk to her door to open it for her and she hesitantly got out.

Then we walk to my room in silence, I was actually leading the way without saying a word and she followed me there.

3rd Person POV

Mr.Jeon started removing his tie and his buttons to free himself from the pent up emotions welling inside his heart.

Lisa awkwardly stood by the door and waited for him to talk or worse yell at her.

She was really guilty for disobeying her boyfriend. She thought he will not find out but she was unlucky in the end.

“Explain” Mr.Jeon’s cold voice paired with his blazing eyes made her heart race out of her chest.

She was so scared. This was actually the first time she saw him like this. He’s angry. Now she regets going there.

“I..really wanted to go that’s why..I came” she stuttered as she look down her shaking fingers.

Mr.Jeon’s scrutinizing eyes didn’t leave her “Do you have any idea how hurt I was for being lied like this Lisa?” he bursted out.

He was so hurt, jealous and disappointed. He never thought Lisa could actually do this: Lie to him in the face.

“I’m sorry..I didn’t mean to hurt you. I was just..I just wanted to experience these things. I’m sure I won’t be going to college and there is no more chance for me to experience this” she explained what her heart feels and Mr.Jeon listened to her tensed voice.

He felt guilty too. He knows that he’s been controlling and he’s been possesive which is the exact reason why she actually did this.

“But you still lied Lisa. I’m scared that you will do this again in the future.” he replied frustratedly.

“I will never do this again. I swear. I’m sorry for hurting you.” Lisa sincerely apologized at him as she walk closer.

Mr.Jeon’s heart warmed after immediately. He cannot be mad at her for a long time.

He looked at the lovely girl again from head to toe and remembered the hard time she gave her awhile ago.

“Are you still mad?” Lisa asked who is now infront of him, she was hesitant to get close to him but she wanted to touch him.

Mr.Jeon shook his head before saying “I love you so much to stay mad at you.”

Lisa smiles before reaching his height to connect their lips. This is her way of making up to him.

Mr.Jeon was shock at first that it was her who initiated the kiss. He instantly forgot about the tension as the act made him really happy.

He leaned down to help her reach his height. Lisa wrapped her arms around his neck and kissed him sweetly. The cute movements of her lips and tongue made the man giddy inside.

He in turn wrapped his arms around her small torso and walked her to the bed.

Soon, Lisa felt her back hit the soft bed and she pulled him more to her face. They kissed with full of love and gentleness. Making both of their hearts flutter.

Even though their eyes were closed, Mr.Jeon still managed to get a glimpse of her smooth legs which was freed from the slit of her dress.

The sight of it was so seductively pleasing to him so he reach out to it and brush it with his palm. Lisa breathed deeply when she felt his touch on her skin.

She feels like Mr.Jeon is teasing her body with his warm touch.

But the taunting never ended as his lips moved down to her jaw. She tilted her head to the side when he sucked the spot between her jaw and ear.

One elbow of him supported his weight while his free hand continued rubbing her smooth legs. When his hand moved to her inner thigh to massage them, Lisa felt a weird feeling building up on her stomach.

The temperature of the room changed now. Both of them felt so hot in each others touch. The sexual tension was almost reaching its peak.

Mr.Jeon tugged down her off shoulder dress. And Lisa moaned when his lips sucked a portion of her skin between her breast.

When he finally saw the black lingerie covering her breast, his expression dimmed making him growl.

“Fuck!” he was already consumed by lust when he saw her with this. Lisa grew shy under his lustful eyes. But she’s glad that she’s not wearing the spongebob anymore.

“Where did you get this?” he asked while reaching out to palm her breast. Lisa’s skin tingled when he felt him cup her one of her breast to massage it.

“Chae” she answered shortly before gasping for air as Mr.Jeon tugged them exposing her erect nipple.

He stared in awe of how beautiful her chest area is.

“Tell me to stop Lisa.” his raspy voice weakly commanded. But Lisa doesn’t want him to stop.

Her silence gave him an opportunity to attack her pink bud. He suck the nip harshly then slides his tongue over to soothe her aching bud.

“Oh God!” Lisa moaned. Mr.Jeon finally find his way to cup the thing between her thighs. Making her eyes widen for his bold move.

“Lisa…” he uttered her name desperately. As he continue sucking on her breast like a hungry infant.

Lisa just kept moaning as she felt the pressure in her stomach keeps building up

Mr.Jeon was also stone hard this time. He was torn between continuing what he started and stopping before he does something he would regret.

In his heart, he wanted to own her and fuck her but his mind was fighting against it. He was scared that Lisa will hate him if

he takes advantage of her. But her moans explains otherwise. It seems like she wants him too.

Still Mr.Jeon wanted to make sure. He wants to remain gentleman in the end for her. But when Lisa's legs opened more, he saw the pair of ligerie covering her core.

That was all it takes for him to lose his mind. He breathed heavily and kissed her lips once again. He tugged her lips harshly and ran his tongue on the swelling lip. Lisa parted her lips when she felt his teeth bite her lower lip. Jungkook's tongue managed to dart inside.

"Hmn" Lisa could only moan inside his mouth. She can feel herself getting wetter now.

"Lisa…I..I want to.." his desperate voice echoed in her ear.

Lisa understood what he meant. She knows he was having a hard time and so is she. So she pulled him by his nape to her.

She looked at his man's eyes and answered "I want you too."

Mr.Jeon smiled at her in return. He couldn't contain his love for her anymore. So he took off his clothes leaving himself with his pants.

Lisa stared at the beauty of her man. She tried to find flaws in his perfection but she failed at once. He is just so perfect.

"Let's remove this okay?" he gently said tugging her dress. Lisa sat up and turn her back to him.

"Help me unzip it" she sweetly asked.

So the man moved closer and kissed her nape as he unzips the dress on her back. He helped her get out of the red dress.

When she was finally freed, she turned to him. He scanned her body and on the set of lingeries she was wearing with his burning gaze. He can feel his bulge was getting bigger this time as if it's about to explode.

(A/n: Sorry I had to delete the picture here)

"God You look beautiful." he complimented before gently pushing her to the bed. He hovers on top of her and unclasps

her bra throwing it away after getting a better view of her breast.

“Ahh” Lisa throw her head back when he started kissing her breast alternately. Sucking, nibbling, lightly biting her nipples which swelled in his attacks. Red marks started forming around her nipples this time.

Then he pressed his bulge between her thigh making her eyes widen.

Oh god!

How big is he?

Lisa mentally asked as she felt the hardness of him between her clothed core.

Mr.Jeon didn’t stop kissing her, his mouth would travel from her lips to her jaw, to her neck, to her breast, to her navel and she just moaned the whole time.

She had no idea what to do. She wanted to help but it seems like Mr.Jeon planned their first with him leading so she just waited for what he will do after.

Mr.Jeon’s mouth traveled down between her thighs. When Lisa felt it, she quickly pressed her legs together but Mr.Jeon forcefully opened it using his hands.

“Let me see.” he said. His stern voice sent shivers down her spine. Mr.Jeon’s fingers travelled to her hips and pulled her panties down. Lisa help him by lifting her hips.

“Fuck it!” Mr.Jeon’s eyes focused on the sex before his eyes. This is the very first time he’d seen a woman’s part up close. He ran his tongue on his now dry lips as he stare at her wet p*ssy.

Lisa covered her face in embarrassment. She could not believe that her teacher who she punched before would actually see her most private part. She was too shy to see how he watches her but Mr.Jeon spoke “You are perfect Lisa. Don’t be shy.”

He stare at her for a few seconds as if admiring the beauty of a flower which he will tear later. Her pink p*ssy lips was

closed tightly but sadly it will be penetrated soon.

“I’ve wanted this for so damn long.” he admitted.

“Jungkook” she whispered, biting her bottom lip.

He didn’t wait for further invitation. Leaning in, he licked her. Sucked her. Tasted her.

Lisa gasped when she felt his tongue hit her clit. Her hips lifted off the bed as his tongue moves up and down her.

She let out a low, desperate moan, her fingers digging into his shoulders.

God she was perfect. Just as he’d known she would be.

Pink. Soft. Clean. Sweet.

He dipped his tongue inside her slit, nearly coming from the knowledge that he finally, fucking finally, had his face buried between her thighs.

He was going to lick and suck her until she came against his tongue. Then he was going to fuck her.

He wanted to do it Hard. Deep. and Rough. But it was her first so he will be gentle this time. Just this time.

There will always be a second time for a rough sex.

The whole blasphemous idea of making love to her made his balls tighten in anticipation.

He looked up at her face while he teased her clit. Her head was tipped back, her long hair spilling over her bare shoulders, her mouth parted.

Lisa was letting out small, breathless moans, and they were the hottest sounds he’d ever heard. The pride of getting her off this beautiful, young and innocent girl was all he’d dreamed it would be.

Unable to resist, he slid a finger inside her. And God she was so tight. His finger cannot even penetrate completely.

She tried to scoot away but he locked her in by his free arm.

She tensed from the unexpected invasion but breathed “Oh God Jungkook!”

He pulled back so he could watch, enraptured by the sight of his finger sliding in and out of her wet p*ssy.

Clenching his jaw, he added a second finger, stretching her. Penetrating her.

“It hurts.” she whined but still her face expressed pleasure.

Mr.Jeon wanted to make enough space for his length later so he continued working his fingers harder, watching her breasts jiggle with erect nipples.

After a torturous moment, he leaned back in and added his tongue. They both groaned, the combination of taste and touch almost unbearable.

Lisa felt her stomach tighten, her whole body shaked, uncontrollable spasms, she gripped the sheets. Arching her back, she came with a loud cry.

She screamed his name from the great amount of pleasure. Her juices came dripping out so he sucked on her gently, drinking her juices out, wipingn her clean though his tongue as he was smiling against her tender skin.

Lisa looked at him when she recovered, “That was so amazing” she said, her eyes full of joy and satisfaction.

Mr.Jeon felt proud of himself for having his girl reach her peak. But her orgasm means they should be up for the next level.

He climbed up to her and looked at her with his loving eyes. She was still breathing heavily as he kiss her forehead.

“Lisa, will you let me?” he asked her permission again before diving in.

“Yes please..” Lisa’s answer came out as a plea.

Mr.Jeon could only smiled at her.

He climber off of their bed and removed his remaining clothes.

Showing his now stone hard cock in front of her.

Lisa's eyes widened seeing this. She was shocked at how big he is. And fear consumed her. The feeling of his finger inside her caused too much pain, what more if he use this one?

Lisa gulped as he climbed back to bed, kneeling infront of her, position his c*ck on her entrance.

Oh lord.

Author's Note

Someone's about to get wrecked. Lol

Again, I am considering of adding moans as a background for the next chapter. Are you fine with it? If not, I will not.



First Love Making ⚠

A moment of silence for the deflowering chapter 😂😂😂

Reminder: Please use your headphone if you play the Multi-media.

If you're not comfortable with it, you can just skip it.

□□□

3rd Person POV

Mr.Jeon glided further over Lisa, he covered her slender body with his bulky and muscular one.

He then locked his mouth with hers, as he brush her entrance with his cock.

Lisa on the other hand was very nervous. She could feel the thick head of his length against her wet core. But she tried to remain calm.

She wanted this in the first place, so basically, there is no turning back now.

Mr.Jeon didn't enter her immediately, instead, he kissed her full of love, taking a moment to enjoy his time with her.

He wanted to savour the anticipation of penetrating her for this will be their first time.

The tip of his head finally pointed in. To her defense, Lisa tried to close her legs.

Mr.Jeon desperately growled, "Let me in." he parted her legs with his knees successfully and moved to her lips to kiss.

"It will hurt a little bit but I promise I'll be gentle." his gentle voice eased her heart which was thumping out of her ribs.

She nodded with full determination.

'This is it.' Lisa thought.

This will not hurt that much right? She said, convincing her self.

“Ready baby?” he asked as he lifts his hips away from her.

“Ready” she answered as she gulp.

Her hand held both of his shoulders. Then he leans in to mute her if ever she screams.

Easing into her, his long and big c*ck pushed in.

Lisa gasped, her eyes welled in tears. Gripping his shoulders, she screamed inside his mouth.

It hurt like hell.

So this is how it feels when losing your virginity.

Mr.Jeon felt bad but he was almost halfly in. He could only make up for the pain by showering her face with gentle kisses. He kissed her nose, cheeks, lips, forehead, eyes..everything.

Her hot and slick p*ssy clutched and throbbed around him as he inch her little by little.

“Fuck!” he hissed as he feel her tightly squeezing him.

She was so damn tight. So tight that it feels like he will cum any moment now.

“It hurts!” she winces in pain as she grips his shoulder hard. She can feel every bit of his nerves brush on her wall. The pain feels like it was never ending.

He was basically tearing her apart.

“I’m sorry” he whispers on her mouth. Mr.Jeon’s movement was very limited. He cannot simply push everything in even if he wants to. She was clearly hurting and crying.

How long will it take to finally get in? She asked her self. His length seems to be unending.

Mr.Jeon caressed her hair as he sank down deeper. His length was almost three fourths in. But his girl was still in pain. “Jungkook..please gentler..it hurts.”

“Lisa, baby I’m sorry.” he breathed in her ear. “I love you. I love you so much.”

“It’s okay. I love you too” she said before biting her lips. Batting her lashes. His hand moved to her face to cup it and ran his thumb along the streak of tears in her cheek.

“Jungkook!!!” she let out a scream when he sank all of it in. She feel full and stretched around him. But Mr.Jeon kissed her cries away.

He remained there unmoving. He lets her adjust to him first.

A minute later he looks into her, “Can I move now?” he asked her gently.

“Slowly.” she said with her eyes shut. Partly opened mouth.

And just like that, Mr.Jeon pulled out his c*ck and slowly pushed it in. The pain was almost gone now but still the feeling of him being inside was weird for her.

He thrusted gently at first, slowly, he worked her flesh with his own. His hard thighs and harder cock crowning her smooth c*nt, penetrating her softer body.

Lisa started moaning when he angled his c*ck on her sweet spot.

“Fuck yeah!” Mr.Jeon felt like he can finally move now when he heard her pleasured moans. He started thrusting deeper.

Now Lisa felt good with each of his thrust.

Her legs swinged up, curling around his hips, to angle her passage so that he can pierce better. With each stroke, Mr.Jeon builds up speed and power and Lisa willingly takes it in. He nuzzled into her neck, pressing his lips against her.

Lisa’s pulse drums against his face. She was feeling better now.

So this is what sex is? There was still a slight pinching pain but the pleasure it sends was still better.

Mr.Jeon felt he could come now, but he want more than this. He want to take it longer.

His breath is became tighter. His heart thumped against his ribs, he kept his eyes shut as if enjoying the feeling of sliding

in and out of her. Her tight p*ssy never loosens in squeezing and choking him.

He prevented himself from cumming by sliding out his c*ck. Lisa was confused but he just smiled.

“Let’s enjoy this baby.” he said before kneeling again to slide two fingers in. Lisa moaned again in surprise. Her wetness which is a mixture of her juices and blood makes it easier for him to plunge inside.

“Jungkook..” she let out a strained voice when he curled his finger inside. With a come at me motion, he started assaulting her g-spot.

Lisa was loosing her mind now. She twitched and moan and would lift her hips up in the air. She gasped for air as he continue taunting her. She was almost at the edge of her second orgasm.

“That’s right baby. Cum for me.” he whispered with his husky and lusftful voice.

Lisa was about to cum again when he pulled his bloody finger out making the poor girl whine.

“Jeon Jungkook!!!” she disappointedly called him out. But the boyfriend just chuckled.

“I changed my mind. I want you to cum around me” he said before pushing back his c*ck into her.

Lisa hissed in pain again as he started moving. But he reconnected his lips to her and they started sharing sloppier kisses.

As he rocked over her, he thrusted up, harder and faster than usual, ramming inside her until he banged against Lisa’s inner walls.

She gurgled out of pleasure. Jungkook’s phase turned harder this time. Her breathing turned into gasping. Sweat beads can be seen in her forehead.

Lisa’s peak is coming. Mr.Jeon can see it rising, bubbling up. He wanted to watch her be taken by it. He craved to see that perfect moment when love and lust are the same, and

when the joy
of the spirit and the mind and the body are one.

Mr.Jeon grasp Lisa's hips, pulls out and turn her to her side. Mr.Jeon lie down behind her. Now they are side by side on soft bed.

He was planning for a spooning position. He kissed her first before sliding a hand to her bloody sex.

"Lift your leg. Let me in." he commanded.

Lisa was feeling tired this time but she managed to lift her leg up, his c*ck eases into her. And she throws her head back.

"hmnn Jungkook! Feels so goood" her voice trails off as she was consumed again by pleasure.

Her breathing grows harder, heavier. Her whimpers become cries. Her cries become wails.

Lisa arched and moaned, as he press a thumb to her clit, her wails becomes a howl. Head flinging back, eyes squeezing closed, she shuddered and writhe.

Mr.Jeon continued thrusting. To him it he was not rough. He tried his best to be in his gentlest but to Lisa, he was rough enough.

He kept thrusting, as he rubs her clit in a circular motion. With a cry that spears through him, Lisa finally shivered into orgasm.

Her climax comes, thighs trembling and Mr.Jeon was there to support her girl. He wrapped one arm around her waist, pulling her close, supporting her.

She cried out, her pussy clenching and spasming around his c*ck as he fuck her through her orgasm.

It's so beautiful to watch for Mr.Jeon as if she was lost in that moment where the rapture of the body overrules mind and heart and spirit.

Lisa convulsed, quaking and quivering, enraptured by her own flesh. Her chest hammering out of her heartbeat. Teeth gritted, lips curled back, head flung back, her face contorts as

though in pain. She hips jerk and buck, and inside, she clenched.

Mr.Jeon felt proud of himself as he was the reason to this.

The moment passes. She felt calm.

But he continued to ram into her. Fucking her with increased speed. He can feel the tension, the sparkle inside him.

He hissed through his teeth as he was about to reach heaven.

Being inside Lisa felt so good. He was very lucky to make love to her.

Lisa whimpered in pain when Mr.Jeon moved faster.

He's near he can feel it.

"Fuck it Lisa!"

Aaahhh..

It's coming.

The Rush.

His thighs tremble.

His groin tensed, a sweet electricity which sparkles and dances.

His balls writhed and tightened as the surge rises.

Somewhere inside his ears, the blood pounds and sings. And I Come.

He came inside her.

Spurting, he give her everything that he have. He gasped as he climax inside of her and she take it all in.

Lisa felt herself being filled by a hot and sticky liquid. But she was too spent to react. She shut her eyes close as pain and sore managed to crept again in her.

And just as he think he was done, he splashed a final pulse inside her before dropping to his elbows, heaving and gasping.

"Oh baby..you feel so good."

Spent. He leans in to kiss her.

Lisa smiled weakly in return. “I love you Lisa. Thank you for this.” he said as he prepped her with gentle kisses. Lisa didn’t answer as she finally fell asleep. Naked with blood and cum dripping out her c*nt.

Mr.Jeon saw this and he stood to clean her. Soon, he joined her on bed. He pulled her body close to her and nuzzle his face into her nape.

He hugged her tightly, afraid for anyone to take her away from him.

“I love you baby.” he whispered again before drifting off to sleep.

Author’s Note

How are you? Lol

Negative Thoughts

Lisa's POV

I covered my eyes when my face was hit by the sunlight which comes from the window of the room.

Oh god.

It hurts.

My body is hurting so much.

I look beside me and was surprised to see a sleeping Mr.Jeon. His arms were wrapped around me. As his head rests on my stomach.

He was naked. And I can clearly see his perfectly shaped ass.

"hmm" he groaned when I tried to move. But I successfully got off the bed without him waking up.

The sight of the sheets terrifies me. Making me remember how I lost my virginity to him last night.

It was so good. The memory of having your first sex with the man you really love was greater than the pain it gave.

But I also feel shy with what happened. I don't know if he enjoyed it just like I did.

I limp-walked to the mirror and stared at my self.

I'm a woman now. I have experienced sex at last. If Chae knows this, she would be laughing and teasing me endlessly for sure. No wonder why Jimin and her loves it so much.

I look at my sleeping boyfriend again and God he is so perfect. How can a man be as perfect as this?

It took me seconds—no minutes to just stare at him.

He is mine now.

And no one is taking him away from me.

I look at the clock by the wall and contemplated whether to go or not go at school?

I wanted to go but I still feel sore. My classmates would be laughing at me if they see me walk like this.

They don't even know that I have a boyfriend. I mean they don't know Mr.Jeon and I's relationship.

Except Eunwoo.

Last night, when we were dancing, he told me that he knows about me and Mr.Jeon's relationship.

I got scared at first but he seemed to be fine with it. He even adviced me to be careful when being around our teacher. He said at some point, we forget about it and we act suspicious.

I really wanted to thank Eunwoo last night but Mr.Jeon's phone call cut our talk. I think I'll just thank him if I see him at school.

I walk to get a towel on Mr.Jeon's dresser and walked out of the room to take a bath at my own room.

Mr.Jeon said that I can freely use his bathroom but I'm used to my own so I don't want to use his. Besides, I am scared for him to wake up while I am naked in his shower. I still feel awkward about what happened.

After doing my morning routines, I peaked inside his room. Seeing him sleeping, I just decided to cook us a breakfast.

I had to use the elevator this time because his goddamn big big c*ck totally wrecked me last night that I can't walk without wincing in pain.

Bacons, sausages, pancakes. Simple breakfast for me and my love. I sat by the chair and started eating.

"You didn't wake me?" Mr.Jeon's hoarse voice startled me.

I look at his face down to those six pack of abs.

Is he seducing me? How can he be this hot so early in the morning?

“I..I do..don’t want..to..uhm..you were slepping…uh.. peacefully.” I answered as my eyes would go everywhere else except his eyes.

This is so awkward.

Mr.Jeon sat on the chair across me and stared at me intently. I look away of course.

“Are you being shy?” he asked. His voice was teasing. A smirk formed on his lips.

“No..I..” yeah keep stuttering Lisa! I cleared my throat and answered “No I’m not. Come, let’s eat” I say and focused on eating.

But Mr.Jeon’s teasing smile never left him. It was still plastered on his beautiful face.

He started eating and said “I didn’t know you were a good singer.”

Confused, I looked at him. “Me? what do you mean?” I don’t sing much.

He grinned before answering “Last night, you hit them high notes.”

He did not.

I can feel my cheeks and my ears grew hot with his words. “Stop!” I warned but he just laughed.

“Awww baby don’t frown. It was a beautiful melody. Your moans last night.” he said still laughing.

I can’t believe this. My very formal teacher at school which is everyone’s favorite is now playfully saying these things to me?

“Jungkook, finish your food now.” I warned.

“Yes ma’am. I will and maybe I can have the perfect desert too?” he said licking his bottom lip.

Oh god. Is he flirting with me?

“No. There will be no desert for breakfast.” I rolled my eyes.

“That’s sad, I thought we could have a morning you know?”

“No, we’re not.”

“Can’t we continue what we started last night?” his husky voice sent shivers down my spine. But I shook my head.

“I’m going to school.” I lied.

“There’s no school today Lisa. The senior students are set to take a day of rest after the activity last night.”

Oop.

“Really? How about you? Are you going to school?” I asked curiously. I don’t want him to go. I just wanted him to stay with me.

“Yes, I’ll go this morning. There’s a new P.E.teacher. Mr.Yang will introduce us later.”

“You mean there will be a replacement to Ms.Chungha?” I asked curiously.

“Yes.”

“Ahh.. I really feel bad for her. She used to be my body goals before. She’s so sexy.”! I said.

“I heard the new P.E.teacher is hot too. Even Jackson was excited hearing that his long time crush in college will be our new co-teacher.” he explained.

For some reason, I hated it when I hear him say that other girls are hot. Is he even aware that I, his girlfriend is the one he’s talking to?

And who is this teacher anyway? Should I be threathened?

I look at the innocent man who was enjoying his plate of food. He’s not even aware that he’s making me jealous right now.

I just kept silent as we continue eating.

“Lisa? Is anything wrong?” he finally noticed my silence.

“Nothing.” I said. But deep inside I am hurt. He just dared to call someone hot when he just fucked me last night!

I stood and winced in pain again as I felt my aching sex. Mr.Jeon saw my agony so he rushed to my side.

“Baby are you okay?” he asked as he support me to stand.

“I am. It’s just..it’s still sore.” I said. He stared at me guiltily and a moment later I felt like I’m being lifted.

“What are you doing?” I asked him when he carried me in his arms.

“I hurt you. I’m sorry.” he said.

The jealousy I felt awhile ago vanished just like that especially when he carried me to my room..I mean his room.

“You just relax here.” I’ll wash the dishes first and then I’ll go to school. Okay?” Mr.Jeon said as he plant a kiss on my forehead.

“I don’t want you to go to school and meet this HOT teacher!” I said rolling my eyes.

“Oh..my baby is getting jealous I see” he smirked in victory.

“No I’m not! And why are you happy if I’m jealous?” I asked him he seemed to be entertained at my reaction.

“Because you make me jealous all the time. I seldom see you get jealous.” he explained.

“That’s because you get jealous at everyone who talks to me when you shouldn’t be. I am yours. No one can take me away from you.” I replied.

Mr.Jeon’s lips tugged upwards hearing this. “Swear?”

“I swear.” I said with a serious voice.

“Thank you baby. I love you so much!” he said as he connects his lips to mine. “But I really need to go to school. I’ll be quick. I promise.”

I raised my brow and said, “No flirting with the hot teacher okay?”

“Of course.” he answered and he got up to prepare.

Jungkook’s POV

Everyone was already gathered inside the faculty when I got there.

“Why are you late?” Jisoo asked when I sat on my own chair, her table was just beside mine.

“I forgot to set my alarm.” I lied. The thruth is I got late because I kept kissing Lisa for almost 15 minutes.

Can’t help it. Kissing her is my favorite.

“Oh..by the way, the teacher is now at the principal’s office. Later she will be introduced to us.” Jisoo explained.

Few moments later, Mr.Yang came in with a young and cute and teacher following him.

“Everyone, I want you to meet Ms.Jung Eunbi , she will be handling the P.E.subject for the senior students.

“Good morning” we greeted all at once.

“Good morning” she shyly waved her hand.

Jackson almost had a heart attack just hearing her talk. I can’t help but smile as I remembered how I usually feel when Lisa is around. She makes me nervous but happy at the same time.

“Hey Jeon! Why are you smiling like that? Do you perhaps like the new teacher?” Jisoo noticed me smiling. She’s planning on steasing me I know.

I shook my head “No, of course.”

But she just smirked. “Are you sure?”

I glared at my annoying friend. Last night she was saying that Lisa looks good with Eunwoo and today she’s telling me this?

Luckily, nobody heard us. It would be awkward for sure. I’m not even attracted to her. She’s cute but Lisa is all that I could think of.

I smiled more when I remembered what happened last night.

Oh god. I never knew making love can be that perfect. She's just so beautiful especially when she climaxes. I could still feel how she gripped me so tight that—

"Mr.Jeon? Mr.Jeon?"

"Uhm..uhh yes Mr.Yang?" I asked the principal. I don't know how long he's been calling me.

"I asked you are you fine with it?" he said.

"Fine with what?" I asked, confused. I don't know what's he's talking about. Jisoo nudge me and whispered "He's asking you to take Eunbi around."

Excuse me?

Do I look like a babysitter now?

"I want you to take Eunbi around the campus to help her familiarize with school."

"Me?" I asked pointing to myself. Why me? Why not Jackson or Jisoo or Irene.

"Yes you. I hope you you don't mind Mr.Jeon" the principal said and he left the new teacher there.

I looked at her and she shy looked at me.

Ugh! This is annoying. I thought I could come home to Lisa early. But I had no choice so I just walked to her.

"Come with me. I'll show you around." I said and she nodded.

I saw how Jackson glared at me but he needs to chill out. I'm not taking this girl from her.

Eunbi and I started walking around, I explained where everything is located.

"And this is the library, that is the Student Council Office __"

"Jungkook-shi" she stopped on her tracks.

"Hmm? what is it?" I asked.

“You speak too fast and walk too fast. I can’t keep up with you. Are you going somewhere?” she asked.

“Oh..Really?” I thought I was walking too slow and explaining too slow. I didn’t know she was having a hard time.

This is all because my mind is full of thoughts with getting back to Lisa. “I’m sorry. I will take it slow from now.” I said and she smiled.

The next thing I know, her hands were already clutched on my arms, as she presses her mountains to it.

“Let’s continue Jungkook-shi” she said pulling me.

I can only imagine Lisa’s face right now. If she sees this new teacher clinging to me, I would be a dead meat for sure.

Lisa’s POV

The pain finally subsided, I can walk freely now.

Mr.Jeon is not yet home so I decided to clean his room for a while. I got to his dresser and tried to arrange his clothes neatly.

Then I opened the drawer to arrange some more. But when I opened it, my eyes were grabbed by something.

What are these?

I stared at the ring boxes inside the drawer. There are 6 of it.

My curiosity took over and I took one box, when I opened it, I was surprised to see a diamond ring inside.

Is this Mr.Jeon’s?

I opened some of the boxes and they were all the same diamond rings with different sizes of stones.

This could not be engagement ring?

I took the ring with the biggest size of diamond and examined it closely.

I felt like I was splashed with cold water when I read the engaved word.

As it says

Marry me my love, Ji-eun.

I gasped.

And clenched my fist over where my heart is beating.

Jealousy consumed my whole being when I realized how many times he has proposed to her.

At that point, I questioned my position in his life.

Does he really love me?

Is his love for me the same as his love for Ms.Ji-eun?

Because I feel like he just loved me because I am here and she's away.

If I didn't show up in his life, they're probably still together now.

I feel Bad. Jealous. Hurt. Insecure.

Negative thoughts filled my head that I forgot how many times he told me that he loves me.

I think he doesn't love me enough.

Yeah. He doesn't.

Author's Note

Short Update.

New character was added to spice things up.

Making Up

Jungkook's POV

It was already 3 in the afternoon when I got home.

Fuck! it's so tiring.

Eunbi, the new teacher kept asking me a lot of questions. And even if I answered them she will forget about it and ask me the same thing again.

I was so annoyed but I didn't want to be rude to her so I patiently guided her and explained everything that she needs to know.

All I wanted was to be with Lisa this day but sadly, work is a bitch.

"Lisa???" I called her the moment I got inside the door. Supposedly, she will be here giving me my slippers and taking off my coat as I kiss her.

But she's no where around.

Maybe she's in her room.

I walk to her room but she was there sleeping. Her back was on me.

I watch the outline of her body. Her deliciously tempting curves.

I'm not usually this pervert but when it comes to her, I lose all my morals.

So I walk to her, I had no intention in waking her up, I just wanted to lie there and hug her.

I took off my shirt and lay there.

But when I got closer, I realized she was sniffling and heaving. Her shoulders were shaking.

She's crying?

I got worried so I turn her body to face me.“Baby what’s wrong? You had a bad dream again?” I asked.

Lisa looked at me. Her tearful eyes just stared at me without saying a word.

I got worried more. What happened to her this time?

“Hey..Lisa..what happened?” I repeated.

“Do you love me?” she asked, surprising me.

“What kind of question is that? Of course yes. I love you Lisa.” I answered.

How could she ask such question when I’m literally crazy for her.

“Then do you love me more than you love Ji-eun?” she asked as she wipe her tears.

“Of course I love you more. I chose you remember.” I answered but she’s still not convinced. Her lips were still pressed into a single line.

She looked away and said, “If you didn’t meet me, you would still be together. She would have accepted your proposal of marriage and you would be happy together.”

Wait what?

“How did you know about the proposal Lisa?” I asked curiously. Few of my friends knows about it but I don’t remember telling her about it.

“I saw the rings.” she said with her disappointed voice. And it dawned on me.

Of course she will see it.

“Hey..baby come here.” I tried to pull her closer to me but she won’t move.

I sighed before explaining “Lisa, Ji-eun was my past. I admit I loved her that I wanted to marry her. But that was before. I realized that I am not happy with her. It’s only you who can make me happy like this. You complete me Lisa. And

I love you so much. So please don't be jealous over my past. It was long over." I said as I get closed to her.

I pulled her in my arms and kissed her cheek tenderly.

Lisa lightly calmed down but she's still pouting.

"I can't believe you proposed to her six times." she spoke bitterly. "And those were even diamond rings."

I laughed so hard remembering about how silly I was back then.

"Why are you laughing? Are you having fun of me getting jealous like this?" she said after freeing herself from my embrace.

"No it's not that. I just remember back then that I was really pathetic. The first time that I proposed, she refused because she said the diamond was too small. So I bought another one, something bigger. She refused again until I bought the ring with the biggest diamond on that store. I was a fool back then thinking that she was just disappointed with the sizes. Later on I found out that it was just her excuse to refuse my proposal."

Lisa kept quiet for a while before saying "You really love her." her voice was sad again.

So I took her arms to pull her to me.

"That was before. I didn't knew you back then. But if I had met you earlier, my life could have been happier."

But my words didn't seem to effect her as she kept quiet the whole time. Then she let go of my grip and stood.

"I need to do the laundry Mr.Jeon."

I was shocked at her cold reaction. She managed to leave me there with my mouth hunged open.

Did I say something wrong? I was just being honest with my past.

I don't know how jealous she is right now but I hope she realizes that I love her so much.

If I could buy Ji-eun 6 diamond rings, I can buy Lisa hundreds of it just for her to be my wife in the future.

But there will always be a right time for that. She's still in high school and I cannot just propose like that. Besides, I want to send her to college first.

I want her to earn a degree before marrying her. I know she will be happy that way.

It was already 6 in the evening but Lisa was still in the laundry room. Washing the sheets that we stained from last night.

At first I didn't want her to wash it. Cause it serves as my remembrance to getting her first. But the thought would make me sound like a creep so I just let her.

"Lisa? Are you not done yet?" I asked my baby girl.

No answer. The door was locked.

"Lisa baby..come on out now. I miss you." I just really want to cuddle with her but those goddamn rings ruined her mood.

"Lisa.." I say as I keep knocking at the door.

Finally it opened but she was still frowning. She was about to pass through when I held her by her arm.

"Hey..are you still mad? Please talk to me." I think I'm gonna go crazy if Lisa keeps ignoring me like this.

"Don't talk to me. I'm mad at you." she snapped.

"Baby please…"

"Please what?" she asked.

"Please forgive me if I ever said something to upset you. Whatever I said that make you jealous please forget it. I love you Lisa. Only you."

Lisa's eyes softened and she sighed but still did not talk.

"Let me make it up for you." I said.

"How?" she asked crossing her arms.

I kneeled infront of her and tugged her little shorts down, revealing her white underwear.

Lisa's expression was in pure shock but I wanted her to feel good tonight. At least to make up for having ner jealous earlier.

"Jungkook, what are you doing???" she asked as she try to pick her shorts but I stopped her right away.

I pressed my lips against hers. Her lips were as soft and lush as always. "You're fucking perfect, Lisa, you should know that."

I ran my tongue along her mouth, kissing her with full intensity as I pull her shirt up and pressed myself against her.

"Jungk..ahhh" shutting her eyes she moaned as I attack her neck.

She groaned as I dragged my tongue along her throat.

She smells so good even when sweating.

My hand slid down her back and grasped her gorgeous ass.

"Oh god..Jungkook what are you doing to me?" she breathed every word. I could feel her skin is getting hotter now she was breathing heavily.

I was hard too. I wanted to fuck her tonight but she just recovered from last night

I pressed my erection against her. "You're the only one who make me hard like this baby"

Her lips parted as she stared up at me. "Are you sure Mr.Jeon?" she asked. Finally, it seemed like she's now on her playful side.

She leaned forward and slid her tongue along my lips. "Hmn..yes..My baby is learning quick."

I unhooked her bra and slid the straps down her arms. "You're so fucking beautiful. Only you Lisa..only you can make me go crazy like this." I said as I groped my palm over her breast.

My c*ck is now throbbing behind my zipper but I ignored it and just lowered my mouth to her breast to sucked on it.

Lisa made the sweetest sound when my teeth grazed her nipple. “I love you too Jungkook”

With a groan, I lifted her arms over her head and press her to the wall as I graze my lips across her delicious skin, kissing her from the center of her chest up to her jaw.

Lisa moaned as I grunt in lust.

“I thought about you the whole time I was in school. It was miserable working there without seeing your beautiful face baby.” I admitted and she smiled.

I rubbed my hardness against her again while running my hands over her half-naked body.

“Yes.”

Then I slipped my fingers inside her panties. “It feels so good touching your sweet pussy.” I said as I start stroking her clit.

Lisa could only gasped. I feel her legs weaken every time I would whisper words in her ear. “I love the sound you make when I made you come last night. I want to hear it again.”

She whimpered a little and I kept rubbing.

“I want to come, Jungkook.” she desperately plead.

“Yeah..you will get there baby.” I answered.

“Yes.”

Her desperate voice set me off and I tore away her white panties. I pushed my middle finger into her pussy, lowering to my knees. I licked her clit.

“Oh my god Jungkook!”

She tasted sweet in my tongue. I started licking her. Biting her clit and blowing it softly.

Then I stood up, caressing her clit with my finger. I started pounding two fingers into her, rubbing her g-spot as I suck on her breast, biting her nipples.

Lisa throw her head back “I’m going to cum!” she said. She was already shaking.

“Come for me, baby girl.” I say as I continue fingering her.

She panted with a whisper. “Jungkook, I’m coming.”

I held her body in my arms to prevent her from slumping.

My vision darkened as her tight pussy clenched around my fingers. She convulsed, her eyes rolled back as she moaned my name so sexily.

I hugged her tightly as she cum so hard.

“Yeah..like that baby..keep cumming. I love you” I whispered into her ear as I held her weak body.

“That felt so good.” she smiled while panting when she recovered.

“I’m happy that I made you feel like that. I love you Lisa. Please believe me. There’s no other person in this world that I will love just like how I love you.” I say as I kiss her sweaty bangs.

“I’m sorry for being jealous” she apologized guiltily.

“It’s okay, we always learn from mistakes.” I said and I started carrying her naked body upstairs.

I have no plans of fucking her. I just want her to rest for a while as I cook her a dinner.

□

Author’s Note

Very late update. Sorry. □□□

New P.E. Teacher

Lisa's POV

"I will miss you." Jungkook pouted.

"Me too. But we'll still see each other around right?"

"Yeah but we're not allowed to hug or kiss there." he pouted again.

"Then just kiss me here."

Jungkook smiled. "My baby is getting straightforward lately." he whispers as he leans in to connect our lips.

We are on his car near the school, kissing for like forever. I don't know why but I feel like I would totally miss him even if we will be in the same building.

Mr.Jeon and I went to school together. I had no choice but to ride his car. But like the usual, he dropped me off few meters away from the school where students wouldn't usually pass.

We still had to keep our relationship a secret because I don't want to be expelled and Jungkook to be terminated just like what happened to Ms.Chungha and her student.

There are no classes yet because we are still celebrating the school festival. As of now, I'm just planning to spend time with my classmates in eating and chatting.

I miss them already. Especially Chaeyoung.

Mr.Jeon drove his car inside and I kept walking.

"Lisa!!!" I looked around when I heard Chae's voice.

"Over here!" I looked at my back and saw her running to me while holding her belly.

"Hey!" I said when she finally reached me.

She hugged me immediately.

“I missed you! You’ve gone missing during the ball!”

“I missed you too..I was..I mean I had a stomach ache that night that’s why I had to go home early.”

“Oh really? Are you fine now?” she asked.

“Yes.I’m fine.. By the way, what happened after?” I asked curiously. I really hoped I had stayed longer but if I was not caught by Mr.Jeon, I wouldn’t be able to experience sex that night.

“Hmm..nothing much, we just dance and after that the rest of our classmates went out to a club and continued partying there. We need to make the most of our remaining days in highschool because it’s nearly ending.” she explained. She was so happy that her happiness radiated in me.

“Yeah” I replied. I don’t exactly know what the future holds for me. But I really hope it’s with Mr.Jeon.

When we got inside the classroom, my classmates were already there gathered in the center talking seriously.

The would usually do this. Pulling their chairs to one corner to chat as if they have a serious meeting going on.

“Hey! What are you guys talking?” Chae asked as we walk to them. Jimin grabbed her a chair for her to sit beside him.

“Ugh..these boys are just annoyingly admiring the new teacher. They’ve been talking about her since we came.” Dahyun said while rolling her eyes.

New teacher? The one Mr.Jeon is talking about?

New teacher huh?

“Where is Mr.Jeon?” I asked my classmates.

“He’s at the faculty.” Namjoon answered.

I tried to calm myself down as I can feel that I will be jealous again for the whole day.

I just promised myself last night that I’ll avoid jealousy and negative thoughts because I know that he loves me.

Yes Lisa. He loves you. No need to be jealous.

I convinced myself over and over again.

I can feel my confidence back at it again so I casually asked my classmates “How’s the new P.E. teacher?”

“Oh Lisa..she’s so hot and cute. I can’t wait for classes to start again and enjoy P.E. with her!” Yoongi answered.

I just smiled and said “Really? That’s good then.”

“And dude the curves and the bust size is just perfect!” Jimin said who later earned a smack from Chae.

“Park Jimin!” Chae glared. And Jimin just zipped his mouth.

Bust size huh?

I look down at my small bust insecurely.

Does Mr.Jeon like girls with bigger size?

I bet he does. All men likes it and I just happened to have small ones.

I got frustrated listening at their talk so I just went to my seat to divert my attention on other things like how may writings my desk has, how dirty the ceiling is etc.

A few moments later, Mr.Jeon came inside.

My heart warmed at the sight of his face.

Just look at him.

That’s my man right there!

He is mine.

But I just can’t scream it out loud and shove to people’s faces.

He in turn glanced at me. It was very quick but I still caught that wink.

Oh my heart.

How can this man make my heart beat this fast?

He cleared his throat before saying “The love day will be moved on saturday. I hope you are aware of that.” he

explained and my classmates excitedly squeaked and answered that they are ready.

I looked around hoping that someone would explain it.

What is a love day? I swear my being absent for days is making me dumb.

Mr.Jeon must've noticed my confused expression so he opened his mouth to explain.

"For THOSE who don't know, Love day is—"

"Jungkook-shi" the door was opened cutting his explanation off.

Our eyes turned at the owner of the voice and she walked in.

A beautiful and sexy girl came in and grabbed my boyfriends arm.

Did she just grabbed his arm???

"What?" he asked nervously.

"Mr.Yang is asking for the both of us in his office." she said.

One of my brow raised. I can feel my blood boiling now.

How dare she touch my man like this!

Mr.Jeon's sweaty forehead was visible in my eyes even if I sit on the far end corner of the room. I can still read him.

He's scared of me.

"Why?" he asked again.

"I don't know" she pouted and my male classmates almost had a heart attack from seeing her aegyo. The teacher's hands were still on Mr.Jeon's arms.

Mr.Jeon cleared his throat and threw me an apologetic look. "Excuse me class, I will go first." he said before being pulled by the clingy teacher.

The moment they were gone,

"Bitch" Tzuyu huffed.

“I know right. She’s so clingy to Mr.Jeon like what the heck? Doesn’t she know that he has a girlfriend!?” Chae rolled her eyes.

I smiled hearing this. At least some of my classmates were irritated too.

“Yeah. Poor Ms.Ji-eun. If she only knew that another girl is flirting with her man” Jeongyeon said. And my smile faded.

Yeah right.

My classmates doesn’t know that we are together now and he and Ms.Ji-eun are over.

If I could only tell them.

I wish I could but it’s very risky.

I ended up watching the door. Hoping for him to come back again. But it’s nearly an hour now and he’s not yet here.

My classmates are still chatting about all sorts of things. But my mind is definitely somewhere else.

This brain I have will always shout his name in the end. He’s all that I could think of.

Supposedly, I should be jealous right now.

The teacher was pretty, young and sexy. Someone who guys would drool for but still I fight my negative thoughts.

I promise Mr.Jeon that I won’t be jealous.

I’ll try.

I know him. He will not do something to get me jealous.

I tried to shrug off my jealousy and just focused on recalling what happened last night.

After Mr.Jeon served me a dinner in bed, we talked about a lot of things.

He explained that he has kept the rings because other than the fact that they are expensive to throw, it also reminded him how stupid he was back then.

He said that he has realized that the feelings he has for Ji-eun was just infatuation. It was never close to how he feels for me.

I felt so happy last night hearing him say those words as I was wrapped by his arms while cuddling in bed.

He kissed me the whole night before going to bed. He said that kissing me makes him really happy. That it gives him the assurance that I am there for him.

Mr.Jeon or should I say Jungkook is the perfect example of an ideal boyfriend.

He is not just a great teacher but a perfect boyfriend too.

He cares for me, he treats me well, he makes me feel loved.

In the afternoon, I waited for him to get back. Until I reached a mesaage.

Baby,

I still have a lot of work to do in the office. You can just go ahead. I'll see you at home.

Jungkook

I read the message and sadness filled my heart.

I miss him and I thought we could go back home together.

I stood and walked to the faculty to at least see him in secret. But when I opened the door, he was there laughing with the new teacher.

He was sitting infront of his table, while the sexy teacher leans on the table facing him. Her clevage was showing in front of him and her short skirt reveals her beautiful legs.

She looked so tempting that I consciously looked at myself.

Yeah I look like a rug.

The ugliest type of rug.

What did he even see in me?

Crisp laughter filled the office which was surprisingly empty and just the two of them were there.

“Jungkook-shi you’re so funny” she says as she lightly tap his shoulder.

Before I could kill someone, I decided to just close the dooor without them noticing.

I’m jealous again.

I can’t help it.

As a girlfriend, I have the right to be jealous.

And it is normal if you love someone.

But even if I have this feeling inside me, I have no plans on telling him this.

I don’t want him to think that I am doubting him again.

I came back home and forced myself to sleep to avoid myself from thinking too much.

I was waken up by tender kisses from him.

“You’re here” I say as I sat up from the bed.

“Are you mad at me?” he asked. His voice was tensed as if expecting me to be mad or what.

Even if I am, I tried to smile for him “No, I’m not. Why would I be?” I said using my happy voice.

He looked relieved at first before saying “I thought you would be jealous of the new teacher.”

“I have nothing to worry right?” I asked to confirm.

He shook his head. “Of course no. We are just co-workers. I’m just helping her with the things she needs to know.” he explained with sincerity in his eyes.

I know. I know this already that he is sincerely faithful to me.

But I’m still hurt and I don’t even know why.

“Then good.” I managed to say I mean lie.

He smiled at my answer and leaned in to kiss my forehead.

“Let’s go out for dinner?”

“Now?” I asked.

“Yes baby now. Go ahead and prepare. I’ll wait for you downstairs okay?”

“Okay” he leans in to kiss me before leaving the room.

I excitedly wear something decent because this looks like a date. I just hope he won’t bring me to something fancy because these are just jeans and simple shirt which I am wearing.

I came down and saw him by the living room. His face frowning as he reads some text on his phone screen.

“Is anything wrong?” I asked.

His attention was grabbed by me and he smiled “Nothing, Are you ready?”

“Yes”

Mr.Jeon started driving. But I got disappointed when we arrived at a fancy restaurant where only men in suits and women in dresses comes in and out.

“Why here?” I asked him disappointedly.

“Because I want my baby to enjoy the best food. Besides, I’m sure your classmates and my coteachers will not be around. It takes a week of reservation before you can eat here” he explained.

“But I look like shit. I want to eat somewhere cheaper with normal people.” I said and he started laughing.

“Why are you so cute? You don’t have to worry about your clothes. You look perfect whatever it is you’re wearing.” he said and I rolled my eyes.

“Sure”

As if I have a choice.

We finally walked inside and the classy people around stared at me like I’m the biggest joke they have seen their entire life.

Who wouldn't be? When I'm wearing an Iron man shirt paired with jeans and toms. While my date looked like the rich male lead in a kdrama.

We were ushered to a VIP table where it was far from the usual tables. Beside the area was another VIP table with businessmen having a meeting.

"I'll order for you okay?" he said when the lady came to ask for our orders.

Few minutes later, the food was finally served. And both of us started enjoying our dinner.

"What was the text you were reading a while ago?" I asked him and he almost choke his food. "Are you okay?" I concernly asked as I offer him a glass of water.

"I'm okay" he said after drinking. "Uhmm..I just recieved a text from Mr.Yang that I'm supposed to attend a seminar tomorrow."

"Really? Only you?" I asked. I hope he's not with the new teacher.

But his silence answered my question.

I started picking on my food. My mood was ruined again.

"Are you mad?" he asked again. I can tell he's scared of how I reacted

"That's your job. I can't do anything about it." I said. I tried to sound casual but I ended ul sounding jealous.

"You don't have to worry about me. I am not—"

"Stop. Please stop explaining. I know you're just doing your job. You don't have to worry about me. I'm not jealous okay?" I said to cut him off.

"Thank you for understanding Lisa." he said smiling then he reached for my hand which rests on the table to squeeze.

I just smiled in return even when I'm honestly hurt.

The image of the sexy teacher sitting on his desk is still fresh on my head. She's trying to seduce him. I know.

I’m a woman and I can tell if a girl is interested with a man. But seriously, who wouldn’t be interested to a man like Mr.Jeon?

“Ms.Lisa?”

My thoughts were cut with a familliar deep voice.

Jungkook and I looked at the owner.

My eyes grew big and I quickly pulled my hand away from Mr.Jeon’s grip when I saw a smiling Mr.Kim coming to our table.

What the fuck is he doing here?

“I thought I was just hallucinating but it is really the beautiful Ms.Lisa”

He took my hand and before I could jerk it away he has already kissed it.

Imagine the look on my boyfriend’s face…

Author’s Note

What will happen now?

Perfect Rival

Jungkook's POV

"Ms.Lisa?" A voice called.

Lisa and I searched for the owner of the voice.

I suddenly got conscious of my looks, when a good looking stranger came walking to us.

Lisa's eyes grew big and pulled her hand away from mine which surprised me.

I was confused by her reaction.

My eyes scanned the man who was honestly intimidating. He has a body guard on his back following him.

Just by observing him, I can tell that he is a big time.

Lisa on the other hand looked pissed seeing the man.

"I thought I was just hallucinating but it is really the beautiful Ms.Lisa" he said.

Okay what?

I was about to talk but what he did after surprised me a lot.

He took my girlfriend's hand and pressed his lips on it.

Did he just kiss my girlfriend's hand?

My vision darkened as I clenched my fingers. I want to punch someone right now!

I was about to confront him when Lisa's voice cut me off.

"What are you doing here?" she asked harshly.

The man laughed. "Chill Lis, I just happened to see you as we are having a meeting." he chuckled as he pointed to the table next to ours.

"Well, I don't want to see you." she snapped.

“I see that you’re being feisty even after what I’ve done for you?” he asked as if hurt.

Wait! what is happening???

They act like fighting couples!

“Stop playing with me!” she replied with louder voice.

Hello?

Are they even aware that I am here?

The man was surprised at her attitude. “Lisa..I-”

“Wait wait wait.. What is happening? Who are you?” I asked the stranger while looking back and forth at him and Lisa.

I don’t like how their conversation sounds.

Who the hell is he in her life and why is she acting like this?

They finally noticed that I was there the whole time as the guy turn his attention on me.

“Oh..you have a company?” he asked while looking at me from head to toe with a judgemental look.

I waited for Lisa to introduce me as the BOYFRIEND but her reply just got me more frustrated.

“Don’t change the topic” she said.

I don’t know how to react. I’m aware that I am jealous and should be pushing this guy away but I’m also concerned at how pissed she is.

“No, I’m not. I was just trying to meet your companion. You’re Jeon Jungkook right?” he pronounced my name so slowly as if he knows me very well.

“How did you know me?” I asked. Both Lisa and I were surprised.

“Who wouldn’t know a rich but laid-back man like you.”

“Excuse me? Did you just call me laid-back?” I stood from my chair and faced him.

I didn’t know I could hate a guy this much at first meeting.

His body guard who was standing behind him rushed to our table to defend him.

But the stranger was quick to raise his hand as if saying that he's fine.

"Yes. Laid back. I know you're the heir of a business chain without even breaking a sweat. What a lucky boy." he laughed lightly.

How did he know about me?

"Do I know you?" I asked. Is he working for our company?

"No. You don't. And you don't need to." he replied then glanced at Lisa. "I'm leaving now Ms.Lisa." he said and he turned his back on us.

I was left their standing, watching him leave.

But he looked back at Lisa, "I hope you're not forgetting about our deal. Good night Ms.Lisa."

Then just like that, he and his body guard left.

What the fuck did just happened?

My eyes moved to Lisa waiting for her apology and explanation but she just continued eating.

"You need to explain this." I say through gritted teeth as I sit back.

"Not now Mr.Jeon." her cold reply irritated me more.

But what Lisa says, Lisa gets so I just kept my mouth shut.

Both of us ate in silence and drove back home in silence.

My pulse was beating above normal because I feel threathened. Now my mind is full of questions about the man.

But I didn't dare ask Lisa because I'm scared of her. It's as if she's a bomb which is about to explode if I trigger her.

When we reached home, I was surprised that she walked to her room.

She's sleeping there?

“Where are you going?” I grabbed her arm before she could get inside.

“My room” she answered briefly.

“No, we are sleeping together!” I said as I pull her to my room.

“Mr.Jeon I’m tired.” she said in a weak voice.

“What’s wrong with you? Why are you acting like this?”

“Nothing’s wrong.” she said and she walked to her room but I followed her.

“Mr.Jeon, go out first, I need to change.”

“Go and change, I will just wait for you here. I want to talk to you.”

“Talk about what?”

“This. Us.” I said pointing at us.

“What is there to talk about. There is no problem.”

“There is a problem! First I know you. You would call me Mr.Jeon when you’re pissed. Second you’re cold at me and won’t sleep with me. I don’t even know what I did to you for you to act this way. Third, that man. Who is he?” I asked calmly.

I feel jealous right now but she won’t even explain herself to me?

Is he trying to make a move on her?

Is the man her ex?

And worse is, that man was good looking and rich.

That man looks like he’s hard to beat if he would be a rival.

“He’s Mr.Kim. He’s nothing to worry about. I just met him once because he owns the land where the orphanage is built. But there’s nothing going on between us.” she explained as she remove her shirt.

“But why are you so angry with him? And what’s the deal he’s been talking about?”

“Nothing. He was just asking for the rent.”

I see.

“He’s not making a move on you?” I asked as I walk to her.

She’s now removing her pants.

“No he’s not. He’s just a businessman Mr.Jeon.”

Despite her saying this, I can’t help but be nervous.

I don’t like it when men gets close to her.

“Good then remember that you already have a boyfriend Lisa. You are not allowed to have other people kiss you like that. Do you have any idea how jealous I am right now for seeing a man kiss you in front of my very own eyes?”

After I said those words, Lisa turned her head at me. She was just wearing her underwear. Normally, she will be shy at me if I see her with minimal piece of clothing. But she looks too pissed to worry about it.

“It’s funny how you act jealous like this when you’re also flirting with another woman today.” Lisa’s meeting brows silenced me for a moment.

Me? Flirting?

I didn’t flirt anyone?

“What are you talking about?” I asked.

“Of course you don’t know.” she said as she grab a pajama on her dresser and started wearing it.

Her body was so distracting that I just want to grab her and make love to her right now but she’s not in the mood.

“Lisa tell me, Is this about the new teacher?”

“Finally you realized.” she said, clapping her hands.

“Lisa, how many times do I have to tell you that she’s just __”

“She’s just a coworker who needs my help bullshit!”

I was shocked hearing Lisa curse like this. I thought she said she understands.

“I thought you said you’re not jealous of her?”

“I tried to!” she yelled then her eyes watered.

She started crying.

I was shocked.

My chest hurt seeing her cry. I pulled her body to me. “Lisa..”

“I tried to stop myself from getting jealous. But it was hard. She’s touching you. She’s seducing you!”

“No she’s not Lisa.”

“Can’t you at least open your eyes! She’s showing her skin for you, she’s clinging to you. Just one day Mr.Jeon and she’s almost under your pants!”

“Lisa what are you saying?”

“I told you I don’t like you flirting with other girls. You may not be flirting with her but she is trying to flirt with you. And you’re just letting her!”

“Baby I’m sorry if you feel that way but I feel nothing for her. Believe me.”

“Oh yeah? It doesn’t sound like it when you two were having a good time bonding and laughing at the faculty a while ago.” Lisa rolled her eyes.

“You were there?” I asked. I got nervous all of a sudden. It’s true we were laughing a while ago but it was because we were talking about how Jackson was crazy for her.

“I was there. I saw everything. Your eyes must’ve been blessed seeing that curvy body infront of you.”

“What are you saying? Where are all these coming from?”

I didn’t know she’s been keeping these negative thoughts for a while now.

“What I’m saying is I am boring. My body is boring. And now that you have taken me there’s no more thrill for you. That’s why you’re preferring someone who’s more tempting.”

“Oh my god Lisa, are you hearing yourself? How can you think so low of yourself when you’re as perfect as this?”

Does she have any idea how good her body is. How tempting it is. How I want to kiss every part of it. How I want to feel her every time.

There is no other person in this world who excites me just like how she does.

Lisa just turned away but I was quick to hug her back. Nuzzling my face in her neck, I whispered. “Baby please… please believe me. I have told you a thousand times already that you’re the only one. Please listen to me.”

She sighed.

Turned around and looked me in the eye. “If you want me to believe you, you should try harder to convince me.”

“How?” I asked. I’ll do anything for her just for us to be okay.

“It’s up to you. Tell her to stop being clingy. Tell her you have a girlfriend. Tell her anything just to make her go away.”

“But she’s my co worker and I cannot tell her that you’re my girlfriend because you are my student.”

“Please stop making excuses, you can get rid of her in so many ways. I’m sure you’re smart enough to do that.”

“Okay..I will..I promise. Just please don’t stay mad at me for long like this. It’s making me crazy.”

“You should’ve thought about that before letting her touch you here and there. I don’t like sharing Mr.Jeon. I won’t say this again, but If I see her getting around you again, don’t expect me to talk to you ever!” Lisa freed herself from me and walked out of the room.

I was left there unmoving.

Did she just say that she will break up with me?

Oh god.

Never in my life I have been scared like this.

Anything.

Anything I can do for you.

Just don’t leave me.

I better talk to Eunbi tomorrow or I’ll lose my cute but always jealous girlfriend.

Lisa spent the night in her room. She locked it so I just stayed in mine.

I know she’s still pissed. But I’ll make sure to make up for her tomorrow.

I really thought we were fine. Until that Mr.Kim ruined our night.

Mr.Kim…

Who are you?

What do you want from her?

My curiosity led me to search about him in the internet.

And I was surprised to read some information about him.

Kim Taehyung, a young CEO.

His wife died few months ago from giving birth.

He has a 3-month old son.

His net worth is even bigger than mine.

Meaning he is definitely richer than me.

I searched more about his personal life but I got nothing more.

For some reason, I feel threathened when I met him. I feel like he will get in between me and Lisa. If not now, in the future maybe.

But I won’t allow him.

Lisa is mine.

She’s mine alone.

□

Author's Note

How are my readers? I hope you're not bored yet.

Do you have any theories about Mr.Kim now?

Class Joker

Sorry guys but I really need to publish this without pictures.

I tried my best the whole day but my internet really sucks and won't allow me to upload pics.

Btw, Please leave me some comments to fuel my writing. Thanks!

Love you guys!

Lisa's POV

"I missed you" Mr.Jeon hugged me from my back when I was cooking breakfast. "Baby, are you still mad at me?" he asked.

I toook a deep breath before answering "I still am."

"When will you forgive me?" he asked with a sad voice as he place soft kisses on my shoulder.

"When you get rid of your so called hot co-teacher then I'll forgive you." I replied.

"Hmmm..kay..I will talk to her today at the seminar." he said as he rub my arm.

Oh right. They will be together today in a boring seminar. What a good way to start your day. The more that I am pissed.

"I'm done cooking, you can eat now to prepare for your seminar. By the way, I will skip school for today."

"Why?" he asked.

"Because I don't want to see that Hot teacher that everyone is drooling for."

"Here we go again. Lisa please stop being insecure. She's got even nothing on you."

"You're only saying that because you're scared of me."

“No, I’m saying this because it’s true. You even got Bambam,Eunwoo and that annoying CEO liking you.” he said as he roll his eyes.

“What? Mr.Kim doesn’t like me. We hate each other.”

“I don’t think so. I’m a man and I can tell that he likes you.”

“Stop twisting the story. We are talking about you and that teacher not me and Mr.Kim”

“I’m just telling you what I observed. He will try to take you away from me Lisa. I can feel it.”

“Your speaking as if we are on a TV drama. No one is taking me away from you. He is a greedy businessman with no heart and I don’t like him. I swear.”

Mr.Jeon smiled. “Really???”

“Really. And I’m so tired of this constant fight where you are jealous, I am jealous. We are jealous. I just want to be with you. And cherish our moments together.”

“I know..me too.. Let’s make it happen Lisa.”

“Yeah..”

“So that means we’re okay now? You’re not mad at me anymore?” he asked again

“Depends on what you do today. I already told you to shoo that teacher away.”

“I will. Don’t worry.” he said as he turn me to face him. His eyes travelled to my lips. “I miss kissing those lips. Can I get a kiss baby?”

I lighlty nodded.

Well.. I miss his kisses too so..

He smiled before whispering “I love you” then leans in to capture my lips.

The moment those soft thin lips landed on mine, all the negative emotions I have vanished just like that.

His loving kiss consumed my worries away and honestly I never felt this good since the morning started.

I realized that I believe Jungkook's actions more than his words. He can tell me that he loves me a hundred times but I will still end up doubting him. But just one kiss makes me believe in everything.

He loves me. That's how kisses tells me.

Jungkook was the first to broke the kiss "Holy shit!!!" his eyes widened on the pan infornt of jus and that's when I saw that the omelette that I am cooking was burnt.

In the end, our laughters fills the kitchen.

We may fight like last night but we can make up as easy as this in the morning.

As we were eating, "Lisa, since you're not coming to school right? Can you do the groceries?"

"Sure. I will do it after I bath Jungkook"

He smiled. "Finally I'm back to being Jungkook."

"Of course! I can even call you baby if you want." I grinned.

"Yes please." his eyes showed excitement this time.

"But you're older than me so I can't call you that" I said and he pouted. He's so cute when he does that. He looks like a little boy.

"There are no age limits on using that you know" Jungkook explained.

"I know. I'm just messing with you."

"So you will call me baby then?" the smirking bunny asked.

"Yup, anytime of the day….baby" I said as I eat the burnt egg.

Mr.Jeon smiled but got silent after. As if he's thinking of something.

"What is it?" I asked nervously.

"Hmm..I want you to call me baby but I have also this one that I really wish you can call me." a beautiful smirk formed on his lips.

And I know that look. He's thinking of something perverted.

"What?" I asked to confirm what I am thinking.

He bit his lower lip before answering, "In bed…"

I want you to call me daddy."

I flushed red after hearing that. Did he just say daddy?

Wild thoughts came running on my head..

I wasn't able to answer. I didn't know that there is this side of of him.

My very strict teacher in school just happened to have this kind of kink? Who would've thought?

If my classmates only knew.

"So?" he pressed as he raise his brow.

"So… " I don't know what to say. "When should I call you that?" I asked shyly.

"When we fuck." he answered casually as if the act was normal for us.

I don't know but I feel shy and also excited. So that means we will do it again in the future?

I mean it was really good.

I loved it.

"Just tell me if you're not comfortable of the idea. It's okay baby." he said and I just nodded.

"I'll think about it."

"Good."

Mr.Jeon left the house to attend his Seminar and I was left at home.

I just decided to walk to the supermarket even if Mr.Jeon said that I should grab a taxi. I really don't want to spend so much from his money.

I was already on the isle of the sweets when I noticed someone very familliar.

“What’s he doing here?”

This is the first time that I saw him this serious looking.

I ran to Jin’s direction who is now seriously reading the back of a cocoa powder.

“Jin!” My voice startled him that he dropped what he’s reading.

“Holy Miling cows! You surprised me Lisa!” he said while holding his chest.

I can’t help but to laugh at his reaction. He start picking up what he dropped.

“What are you doing here?” I asked.

“I’m preparing for the love day. It’s tomorrow right?”

Oh right. I forgot to ask Jungkook about it.

“What is a love day?” I asked.

“Geez Lisa how come you don’t know? We are always talking about it when we were in 1st and 2nd year remember?”

“I don’t remember? Mind to explain?”

Jin placed the cocoa poweder down to his cart and looked at me.

“Love day is the day for senior students to give presents or any sweet surprises for their crushes, boyfriend, girlfriends. It’s the way of the school to let the students express how they feel.” he explained.

“Oh yeah..I remember that activity.” I said as I continue nodding. My attention was grabbed by his cart which has full loads of ingredients for baking.

“Then are you baking something for your crush?” I asked curiously. He seemed to be very serious in this love day that he also skipped school just like me.

His face lit up, “Yes, I am making something especial for Ms.Jisoo.”

Okay what?

I know he has been having this crush for our values teacher but I didn't know he is this serious.

As I stare at him. He's looks excited with this.

"But I thought students are not allowed to give teachers presents on that activity?"

All I know is that, we senior students should give presents to other students but not the teachers.

"I'll give it secretly. Nobody should know." he explained.

I thought for a while. Can I give Jungkook a present too? I mean..if Jin can do it. Maybe I also can.

"Uhm..what are you giving her?" I asked.

"I'm planning to make homemade chocolates for her."

"Really? That's so cute! I bet Ms.Jisoo will like it."

"Yeah..I really hope she do loves chocolates but I guess all girls do. How about you, are you planning on giving someone a present?"

"Uhm..yes." I want to share my feelings too but I can't tell him about Mr.Jeon. "I think I'll try making chocolates too."

"That's good. Who are you giving it then?"

"Uhm..it's a secret." I answered and he threw me a suspicious look.

"Okaaaayyyy… But do you know how to make it?"

Make chocolates? I don't know. I know how to cook but chocolate making is something I don't know.

I sadly shook my head in reply. Jin looked at me and said "Why don't you join me at home in making so that we can share thoughts about the designs?"

My face lit up.

"Are you sure???" I almost jumped from my place in excitement.

"Yes. I want to help you on this." his handsome face was smiling too.

“Thank you so much Jin!” I’m so happy and excited.

I can’t wait to give Jungkook my own made chocolates.

“But we need to buy more ingredients. And some molds for the shapes you wish to have. We will also need to buy cute boxes for it. Are you fine with that Lisa?” he asked.

“Of course! Let’s go and get them all.” I grabbed Jin’s arm while his other hand pulls the cart.

I ended up pushing the cart for him as he was the one looking for the ingredients we will need.

At first I thought of baking at home. But Jungkook could come home any moment and might caught me making the surprise present so this idea of making it at Jin’s home was perfect.

Soon, we reached their house.

“What the fuck?” my eyes almost dropped when we arrived at a big and white mansion.

“Is this really your house?” I asked.

“Yes.” he said as he park his car. “I kept telling you guys that I’m rich but you just keep thinkong that I’m joking.” He laughed.

I didn’t know he was this rich. This is even bigger than Chae and Bam’s house.

“Let’s go in so that we can start immediately.” he said. Both of us carried the grocery bags in.

“Oh my God Jin! Is she your girlfriend???” A beautiful woman who I assumed as Jin’s mother welcomed us.

“Eww..he’s a boy not a girl mom! We’re here to make chocolates for the love day tomorrow.” Jin replied.

“Good morning ma’am, My name is Lisa.” I bowed and the woman smiled warmly.

“What a lovely girl. Just call me aunty. This is the first time Jin has brought a girl in our house. I hope next time he brings his girlfriend.” her mom gave him a teasing smile.

“Yeah.. Soon mom.” he said.

Jin and I proceed to their kitchen which is bigger than their living room.

I have learned that both his parents are chefs and they own restaurants around Seoul so he can cook well just like them.

I can’t believe that we have been friends for three years but I’m only learning this information about him now.

“So we will start!” Jin clasped his hands before arranging the ingredients in a neat manner. And I attentively listened to his instructions.

“Why do you like Ms.Jisoo so much?” I asked him. I observed how meticulous he is doing his chocolates like there’s should be no room for mistakes.

“I like her since I came to that school.” Jin smiled as he recalled his past. “You see Lisa, I have always been know to throw the lamest joke in school. Most of the time, people will laugh not because it was funny but because it was lame. And I know this. People even my family won’t take my words seriously. They think that there is no truth to what I’m saying.” he paused as he sifts the cocoa powder and the milk powder. “Nobody knows that deep inside of me. I am hurting. It is always hard to be sorrounded by people who thinks that your whole existence is a joke.”

Jin’s words hit me so hard. Because the sad truth is that I am one of those people who doesn’t take him seriously.

“Until one day, Jisoo came like an angel while I was sweeping our classroom. It happened that I joked and she started laughing so hard. That was the first time that I heard such a beautiful sound of laughter. She told me that she likes my personality. Since then, we would always talk about a lot of stuffs, school related stuffs and I was very happy. She makes me happy.”

“Aww… That’s a sweet story Jin. She’s really kind. I hope she knows about your feelings though?”

“Sadly I was much of a coward to tell her. She’s way much older than me and worst is that she’s my teacher. But last

night, I came to a decision to tell her how I really feel."

"Oh God! Really?"

"Yes, I don't care if she doesn't feel the same. It's most probably not the same because I am just her student but I will still tell her anyways. Tomorrow is my only opportunity." he explained with hopeful eyes.

"Wow! That's so brave of you! I hope you recieve a good answer from her." I said.

"Yeah me too. Wish me luck Lisa."

After two hours of making, Jin and I finally made a masterpiece of handmade chocolates.

We both wrapped it in a gift box with different designs.

It's funny that both of us are in love with our teachers and we're doing this for them.

To be honest, his chocolates are way better than mine but still I am happy that I made this.

I hope Jungkook likes it. This is a present from my heart.

"Jin? Can you keep my chocolates for tonight?" I asked.

"Huh? why?"

How can I tell him that I can't bring it home because Jungkook might see it?

"Because…uhm..we have no ref at home." I lied.

His eyes widened, "Seriously? who doesn't own a ref in this times?"

"Please?" I begged while shaking his arms.

"Okay..okay. so I'll just bring this tomorrow at school?"

"Yup. I want to hear from you how Ms.Jisoo will react to your chocolates and feelings."

"Me too. I want to hear from you how he would react. You know..the person that you are giving to."

I bit my lip just imagining how Jungkook will react to this.

I know he appreciates everything that I do but I'm still nervous because I'm not too sure if he likes sweets. And my designs are too simple for him.

"Thank you so much Jin for this." I say.

"It's nothing. Anything for a friend. And I enjoyed talking with you. I really hope they accept our chocolates tomorrow."

"Yup. I do hope so." I smiled and stared at the box of chocolates that I specially made for my love.

Please accept this Jungkook. I made this especially for you. My mind kept practicing the whole sentence for tomorrow.

"Hey Lisa, What does the chocolate do when he meets the Milk?" Jin asked. Trying to make a joke.

Oh no..this is not going to end well.

"What?" I asked.

"Chocolate Milk Shake" he replied and he started laughing so hard that his eyes teared up.

I had to force a laugh because I didn't understand. He got quiet and looked at me. "I know it was not funny for you but I'm sure Ms.Jisoo will laugh at this tomorrow.

"I know." I said. Both of them shares the same humor.

The whole morning Jin and I talked about a lot of things. Mostly his feelings for our teacher. And I can't help but admire him more.

I just really wish that Ms.Jisoo is aware of Jin's feelings.

Jungkook's POV

"Jungkook-ssi over here!" I heard Eunbi's voice inside the school's conference hall.

I look over her and realized that she has reserved a seat for me which was just beside hers. She was seated at a round table at the far end of the hall.

I looked around to look for any vacant seats because I don't want to sit with her. Lisa will kill me if I do.

But the room was full now of almost 30 teachers from different schools and the only vacant one was the one beside her.

I scratched my head and decided to walk to her. I should've came earlier. This is my fault for being late.

But as I said, I will always be late everytime I kiss Lisa. Kissing her makes me forget about the time.

"Good morning Jungkook-ssi!" she greeted leaning lightly on me but I quickly backed away.

She pouted when she noticed me avoiding her "Is there anything wrong Jungkook-ssi?"

"Nothing. I just think we should focus on the discussant about this." I said. She huffed and turned her attention to the speaker in front.

I can't help but notice what she's wearing. Her clothes were too fit and too small. I think it's not appropriate for the event.

(A/n: Imagine her wearing this)

"Are you not cold?" I asked, concerned. The conference hall's AC feels to cold to wear such clothes as hers.

My question got her smiling then she leans in to whisper on my ear "I feel cold but having you around makes me feel hot"

I backed away after hearing those words but she just laughed "I'm just joking Jungkook-ssi!"

I rubbed my thigh in anxiousness as I wait for the seminar to finish. I want to talk to her about staying away from me but the seminar will end until the evening.

The entire duration of staying here, I observed how she would lean at me, whispers something on me and would even touch my thigh under the table.

I was really surprised with what she's doing right now. But she does it innocently like there's no malice in it.

Maybe she's just like the type of person who is touchy with friends?

Moments later she dropped her pen under the table and she stood to search for it. But I was flustered the moment she bend infront of me. I saw her panties and it was even see through.

Oh my god.

I had to look away quickly. When she turned back at me she was frowning. “Jungkook-ssi, I can’t find my pen. Can you look for it. I think it’s under the table?” she said.

I want to refuse on searching but I don’t want her bending infront of my face so I just decided to look for it.

The table was covered with white cloth that you cannot see underneath which is why she finds it hard to look for it.

I crouched down and started searching but I can’t find it.

“Jungkook-ssi how about here?” she pointed under her chair. So I looked for it under the table.

But I realized she was just playing when her knees opened in front of me showing me her see-through panties.

I got out of the table immediately catching her laughing.

“What are you doing?” I asked in irritation.

“What?” she asked back innocently.

“Why would you show me you underwear?”

“I didn’t. Did you peek? I never knew you were a pervert Jingkook-ssi?” she smiled teasingly.

“What the? No I’m not.! I was searching for—”

“Did you like what you saw? I can show you more.” she started rubbing my thigh this time.

This is it!

“Eunbi! Please stop!”

“What? I’m doing nothing?” she defended.

“You are fliritng. Stop this. I have a girlffriend.”

She frowned when I said that but she recovered quickly.

“Oh..so you have a girlfriend?”

“Yes and I love her so much so please stop this.”

Eunbi sighed before looking back at me. “Tell me Jungkook ssi…does your girlfriend know how to suck?”

“What?” I was surprised with her question. What does she mean?

She leaned closer to my ear to whisper “Because I can suck you if your girlfriend can’t.”

“What are you saying?”

“She licked her lips and replied “Just imagine my mouth wrapped around your cock. Licking it from down to the top. Sucking it like there’s no tomorrow. You like that yeah?” her voice sent electrifying signals down on me.

After all, I’m still a man and can easily be effected by this.

My silence gave her more reasons to tempt me, the next thing I knew, she was already rubbing me under the table.

“Eunbi!!! I swear you need to stop!” I said through gritted teeth. She’s gone far now. She took her hand away. Finally.

“I will stop for now but I’m sure you will end up in my bed anyways.” she spoke so surely.

“Just how slutty can you get? I’m gonna report this to Mr.Yang!” I threathened. But she just laughed.

“Why are you laughing?”

“Nothing. Just go ahead and report me to my own uncle.” she said crossing her arms.

“Mr.Yang is your uncle?” I asked. Why did I found about it just now?

“Yes he is. So goodluck with that.”

After she said those words, I left the conference hall as fast as I could.

No wonder why I was sent to that seminar. When the seminar is for P.E. teachers.

Lisa was right. She’s really trying to get under my skin but now that I know this. The more reasons I have to avoid her.

That day I talk to Mr.Yang and and told him that I don't want to be in the same place with Eunbi. When he asked why, I explained that I have a girlfriend and I need to avoid other girls.

And I would rather resign from the job that I love than have her mad at me.

Author's Note

I am very late in updating this day because my internet sucks.

Sorry guys.

Love Day

Jungkook's POV

"Good evening baby!" Lisa surprised me with a hug the moment I opened the door.

I hugged her body tightly in return. And nuzzled my nose to her hair which smells so good. "I never knew coming home could be this perfect" I said.

"I missed you!" Lisa kissed my cheek.

"I missed you too baby. You seem to be in a good mood today?" I asked. She's glowing and I don't know why.

"Nothing. I'm just happy to see you. By the way, will you come to school tomorrow?"

"Of course. Tomorrow is Love Day and we're supposed to be at school." I explained.

"Okay then.." she replied then mumbled something.

"What was that?" I asked. i didn't hear what she said.

"Hmmm.. Nothing. Are you hungry? Let's eat?" she said and pulled me to the table where she already has prepared food.

"Oh wow..Now, I really feel lucky to be your boyfriend, I can get to eat all of these food." I said

My baby smiled proudly. "Yes, you're lucky to have me so if I were you, you should just look at me."

"Now this is the confidence that I want from my baby girl." I leaned and kiss the tip of her nose before sitting.

"Hey, I haven't forgotten about that bitch yet. Did she try anything stupid around you?" She asked, eyeing me suspiciously.

My heart almost escaped from my ribs out of fear of Lisa mentioning Eunbi. I can't let Lisa know or I'll end up sleeping out of our room.

"Nothing. Everything is fine Lis, I'll try to avoid her from now on." I explained leaving out some of the details.

"You sure?" I swear Lisa raising her brow is scary as hell.

"Yup" I replied. My fingers are shaking slightly.

It's funny how an 18year-old student like her can scare the shit out of me.

"Good then. By the way…uhm..Jungkook.." she stuttered and played with her hair.

"Why?" I asked she seems like she wanted to ask something but just shy.

And Imagine her duality. One moment she is my scary Lisa and now she's being shy like this.

"I just want to ask….if you like sweets?" she asked.

Sweets?

"Hmmm..not my favorite but it's not that bad." my answer left her confused and distracted. "Why?"

"Nothing. Let's continue eating."

Later that night, Lisa got on the shower and I waited for her in bed.

I was getting impatient of waiting when she finally emerged from the bathroom.

My body is in heat just by looking at her. She's not even wearing revealing clothes. Just a pair of pajamas but her effect on me is on another level.

"Come here.." I called as she was drying her hair with a towel.

Lisa nervously looked at me and the bed as if thinking of what I'm thinking.

"Jungkook…Are we?" Lisa's eyes moved to my buldge.

“Just come here please. I want to smell you.” I said.

She finally came to me and lie beside me.

I pulled her more to me while holding her waist.
“Hmn smells good.” I whispered. Lisa got shy beside me and covered her face.

“Why are you covering your face?” I asked.

“I’m shy when you look at me like that.”

“Like what?”

“Like you would eat me or what.” she admitted. Can’t help but to smile at this girl who remained innocent even if we already had sex.

“Well I would like to eat you if you’ll allow me.” I said and tried to tug down her pajamas but her hands were quick to stop me.

“Don’t!!!” she tensed.

“Why?” I thought we can have…

“Don’t please..” she plead.

“What’s the matter baby? Can’t we have sex?” I asked. I feel so horny right now but Lisa won’t let me.

“I’m peppa pig.” she answered by looking away.

“You’re what?” What does she mean she’s peppa pig?

“I mean. I don’t want to disappoint you.” she explained vaguely.

“Huh? Why would I be disappointed?” Lisa’s being weird.

Lisa searched for words “Uhm..I am wearing a funny underwear and It will just turn you off.” she explained.

My curiosity got the best of me. “What do you mean funny? Let me see?” I hovered on top of her to pull her pajamas down.

“No please no…I will buy new underwear first. I swear. But I’m still saving money. I have planned on going back to my part time jobs to—”

“What the fuck are you saying??? You are not working again Lisa. If you wanted new underwears why didn’t you tell me sooner. I will buy you lots of them.”

“No..no..I don’t want you to. I will just buy my own.”

“Lisa please..I don’t want you to work again. I can earn enough for us. I just want you to stay here and be safe for me. Don’t work again..” my voice was almost begging.

I won’t let her do those night jobs again where her safety is at risk. Last time that she worked, my car crashed on her and her bike while she was being robbed by a snatcher. The thought of her working again is giving me a headache.

“But…”

“No buts Lisa, I am giving you allowance so you should spend it with whatever you need. You can buy all the underwear you want with that money. You can buy clothes, make up..wait not make up because you will attract more fuckboys..” I paused to roll my eyes then continued “What I mean is don’t hesitate to spend my money. My money is yours too.”

Lisa just sighed. “But still…I don’t want to show you my underwear tonight” she said.

What’s wrong with her underwear that she’s too embarrassed to show me? I’m really curious.

The way she grips her pajamas just for me to not see looks too cute. Whatever she does is cute.

“Okay fine..we’re not having sex tonight.” I annouced defeatedly and she smiled. “But I want to do it tomorrow. Is it okay baby? please?” I asked.

I really want to feel being inside of her again.

“Hmm..okay, at least I can prepare my underwear.” she said and it made me laugh so hard.

“Come here you cute little girl!” I said as I pull her more to me. She scooted closer and I kissed her cheek.

“Why are you so adorable?” I asked as I squeeze her inside my arms.

“Ahhh..Jungkook you’re squeezing me too tight!”

That night, Lisa fell asleep on my chest. I stare at her sleeping face and recalled the first time that I stared at her inside the classroom which ended with my broken nose.

Who would’ve known that we will end up in each other’s arms?

I’m so damn lucky.

The Next Day

Love Day

I headed to the faculty to help monitor the activity. Surprisingly, Ms. Jung Eunbi was not around.

And I was relieved for the day because of her absence. At least, Lisa will not be irritated this day amd I don’t have to deal with a slut.

My co-teachers and I were very much happy seeing the students give sweet gifts for the other students.

But I can’t help but feel jealous that the male students were getting gifts of love from the girls. Now I wondered if Lisa thought about giving me something.

I waited and hoped that maybe Lisa’s thoughtful enough to be reminded of me, her boyfriend.

Although I know that students are not allowed to give presents to the teachers but hoping is not a crime right?

Lisa is sweet. She’s probably got something for me.

Later that day, Jisoo came in the faculty blushing while holding a cute box in her arms.

(A/n: Imagine this is the chocolate Jin gave)

“Hey, where did you get that?” I asked pointing at the box.

“Shhh..lower your voice. They must not know that they I recieved this.” she replied with a low voice.

I looked around and luckily no other teachers noticed it.

“Who gave it to you? A student?” I asked.

“Yes, he is really sweet.” Jisoo smiled sweetly while looking at the beautiful red box.

“What’s inside?” I asked curiously.

“Chocolates. I want to give you some but this is a special gift so I won’t share this time.” she said and she placed the box inside her bag.

That moment, I felt jealous over Jisoo. She recieved something from a student while I have none.

Maybe Lisa just forgot. The last time I checked, she seemed to not know what Love day is. Maybe..just maybe..

I stood and walked outside of the faculty to watch the students giving each other gifts. Suddenly, I heard someone called me from my back.

“Mr.Jeon.”

I smiled as I turn thinking that it is finally my Lisa but I got disappointed when two students from a different section came to me.

“Uhh..yes?” I asked. They want to tell me something but they looked too shy.

“Uhm..Mr.Jeon, I would like to give you this present.” One of the girls said and handed me a beautiful heart box which I assumed has chocolates.

“Oh..uh..thank you for this.” I said.

The student blushed that her cheeks were almost red. They both bowed at me and then left afterwards.

I observed the chocolate box and smiled. This is cute. I appreciate the efforts of those kids.

Yeah kids. I consider every student in this school as kids. Except for Lisa because she’s my girl. And she’s hot.

The whole day, I waited for a miracle to happen that Lisa will finally give me something but I ended up recieving more

chocolates from the other students except from her.

She totally forgot about me which saddens me so much.

How come other students remembered on giving me these but she did not?

I looked for her in the classroom but she was not there so I took my phone and decided to just text her.

“Where are you baby?”

Minutes pass before I recieved a reply.

“I’m already at home.”

She’s what?

I frowned reading this.

“Why did you go home early and didn’t wait for me?” I asked.

“I have nothing else to do at school so I just came home.”

Her message got me disappointed.

So she really forgot about giving me something especial this day.

I mean I know it’s not good to expect something but she could’ve at least wrote me a card or even a note and I will be happy enough for that.

Am I not that especial to her?

“Okay. I’ll see you later.” I replied.

I took the choclates which my students gave and left the school early.

Even if she forgot about giving me something on this love day, I still plan on giving her something special.

Author’s Note

What do you think happened to Lisa’s chocolates?

Btw, look at my wife’s outfit for Lilidance 3 😍😍😍

Misunderstanding

Lisa's POV

"How was it?" I excitedly asked Jin when he came back from giving Ms.Jisoo the chocolates.

"She accepted it. And…and.. She invited me for a dinner this night!!!"

"Woah really?" I gasped.

"Really!!!" Jin and I came jumping out of happiness.

I'm so happy for him. We are secretly hiding on an empty classroom to avoid being spotted by our classmates. They must not know that we are giving Ms.Jisoo a gift.

And Jin and the other's must not know that I am giving Mr.Jeon too.

"What did she tell you?" I asked curiously. How did he manage to have our teacher on asking him to go out with her?

"I just told her everything. And she already invited me out. I don't know how she feels but she seemed to be happy when I confessed." Jin proudly smiled.

"Oh my god! I can't believe this. I'm really really happy for you Jin!"

"Me too..thank you so much Lisa. But you're the only one who knows this. We are not supposed to tell the others about okay?"

"I know. Don't worry I will keep my mouth shut." I promised by raising my hand.

"Thanks Lis! By the way, now that I have given Ms.Jisoo my chocolates, I think it's your time to give yours."

"Oh right I almost forgot. I'll get going now Jin. I'll look for him first." I said.

“I’m really curious about who this guy is but I respect your privacy so I won’t be asking questions.”

“Thank you Jin!”

“Anything for you.” he smiled. His happiness radiated on me making me happy and excited too.

I breathed in and out before walking to the faculty. Hugging my simple box of chocolates close in my chest, I took light steps to where I know where my man is.

I took a turn but I accidentally bumped into two students.

“Oh sorry!” I said.

“Sorry too. Are you hurt?” One of the girls asked, concerned.

“I’m okay. How about you guys?” I said as I look at the beautiful box she is holding. It was a beautiful heart box.

“We’re okay.” they said. “We’ll get going.” they bowed and quickly turn and head to the direction where I am going.

My heart started beating erratically when I saw him.

The love of my life.

My teacher, Mr.Jeon.

He was standing beside the window watching some students outside of the building.

I felt tensed and nervous as I look at my box.

Will he like this?

It looks too simple. But I think he would.

He likes everything that I do.

So I took another deep breath and walked to him, but I halted when I realized that the girls who I bumped into has now faced my boyfriend.

I quickly hid behind a wall and peeked at their direction. There I saw the student gave Jungkook the beautiful box I was admiring awhile ago.

Jungkook smiled sweetly at the girls and when they left, he stared at the box with much appreciation.

That time I realized that my box was really ugly. It's nothing compared to that one he's holding.

I think he will not appreciate mine looking like this.

Jungkook deserves the best gift and what I prepared was just a simple one.

Afraid of having him disappointed, I just decided to not give him the chocolate.

So that's it. I returned the box to my backpack and just decided to go home.

I think I'll just cook a dinner for him. Besides, I'm sure he's not expecting anything from me because the event was just for students and not for teachers.

When I got home, I recieved a text from him.

"Where are you baby?"

Oh shit. I forgot to tell him that I'm going ahead.

I thought of words first before sending a reply.

"I'm already at home."

"Why did you go home early and didn't wait for me?"

"I have nothing else to do at school so I just came home." I lied. I was supposed to spend my time at school giving him my gift but in the end I got skeptical so I didn't.

"Okay. I'll see you later." he replied shortly.

I got excited recieving his reply 'cause I'm really looking forward to spending my saturday with him.

I remember he said he wanted to have… So I need to buy new underwear before he gets home.

It was really an embarrassing task to look out for a good underwear just because we're supposed to have sex.

But this is for Jungkook, my love so I need to impress him.

I went inside a lingerie store which I assume sells items just like what Chae has lend me.

Last time, Jungkook was really pleased when he saw me wearing that one so I think I will buy something similar.

Just with different color. In the end I bought only one pair of white lingerie which for me looks enough decent.

After paying for it, I came home and did my preparations. It was really exciting and nerve-wracking at the same time preparing for something like sex.

I get conscious at how I look or how I smell. So after taking my bath, I took the lingerie to at least see if I look good in it.

“Oh no!” I almost cursed when I saw that the lingerie I bought was not the one that I picked.

What’s this? This is not mine!

I think it was mistakenly switched with the lady who was paying beside me.

What do I do now? I don’t even know of this will fit and the design looks too hideous to wear.

I tried checking my underwears again. Maybe just maybe I can at least use something decent. But my panties were either Hello Kitty, Peppa pig, Dora, Mickey Mouse and with other kid friendly designs.

I took a deep breath and calmed myself down.

I will just try to wear this lingerie and hope it will fit me.

(A/n: Imagine her wearing this.)

I had a really hard time on figuring out how to wear it. But finally it fit.

Though I look weird. What’s the use of these connected stockings?

Jungkook will laugh at me for sure if he sees me wearing this. But do I have a choice? This is way better than my hello kitty underwear.

An hour later, I heard his car parked outside.

Here he is..

When I greeted Jungkook at the door he was surprisingly quiet and looked down.

I wonder what happened to him. So I asked “Is everything okay?”

“Yeah” he replied shortly.

“Oh cute box.” I said referring to the bags of chocolates he is carrying.

Surely he recieved a lot of chocolates from other sturdents. And they were really nice in terms of its design.

Good thing I didn’t gave him mine. It’s got nothing compared to this.

“Oh these were given by some of the students. They were thoughtful enough to remember me.” he explained emphasizing the word thoughtful.

“That’s good. You’re a really great teacher. That explaines why.” I answered but he just frowned and walked upstairs.

I called him but he looks like he is really in a bad mood.

What’s with him?

Now I regret buying this lingerie.

“Jungkook” I called again when I followed him inside his room.

“Yes baby?” he asked. I caught him taking off his clothes.

“Uhm..” how do I ask him to have sex?

Should I just tell him right away?

Jungkook, Let’s have sex.

Or

Shall we start Jungkook?

What do you usually do to start sex?

“What is it?” he came walking to me when he didn’t recieve a reply.

“Uhm..uh..nothing.” I got shy after all.

“You sure?” he asked.

Damn those abs are distracting. I nodded lightly.

He kissed my forehead.“I’ll just change and we can eat dinner okay?”

“Okay” I left him to change and decided to wait downstairs.

As I was waiting for him, I heard him screaming my name. “Lisaaaaaaaaa”

I ran upstairs to check what’s his problem but when I realized he was inside my room I was confused.

I caught him holding the box of chocolate I’m about to give him. But he was looking at it like it’s a murder weapon.

“Jungkook…”

“Who gave you this?” he asked. His voice threathening.

I got scared when he started walking to me with his usual jealous face.

“No..I made that..” I said taking steps backward. But his burning gaze didin’t leave my face.

“You’re lying. Who gave this to you?” He asked again.

“No one. I really made that for you.” I decided to tell him the truth. He thinks that another boy gave me a chocolate when it’s not.

“Stop lying Lisa. If this is for me, why not give it earlier at school?”

“Because I’m not giving you that.”

Jungkook laughed sarcastically “See? You said this is for me but you’re not really giving me. That’s means this was given by one of your admirers. Were you too grateful and touched by his gift that you even forgot to call me at school?”

“What are you talking about? You’re misunderstanding this.”

“Misunderstanding what? It is really obvious that you forgot about me this Love day and you even took a gift from another man.”

Forget about him?

“What are you saying? I didn’t forgot about you. I was thinking of you the whole day!”

“Yeah right. You were really thinking about me that I didn’t recieve even a small note of I love you.”

I shook my head in disbelief. I didn’t know he was taking this Love Day too seriously and he was even expecting something from me.

“Baby, believe me..I was really planning to give that chocolate to you. You can even ask Jin about it.”

“Jin? why him? Did you tell him about our relationship. Lisa I told you it’s—”

“No, I didn’t told him. It’s just that Jin and I made those chocolates for you and Ms.Jisoo yesterday.”

“Huh?” Jungkook looked confused but he calmed down afyer seconds. “So that was Jin’s gift that Jisoo was carrying?”

“Yes. I was really planning on giving you this but when I saw that those students gave you better looking ones I got skeptical. My own box was too simple and I’m afraid you won’t appreciate it that much. I’m sorry..”

Jungkook looked at me in disbelief.

Then his eyes travelled to the simple box and smiled. His eyes are softer these time as he stare at it.

“You don’t always have to be insecure Lisa. You know that I love everything that you do.”

“I know and I’m sorry but sometimes my insecurity just gets the best out of me.” I shook my head.

“Yeah you really need to work on that. Now I feel like an idiot. I was really sad the whole day because I thought you forgot about me.”

“How could I even forget about the most important person in my life?” I asked.

“Thank you…and I’m sorry for overreacting.” he lazily rested his chin on top of my head and kissed it.

I hugged his body in return. “It’s okay. It was just a misunderstanding. But believe me, I made those chocolates with love. They are not that perfect but I hope you like it.”

“Of course I like it..no..I love it. Anything from you Lisa makes my heart flutter. Thank you for this baby.” he hugged the box on his chest and smiled warmly at me.

I smiled in return. Jungkook’s loving eyes was on me the whole time but it suddenly moved down to my neckline. “What is that?” he asked while reaching for my loose collar.

I looked down and realized that the strap of my lingerie was showing.

“Uhm..”

“Are you wearing a lingerie?” his eyes sparked when he tugged my collar down.

“Oh my god baby are you trying to kill me?” he moved forward. With heated eyes he bit his lip “Why would you wear this.” he asked as his free hand moved to caress my hips.

“Uhm…Uh..I thought..you wanted to you know..so I bought this..” I looked down feeling embarrassed.

Jungkook raised my chin “I’m so happy you remembered.” he whispered on my ear. His hot breath sent goosebumps all over my skin.

“Yeah..” I don’t know what to answer. This is awkward.

I really don’t want him to think that I really prepared for this event.

“All along I was thinking that I am the unluckiest man this Love day but it turned out that I have a chocolate box from my girl and a lingerie strip later.” he winked making me blush.

“We better eat first.” I said, changing the topic. I can’t with his teasing.

“Yeah..we’ll eat dinner first before eating each other right?” he grinned mishievously.

I rolled my eyes at him “The only thing you are going to eat is dinner and my chocolates Mr.Jeon.”

“Aww..I thought I’m gonna hear you say Daddy?” he laughed so hard.

“Whatever Jeon Jungkook!” I said leaving him in the room as I walk out.

Author’s Note

If there is a Love Day, there will always come a Love Night.
😌😌😌

Please ready your earphones

Love Night ⚠

This chapter is pure smut so please skip this part of you're not comfortable reading it.

Again, use your headphones/earphones if you play the video.

3rd Person POV

(A/n: for those who craves for Jk's visual, here it is. Lol)

Shortly after Lisa brushed her teeth, she got out of the bathroom expecting Jungkook to lay there in bed.

But she was wrong as a strong pair of arms surprised her by pinning her on the wall.

"It took you so long." he said before crashing his lips to hers. The kiss he started was too forceful that she cannot breath. She find it hard to follow his rythym.

One of his hand would move to rub her hips as he pressed his bulge into him.

"You're so beautiful" Jungkook says between kisses.

Finally Lisa's lips and tongue was able to keep up. Her hands travelled to clung on his neck. Jungkook lifted her by her waist and roll her to the soft bed.

Jungkook reached out to her body to help her remove her shirt and sweat pants.

"Fuck Lisa!" his eyes were wild when scanned her body in that sexy lingerie. Never had he thought that Lisa would dare to wear such piece of clothing.

(A/n: Imagine.)

It is too daring for her. And it makes him go crazy just thinking about how he would make love to her.

Lisa was shy but Jungkook's affectionate eyes encourages her to be confirdent with herself.

"You look so hot. You're giving your teacher a hard time" he said pointing to his erection.
Lisa also felt the urge and excitement bubbling up in her body.

Her skin was so hot, it felt like she was on fire with yearning and need.

Jungkook grabbed her legs and spread them wide to have a better view of her. Pulling the crotch to one side to reveal her tight, little pussy, already aroused, and glistening with juices.

"God, look at that!"

He watched in silence, a smile of anticipation playing on his lips as he removed his shirt. Without taking his eyes off her, he threw it on the floor. Lisa bit her lip. She was blessed with Jungkook's display of his perfect body.

"Oh baby, you look so good. I could eat you." His voice was low and sexy and his eyes shone with longing.

Jungkook could only dream of doing this to Lisa before but now here they are checking out each other's body.

Lisa saw he was already hard by the way his boxers grow. She thought maybe Jungkook couldn't wait to fuck her.

Now Lisa innocently tugged the lingerie and cupped her breast. She was too aroused and excited that she started pulling on her nipples so that they puckered and stood up, hard and rosy, ready for him to suck and gently bite.

Jungkook on the other hand was surprised. His innocent girl can now touch herself like this? It turned him on more.

The show was too much for him to just stand by and watch. So he knelt down, to plunge his face between her legs, sucking her clit powerfully, his tongue and his fingers probing inside her.

"hmmn" Lisa moaned in return.

Jungkook was inexperienced in bed. But he knows the ways to pleasure a woman theoritically as he reads a lot and watches

a lot.

“Oh God, feels so good!” Lisa shut her eyes close to concentrate on the pleasure of his mouth on her womanhood.

Lisa held his head, ran her fingers through his hair and pulled him in closer until she felt his tongue hitting her sweet spot, lapping at her pussy urgently.

She squirmed with desire and cried out, her breath ragged with arousal, “Oh God… Jungkook please…”

Lisa’s moan was too needy. As if she cannot wait to be fucked.

So Jungkook quickly knelt back up to tug down his sweat pants and free himself. His cock pointed out like a warrior ready for battle.

Lisa’s eyes grew big. His size still scares her. He’s just too big and fucking long.

Jungkook’s hand moved down between her legs. His finger slipped between her soft folds. He found her clit and flicked it rapidly, arousing her desires to even greater highs.

Then he positioned himself infront of her as she waited in anticipation. Then he pulled her crotch to one side again. He badly wanted to rip the lingerie off of her but it looks too good on her to waste.

Lisa cried out softly. She couldn’t last much longer. She needed him inside her.

He raised her leg and pushed his hips between her thighs.

She felt his cock at her wet entrance. Slowly he eased into her making Lisa shriek at the familiar pain of a big c*ck penetrating her.

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=033d8is4wh4

She could feel her inner walls opening, taking him deep inside her. His big c*ck giving no justice to her narrow hole.

She breathed out when she felt him burried all the way in but then gasped as he pulled back out then thrust into her

again.

The feeling of him filling her was like no other. Her mind went blank. A deep heat began to burn in her.

He spread her thighs open and began to thrust into her more forcefully.

“Jungkook” she whimpered. He is way more rough this time compared to their first.

“No..not that.” he smirked. Sweat formed on his face.

Lisa felt shy at how demanding he can be.

“D..daddy..”

Jungkook smiled in victory, his ears were blessed this time. He realized he has this kind of kink in him which turns him on when he stares at Lisa’s innocent face and listens to her cute voice.

Having her call him daddy is an added point. It gives him this feeling of dominance in which satisfies his ego.

Her breasts heaved up and down. Jungkook leaned in to kiss her affectionately. His tongue devoured her mouth. They were reconnecting in the way she had so desperately yearned for. Then his lips travelled to kiss those pink buds. Sucking them hungrily.

Lisa’s toes danced in the air as he thrust into her. Over and over again their bodies crushed together, his powerful thighs slapping against her soft skin.

Jungkook’s stamina is no joke, Lisa thought. If he continues this, she will end up limping tomorrow.

He slowed down, then sped up, then slowed down then sped up again.

His tempo kept Lisa on the edge. It was crazy. He drives her crazy.

Once again his hand found her clit. She cried out as he drove into her deeper and deeper.

But Jungkook stopped, and slid off the bed. His head moved between her legs, his lips finding her soft folds. She moaned as he held her hips in his hands and licked her furiously.

Lisa could not believe he would kiss her core just like this again. To be honest, she has always imagined him kissing her again down there.

She dragged her fingers through his hair, pressing him to her. She could feel herself growing wetter and wetter.

His tongue was relentless. Her heels pressed against his shoulders, digging into him. She needed him so badly. His hand moved up her belly, pressing her down into the soft bed as he continued to lick her.

The teasing was simply too much to bare. She pulled him toward her, begging with her eyes for him to enter her again with his cock.

“Jungkook please.” she begged.

“That’s not a good way to ask.” Jungkook teased.

Lisa rolled her eyes in her head. She was shy of calling him that but she badly needed him inside of her again.

“Please…. daddy?”

Jungkook chuckled. His playful side is now showing. “Please what baby?”

“Please…fuck..”

“Fuck what baby. I can’t understand you?” he teased as he kept on stroking her clit.

“Please fuck me daddy.” she finally said.

Jungkook triumphantly smiled. “As you wish my princess.”

He did not need to be asked twice.

Pinning her down onto the bed, he drove his cock back into her as deeply as he could. Lisa’s body shook as he worked his long c*ck into her.

She moaned with the delicious pleasure, Hitting her so deeply she could only gasp. He then reached and cupped her

breasts.

He continued fucking deep inside her. Soon they paused, taking a moment to breathe.

This time both of them are ready to climax. He drove into her with everything he had and she pushed back against him with equal force.

Jungkook smiled. Lisa is learning to fight back now. Now, their bodies glistened in sweat.

Their cries grew louder and louder.

The bed shook and creaked. The Love day was at last given justice.

The bedroom walls barely contained their passion as she grew closer and closer to a final moment of pleasure.

“Oh my God! yes Jungkook just like that!” she moaned so sexily.

Then, it was upon her. She cried out as she came, her insides exploding in a sensation of pure bliss and electrified pleasure.

The best feeling ever!

As Jungkook slowed down, Lisa lazily smiled and he kissed the tip of her nose.

“My turn baby girl.” he whispered. And locked his lips with her again.

Jungkook once again pushed in his c*ck in. He started thrusting into her in normal pace. Increasing in speed. Then he rammed into her mercilessly and Lisa could only cry in great pleasure.

‘Oh fuck..fuck fuck!”

Jungkook was at the edge of breaking. It felt so good to burry himself into her fucking tightness. The way she moaned in his ear makes it ten times hotter.

Lisa’s body is trully a masterpiece. One that he’d wish to devour anytime of the day.

She could feel his tension, his need to release.

Jungkook kept pounding into her. His c*ck hitting her A-spot.

“Baby..I’m cumming!”

One last pound and she felt him explode inside of her, his body shaking quietly on top of her.

Jungkook was on euphoria. The feeling of cumming inside was so heavenly good.

Nothing would compare.

He leaned in and collapsed back onto her body.

After catching their breath, Jungkook looked into her eyes. “Do you know how much I love you?”

Lisa lazily shook her head. She felt so tired and sleepy.

“I love you so much that I will give anything..anything just to be with you forever.” he said, meaning every words.

To him Lisa is his life now. He wants her to stay in his life for a lifetime.

“I love you too Jungkook. I hope you can keep those words.” she said as if there’s a doubt in her heart.

Jungkook was aware of it but he knows that deep inside, he will always fight for a future with her.

“I will. I promise.” he pulled Lisa to rest on his chest.

Soon they fell asleep naked not caring of how they sweated and not caring of the cum which has leaked on the sheets.

They were too tired to clean up.

They were too in love too worry.

Morning came…

They were sleeping peacefully into each others arms when a voice echoed inside the room.

“Oh my god Jungkook? What did you do!” the voice yelled.

Lisa automatically covered herself with the comforter as Jungkook rub his eyes to see the intruder.

When his vision focused, he almost jumped out of bed.

“Mother?”

Author’s Note

What do you think will happen next?

Mother

Lisa's POV

I hesitantly walked down the stairs to meet Jungkook's mother who is now in the living room waiting for us.

We had to wear some decent clothes first because we were obviously naked when she saw us.

Jungkook must've felt my nervousness. That's why he held my hand with his long fingers. "Don't be scared, I am here." he reassuringly smiled at me and squeezed my hand gently.

I had no choice but to nod. I don't know what awaits me now. Jungkook's mother just happened to see us in bed with naked Jungkook as I was on a funny looking lingerie.

What does she think of me now?

Maybe she's disappointed because she has to catch us after having sex?

I'm really scared and nervous.

This is not the way I wanted our first meeting to happen.

But life is a joke indeed. You will meet people in an awkward way just like how I met Jungkook infront of my face as I was sleeping that led me to punch him.

Finally we reached the living room where the woman who gave life to my love waits.

She looked so beautiful despite her age. She has a beautiful body and her eyes are as warm and gentle as Jungkook's. I can't help but smile at how I am lucky to meet such a beautiful woman. I hope she's as kindas my boyfriend too.

Right now I just want to thank her for bringing this man into this world. I hope she has an idea how her son inspires his students and helps them.

“Well..” she started when we stopped infront of her. Her eyes are focused at our tightly intertwined fingers.

“Mom, this is Lisa. My girlfriend.” Jungkook introduced me confidently. There was no trace of fear or hesitance in his voice.

For a moment my tongue got stucked and I couldn’t talk. I was too scared to talk to her.

But Jungkook squeezed my hand again making me come back to my senses.

I took a deep breath before saying, “Nice to meet you madam. My name is Lisa.” I bowed 90 degrees in front of her and Jungkook chuckled.

The mother looked at me from head to toe and studied my face. All I could do was to wait for her to scream at Jungkook and tell him to break up with me because I’m shit and such.

I am familliar with this kind of scenarios. I have watch dramas like this at Chae’s house where the mother would look down at the poor girl and would say “Here is 30 Million won for you to leave my son alone.”

I want to laugh at my imagination. Imagine being offered 30 Million just for a break up. Any girl would grab that.

Well except me because Jungkook is priceless.

His mother didn’t respond to me. Instead, she looked at Jungkook “I thought you and Ji-eun where in a relationship? What happened?” her voice was concerned this time.

She frowned but still calm.

“We are over mom.” Jungkook answered with an irritated voice.

“Since when?” she asked again with the same concerned but calm expression.

“A week ago?” he answered unsurely.

His mother looked at me again. “You found a girlfriend just a week after your break up? ” she asked. “I thought you were

head over heels for Ji-eun? I remember you would cry every night if you don't see her."

Ouch.

When I heard this from his mom, insecurities flood down my system again.

I didn't know that I already let go of Jungkook's hand.

"Mom, that was before. I have a girlfriend now." Jungkook's worried voice didn't go unnoticed. Even her mom raised her brow when Jungkook took my hand again and held it tightly.

Mrs.Jeon sighed before looking at me. "Lisa? Lisa right?" she called.

"Ye..yes…ma'am?" I nervously answered.

"Is it okay if I talk to my son? Alone?" she asked.

I glanced at Jungkook and he smiled, "Go ahead baby, I'll call you when we're done." he said then he kissed my forehead.

"Okay, I'll just cook you a breakfast." I offered.

"Thanks!" Jungkook replied.

I turn my eyes on his mother and bowed before leaving them alone.

What now Lisa?

I walked back and forth in the kitchen feeling anxious.

I don't know what they will talk about but I'm so tensed and worried.

What if she tells him to leave me because I don't deserve him?

My anxiousness is at a level where I don't know what to cook for breakfast. My brain is not functioning well.

I bit my nails as I stared at the pan in front of me.

What to cook?

What to cook?

But this is my chance to impress his mother through my cooking right? If Jungkook loves my cooked food, there's a chance that she'll like it too.

Maybe I can get her to like me that way?

Yeah…I need to cook the best breakfast for her. For the woman who gave birth to Jungkook. She should taste only the best.

She deserves it.

Jungkook's POV

When Lisa was out of sight, my mom quickly pulled me to sit beside her.

"Mom! I know you miss me but you don't need to barge inside my room unannounced." I laughed recalling the moment she almost had a heart attack seeing me and Lisa on the bed. It was obviously clear that we just had sex.

"You bastard! How can you do this to your own mother! I've been calling you to visit us and you kept ignoring me and your dad. And now I will catch you doing this!" she smacked my arm but I just laughed. I know she's frustrated but the scene a while ago was really funny.

"And you're just laughing Jeon Jungkook? Who is that girl by the way? Why did you broke up with Ji-eun?" she asked concernly.

"It's not working mom. I was not happy. But Lisa. Lisa is great. She makes me so happy." I admitted.

My mom eyed me as if reading my thoughts. "How sure are you that you like this girl than Ji-eun? Ji-eun is perfect. Beautiful, talented, has a stable job. She's good for you. Why did you let her go?"

I ran my hand in my hair frustratedly. If she only knew how I suffered from my relationship with Ji-eun.

“Mom, Ji-eun and I are over. Lisa is my present and she will be my future. I love her. I love her so much.

My mom threw me a symphathetic look before sighing. “But she looks too young. It’s as if you’re commiting child abuse. Is she she your student? Does she live here?”

I got quiet for a while. Should I tell her? I guess I should.

“Yes she’s my student and she lives here because she’s got nowhere place to go.”

My mom’s eyes widen “what’s wrong with you Jungkook! Why would you date your student? That’s very immoral! You can get to prison with this!” she reprimanded but I just shrugged.

“Nothing to worry mom, we can hide it well.” I said but she just scowled at me.

“And the fact that you had sex with your what 16-17 years old student is so unbelievable!”

“Correction mom, she’s 18” and she’s so good in bed. If I could only add that one.

“16,17,18 it is all the same. She’s your student Jk. You should protect her not take advantage of her! This worries me so much! What if the school finds out? I swear to God Jeon Jungkook I will die of a heart attack!” she dramatically massaged her temple.

“You’re our only son. Our company’s only heir. Your father and I are both old. Nothing bad should happen to you or our efforts for our businesses will be put to waste!” my mom almost cried from explaining.

I know this already. I know that I have to recieve the company in the end but I don’t want to. I just want to teach.

“Mom, nothing bad will happen. You’re over-reacting.”

“How can you stay calm at your situation now. Does this girl have her parents? What if they sue you for child abuse?” she asked in her high pitched voice.

“Mom! No one will sue me. We both love each other. And besides she has no parents or relatives left. I’m the only one who she has right now so please be considerate of her situation.”

“You tell me to be considerate when I’m the one who’s more worried about her?”

“Mom..I’m old enough okay? I know what I’m doing. I’ll protect her in any way. Please trust me on this.”

My mom looked at me with disbelief “If you were just only good terms with Ji-eun, we could have had our grandchild now. We will not worry of who to take over the company.” she said and my eyes widen. I looked around and hoped that Lisa didn’t hear her. Or she will be insecure and jealous again.

“Shhh…keep quiet mom! My girlfriend is emotional. She hates hearing about Ji-eun’s name!” I whispered.

“Oh..sorry..but I really want to have my grandchild now. At least to secure our company. And it is very imposible to have one now that your girlfriend is too young. Wait..” she paused and covered her mouth. “Are you guys using protection?” she asked.

“Protection for what?” I answered her question with question.

She smacked my head, “Idiot! Protection during sex of course. You wouldn’t want your student to get pregnant right?”

Pregnant?

Oh shit.

How come I forgot about that?

When my mom noticed my silence she started to panic.

“Oh my god Jk! I swear you will end up in jail with your stupidity!” she kept smacking my head but I grabbed her hands to stop her.

“Mom, we are…we are using protection don’t worry.” I lied. I had to or my mom will not keep her mouth shut.

Now I'm the one who is quietly worried. I came inside her twice and I didn't even noticed that.

Did I get her pregnant?

Shit. shit. Shit.

This couldn't be happening.

Lisa is too young. She will kill me for sure if I ruin her future.

I was too lost in pleasure and excitement that I forgot about it.

Fuck me now!

"Jk! Are you listening to me?" my mom cut me off my thoughts.

"Uh..come again?"

"I said, I don't mind if you have this relationship with this girl but just make sure to be safe." she said.

"You mean you approve of us already?" I smiled. I know she will but it's still surprising considering that Lisa is young.

My parents are not the type to look down on other people's status. They raised me to be respectful and fair of others whether they came from a high class society or mediocre one.

"The only thing I don't like about your relationship is the fact that she is your student. Other than that, I have no problem with it."

"Thank God!" I heaved a sigh of relief.

"But Jk, when this girlfriend of you graduate, make sure to give us our grandchild okay?" she said like it's possible.

"What the? Mom, that's impossible. She's only 18!"

"I know but at least she finished high school by then. Jungkook we are getting older. Imagine how our employees would suffer if there's no more to take care of the company? Hundreds of people will starve." she dramatically explained like I'm a life saviour or what.

“Aissshh! This is you and father’s fault for not creating more babies when you were younger. Ouchhh!” I received another smack from my mother.

“Stupid! You know it was hard to make babies if both of you are busy. Now you have no choice but to give us lots of grandchildren. That’s the only thing we’re asking Jk.”

“Okay Okay..I understand.” I said.

“Excuse me Mrs.Jeon, Jungkook. The breakfast is ready.” Lisa cut off our talk as she talked from the kitchen.

I took my mom’s hand to lead her to the dinning area but I noticed her eyes were focused on Lisa.

“Com’n mom!” I said and tugged her towards the dinning area where Lisa is.

“You cook all of these?” My mom’s face lit up when she saw the breakfast Lisa prepared.

“Yes madam.” Lisa politely answered. “Let’s eat.” she said.

My mom stared at her one last time and then sat down We started eating in silence when my mom broke the silence. “Lisa,”

Lisa almost jumped from her seat when she was called by my mom. I tried not to laugh at her hardly. She looked so nervous that her face has turned white.

“Ye..yes…madam?”

“I hope you take care of my son as we are living away from him. You see, he may look mature but he’s still careless.” she explained.

I smiled. My mom will always be protective of me after all.

“Of course. i assure you that I will take care of Mr.Jeon. I mean Jungkook” Lisa scratched her head. She always forgets to call me by my name.

“Good then.” my mom smiled and continued eating.

“See that baby? Mom said that you should take care of me so you should stop beating me from now on.” I joked and both

of them looked surprise.

“You’re beating Jungkook?” my mom asked. She turned into her you-dare-hurt-my-child mode.

“No, I’m not.” Lisa was quick to defend herself making me laugh so hard.

“Ouch!” I felt Lisa kicked me under the table. She was looking at me with those threatening eyes. As if I’m scared. It just turns me on. I swear I’ll fuck her later.

“I’m not beating you remember?” Lisa said through gritted teeth, clearly annoyed by my teasing.

My mom’s eyes travelled from me to her.

“Yes mom, she’s not beating me but…” I paused for a second as both of them listened intently. “But she makes my heart beat fast.”

Imagine how they both rolled their eyes. I started laughing out loud making them shook their head.

After having breakfast with the two most important women in my life, my mom decided to leave us in peace.

“Oh my god!” I almost had a heart attack a while ago. Lisa said before hugging me so tight. I could even feel how cold her hands are on my back.

I pulled away from the hug to ask her “Why are you nervous?”

“Because she’s your mom and I have a feeling she won’t like me.” She said while looking down.

“Why would you think like that?” I asked.

“Because I’m just your student and I’m nothing compared to Ji-eun.”

“Lisa, I have told you already that you are beautiful and perfect. You have nothing to worry of.” but she just pouted.

I cupped her full cheeks to make her look at me.

“Stop pouting those lips or I’ll kiss them. You know how my kisses end right?” I joked and she sighed.

“I was just scared that she’ll make you leave me.” she explained.

“My parents are not like that. They can’t changed my decisions Lisa. They always respect me.”

“Really?” Lisa smiled this time.

“Really and believe me, my mom likes you.” I assured her.

“How sure are you to say that?” she asked in doubt.

“I’m sure because my mom doesn’t eat as many as how she ate your food.” I answered. Lisa’s lips curved.

“Well..uhm..Good then.” she said.

“Yeah. So no need to worry. Everything is fine okay?” I said kissing her lips.

“Thank you Jungkook.”

“Thank you for what?” I asked.

“For coming into my life.” her eyes watered as she said this.

“Aww..my baby is getting emotional.” I said, pinching her soft cheeks.

“No, I’m not” she said, crossing her arms.

“Yes you are. Don’t be emotional yet. Reserve it later.”

“Huh? Why?” she asked, confused but I just tugged her hand to go upstairs.

“Jungkook, I’m still sore.” she whined when we got into the elevator.

“As much as I want to do what you’re thinking, I’m sorry to disappoint you but we’re not having sex.” I laughed at her and she shyly look away.

“No, I’m not. I was just…ugh! Nevermind!” she pouted.

“I told you to stop pouting or I’ll kiss those lips.”

“Whatever.” she rolled her eyes.

“You’re so cute you know that.” I said while pulling her to my room.

When we got inside, I pulled a box from my drsser to give to her.

Lisa's mouth hunged open when I gave her a small sized box.

"What's this?" she asked. Her eyes shone excitement.

"It's my gift for the love day. You gave me a box of chocolate and I also have something for you. I hope you'll like it." I said, smiling proudly.

Lisa hesitantly pulled the lace and opened it.

"Oh my god Jungkook. Is this?"

"Yes, I don't want to see you walking anymore. So I bought you this." I said as we stare at the car key.

"Jungkook this is…this is too much." she said. Her eyes are glistening now in tears.

"It's not too much. Besides, I need to get rid of those rings that you hated so much so, I bought a car after selling them."

"Jungkook…" Now Lisa's eyes was filled with tears. It streamed down her face.

I held her to my chest to silence her. "Please don't think too much. Just accept this baby. I love you."

Her sniffs were the only reply I got.

I just smiled as I embrace her in my arms.

Author's Note

I hope you don't get bored because the coming chapters are light and just them being happy.

Field Trip

Please show me some love by commenting 😘

Lisa's POV

"Are you done packing baby?" Jungkook asked when he peeked inside my room.

I examined my backpack which is now packed with my usual simple clothings before answering "Yup, I have packed everything that I need." I stood from my bed and brushed my hands.

"Good." he said as he walk to me to hug my back. "It's really frustrating that I won't be able to sleep with you for two nights."

Jungkook whined. I can feel his hug tightened around my torso. "Yeah..it sucks to be sleeping away with you." I replied.

"You think so too?" he asked. Jungkook turned me around to face him and to plant a kiss on my lips.

"Yes, let's just hope for the nights to pass by quickly so that we can be together again." I said, as hug him tight.

It is a sunday afternoon and both Jungkook and I were packing our things for our two-days and two-nights field trip.

The University offers an extensive two-day field trip to Busan with accommodations, meals, transportation, and entrance fees included. This trip is designed to acquaint students with historic, scenic, and modern Korea, as well as provide the opportunity to create fun adventures and memories for the graduating students.

The itinerary includes visits to a traditional Korean Buddhist temple, natural parks, a beach, and a market.

The field trip and the recollection activity will be the last activities for the School Festival and I am both excited and sad because of it.

Excited because we can get to visit different places in Korea while bonding with my classmates. But sad because we will have to stay in a hotel and resort for two nights.

That means Jungkook and I cannot stay together in the same room. Also we cannot freely talk and be affectionate around my classmates and other teachers.

Jungkook on the other hand is not really excited. He's been vocal about his displeasure for the activity.

He explained that he is not used to not sleeping beside me and being away for two nights will just be hard for him.

"It's so frustrating too that I won't be able to tell you how much I love you for the coming days." he added.

"I know. But I also know that you love me so no need to worry." I said. I held my chin and thought of a better idea, "How about we text each other if we need to say something? That way my classmates will not be suspicious of us."

"That's a good idea Lisa!" Jungkook said looking all giddy.

"Best ideas coming from the one and only genius Lisa." I giggled.

Jungkook's eyes lit up with a smile on his lips.

He leaned closer to me and brushed my lips with his thumb as if admiring it.

"You are, but baby…since we cannot sleep in the same bed together for two nights. How about we…..later?" his eyes travelled down to my chest with a suggestive smile.

After hearing him, the temperature of the room has definitely increased.

I but my lip which he just brushed and tilted my head. "Aren't you tired? I mean..we just…last night?"

A smirk formed on his lips and proudly answered "I never get tired, I just let you rest in peace after doing it because you

easily gets tired and falls asleep. I don't want to exhaust my princess"

It's true..I get tired easily after doing it. I know some couples does it twice or more everytime but I have a feeling I cannot keep up with Jungkook's energy.

"I would always want to do it more than once." he said while leaning closer.

"Jungkook.." his heated eyes was still on me. His lips finally crossed the gap and landed on mine.

I closed my eyes as he conquer my mouth with his. I feel so hot and needy especially when one of his hands travelled at my back to squeeze my ass.

In a swift motion, he carried me effortlessly to his bedroom. He lay me to the bed without breaking the kiss and I gasped when he finally let go of my lips.

We were both catching for air as we stare at each other's eyes. His eyes mirroring mine as I stare at his lustful and needy one.

"Let's removed this baby." his hands travelled to my shorts to pull it down and I eagerly nodded.

I can't wait to feel him again.

But it was too late for my mind to process everything, because when he tugged my cotton shorts down, his reaction sent us both off.

He started laughing so hard that his eyes got teary, his hands tapped the bed repeatedly. And his crisp laughter made me realize that he's seen it.

My Hello Kitty underwear.

"Oh my God Lisa! What's this?" Jungkook asked. He's still laughing out loud.

I felt embarrased and disappointed at the same time that I pulled back my shorts and ran away from his room.

I can still hear his laughter from my room and it annoys me more.

'This jerk!' I thought.

I really need to buy more underwear.

"Baby, open the door." I heard him knock on my door but luckily I was able to lock it before he follows me.

"Baby, Come on.." he knocked again.

I didn't answer him. I'm too embarrassed to show my face and I'm too pissed that he left me hanging like that.

"Lis..I'm sorry..I didn't mean to laugh at your underwear. It's just that…" he bursted out laughing again against the door.

"Leave me alone you jerk!" I yelled but he just kept on laughing. He's still not recovered.

"I won't ever let you see my underwear again, I swear!" I yelled.

"Lis baby..come on. I won't laugh again I swear. Open the door please." he said but I didn't.

That night nothing happened. I didn't open my door to him and I didn't face him.

The Next Day.

I went downstairs to see Jungkook cooking. His face lit up immediately after seeing me.

"Hey…" his apologetic face reminded me again what happened last night.

"Don't talk to me if you will just laugh at me in the end!"

"Lis, I'm really sorry okay?" he said, his arms sneaked around my body to pull me for a hug but I remained there not returning his hug.

I broke the hug and walked to the table to sit. Jungkook sighed "Baby, please don't be mad at me. I was just shocked to see it because that was a kiddie underwear." he explained.

"Still, you have no right to laugh at it. You just got me frustrated last night! Imagine how wet I am but.." I covered

my mouth at my words.

Jungkook smiled in return. “If you were wet, I was hard too.”

“Not my fault that you got frustrated. If you weren’t judgemental last night we could’ve made it.” I rolled my eyes at him.

“I know and it’s my fault. I’m sorry baby. Let’s just try again this night.” he said making me roll my eyes the second time.

“This night? Remember we aren’t sleeping together cause I will stay with my girl classmates in a hotel room.” I reminded him in case he ever forgot.

“But you can sneak out and go to my room right?” his suggestion shocked me. A lot.

“What do you mean?” I asked in disbelief. Is he suggesting that…

“I mean, if your classmates fell asleep, maybe you can got to my room and…..we can continue there what we haven’t finished.” he said before sipping his coffee on his cup.

“That’s impossible. What if someone catches us?” I asked.

“No one should be awake in like 12 midnight right? Think about it. I’ll give you one key card so you can go in without knocking.”

I look at his serious expression. He really is serious about this?

I mean it feels so thrilling and fun to do such a thing where anyone could easily catch us doing it but still I’m scared.

“So?” he asked again while smiling mischievously.

“I don’t think so.” I replied while shaking my head. The idea is too scandalous.

“But if you change your mind, just text me. Okay?” he added with hopeful voice.

That moment, I was torn between being a naughty girl or a good girl.

In my heart, I really wanted to do it. To be with him this night but my mind is fighting it. It's just too risky. Especially that I will be roommates with Jeongyeon and Chae. Jeongyeon can easily smell anything suspicious while Chae knows me too well.

Field Trip

I arrived at school after few minutes of walking. A while ago, Jungkook wanted to drive me to school but I refused.

A lot of students will be on the school grounds today to wait for the buses meaning there's a greater chance of being spotted together so I didn't.

When I was at the school gates, I immediately spotted all of my classmates infront of a mini bus. There were 4 mini buses for senior students to use.

"Lisaaaaaa!!!" I heard my girl classmates call me. So I ran to them excitedly.

(A/n: Sorry for the lame edit but..)

"Guys!!!" I was welcomed by hugs and smiles from my classmates.

Namjoon was checking the itinerary. Jimin was talking with Hoseok, Yoongi who was finally wearing clothes was chatting with Jin. Dayhun, Jeongyeon, Tzuyu and Eunwoo were chatting too.

"What a beautiful weather for a field trip right?" Chae pulled my arms to look at the sky.

"Yes it is! I'm excited to leave!" I said as I smile at her.

"Lisa, let's sit together! The seats are by two's we're just waiting for Mr.Jeon and the driver and we can leave." Chae explained but Jimin who was talking with Hoseok heard her.

"No no no. You are sitting with me not with Lisa!" Jimin argued and Chae heaved a sigh. "We've talked about this remember?"

I rolled my eyes at Park Jimin's possessive ass. He's just like Jungkook.

"Yeah..I forgot I'm supposed to sit with him sorry Lis" she sadly apologized.

I shook my head "It's okay, I wanted to sit alone in the first place because I want to have more room to lay down."

"Aww..you're the best. Thank you!" Chae said while wrapping me in her arms.

My classmates and I were chatting as we wait for Jungkook and the driver when I spotted him coming to us with a bitch following him.

Jungkook's face was frowning and clearly annoyed but I think I am more annoyed.

I thought he will get rid of her? Then why's she following him again?

"Are you guys complete?" he asked when he reached us. The P.E.teacher was at his back as if waiting for him to kiss her or what.

"Yes Mr.Jeon, we are complete and we are all ready to leave." Namjoon answered.

"Good, we can now leave." he said. We all smiled at Jungkook as we can finally leave. But the bitch cut us off.

"Jungkook-ssi, the teachers are supposed to ride a van together. You can leave your students alone." she said.

Bitch what?

My nose was fuming hearing this. I look at my boyfriend who was both surprised and scared while glancing at me.

"No..I will travel with my class. They need me." he was quick to respond but she just pouted.

"Your students are matured enough to travel by themselves. Come now." she said then she pulled him by his arm.

This is it!

I don’t care if she is a teacher or what! I will fight for my right. Jungkook is mine not hers to drag on a stupid van!

I was about to step in when Hoseok got in the way, “Ms.Jung I’m sorry but we need Mr.Jeon to travel with us than you need him.”

Jungkook finally pulled his arm from her. “Yes, I will be with them. I’m sure you are matured enough to travel by yourselves right teacher Eunbi?” Jungkook’s answer made her frown.

She looked at us in disgust before huffing and soon she left.

My classmates applaud their hands at the sight of her leaving.

“Good job Jhope!” Namjoon patted our sunshine’s back.

“I won’t let someone else take our teacher away from us.” he proudly said while rubbing his nose.

Jungkook laughed at the silliness of my classmates but I was too pissed to laugh with them.

I can’t believe that bitch of a teacher is still trying to get him.

When my classmates got inside the bus, I was left with Jungkook outside. His eyes were focused on the bus door but he managed to whisper something on me.

“Sit with me. I need to explain.” he said. Then he walked to get in the bus without hearing my response.

But when we got in, it was already full load. My classmates were settled in front and the only vacant was at the back and the seat beside Namjoon.

Jungkook smiled as if he was happy that we can get to sit at the back but later he frowned when Namjoon said, “Mr.Jeon. I prepared a seat for you.” he pat the vacant seat next to him.

Jungkook lowkey looked at me as if waiting for me to invite him or something but I didn’t. The sitting position has already been decided and it is just but normal for a teacher to stay infront.

He sighed before sitting next to Namjoon. Good thing, Namjoon seemed to not read his disappointed expression.

(A/n: sitting position at the bus)

"Do you want me to sit with you?" Eunwoo asked when I pass by him but I shook my head, no.

"I'm sorry but I need more space. But thanks anyway" I explained and he just smiled.

"Just tell me if you need companion later okay?" Eunwoo whispered.

I walked to the back of the bus to sit there. I really don't mind sitting with Eunwoo but Jungkook will go beast mood if I do.

I didn't even told him that I received a chocolate from the guy from the Love Day because I know he'll overreact. I had to eat the chocolate in school to leave no traces.

Once I settled ALONE at the back, the bus started moving. As the class were singing a song together from the speaker of the bus, I immediately received a text.

I smiled once I saw the sender.

I saw him glanced at my direction and like a teenager who got noticed by her crush, I giggled.

I read his message and it says,

"Good girl. I thought you'd let him sit with you."

I shook my head. How come he heard Eunwoo when his voice was too low?

"I am always a good girl. How about you?"

"I am. Everyday." he replied back.

"That bitch is still chasing you. I almost jumped at her a while ago if not for Hoseok who interrupted my death plans."

After sending the message, I heard Jungkook's laughter from the front. Even my classmates looked at him in curiosity.

When he realized that all eyes are on him he was quick to say, “These memes are hilariously funny”

I rolled my eyes at his alibi and texted him again.

“Lol. Nice one.”

“What is lol?” he asked.

“Wtf? At your age you don’t know what lol is? It is a shortened Laughing out loud.” I replied.

“Ahh..I don’t know that. And what is wtf?” he asked. And I was like what’s wrong with his man?

“wtf means What The Fuck.” I replied. Why am I even explaining this to my teacher?

“Wow. Now I want to do that with you…you know…

FUCK”

My brows meet when I read his response.

This man really! I typed a reply again.

“A thread of Mr.Jeon being lowkey naughty around his students. 😑”

“I can be more than just naughty if you want to 😏” he said.

And his even using emojis now?

“Well, I’m interested on how naughty you can be. 😉”

I love this playfulness of him. The fact that he looks so decent in front of my classmates but he can send this messages to me is unbelievable.

The duality.

“Hmm..I want to kiss those lips and hold that body right now but I can only imagine. 😭” he said.

“Then just imagine. 😂” I replied

“I want to go there and sit with you . 😭”

“Me too but we can’t.😢” I pouted reading his message.

“I miss you already baby.”

"I miss you too Jungkook."

"Now I regret laughing at your underwear last night. 😢"

"That's your fault for being judgemental 🤷"

"I'm not. I was just surprise because that was a kiddie underwear. You should have told me earlier so that I can buy you new ones."

"No need. I will use my underwear wether you like it or not." I said.

"But it's weird. I feel like I'm about to fuck a 5 year old girl."

"Then don't if you don't want to. It's not like I'm forcing you to do it anyway!" I snapped.

"Hey…It's not like that. Of course I would always want to make love with you. But it's just really weird seeing you wear those."

After reading his message, I got pissed again so I didn't reply. I placed my phone on my purse and ignored the beeping which probably came from him.

My phone kept beeping but I just closed my eyes to lean on the bus window.

But Yoongi who was sitting in front of me groaned in annoyance.

"I swear to God Lisa, if you don't answer whoever this motherfucker boyfriend of yours, I will go and beat his ass for messing up my nap!" Yoongi yelled.

His voice was too loud that even the driver heard him.

When I look up, my eyes meet Jungkook's worried eyes.

And I know that look. He's probably sorry or what. And even if I don't want to read his messages about my underwear, I'm too scared of Yoongi to keep ignoring my phone.

So yeah, in the end I read his messages.

"Lisa?"

"Baby?"

"Baby please reply."

"Baby I'm sorry."

"C'mon Lis. Send me a reply."

"I miss you and you're not even reading my messages 😭"

"Baby please. If you don't reply, I'll go in your seat and kiss you. I don't care how your classmates will react."

Shit!

My eyes widened reading the last message. I got so worried that my fingers found it's way to send a reply.

"Please No..don't! Sray whwre yoy are!"

Fuck this typo!

Then a reply was sent again by him.

"Good girl. 😘"

"You're really being naughty Mr.Jeon!" I said.

"Back to Mr.Jeon again? Why not just daddy? 😏"

"We're not in bed." I said, looking around. Hoping that nobody reads our conversation.

"But we can imagine being in bed right?" his reply got me closing my legs.

"How can you imagine that when we're inside the bus?" I asked.

"Have you hear about sex on the phone. 😏"

"Jeon Jungkook!!! 😠"

"😂"

"Come on babe, it's not like we're not doing it at home.🙂"

"Let me just remind you that you are sitting beside the holy Namjoon. What if he sees our conversation?" I replied

"He's fast asleep already. Actually you classmates are already asleep. Try looking around."

Huh? When I looked at my classmates. They were really asleep now. The only ones who were awake were the driver, Jungkook me and Jeongyeon.

I bit my lip and searched for words. I don't know what's gotten into me but I replied,

"How to do phone sex?"

Author's Note

Blame my internet for the ver very very very very very late update.

Anyways, as I said the following chapters will just be the two of them flirting and having fun. I warned you to not be bored.

LISKOOK (NOT AN UPDATE)

To my fellow Liskookers,

Please help in voting Liskook for the Beat ship in kpop. You can vote as many times you want. Just keep refreshing.

Here is the Link:

https://kingchoice.me/topic-the-100-most-favorite-kpop-ship-couples-2020-1237.html

As of now, Liskook is no.4 and it has a lot of down votes.

Decision Making

Jungkook's POV

"How to do phone sex?"

Her text made me smile.

It would be better to hear each other's voice but I think we should just settle for sexting.

I glance at my sides making sure all of them are sleeping before typing a text.

"Just imagine yourself lying on the bed as I take off your clothes." I replied.

"Hmm..'kay" she replied back innocently.

I was about to send another message when Namjoon spoke "Oh..sorry Mr.Jeon, I fell asleep." he took off his glasses and rubbed his eyes. Then wiped his glasses with his handkerchief before wearing them again.

Good thing, I was able to put my phone away before he reads it.

"No, it's okay. You can go back to sleep." I said but he just shook his head.

"It's okay Mr.Jeon, I don't feel like sleeping now." he said.

Of all the time?

Why can't he just sleep now?

I glanced at Lisa's direction which is at the back and realized that she was secretly laughing.

"Why are you laughing?" I texted her in a rush.

"Because Namjoon is awake lol. It must be hard to be frustrated."

“Yeah it is. But at least I didn’t get a boner. Otherwise, it would be uncomfortable to have one while we’re on a field trip.”

“😂😂😂”

“Maybe just this night? What do you think?” I asked again even though she already said no. I would still want her to come.

“Hmm..I’m really scared. Jeongyeon and Chae are light sleepers. What if they woke up in the middle of the night and find my bed empty?”

“I don’t think so. Just go back to your room after we cuddle and more.” I said.

“We’re just going to cuddle?” she asked.

“I said cuddle and more.”

“What is meant by more?” she asked again.

“Do I need to elaborate? Namjoon is beside me with a thick eye glasses. He can definitely read it if I type the word to *Fuck You*.”

“You just typed it now 😂”

“Because you can’t read between the lines.” I rolled my eyes at my phone screen.

“I just want to clarify what I should do in your room because if we do THAT, I might end up falling asleep inside your room and they might catch us. You know how easily tired I get.” she replied.

“Then sleep with me, I’ll just wake you at dawn so you can go back to your room.”

“Seriously?”

“Yes. I’m serious. If we have to do it. We need to plan ahead.”

“I don’t know. I’m still worried.”

“Come to think of it baby. I miss you so much. Don’t you miss me too? 😢”

“I miss you too Jungkook. But still.”

“Please?”

“Okay..okay..I’ll try. I’ll just hope that Chae and Jeongyeon sleeps ahead of me.”

“You made me happy baby. Now you go and take a nap so you can have energy this night. 😏”

“Okay 😴”

“I love you Lisa.”

“I love you too Jungkook.”

I pushed my phone back to my pocket and smiled.

It feels so exciting to think about what will happen tonight.

I really hope she comes to my room later this evening ‘cause I badly want to cuddle with her.

Class 3-C POV

After hours of travelling in the bus, they finally reached their first destination which is at Beomeosa temple, it is the most famous temple in Busan and one of the most well-known temples in South Korea.

Mr.Jeon had to pair students up for an easier way of exploration. The pairing was Him and Namjoon, Jeongyeon and Dahyun, Seokjin and Yoongi, Hoseok and Jimin, Lisa and Chaeyoung and Eunwoo and Tzuyu.

The pairing was his way of having Tzuyu and Eunwoo close to each other because he knows that there’s a chance of Eunwoo asking Lisa to be his partner.

To him, the plan was clever. Besides, Eunwoo and Tzuyu would look good together.

All the time that they were having a tour, Mr.Jeon managed to stay away from Ms.Eunbi.

Thankfully, the P.E.teacher was also busy handling her own students making him breath in peace.

No slutty woman around = No jealous girlfriend.

That’s a simple equation he’s instilled in his mind. He must not piss Lisa in anyway or he’ll sleep alone tonight.

When they were done with the tour in the temple, they proceed to a beautiful natural park. The students had fun in bonding and watching the beautiful sceneries around with a tour guide leading them.

Everyone was laughing and just having a good time. Except Mr.Jeon who has been glancing at Lisa’s beautiful face every time he gets a chance. He can’t wait to get in touch with her.

Mr.Jeon thinks that the time being away with her feels like eternity. And he cannot wait any longer. He needs to see her and touch her even just in secret.

When the class gathered to have an outdoor late lunch by the river, the teacher found away to text his girl.

“Lisa, meet me at the comfort room around the corner.” he sent the message and patiently waited for her to read it.

Lisa recieved it and nervously looked around. When Mr.Jeon saw this, he walked away as he was too eager to see her. He walked to the nearby comfort room without waiting for her reply.

Lisa was so scared to follow him but in the end she did. She went inside the comfort room and found him there with a deep frown as if waiting for her for a lifetime.

“Jungkook wha..”

Lisa was surprised when she was roughly pinned against the wall by her teacher. He crashed his lips to hers impatiently as his hands moved around her body to stroke her sensitive parts.

“Jungkoo..hmmn.” She tried to stiffle her moans when his lips travelled on the side of her neck.

Jungkook’s body was harshly pressed on her. He kept sucking a part of her neck making her bite her lower lip.

“Jungkook..” she wants to say she needs him too.

“shh be quiet.” he whispered against her skin. She was having goosebumps all over her body at how he’s acting. This

is the very opposite of the calm and refined teacher Jeon.

Who would have known that the respected teacher is now pinning a student on the wall.

“Somebody will see us.” she whispered back while looking around. The comfort room was supposed for girls. It is big and clean. It has at least 5 cubicles which are all empty.

“This is just quick. I just miss you.” he said as he wrap his arms around her tightly. He smelled her hair and kissed her after.

“We should go back.” she said. As far as she loves what he is doing, he was stil conscious of her sorroundings. Anytime now, someone would come to look for them.

Jungkook was about to protest when they heard a voice coming outside.

“Lisaaaaa? Are you there?” she pushed him quickly when they heard Chae’s voice.

“Hide!“she said. Mr.Jeon panickly looked around to hide. He ran on one of the cubicles and hid there.

Lisa brushed her hair with her fingers and straightened her clothes before opening the comfort room.

“There you are! I’ve been looking for you!” Chae said. Lisa managed to pull a smile even though her heart was beating crazily in nervousness.

“I..I was having a stomachache.” she lied.

Chae’s expression turned worried. “Really? That’s a pity that we are on a fieldtrip. Bu let’s go and find Mr.Jeon, maybe he has carried medicines with him.” she said and she started pulling her.

“No need Chae. I’m feeling better now.” she lied again at her dearest friend.

Her brow raised, “You sure?”

“Yeah..I am.”

“But have you seen Mr.Jeon? We’ve been looking for him for a while now.”

“I haven’t. Maybe he’s just around.” Lisa nervously said. Hoping that Chae won’t come in the comfort room as her eyes were focused there as if considering of coming in.

“Yeah..let’s just go back. You haven’t eaten yet.” Chae said.

She was relieved when she came back to the table without anyone getting suspicious of her.

‘I swear Jungkook really needs to stop or someone might catch us.’ Lisa thought.

Few minutes later, she saw Jungkook jogging towards them. The class’ attention was automatically grabbed by him.

“Where were you Mr.Jeon?” Namjoon asked curiously.

“I was just walking around.” he said as he sat next to the class president.

“Let’s eat before we proceed to the hotel.” Jungkook said. Lisa’s classmates nodded in excitement.

Lisa thought that It’s amazing how every word Jungkook says are being followed by them.

She bit her lip to hide the feelings she is keeping inside. It was a mixture of guilt, worry and thrill. And she won’t deny that hiding like this is fun.

It is fun that the same man they respect is the same man who just kissed her lips a while ago. Whose hands stroke every inch of her body and who just made her breathless.

It felt so good. The way he teased her like that while others doesn’t have any idea.

When she raised her head, Lisa’s eyes meet Eunwoo’s worried ones. And by the way that he looked at her, she could tell that he knows.

Still, Lisa looked down. She can’t maintain the eye contact with him because it just worries her more.

Nevertheless, she's grateful enough to him that he kept their secret. Eunwoo told her that he won't say a word to anyone and she hoped it is true. She trust him enough to share her secrets with him.

When the class finally reached the hotel, it was already past six in the evening.

The whole class was tired but they still wanted to bond.

"How about we go on a bar later? I heard there is a bar inside the hotel. We can have few drinks. If that's okay with Mr.Jeon?" Yoongi suggested while looking at the teacher with hopeful expression.

Everyone was actually excited. They all wanted to have a drink and they're sure they'll be allowed because they are not minors anymore.

"Hmm.." the teacher thought for awhile before answering. He doesn't want to let them go but if he'll allow them, he can have bigger chance of being alone with Lisa so he said. "I'll ask Mr.Yang first, if he allows you, then I will also do."

His answer made the students very happy. Even Lisa was thrilled,l because this will be her first time to drink with her classmates.

Little did she know that Mr.Jeon has private plans for them.

Mr.Jeon asked the principal about it through a phone call. At first, he was hesitant to allow them but after a series of convincing, Mr.Yang finally allowed the students to go.

"For now, settle your things first in your rooms and let's just meet at the lobby in an hour." he said.

The girls were assigned in a big room. A bed for three was shared by Tzuyu, Jeongyeon and Dahyun while the bed for two was shared by Lisa and Chae.

The boys on the other hand has to stay in two rooms. Eunwoo, Jin and Jimin on one room with separate beds. While Namjoon, Hoseok and Yoongi on another with also three separate beds.

Mr.Jeon stayed in a bigger room closer to the rooms of the other teachers.

“This is great!!! I can’t wait to party at the bar.” Dahyun clapped her hands in excitement.

“We can’t party there. It’s just a bar. Not a club.” Jeongyeon said as she plop down the bed.

Dahyun pouted, “Aw..I thought we can dance and have alchohols.”

“We can drink but not too much. That’s what the Principal said.” Tzuyu explained. “And good news girls, I have brought an outfit for this kind of ocassion. Look” she added before searching for her bag.

“Wow!!!” all of them squeaked when she pulled a sexy glittery dress which will fit the occassion.

“Hey, I have one too.” Chae excitedly ran to her bag and fished out another dress.

“That’s better than mine!” Tzuyu pouted.

“It’s okay. You’re pretty enough. No need to wear the best.” Chae said as she hug her.

Dahyun and Jeongyeon showed their beautiful clothes too.

Lisa can only watch them. She has no dress perfect for the night.

But once Chae noticed her silence, she gasped “Oh my dearest friend. Sorry I forgot to bring you one.”

Lisa shook her head. “No no..it’s okay. I’m fine. Don’t worry. I’ll just wear this one.” she said pointing at her hoodie.

“Yeah.. Lisa doesn’t need to wear those kind of clothes. She’s beautiful either way.” Jeongyeon said making the girls nod in agrrement.

“No, I’m not beautiful Jeongyeon.” her insecurity came in again. She knows Jeongyeon is just saying this to make her feel good.

“You are. Even Mr.Jeon can’t keep his eyes off of you.” Jeongyeon added which made her froze on her spot.

‘Did they notice?‘She asked herself

“Yeah..I have a feeling too that Mr.Jeon likes Lisa. The way he looks at her. It’s just different.” Tzuyu added.

“What are you saying guys! That’s impossible.” Lisa said. She was already sweating under the gazes of her classmates who are intently observing her. Good thing, Chae cut them off.

“Guys, Mr.Jeon has a grilfriend remember? It’s not right to think like this. That would be unfair to his gf.” she explained.

“You’re right Chae. Sorry Lisa…” They sincerely apologized. But Lisa jast waved her hands no.

“It’s okay. How about we prepare now? We only got 1 hour to prepare right?” Lisa reminded and with that, the girls rushed to different directions.

After an hour, they all went down the lobby and meet the rest of the class including Mr.Jeon who was silently waiting for them.

“What took you so long?” Yoongi whinned when they reached them.

“Stop complaining. We’re here now.” Jeongyeon said.

“Hi there my baby. You look so gorgeous.” Jimin’s eyes never left Chae’s body. As he admire her inside the sexy dress.

Actually, all of the girls are wearing dresses except Lisa who was just in her hoodie and Jeans.

She feels bad for having nothing formal to wear even the boys were wearing semi formals.

Mr.Jeon looked at her face down to her clothes and smiled.

To him, she’s still a goddess regardless of what she’s wearing.

Soon, the class was already at the bar drinking, chatting and having fun.

Lisa had taken a few drinks but she's not drunk yet. She stood and walked to the comfort room when her hands was pulled.

She turn to see her teacher staring at her. Lisa looked around before speaking. "What now Jungkook?" she annoyingly asked. She can't believe he would dare to follow her here.

"I just want to give you this. I'll go back to my room now. You can follow me anytime." he said before walking away.

Lisa could only stare at the key card he just gave.

She bit her lip and decided for a while.

Should she follow him? If she does, she's sure they will do it which she wanted so much.

But her classmates might find out? She's more scared of them than Jungkook.

So she decided to just stay at the bar and forget about Jungkook just for one night.

'It's just one night Lis' she kept talking to herself.

30 minutes had passed and everyone was drunk. Namjoon who was in charge of his classmates finally decided. "We need to go back and sleep. Let's not disappoint Mr.Jeon." he said.

The class groaned for a while at the class president's decision but in the end, they followed him.

Most of them were drunk already that they slept the moment their body touched the bed. Except Lisa who has drinked only few.

Half an hour has passed, Lisa looked around the room and observed the girls who were now quietly sleeping. Even Chae was sleeping peacefully too.

She could clearly see their faces in the dark room though the help of the small light emitted from the lampshade.

She gulped and took the key card from her pocket, shook her head and pushed the card back to her pocket once again.

No! She should just sleep and forget about the plan.

She closed her eyes once again. But the moment she shut it close, images of Jungkook kissing her as he pound himself to her came running in her head.

That moment she feel so hot that she pressed her thighs together and bit her lip.

She looked at her sleeping classmates again before cursing in her head.

Fuck it!

With that she stood and reached for the door. Then head straight to where he is.

She didn't knock before pushing the door open.

But once she opened, her jaw almost dropped on the floor seeing the hottest man to ever exist in his bed shirtless.

Looking straight into her eyes with intense gaze. His lustful voice said, "You've been teasing me the whole day and I can't believe you will make me wait like this. You really need to learn your lesson Lisa."

Lisa gulped. Her eyes travelled to the bulge which is covered by the thin comforter.

Jungkook stood and revealed his hard member covered by his boxers.

He crossed the gap between them and with just one swift motion he pulled her in for a kiss.

□

Author's Note

Boring Chapter for you guys.
Btw, Next chapter will purely be smut so please don't read it if you're not comfortable with reading such stuffs.

And I have also planned on not writing smuts after the next one cause some of my readers doesn't like it. What do you think? Should I leave the intimate details out of the story?

Secret Rendezvous ⚠

3rd Person POV

She didn't knock before pushing the door open.

But once she opened, her jaw almost dropped on the floor seeing the hottest man to ever exist in his bed shirtless.

Looking straight into her eyes with intense gaze. His lustful voice said, "You've been teasing me the whole day and I can't believe you will make me wait like this. You really need to learn your lesson Lisa."

Lisa gulped. Her eyes travelled to the bulge which is covered by the thin comforter.

Jungkook stood and revealed his hard member covered by his boxers.

He crossed the gap between them and with one swift motion, he pulled her in for a kiss.

They know that relationships were frowned upon by teachers and students. It would get them both in serious trouble if they were found out, but that had only made the sparks between them more intense.

The lighting in the room was on low, sends sexy feels in them just like Jungkook. With his messy hair, handsome face and perfect body. He certainly doesn't look like a teacher but a model or an actor.

He let go of her lips first before locking the door shut behind them.

Finally, they were alone. She felt excited and needy.

So Lisa touched his sharp jaw with her fingertips. Their faces were inches apart, breathing each other in, savouring the moment.

Unable to hold back any longer, they crashed together again. Their lips parted, tongues tangling. Within seconds,

they were both breathing hard.

“God, you have no idea how long I have been wanting to kiss you.” Jungkook groaned, dragging her against him.

Lisa bit her lower lip and gazed up at him through her eyelashes. “I would be lying if I’d say that I didn’t wished of kissing you too.”

Jungkook smiled at her honesty. “You are such a tease, babg girl. I can’t wait to fuck you.” he whispered in her ear.

“Jungkook..”

He took his hand and pressed it to her breast, and then moved it down, tracing the curves of her body until he reached beneath her skinny jeans. He then inserted his hands on the jeans and felt her thin panties inside.

He rubbed her over the top of the material, hunger in his eyes. Arousal coiled low in her belly at the friction against her tender folds and the swollen clit.

He slammed her up against the wall, and got to work, removing her pants and leaving her with only her white panties. They ground on each other like a couple of horny teenagers.

Jungkook licked his lips as he stare at her back while removing his boxers. The hard bulge of his erection jammed up hard against her pussy and impatient Lisa angled her hips, wanting him, needing him.

To Lisa, the position was new but it seems like Jungkook can’t wait to get into the bed and would want her here near the door, by the wall.

Little moans escaped her lips, her breaths coming faster.

Jungkook’s cock nudged her from behind, and he bent his knees slightly, bringing his dick level with her pussy. He pressed between her wet, smooth folds, and she hinged at the waist, pushing her ass out towards him, bracing herself in the wall.

There was a moment of resistance but he then thrust his hips, penetrating her. His cock stretched her pussy, her wetness

lubricating the way.

“Oh Fuck…,” she groaned, her head hung.

“Why are you so fucking tight?” he asked after hissing.

Every inch of him inside her felt like heaven. He slid deep and then gave another little thrust, as though he wanted to lose himself inside her completely. He reached around and yanked up her hoodie to expose her. Then he reached over to remove her bra.

The warm air of the hotel room kissed her bare skin. He cupped her breasts, squeezing and tugging her nipples into peaks, while he moved deep inside her.

“So tight baby!” Jungkook hissed again at the feeling of being squeezed.

Lisa twisted her head, trying to capture his lips with hers, but they were both lost in the heady-lust of their fucking. Kisses became frantic, and when their lips met they inhaled each other’s gasps.

He slammed into her, his jaw clenched with fierce determination. Her mind swam with pleasure and her thighs quivered, her belly twist.

They were still by the door of the hotel room which Jungook is staying and hadn’t made it much on the bed.

Her legs trembled from the exertion and she was sure Jungkook was feeling the same way. Jungkook’s height is way higher than her making it hard for Lisa to tiptoe just so she could meet his dick.

Jungkook noticed her uncomfort so he slid from her body and took her hand, leading her to the bed.

The bed was as luxurious as the rest of the room. The backs of her thighs met with the softness of the sheets and she pulled herself up, sliding her bare ass onto the bed.

He gazed down at her. “You’re so beautiful. Do you know that Lisa?”

Warmth of his compliment flooded through her. “Thanks” the only word that she said..she doesn’t know how to respond when being complimented because she knows she’s not really beautiful in any way.

Kneeling between her legs, he took hold of his hard cock and rubbed the head up and down her slit. She was so wet, and he smeared her cream over her clit, applying pressure.

She rocked against him. The attention on the little bundle of nerves and the coil of arousal wound tighter, and she found herself reaching for her orgasm.

But Jungkook just kept teasing her. While rubbing his cock into her.

She impatiently groaned. “Jungkook, stop teasing! Give it to me.”

He just chuckled and continued to rub his cock against her clit. “Give what to you baby?”

“Please,” she protest.

“Only if you say the magic word?” he smirked.

She rolled her eyes. He’s being a jerk but she badly wants him. “Please give it to me…da..ddy” her pleading voice sent volts of signals between his thigh.

Not waiting any longer, he angled his cock back down, allowing the head to dip into her. She lifted her hips, wanting more, but he pulled back again, leaving her needy.

“Jungkook! I swear that’s so mean!!!”

He smirked again. “What is? You mean this?” he said rubbing his cock against her.

“Yes that..please…”

“You made me wait.”

“I swear if you don’t—”

“Shhh..here it is.”

He repeated the motion, sliding tantalisingly up and down her pussy, the smooth head swirling over her clit, before he

changed the angle slightly and penetrated her slow and deep. This time, she took it all.

Lisa threw her head back, hair fanning across the mattress, and moaned in pleasure. He took hold of her legs and pushed them back, her knees up, thrusting deeper.

Jungkook found her fingers with his and he pinned her hands to the bed on either side of her head as he fucked her.

“Oh God! Jungkook! that felt insane.” She loved being able to let go like this.

Jungkook released her hands to thumb her clit.

Her pleasure intensified with his touch, forming low in her belly. Every muscle in her body tensed and she teetered on the edge of her orgasm.

Her gasps became cries, and she clutched at the sheets, trying to ground herself, to stop herself spinning away on a whirlwind of pleasure. She didn’t want this to end yet, but she was already there, unable to hold off any longer.

She squeezed her eyes shut as her first orgasm of the evening burst through her, the tightening that had been building at her core exploding through her body.

She released the sheets to clutch at his shoulders, her nails digging into his skin. She bucked and writhed beneath him, her pussy pulsing around his cock.

Wave after wave shuddered through her, tingling from her breasts right down to her curling toes. She had no idea how Jungkook managed to hold back his climax, but he did, making sure she was in for a second helping.

She was breathing hard, her skin damp with perspiration.

Jungkook gave her a moment, letting her come down, though he kept his thick, hard cock embedded inside her.

“You look like a goddess when you climaxes Lisa.”

Both the racing of her heart and her breathing slowed, but not for long. He ducked his head to her breasts, sucking one of her already sensitive nipples into his mouth. Hot wetness

enveloped her sensitive skin. She arched her back, pressing herself to him, a gasp filtering from her lips.

His tongue swirled around her bud and then he grazed the hardened peak with his teeth, sending fresh shivers of arousal down through her core. He did the same to her other breast, licking, sucking, swirling, and then kissed his way up to her neck.

He lifted his mouth from her neck and sat up. Still positioned between her thighs, he pulled out of her. She lifted her hands over her head, gripping the sheets tightly, preparing herself to be fucked once more.

“What are you doing to me Mr.Jeon?” she asked in disbelief of how she’s learning all sorts of scandalous things from her very own teacher.

“I’m just loving you as you should be.” he replied.l before dropping down onto the bed beside her.

“Come here baby, take lead.” he reached out for her making her eyes widen.

“What??? what am I supposed to do?” she asked nervously.

“Ride me baby, quick.”

“But I don’t know?”

“You will. I’ll guide you” he said before pulling Lisa to settle on top of him. Her pussy was still on the air as Jungkook grabbed her hips to slide down to his pointing cock.

“Ahhh..” Her pussy was already wet and swollen and well fucked, and she felt every inch of him sliding deep inside her.

“Fuck, that’s incredible,” he groaned, grabbing her arse.

“Now, Move baby.” he said while guiding her by holding her hips.

She bounced up and down, and he helped her movements, his fingers digging into the smooth flesh.

Lisa’s eyes were shut close as she drives him. She can feel him more deeper inside of her with the position.

She grazed her palms over his skin, loving the feel of the solid, muscle beneath. Jungkook might be a teacher, but that didn't mean he can't have the perfect body.

That's because he was no stranger to the gym and he often spent his weekends on the gym before he met Lisa.

"Faster baby!!!" he commanded the now learning Lisa.

So she rode him hard, the room filling with her cries and the slapping of their skin.

"You feel so good baby and you're learning quick." Jungkook smiled at her.

He sat up, so she was sitting in his lap, her arms wound around his neck. He kissed her again, his tongue pushing into her mouth. She laced her fingers in his hair, pressing herself closer, her breasts crushed to his chest, his cock still deep inside her. They continued their movements, her hips nudging against his, and then Jungkook ducked his head to bury his face in her breasts, while she tightened her grip in his hair.

He turned on his side, spilling her onto the bed and sliding from her for just long enough to get into their new position. He pulled her ass into him, and he penetrated her from behind, spooning her.

The new position surprised her again. She could only shake her head at how dominant and rough he is on her.

She twisted to kiss him, and reached between her thighs, seeking her clit. She applied the perfect amount of pressure and rubbed herself in fast little flicks, strumming herself towards climax.

Jungkook's hand gripped her hip, holding her in place while he slammed into her from behind. Her tits bounced with every stroke.

"Oh God. I'm so close again Jungkook!" Lisa groaned as she can feel herself on the edge of her second orgasm.

His hips pistoned, fucking her harder, faster. She could tell he was about to lose it, his erection an iron rod inside her.

“I’m gonna come.” His breath was hot and heavy in her ear. “Ah, fuck, Lisa. Your pussy is so tight.”

“Come,” she gasped, “I want to feel you inside.”

“That’s it, baby…Take it.”

Her cries shattered through the room. “Oh, God, oh, God.”

Her inner muscles rippled, clamping down around his cock, as her second orgasm swept her away in a tidal wave. His fingers dug hard into her thigh, his face contorting with pleasure. He came inside of her.

They slumped in each other arms, their chests lifting and falling in rhythm as they caught their breath. Jungkook’s heartbeat thudded against her back.

She kissed him, warmth and happiness spreading through her.

“Now I feel sleepy. I need to get back to my room.” she was about to get up when his strong arms stopped her from moving.

“No. I clearly said we would cuddle remember?” Jungkook spoke in her ear. His arms are still wrapped around her.

“But they’ll find out.”

“No they won’t. Come on..just few minutes of cuddling won’t hurt. I missed you so much.” Jungkook’s cute and needy voice warmed her heart that she forgot that she was supposed to be worried about her roommates.

“I missed you too.” Lisa replied as she hug him back.

“I love you Lisa.”

“I love you too Jungkook.”

It was too perfect to be inside his arms that her eyes closed.

She fell asleep.

And so does Mr.Jeon.

“Mr.Jeon?”

“Mr.Jeon? Are you awake?” Namjoon’s voice cut off their peacefull sleep. Both of them groaned as they look around.

The room was bright as it was already morning.

“Shit!!!” Lisa cursed as she realized they had oversleeped. They were both naked while Namjoon was still knocking at the door.

“Hide in the closet!” he asked before standing up.

Lisa ran inside the closet while Mr.Jeon searched for his boxers.

Fuck!

The knocking still continued.

Finally, he found his boxers and he wore it to rush to the door.

Once he opened it, an apologetic face of Namjoon came in view.

“Mr.Jeon, I’m sorry for waking you up but it’s already 8 and we are supposed to have our breakfast.” He explained while looking down.

Mr.Jeon’s door was slightly opened and he’s shirtless. “Oh..you go ahead and eat. I’ll catch up later.” Mr.Jeon was

about to shut the door close when the class president spoke again.

“Mr.Jeon, have you seen Lisa?”

His question almost gave him a heart attack. “I..I didn’t..why?”

“We’ve been looking for her. We don’t know where she is. But when the girls woke up, she was no longer in her bed.” he explained.

Jungkook searched for words to answer him and gladly his brain cooperated.

“Didn’t she say she’ll go for a morning walk last night?” he asked hoping it’s convincing.

“She said that?” Namjoon’s brow raised.

“Yes, last night at the bar I heard her.”

“Oh..so that must be it. Maybe she’s walking around. I’ll go and tell the others Mr.Jeon.”

“Okay.” Mr.Jeon nodded and bid him goodbye.

When he got back in, he was surprised when Lisa came out of the closet naked.

“Oh god! You surprised me!” Jungkook said while clutching his fist on his chest.

“This is your fault! Now they are looking for me.” Lisa started picking her clothes from the floor in a rushed manner.

Jungkook sighed and walked to hug her. “Sorry princess. I thought I had my alarm set but I forgot.”

Lisa just groaned in annoyance. “I swear if they find out.”

“They won’t. I told them that you maybe having an early walk around the hotel.” Mr.Jeon said. He leaned in to plant kisses on his girl’s shoulder before turning her to face him.

He saw that Lisa’s lips was turned into a pout. She was pouting too much that she looked too cute for his heart.

“I’m sorry baby. I promise I will fix this ‘kay?” he brushed her cheeks and kissed it after. “Now you need to prepare for

the breakfast. Where would you want to bath? Here in my room or at your room?" he asked.

"I'll just go in my room." Lisa said before wearing her clothes.

Jungkook just watch her as she fix herself. He would really want to have another round this morning but they are both late for the breakfast.

Author's Note

Do you think no one has seen them?

If there is one, who?

Distractions

I need comments ❤

Class 3-C POV

“Where were you! We’ve been looking for you the whole morning!” Chae’s worried expression welcomed her when she joined the group who seemed to finished their plates of breakfast.

They were in the restaurant by the lobby and Jungkook was already there sipping his coffee calmly as if nothing had happened.

He didn’t even glanced at her. Maybe to keep it down between them.

“I took a walk. The beach was beautiful early in the morning.” she lied and sat down quickly to search for food which she would stuff on her mouth to avoid herself from talking.

“Next time, please tell us if you’ll leave like that. We were worried sick.” Lisa just nodded at Chae’s words after she took a piece of sausage in her mouth.

The class seemed to look calmer now having Lisa around. They were really worried of her.

They were all silently eating when Ms.Jung walked to their table wearing her swimming robe.

“Jungkook-ssi, the teachers are going in for a swimming at the pool. Why don’t you join us?” she smiled at him, her eyes were only focused on her target. Eunbi doesn’t care how the students will react. All she wants is Jungkook’s attention.

Mr.Jeon looked around first before saying, “No. Sorry. I’ll stay with my class. Just enjoy you guys”

“Ahh..that’s a pity though. I thought you could join the fun.” she said before ‘accidentally’ dropping down the robe

revealing her sexy swimsuit.

Mr.Jeon chocked on his coffee as their eyes were blessed.

“Oops..sorry.” Eunbi shyly took back the robe to wear. Then she walked away after confirming that her small little trick worked.

Lisa saw how he reacted and almost jumped on him for staring at the girl’s body. She was so annoyed at her boyfriend. Even the girls were irritated too.

Yoongi cleared his throat before saying, “I think I’ll try swimming. It’s hot right guys?” he said and walked away to change to his swimming clothes. The boys also did the same.

Except Mr.Jeon and Namjoon who just stayed with the girls.

“Guys, let’s go with them?” Namjoon asked the remaining people on the table.

Chae huffed in annoyance because Jimin just left her there so she has no choice but to follow.

In the end, all of them came to the pool where some senior students from other section and teachers were already swimming.

(A:n: Class 3-C at the pool)

Mr.Jeon stayed with the boys to avoid being close to Lisa.

He promised himself he will act casual around her from now on. But only when the class is around.

Lisa walked to the other side where the girls are and observed how tensed Jungkook is.

She observed how her man would glance secretly at the P.E.teacher who’s now flexing her curves with that sexy swimsuit.

“Look at my bitchy boyfriend! I swear he’s not getting laid for a month!” Chae mumbled under her breath as she stare at Jimin who’s checking out their hot teacher as well.

The girls were just rolling their eyes the whole time as they watch them.

“Ughh..I forgot my sun screen” Jeongyeon groaned and left the four of them there.

“Who the hell wears a red swim suit while swimming? I swear she’s an attention seeker!” Tzuyu pouted as she watch Eunwoo who is also mesmerized by the teacher in red two piece.

Ms. Eunbi seemes to love the attention she’s getting from all of the boys. She glanced at Jungkook for a moment and smirked at him when she caught him looking at her.

Lisa saw all of this and it annoyed her more. She was about to take her phone to send a message to his boyfriend when she realized that she forgot it on her room.

With that, she stood and walked out. She needs to unsee Jungkook’s image of checking another girl out before she kills both of them.

“Fuck boys and their hormones!” she gritted her teeth as she clench her fist on her sides. She was walking too fast and eager to reach her room quickly.

“I need to send him death threaths for eye flirting that slut!” she mumbled as she walk inside the elevator which just closed.

“Woah..I didn’t know you can also send death threats Ms.Lisa?” Lisa turned to her back to search for the owner of the familliar voice. But she almost cursed when she saw him.

“You again??? Are you following me Mr.Kim?” Lisa’s voice was loud enough to make him cover his ears.

How come they always meet unexpectedly? Is this a coincidence or he’s really following her?

“Excuse me? Me? Following you?” he raised his brow in a mocking way as he stare at the beautiful girl who’s slightly wet. She probably came from the pool or what.

“Yes you are. How come you’re here again?” She asked, clearly annoyed.

“Because this is my hotel. I own this entire land Ms.Lisa and I don’t need to follow you just so I could come here.” he clapped back, silencing her.

She became quiet after hearing his words. She just embarrassed herself for talking before thinking.

“So..”

Mr.Kim’s deep voice startled her.

“What?” She asked. She doesn’t want to talk to him but it seems like she can’t stop herself from answering.

“You’re here for a field trip?” he asked to confirm to which Lisa just nodded.

“Ms.Lisa, I would really like to talk to you in private.” Mr.Kim said before looking at the elevator buttons. His floor was close.

“What?” she asked back with a weaker voice. Lisa was confused of her feelings. She thinks she’s too pissed to talk to Mr.Kim this time. But she needs a distraction from her boyfriend.

“Come with me.” he said when the door of the elevator opened at the 20th floor. He stepped out and wait for her.

Lisa contemplated for a moment. But in the end she stepped out with him.

She was talking to herself to go back and just make excuses to Mr.Kim that she can’t talk to him but she was too confused that she followed him inside a room.

Lisa gasped as she looked around. Admiring how wide and classy the room was compared to the room they’re staying.

She quickly turn her head to Mr.Kim when she heard the door being locked.

Mr.Kim noticed this and it made him chuckle. “Relax. I won’t rape you.” he said before walking to the mini living room inside the hotel room.

Lisa slowly followed him there. Mr.Kim sat and pointed to the leather couch “You can sit there.” he said with his business tone.

Lisa walked to it and faced him. “What are we going to talk to?” she asked. She was nervous in all honesty. She doesn’t

know this man and his intentions. And the fact that she's a girl and weaker compared to him makes her worry more.

"I already cancelled the demolition and I had donated the land to the orphanage." Mr.Kim announced.

"What the…" Lisa covered her mouth in disbelief. She couldn't believe he will do this. A slight feeling of uneasiness crept through her. "You're lying again?" she asked as she tilt her head to look at him.

"No, You can check the donation papers if you want. I have sent it to Mother Yasha." Mr.Kim explained.

Lisa's eyes welled in tears this time. She couldn't believe he will do this. This will make her and tje kids happy. But she knows that great things has greater price.

She sat up straight and meet his cold eyes "What will you ask in return for this?" she asked.

Mr.Kim laughed at her serious expression. "I already told you. I want you to accept something from me in the future." his vague answer made her ten times more nervous.

What does she need to accept?

Is it too much of a big deal to discuss now?

"Please tell me what it is? I want to have even slight idea of what to expect from you." Lisa asked. She was getting more frustrated this time. Whatever it is that she needs to accept, scares the shit out of her.

"Ms.Lisa, in exchange of my kindness to you and the children who are dear to you. I am asking you to accept something and you're not allowed to refuse."

"And this something is?"

Mr.Kim also straightened his posture from his seat. He opened his lips and looked at her eyes.

“This something is my company.”

“Ms.Lisa, I need you to accept my company in the future.”

Jungkook’s POV

Where is she?

I’ve been looking for Lisa for almost an hour now and yet I can’t find her.

I tried asking her classmates where she is but they said they didn’t notice when she left. I went to their room to check if she’s there but she’s not.

When I got into my room, I quickly searched for my phone hoping that she texted me or what.

But I recieved nothing except from the life quotes which my mother sent.

I tried to dial her number but she’s also not picking up.

Where could she be?

What’s wrong with her?

Is she mad at me?

I thought for a while if there was any way that I could piss her off but I can’t think of any except from what happened this morning where we were almost caught.

I tried to recall the time I spent at the pool when I realized one thing.

Oh shit.

I forgot to talk to her when we were on the pool. I was busy staring at—

That must be it.

She must hate me now.

How come I forgot about her awhile ago?

I feel like I’m doomed right now.

I tried to get up and check at the ladies’ room to see if Lisa has come back but when I knocked on the door to check on

them, she was still not there.

“Where is Lisa?” I asked Chae whose bed was just near at the door. The girls were already changed into casual clothes after swimming at the pool.

“I don’t know Mr.Jeon.” Chae replied as she shook her head.

“You’re looking for Lisa sir?” Jeongyeon asked as if intrigued.

And that moment, I don’t know if I would answer her yes because she might thought that I am into Lisa. But I need to know where she is. Maybe she’s seen her.

“Yes, I have something to ask her. Have you seen Lisa?”

Jeongyeon massaged her chin as if thinking of something. “Mr.Jeon, I’ve seen Lisa a while ago entering a room with a handsome man.” her answer made me laugh.

Jeongyeon is always like this. Making up stories.

“Jeongyeon, it’s not good to make up stories. I am asking a serious question meaning I need a serious answer.”

“But I really saw her with my very own eyes, Lisa walked inside a room with the beautiful man. I was even confused at first because I don’t the man and why would Lisa go there with him but it really was Lisa. I swear.”

The girls gasped after hearing her. Even I can’t believe it. But it is either I will believe her or not. Lisa would never enter a room with a man other than me.

I’m sure it’s not her.

“Mr.Jeon, You can go their if you want. Maybe she’s still there. It was room 2013.”

Although I’m sure that Lisa will never do that. I still had the urge to check it myself. I need to prove Jeongyeon that she’s wrong. And she shoukd stop making up stories especially if it is about Lisa.

“I’ll go and check it.” I said. The girls bid me goodbye and I quickly walked to the elevator. I pressed the 20th floor while

thinking about her.

I’m sure Lisa is hiding from me because I was distracted by Eunbi. And I’m sure she’s just out of the hotel walking around or probably eating somewhere to avoid me.

I’m aware that Jeongyeon is always making up stories and —

My thoughts were interrupted when the elevator opened at the 20th floor

I blanked out the moment I see her.

Lisa is really at the 20th floor.

Author’s Note

Short update.

I missed writing and updating but lately I’ve been very busy on twitter.

Sorry loves!

Break Up

Jungkook's POV

I pulled Lisa inside the elevator and quickly pressed the close button to avoid anyone from seeing us talking.

"What are you doing here?" I asked her when the elevator closed.

"Ow! You're hurting me." she winced. I immediately let go of her wrist which I didn't know I was already gripping hard.

"I'm sorry baby. But…but what are you doing here? I've been looking for you." I tried to ask in the calmest way.

She needs to speak her side first before I jump into conclusion. I'm sure she will never see another man.

Lisa didn't answer. She just rolled her eyes and stepped out of the elevator. Sadly, we are already at the 22nd floor where our rooms are located.

I see she has no plans in speaking with me when she tried to walk straight to her room but I badly need to speak with her so I pulled her to mine.

"Jungkook let me go!"

But I didn't. I pulled her to my room and locked it before someone else sees us.

"I can't believe you!" she rolled her eyes again but then she walked to my bed to sit there.

God I missed her already.

"I just wanted to talk to my girlfriend." I followed her there and sat beside her.

I was about to kiss her cheek but she moved away.

"Baby.."

“Don’t you dare call me baby when you can’t keep your dick to yourself!” she snapped.

Okay. Now I know this is about Eunbi. She hates me because she caught me staring at her but she just misunderstood the whole thing.

“Lisa if this is about Eunbi I swear it’s not what you think.” I tried to explain but she just moved away from me.

“Yeah right. I have my own eyes Mr.Jeon. don’t try to excuse yourself.”

“I know you think it that way but it really isn’t. I was just staring at her suit and was imagining you wearing it. I swear I’m telling the truth.” I explained but she just laughed at me.

“That’s probably the lousiest shit I ever heard. Stop making excuses Mr.Jeon. I would appreciate it more if you’ll tell me in honesty that your dick was affected by that slut.”

“Lisa please listen to me. It’s really not what you think. I don’t know what’s happening to me but lately I had this kink of imagining you wearing revealing clothes. And I’m so sorry for sounding weird but it’s really true.”

“You’re really continuing that lousy excuse?” she crossed her arms. She was still far from believing me.

“I’m not lying. Here, look at this.” I said as I took my phone. I open one album in my gallery with a title “Lisa Costumes”

She took my phone and scrolled through the screen. Her eyes widen when she’s seen the pictures inside.And there she goes. “What the hell is this?” she asked. Her wide eyes still fixed on it.

I looked down in embarrassment as she discovered my fetish.

The album was filled of sexy outfits from maid outfit, nurse outfit, even sailor moon, and all sorts of sexy lingeries and costumes that would fit her. I have always imagined her wear those kinky outfits and yesterday when I saw Eunbi I got really distracted. My thoughts were filled with Lisa wearing

the same red swimwear. I was too distracted that I forgot that my real Lisa was just around.

After showing her the images, I expected her to laugh at me for knowing my deepest secret but she didn't.

Instead she gave my phone back. "You know what, whatever your reason is, you can't change the fact that you were checking out another girl while I was just at the corner. And that Mr.Jeon is something that you need to realize. I had warned you already to stay away from that bitch but it seems like you can't keep your eyes off of her. And I don't want to get in the way with your bursting hormones." Lisa spoke with hurt in her voice.

I regret it. I honestly regret what I did. It was really stupid of me.

"Baby I'm sorry.." I took a step closer to her but she just took a step backward.

"Lisa I swear it won't happen again." I plead but she just shook her head.

"I am giving you free pass to flirt with any girl that you like Mr.Jeon. but be sure to leave me out of it."

Those were her last words before leaving my room.

And I feet so stupid. So dumb. I feel guilty for ruining our day. We could've spent it happily together.

I wanted to chase her but it'll cause more trouble because she's staying with her classmates.

I texted Lisa the whole afternoon asking for forgivesness but she didn't reply.

Our last activity for the field trip was a Recollection activity but she managed to ignore me the whole time. And I can't even talk to her because there were so many people around.

I was too distracted of thinking about Lisa that I didn't realized that the Recollection Activity was already over.

At dinner, she picked a seat far from me where I wouldn't reach her. She squeezed in between Jimin and Chae making it

hard for me to talk to her.

That night I didn't sleep.

I was too worried of us.

And I'm too scared that she'll leave me.

This is the very first time that she ignored me to the core.

No words. Not even an eye contact. She treated me as if I'm an air which she cannot see.

And I deserve it. She has warned me before but I just took it for granted.

I was too hopeless that I didn't dare to confront her about the man she was with.

Right now, all I want is for us to be okay. I'll just deal with that matter after she's forgiven me.

The next day

End of field trip.

We all gathered at the lobby as we wait for the girls to get down. The buses were already out of the hotel ready to leave.

I consciously fixed my hair as I wait for Lisa to get down. Honestly I am scared as hell. My heart is beating too fast and my hands are sweating. I don't know if she'll talk to me. But I'm taking my chances and hoping that she calmed down.

Finally, famillíar faces of my students stepped out of the elevator.

My eyes scanned for Lisa and when I found her, Our eyes meet. I felt vibrations all over my body just having her beautiful big round eyes look at me. But sadly, she broke the eye contact and looked down.

I bet she'll be ignoring me again but I have decided to do everything just so she could forgive me. I'll apologize immediately if we reach our home.

I cleared my throat and announced "This is the final day of the field trip. I can see that everyone is around and with that we can finally leave."

My class nodded their heads and answered “Yes Mr.Jeon.” except for Lisa who’s still looking down at the floor. She probably find the tiles more beautiful than me.

Suddenly, a famillíar voice cut off our talk.

“I hope you enjoyed your stay here.” I looked at the owner of the voice and was surprised to see the CEO from the other day.

(A/n: Imagine Tae wearing this)

Why’s he here?

My female students squeaked when they saw him.

“Oh my god! So handsome!” I heard Chae’s voice from my side.

“Did you just call him handsome while I am here?” Jimin whispered but his girlfriend just rolled her eyes at him. They too are not in good terms just like me and Lisa.

“Why are you here?” I asked him as I glance between him and Lisa.

Don’t tell me he was the one she was with yesterday?

“You didn’t know? I own this place Mr.Jeon. Right Lisa?” he asked my girlfriend with a teasing smile.

What the fuck?

I could feel my blood boiling hearing this. So they really meet here? I stared at Lisa in disbelief.

Why would she meet this guy? What are they?

Is she cheating on me?

I could literally feel my whole self getting jealous over him.

And it’s frustrating that I wanted to hear her explanation about this but she won’t even talk to me.

“Good day Mr.Kim! Mr.Jeon, I’ll go ahead in the bus.” Lisa bowed at us before walking out of the hotel. Soon my other students followed her.i just warched them leave.

“What did you two do?” I asked the CEO when we were left alone.

If I’m not just a teacher accompanying students on a field trip, I would punch this man right now.

As if my question was unbelievable to him, he asked back. “Two? You mean Ms.Lisa and me?”

“Yes you. You were together yesterday.” I swear if he ever tried to make a move to Lisa, I’ll break his neck right now.

“Maybe… just ask her.” he smiled amusely at me.

The fuck?

“Just answer my question. Were you two together yesterday?”

Mr.Kim was about to open his mouth to answer when one of his staff walked to him.

He whispered on the CEO’s ear but I clearly heard it,

“Mr.Kim, time for your medicine.”

And just like that his cocky demeanor vanished and changed into a serious one. “See you in the future Mr.Jeon. I hope you had a great time staying here.” he politely said before leaving with 3 more staffs.

Unfortunately, I didn’t get any answer but I’ll make sure to sit beside Lisa during the ride so I can talk to her.

I was about to head to the bus when I heard voices out of the hotel doors talking.

“I know but I really feel that there’s something going on.” - Jin’s voice.

“You’re just hallucinating. Lis is just a teacher’s pet to him.” Hoseok’s voice answered.

“Dude, have you seen how Lisa reacted when Mr.Jeon was checking Ms.Eunbi out. You probably didn’t see it because all of you were staring at that teacher but I saw everything as I was with Ms.Jisoo. Lisa was staring the whole time at him and she stormed out after.” Jin’s voice again this time.

“Ahh..stop this you know. Mr.Jeon will be mad at us if he hears you saying this. There is nothing going on so stop it.” Hoseok sternly said and silence.

I peeked outside and they were already walking to the bus on the parking lot.

I realized that my students are already suspecting. I should’ve been more careful. I have 8 weeks left before graduation and I must do everything to protect our relationship in the coming weeks.

Lately, I have been careless about my actions towards Lisa but it’s really hard to control myself when she’s around.

“Jungkook-ssi, you’re still here. Are you riding with us?” Eunbi called from my back.

“No.”

She walked closer, “Aww..I thought you could come and—”

“Fuck off Eunbi. I had enough of this shit.” I said before leaving her there.

I walked to the bus and saw thay my class were already seated the same way as the last time.

My baby was at the back already sleeping.

I aighed before sitting next to Namjoon. As much as I wanted to talk to Lisa, half of the class are already suspecting us so I must hold myself.

Besides, it will just take 4-5 hours to travel from here back to our home. I can talk to her there.

We dropped in a fast food to have our breakfast but as again, Lisa managed to avoid me the whole time.

Also, the whole ride was as boring as fuck. I desperately wanted to talk to her so I sent her a couple of message but I recieved no response from her.

She’s really mad at me.

It was 3 in the afternoon when we reached home. I drove my car and Lisa just took a cab as we can’t ride my car car

together.

“Baby..” I called her when we both get in our house.

She finally faced me when we were in the living room.“Mr.Jeon, I will leave. Thank you for your kindness. I’ll make sure to repay you in time.”

Lisa’s words froze my whole body.

“What do you mean?” I took steps towards her as I stare at her serious face.

“I am breaking up with you and I am leaving.” her voice cracked at the word break up.

But did I heard her right?

Is she really breaking up with me?

“No..no..no..not this Lisa. You are not going anywhere!” I laughed in disbelief. This is not what I expected to happen. I thought we can settle our problem when we reach our home.

“I have warned you once but you didn’t listen. How many times do I have to warn you not to flirt with other girls?” she turn to walk away but I ran to her.

“Lisa..baby please listen. I know I made a mistake but breaking up is just too much. It was an honest mistake which I already explained.”

“Mr.Jeon, once your eyes set on other girls it’s already cheating. Do you know how much you hurt me?”

“I know..I understand how you feel but please don’t leave me. I don’t know how I will survive without you. Please Lisa…please?” I said as I grabbed her shoulders to look at me.

Lisa sighed and looked at me. Her eyes shown too many emotions in it. As if she’s battling with her own self if she’ll listen to me or not. “I need some time away from you.”

“Time away? How long? Where will you go?”

She only has her old shitty house and the orphanage to stay to. And I won’t let her go back to her house. It is too old and it may collapse soon.

“I don’t know how long. I just wanted to stay away from you for a moment. That way you can decide if you really want me to stay. Because the way I see it, It’s as if you are not contented with me.”

“Of course not Lisa..you are perf—”

“If I am perfect, you wouldn’t look at other girls.”

“Lisa, I already told you it was not that way. I was fantasizing you in her stead. Why won’t you believe me?”

“I don’t know what to believe Mr.Jeon. the fact that you know how insecure I am with my appearance yet you still fantasize me with other girl’s body is not making any sense.”

Lisa walked to the stairs completely ignoring me. I then chased her inside her room.

“Lisa please..don’t leave.” I really want to cry right now.

I watch her helplessly as she took her bag and stuff her clothes in it. And I swear it was the worst feeling ever. Seeing her leaving me like this.

I tried everything to persway her to stay but she didn’t listen.

I realized how much I hurt her when she really left me. Damn! I’m so stupid.

The only assurance I had was when she said “I will come back after you learned your lesson.”

I know she needs her space and I will let her be. But I will do everything to ger her back.

Author’s Note

Do you think Lisa’s decision is too much or Mr.Jeon deserves it?

By the way, this is not yet the climax of the story.

Playing Cupid

Lisa's POV

The way I held my self from running back to his arms to forgive him was undeniably hard.

My heart was definitely fighting with my own mind. The moment that I walked away was the same moment that I wanted to just kiss him, to embrace him and to tell him that I love him so much and I'm willing to let it go even if I was hurting.

But in the end, my mind won so I straightly walked away.

I can't let my feelings outwin my reasoning. Jungkook clearly cheated and even if his reason were true, it's still not enough of an assurance that he won't do it again.

So yeah. I had to leave him. Just for a day or two. If I see him again and he ask me to forgive him, I'm sure I will. I really wanted to forgive him now but he needs to learn his lesson first.

He's showing no effort in pushing that girl away and he needs to find ways on how to handle her. Because right now, I'm sure that the P.E. teacher will not stop until she gets him.

I kept walking on my way to the orphanage. It is the only place where I can be at peace. I know he knows that I'll head there but I honestly want him to know where I am so he can chase me anytime.

I'm stupid I know but this is the only way I can measure his loyalty to me. If he really loves me that much, he will do anything to get me back.

That night, I sleeped with the kids. I was about to close my eyes when I received a message.

I miss you. I hope you forgive me soon baby.

-Jk

A smile formed on my lips when I read his message. I felt giddy that fingers rushed to type a reply.

“I miss you too Jungkook.” but then I realized that it’s too early to fall under his charm. I quickly discarded my message and shook my head.

I can’t believe he’s charm can affect me like this. I swear one more message from him and I won’t hesitate to run to his house and kiss him senselessly. That’s how weak my heart is when it comes to Jungkook.

But as if my prayers were answered, my phone beeped again.

Another message from Jungkook?!!!

I almost squeaked from my bed as I swipe my phone but I frowned when the message was not from him.

“How are you? I hope you travelled safe.”

-KT

How did he get my number?

I almost forgot about our talk yesterday.

Mr.Kim must be the weirdest person I met. I mean who else aside from him would offer a hell of a big company to a person whom he doesn’t know.

I was brought back to our conversation last day when he said I should accept his company in the future.

I literally laughed for 30 minutes straight when he said it. I didn’t know he’s a good joker.

But he said he was not joking and he’s serious. He tried explaining things to me but I didn’t understand any word.

All I remember was that he mentioned his baby, an illness and I am remarkable.

My mind was running with thoughts of Jungkook cheating that I just pretended that I understood but I really didn’t.

The only clear sentence that I heard from him was that he'll wait till I graduate.

I nodded again. I think that he's probably asking me to become a babysitter. Something like that and who am I to refuse a baby? I love babies so I said yes.

I didn't respond to Mr.Kim's message but I stayed awake for Mr.Jeon.

I waited for one more message but I recieved nothing more. So, I decided to just sleep it off.

Class 3-C POV

It's been a week after the field trip and classes finally resumed.

Lisa and Mr.Jeon are still not in good terms. It is for the reason that Lisa got too busy with taking care of the orphaned children. She also took part time jobs at night just so she could suffice her needs.

Her mind was too occupied with the children and her jobs that she forgot that she's supposed to go back to him.

Mr.Jeon on the other hand was a mess. He find it hard to sleep at night without her by his side. Also he couldn't eat well. The whole week was miserable for the teacher. It was probably the worst punishment Lisa has given him.

But every night he would send her a message and Lisa would sometimes respond. He wondered how she can manage to stay away from him and survive that long. But he still gave her her needed space.

As of now, he's just waiting for her to come back. He's sure that he deserves her trust again as he finally talked to Eunbi and cleared things out.

It was a wednesday afternoon and the class was already over. Lisa took all of her things and walked out of the room to run to her part time job. If she'll not rush, she might be late and that's a deduction on her pay.

Mr.Jeon just stared at her leaving back with a frown on his face. He thought she would finally talk to him but she seemed

to have other plans for the day.

He sighed and took all of his books on the table. “I’m going class. See you tomorrow.” he walked out of the classroom with slumped shoulders. Of course, the class noticed this.

“Girl, have you noticed that there is wrong with Mr.Jeon?” Dahyun whispered at Tzuyu but the boys who were sitting close to them still heard her.

“Yeah. He’s kinda down lately.” Hoseok interfered.

“And even Lisa. Lately she’s been quiet and won’t even talk to us. She always goes home earlier than usual.” Tyuyu’s words silenced them all.

They were all suspicious of what is happening between the two.

“Mr.Jeon looks sad. Do you think there’s something that happened to them?” Jin asked.

“I have a feeling thar Mr.Jeon really likes her. Remember our stay at the hotel where he kept looking for Lisa. That time I was really suspicious that there is something going on. Maybe Mr.Jeon likes her but Lisa doesn’t.” Jeongyeon guessed.

Eunwoo silently listened as everyone shared their thoughts about the two. Jin, Dahyun, and Tzuyu guessed that they are in a relationship. Chae, Jimin and Jeongyeon thinks that Mr.Jeon likes her while Hoseok, Yoongi and Namjoon believes that there is nothing going on.

Eunwoo is the only one who knows the truth but he has promised Lisa to not tell them that’s why he kept his mouth shut and just let them do their investigation.

“But..if Mr.Jeon likes Lisa that means he’s cheating with Ms.Ji-eun?” Chae worriedly asked. She’s lowkey shipping her friend with their handsome teacher but she belives that it is very wrong for Mr.Jeon to really like her.

“Duhh are you late about the news? Mr.Jeon and the actress are long over?” Jeongyeon announced proudly as if she’s the best showbiz anchor in class.

“What?”

“Really?”

“No way?”

“Why?”

“Is this true?”

All of her classmates asked at the same time making her roll her eyes.

“I can’t believe you’re really late in all the drama. It was on twitter two days ago that Ms.Ji-eun has called it quits.” Jeongyeon dropped the bomb.

“Really? Poor Mr.Jeon. how can she dump him? He’s a very nice man.” Tzuyu said.

“I know right. Maybe she’s found another man. You know how good looking her co stars is.”

“So that means there’s a chance for Lisa and Mr.Jeon to happen?” Jimin excitedly asked like a teenage girl who’s shipping kpop idols.

“Why are you being excited over them?” Chae asked her boyfriend curiously.

“Because I want Lisa to have a boyfriend so that she can stop taking your attention and time from me.” Jimin clapped his hands as if it’s the best idea to happen. “And Mr.Jeon is matured enough to teach her to not be rude at me” he added.

“So we are all going to play cupid on them?” Tzuyu asked.

“Yes, let’s plan out something that can make them talk or know each other. Oh my god I feel butterflies just imagining them two together!” Dahyun’s eyes sparkled in excitement.

“But guys don’t you think it’s dangerous for student and a teacher to be in a relationship?” Namjoon asked calmly even though he’s really worried. He doesn’t want anything bad to happen to the two after what happened to Ms.Chungha.

“No it’s not. We’ll just keep it a secret. Right guys?” Jin added.

“Uhmm..keeping my mouth shut is the hardest part.” Jeongyeon joked and they all frowned.

“I swear to god Jeongyeon!” Jimin glared at her.

“I’m just joking. I know the risk okay.” she said as she laugh so hard.

“So what’s the plan guys? How can we play cupid to the two?” Chae asked. Even she is excited.

“How about we ask them to just date each other.” sleepy Yoongi replied. He wants to help but he’s too sleepy to suggest grand ideas.

“Psshh..what kind of a plan is that?” Tzuyu rolled her eyes but the man just shrugged and fell back to sleep.

“Let’s make them fall in love with each other by…”

“What if Lisa seduces Mr.Jeon and….”

“Mr.Jeon should take her abroad and marry her…”

“Trap them on a deserted island and….”

“Mr.Jeon should impregnate Lis….”

The class came up with lousy ideas and Eunwoo who knows everything just kept sighing.

But few minutes later and he can’t hold himself anymore. He really needs to speak.

“Guys guys!!!” finally he silenced all of them. They turn their attention to Eunwoo who’s already plastered a serious expression on his face.

“I think your ideas are weird. I have a feeling that they like each other already and they just had an argument. That maybe the reason why Lisa is always avoiding him and he is always down. So instead of making them fall, why not just make them talk. Like let’s have a class date. All of us and pair by pair we’ll leave until only the two of them is there.”

“Aww..baby you’re so smart!” Tzuyu smiled at him and he blushed in return.

Lately, things had blossomed between them. He knows he has no chance in Lisa so he tried his best to move on.

But when he got closer to Tzuyu, he came to admire her more. She's the very first girl he's been close to other than Lisa as he was always running from girls before. Now he wants to take chances on Tzuyu.

"Clever idea man!" Jin winked at him.

"But where will we have a Group date that they cannot escape?" Jimin asked.

"How about in an amusement park, we'll ride a ferris wheel by pair? Like me and Yoongi, Namjoon and Jin, Jimin and Chae, Tzuyu and Eunwoo, Dahyun and Jeongyeon. If we do that, Lisa and Mr.Jeon will be left with no choice but to ride it together? They'll be in an enclosed box that they will not be able to scape." The sunshine speak his brilliant idea making them clap their hands.

"Why are you so smart?" Namjoon laughed. He cannot disagree because the plan seem to be so good.

"Because I'm your hope.-Jhope" he proudly smiled.

They started laughing after that and soon the class were already setting date and location to realize the plan.

Jungkook's POV

"Hello mom?"

"Jungkook, where are you? We're already here at the venue" My mom's worried voice stopped me from driving. I had to pull over just to talk to her.

"I'm coming mom. Don't worry."

"We've been waiting for you. Come quick. The launching will start soon."

"Okay okay..I'm already on my way. I'll end the call so that I can drive."

"Are you with Lisa? Make sure to bring her here because your father is excited to meet her." he can definitely hear his mom's excitement on the other line.

“She’s not with me..she’s uhmm..she’s doing some projects for school and it’s urgent that’s why she can’t come.” I lied. I had too because I can’t let them know that Lisa and I are not in good terms right now.

Lisa really made a great impact to my mom that she can’t stop telling me to bring her at home and meet my father but how can I do that now? She won’t even talk to me.

The last message I recieved from her last night was just “Goodnight Mr.Jeon.” That’s just it.

“Aw..that’s sad to hear but we understand. She’s a student after all. Maybe next time Jk? Please bring her home.”

“I will mom. Promise.”

After the call ended, I drove straight to the venue where the launching of our new Hotel Chain is set to be held.

I parked my car and ran straight to the door when I accidentally bumped into someone.

“Ouch!” she grunted when she fell down. I quickly kneeled to help her up but when I saw her face, memories started flashing through me.

“Long time no see.” she smiled so sweetly at me.

Ji-eun?

□

Author’s Note

Readers, let me ask again from which country are you?

Together Again

Comments please

Jungkook's POV

"Ouch!" she grunted when she fell down. I quickly kneeled to help her up but when I saw her face, memories started flashing through me. She dusted out her skirt before facing me.

"Long time no see." she smiled so sweetly.

"Ji-eun?" I blinked as I stare at her pretty face. Seeing her this close made me realize just how beautiful she is.

How can a girl be this beautiful?

"How are you?" she shyly asked as if nothing bad had happened to us.

"I am fine. You?" I asked back. The tension was not there anymore. I suddenly forget what she did to me back in Australia.

"I'm fine too. I came here to support your parent's launching. They were too kind to invite me." Ji-eun looked down. "Look, about what happened in Australia…I'm really sorry..I was just scared to lose you and—"

"It's okay. It's all in the past. Let's forget about it." I said. I have forgiven her a long time ago.

"So that means we can be?"

"We can be friends Ji-eun." I finished her sentence.

But she looked disappointed, "Oh.."

"I'm going in. See you there." I said and turn to continue my search for my parents. I left Ji-eun outside even though I know it was rude of me.

One thing I learned from a week without Lisa is to never ever ever ever do something that will make her mad and

jealous or she'll leave me again and I swear I will go crazy if a day pass by again that she will not talk to me.

"Where is my future daughter in law?" father asked the moment he saw me alone.

"Mom, didn't you tell him that she's busy?" I asked my mother who's beside him.

"I already told him but he's not believing me." my mom chuckled.

"Well I want to see her soon so that I can tell her to give me grandchildren already." I rolled my eyes when I heard him say this. I'm really glad that Lisa is not around or she'll be frightened with my parents future plans.

I'm sure she doesn't want to be pregnant at an early age. And because of this talk, I remembered how stupid I am again.

Fuck! I came inside her again for the third time and I didn't even realized it.

I swear I'll get her pregnant if I keep on forgetting about using a protection.

Ughh..but it feels so good to cum inside Lisa. I swear it is heaven.

Just thinking about it reminded me how I wanted to feel it again. But she's been avoiding me for a week just because I was caught staring at a swimwear.

So no, even if Ji-eun is staring at me right now as I can see in my pheripheral vision, I won't look at her.

Just imagining Lisa's face right now scares the shit out of me.

I will never do the same mistake again.

Class 3-C POV

Saturday Night

"Guys, are you sure Lisa and Mr.Jeon are coming?" Tzuyu nervously asked her classmates as she check her wrist watch.

“Chae said she and Lisa are on the way.” Jimin announced at the group who are already at the amusement park waiting for the rest.

“How about Mr.Jeon is he coming?” Jin asked. He is also tensed. Nothing must go wrong. They have prepared everything for this and it must go on smoothly.

“Namjoon said they are on their way too.” Dahyun reported as she read Namjoon’s message on her phone.

“How about the telescopes?” Jimin asked.

“Why do we need telescopes when we have set CCTvs for us to see them?” Jeongyeon rolled her eyes at him. She really hates Jimin.

“Because there’s a chance that it won’t work. Ahhh..I really want to see what will happen there.” Jimin sighed frustratedly. He badly wants a telescope.

Earlier that evening, The boys was able to put up a CCTV in one of the ferris wheel capsules where they will push the two to ride. They paid an accomplice from the ferris wheel staff to help do the job.

It was Yoongi’s idea because he said telescopes are not efficient to use. Also he’s curious about the real score between his favorite teacher and Lisa.

The CCTV footage is connected to their phone meaning if things work out smoothly, they’ll be able to see them act around each other.

“Oh my gosh I’m so excited! What if they kiss each other?” Dahyun squeaked feeling all giddy.

“Nah..man-hater Lisa won’t let any guy from kissing her.” Jimin retorted.

“Oh shit they’re here!” Jin panicked when he spotted Namjoon and Mr.Jeon walking to their direction.

“Prepare your acting skills guys!” Jeongyeon whispered.

“Good evening Mr.Jeon!” the class greeted when he came to their side.

Mr.Jeon scanned the students looking for a specific girl but when he didn't see her, he frowned. "Where is Lisa?"

His students almost burst out in uwus when he asked for her specifically. He didn't even ask where Chae is meaning it is only Lisa he wants to see.

That moment, they confirmed that there is really something going on.

"They are coming sir. Chae and Lisa are on their way." Tzuyu answered while biting her lip just to stop herself from smiling too much.

Mr Jeon finally smiled when he heard that Lisa is coming. God, he misses her so much.

"Oh.. here they are!" Jimin smiled at his girlfriend who's also smiling ear to ear at him.

When Mr.Jeon spotted his girl, he can't help but feel warm and happy. Seeing her makes him feel at ease.

That's his girl right there. If he can only shout it infront of his class.

Lisa on the other hand was frowning. It was never her plan to come because she has a job for the night but Chae pulled a "you-don't-love-me-anymore" trick that's why she just agreed on joining them in the class date.

One more reason why Lisa doesn't want to come is that she's afraid to see her man up close. She misses him so much and she's worried that if she sees him, she'll not control herself from running to his arms.

That's something she's avoiding to happen because she can't let her classmates know the real score between them.

"Hi guys! Sorry were late!" Chae greeted and bowed to Mr.Jeon. Lisa bowed also just to act casual. But she didn't dare looking at the man's loving eyes.

The class noticed how Mr.Jeon's eyes fixed on her. Like ahe's the only person around. Even Yoongi, Namjoon and Hoseok felt the tension between the two.

It was Eunwoo who broke the silence. “Let’s go guys!”!he said and they all started walking.

“What the fuck?” Lisa mumbled when she noticed that her classmates walked in pairs. As in they were literally holding hands.

Yoongi and Hoseok

Namjoon and Jin

Jimin and Chae

Dahyun and Jeongyeon

Tzuyu and Eunwoo

What the hell are they up to? She asked herself. When she look at her side, Mr.Jeon also looked like he was flustered.

And then their eyes meet.

Lisa bit her lip and looked down while Mr.Jeon scratched his head.

How come they feel awkward now that they have done more than this?

He wanted to take her hand to hold but he fought against it because the class was around.

In the end, they just walk far from each other as if they don’t know each. They followed the class in all the rides but they make sure they are separated.

Finally, it was time for the main event. Chae acted like she wants to ride the ferris wheel which Lisa refused immediately. She’s scared of it in all honesty as she has fear in heights.

But Chae faked cried and had a long drama speech which hurt Lisa’s ear making her agree to her.

“Okay fine! I’ll ride with you Park Chaeyong!” Lisa said while rolling her eyes.

“Thank you so much! You really are my best friend.” she hugged her tight.

The class secretly smiled. Everything is falling according to plan.

Then pair by pair they ride each capsule.

But Lisa's eyes widen when she realized that it is only her, Chaeyoung, Jimin and Mr.Jeon left.

"The fuck don't tell me?" she bursted out when Jimin took Chae's hand.

"Hey! I will go with Chae!" Lisa grabbed Chae's hand but Jimin pulled his girl stronger.

"Na'a. She's mine Lisa. Just go and ride with Mr.Jeon" Jimin smirked and took Chae who's mouthing "Sorry Lis" to her.

Lisa didn't dare to look behind her when she was left by his handsome boyfriend/teacher.

She didn't even realized that Mr.Jeon was already smiling ear to ear as he can finally be alone with her.

One capsule opened before them and the staff spoke "This is the last one left. You can go in." the staff who was paid by the students to help on their plan said.

Lisa shook her head "No, I'm not com—"

But she was surprised when a hand took her wrists to pull her inside.

And just like that she was trapped inside with Mr.Jeon.

The ride started moving and Lisa managed to sit infront of him without looking at his eyes.

Little did they know that the CCTV footage was being played in the phones' screen of the whole class.

They were all focused on their phone as they wait what will happen. Unfortunately, it has no audio. But they can definitely see Lisa who is facing the camera completely.

This is it. Mr.Jeon thought. This is his opportunity to make a move so he cleared his throat as he stare at his girlfriend's beautiful face.

"Lisa.."

“Hmm..” his voice made her nervous. She was sweating all over just being alone with him.

And just like that, Lisa’s body defense weaken.

This is the man that owns her heart. No one else can make her heart beat crazy like this.

“I missed you. Don’t you feel the same?” his voice didn’t hide the sadness in him. He was really down not having Lisa by his side. It’s as if his life has no purpose in it without her.

Lisa bit her lip. Of course she misses him too. If he only knew how much she dreamt of him everynight but she’s not sure yet if he’s learned his lesson.

“I miss you too Jungkook.” she helplessly sighed before saying “I really hope you learned your lesson.”

Mr.Jeon smiled this time. At least he’s not the only one who misses her. “I learned my lesson Lisa. Trust me I will never do it again. So please come back to me. Please my love.”

The longing in his voice paired with his loving gaze made her heart flutter. She believes that his words were true so there’s no more reason to make things hard for the both of them.

“Come here.” Lisa smiled. Jungkook rushed to her side and embraced her so tight. So tight that she couldn’t breath. He smelled her hair and it was like his home.

Lisa embrace him in return. It feels so good to be inside his arms again. The way he cage her body in his strong arms will always be the sweetest gesture he can give her.

Mr.Jeon slightly pulled back to look at her face. “God I miss those lips.” he admiringly said as his eyes locked with her plump lips.

“Can I kiss you?” he asked. He was still worried to act loving around her as a way to not ruin her mood.

But Lisa doesn’t mind. She wants to kiss him too. “Then own it.” she answered with a teasing smile.

Mr.Jeon brushed her nose with his before crossing the gap. And when his lips landed on hers, it was perfect.

Oh how it feels so good to kiss him. Mr.Jeon feels the same.

They kiss slowly, passionately, affectionately. And it was the greatest feeling ever.

But Mr.Jeon was carried away that his hands started roaming around her body not caring if they are on a public ride.

No one would see them anyway as it was closed and they are moving in the air so why not heat things up?

A moan escaped Lisa's mouth when his lips travelled to the side of her neck.

She felt ticklish as he prepped her neck with gentle kisses. Then she shut her eyes close when one of his hand slid inside her shirt and stroke her hips.

"Jungkook.." she moaned again as he continued kissing her down to her chest.

"I want to feel you Lis." he was breathing heavily as he was consumed by longing.

Lisa looked around. "We can't do it here. What if someone sees us?" She tried to stop him even though her mind was hazy and her body was needy too.

She wanted to feel Jungkook that very moment but they were in a public ride. What if it stop at the bottom and everyone sees them doing it?

"It'll just be quick. Come on baby." his raspy voice whispered on her ear.

Lisa looked around first and bit her lip before asking. "How quick?"

Mr. Jeon smiled and kissed her lips before saying. "Right. You have never seen how fast I can be." his teasing smile and playful words excited her.

Just how awesome a quickie sex would feel like? She thought.

“Hmm..kay’” she replied tensely.

“I wish you were wearing a skirt so it would be easier but anyway. Shorts is better than pants.” he said as his hand move to the side of her denim shorts.

” Let’s remove this baby.” he whispered and Lisa lifted her hips to help him pull it down.

But before they can do it, they were interrupted by a phone call.

Mr.Jeon quickly took his phone to see who’s interrupted their heated moment.

Namjoon is calling…

“It’s Namjoon.” Mr.Jeon answered Lisa’s questioning look.

“Answer it.” she said as she fix her self up.

“Hello?”

“Mr.Jeon, sorry to interrupt you but Hoseok fainted. We need to bring him to the hospital.”

Author’s Note

The last side story is up.

In this story, who do you think is the character that will create the biggest problem to them?

A. Ji-eun

B. Mr.Kim

Class Sunshine

**Comments please hahaha **

Let's have a guessing game who among the students speaks the following lines.

Class 3-C POV

The class focused at their phone screens with full of anticipation of what'll happen. As of the moment, only Lisa is in view and they can't see Mr.Jeon.

"Ughh! Lisa is not talking. She's just stairing outside." Jimin sighed as he noticed that Lisa seemed to be uninterested with their teacher.

"There..she finally faced Mr.Jeon's direction!" Jeongyeon pointed out. The class wears ear pieces to converse with each other. And it is probably the silliest decision they could come up with as they look like wrestling commentators.

"Oh my God! What are they talking?" Dahyun squeaked. She doesn't want to miss anything that's why she's not blinking.

"Shhh..quiet! I can't concentrate." Yoongi's annoyed voice was heard on their ear piece.

"Oh my god!!! They are really talking to each other!" Chae screamed as she shook Jimin's shoulder.

"Jimin, silence your girlfriend! I'm trying hard to read Lisa's mouth" Jin whined.

"I wish Mr.Jeon court her so that they can be together! That would be perfect right babe?" Tzuyu said.

She can't help but smile at her phone screen. On the other hand, Eunwoo was just quietly watching on his own phone.

"What the fuck! She smiled! Oh shit Oh shit! He sat beside her!!!!"

“What are they talking about?”

“They look like they’re close.”

“What’s the real score?”

“I swear everything is fast!”

“OH MY GOOODDDDDDDDDDDDDDDD!!!”

The whole class screamed when they finally witnessed the two kiss.

“They are kissing! I can’t!”

“What the fuck!”

“How the???”

“What is Happening?”

“Guys! I can’t breath!”

Shhhhh”

“Guys, I really can’t breath!”

“Shhh…shut your mouth Hoseok.”

“Damn! Mr.Jeon is kissing the man-hater Lisa! I can’t believe it.”

“Guys…”

Silence followed when the two on screen started kissing passionately.

“Oh shit! Mr.Jeon’s hands are on her—”

“Shut up Yoongi!”

“Damn! He’s kissing her neck!”

“What the fuck?”

“Is it okay to have a boner?”

“Ewww!”

“Just kidding but look how good a kisser Mr.Jeon is.”

“I think they are already in a relationship guys.”

“Guys, I can’t breath”

“Oh gosh! Mr.Jeon is wild.”

“Lisa is on Euphoria.”

“Holy shit! His hands are inside her shirt!”

“Don’t tell me they are about to..”

“Guys..I can’t breath anymore.”

“This is live porn.”

“Pornhub is shaking”

“Shut up Jimin!”

“What? I have a feeling they’re about to do it.”

“Now I feel shy.”

“I think we should turn our cameras off.”

“Nah…I’m living for this.”

“Oh shit! J-hooooopppppeee” Namjoon screamed.

“What happened?”

“He fainted.”

“What? Call Mr.Jeon!”

The class found their way to the nearest hospital where Hoseok was rushed.

Lisa was on the verge of crying when she saw her dearest friend unconscious. The nurses said it was not an ordinary case of passing out and they need to run some test on him.

That worried them all.

Mr.Jeon took glances of his crying girlfriend. He couldn’t help but be guilty of what happened. Being their guardian that time, he blames himself for what happened to Hoseok.

Mr.Jeon walked back and forth as they waited for results. He glanced again at his students who are silently waiting for results too. Theu all look tired.

It was already 10 in the evening and he thought they all needed rest so he called Namjoon who was also tensed the whole time.

“Namjoon, I want you and your classmates to go home now. I will stay here and wait for the result.” he spoke calmly even though his heart was racing in worry.

“But Mr.Jeon, Hoseok needs us and we won’t leave you alone.” he tried to refused.

“It’s okay. Hoseok’s mother is coming anytime soon. Right now, I want you all to take a rest. I promise I will give you an update once I talk to the doctor.”

“But Mr.Jeon—”

“Please Namjoon. Your classmates are probably tired now. Don’t worry about me and Hoseok. Everything will be fine.” he assured him.

Namjoon took a deep sigh before bowing to the teacher. He faced his classmates and told them the teacher’s decision. And even if they’re all worried, they still followed him. All of them bid the teacher goodbye and when it was Lisa’s turn, she can’t help but feel worried of him.

She also needs his warmth. She needs his comfort but they cannot do it infront of everybody.

All she could do was bow “Mr.Jeon, I hope you send us an update soon.” she politely asked.

Her words has double meaning in it. It was her way to ask him Hoseok’s result and also her way of telling him to call her later.

Mr.Jeon understood her words and so he gave her his comforting smile. “I will, don’t worry.”

Little did the couple know that the class understands their small talk. After witnessing them kiss in the ferris wheel, they’ve concluded that the two are really in a relationship.

But no one dared to talk. They still acted as if they don’t know a thing. That’s their one way of helping the two to not get awkward.

Besides, they cannot tell their teacher that they purposefully placed a CCtv inside. Mr.Jeon would sue them for sure.

The class went home leaving Mr.Jeon alone, soon a woman who looked exactly like Hoseok came running to him.

Her face was damp with tears and her hair was messy as if she had not time to comb it. “Are you Mr.Jeon? Where is my son?” she asked.

“His still inside the lab room. We are still waiting for the result from his doctor.” he explained.

“Oh my god! I’m so worried. What happened to him?” she asked.

Mr.Jeon explained everything that happened and after his brief explanation, the doctor finally faced them.

“Are you the guardian of the patient?” he asked.

“Yes..yes..I’m his mother. I’m Mrs.Jung.”

“And I’m his teacher. I’m Mr.Jeon.”

“Please come with me. I need to discuss the results.” he lead them to his clinic and when they sat infront of his table, his facial expression turned into a serious one. Even Mr.Jeon felt that there is something wrong.

“Doctor how is my son?” Mrs.Jung worriedly asked.

The doctor sadly smiled at the woman. “I hope you take this news calmly.” he paused and stared at the woman’s pale face. “Mrs.Jung, your son has a Chronic obstructive pulmonary disease. It is a long-term, progressive lung disease that makes breathing difficult.”

“What? What is it?!!”

“Is it serious doctor?” Mr.Jeon butt in. He’s now getting anxious.

“It is a serious disease. We call it COPD. Sadly, there’s no cure for COPD, but its progression can be slowed with medication. And its medication will cost a lot Mrs.Jung.” and just like that, the bomb that he dropped made the woman question if everything is real or just a dream.

“What do you mean that there’s no cure? Are you telling me that my son is dying?” she freaked out at the sudden news.

“I’m so sorry for the traggic news.” he apologetically bowed.

That made her break down. She started crying helplessly. Mr.Jeon who was beside her managed to embraced the broken mother.

Even him, cried. He could not believe that this dying student is the same student who always brings them sunshine.

The room was soon filled with a mother’s cry. Mr.Jeon asked the doctor how long the treatment can prolong his life as he was willing to finanace everything.

He knows that Hoseok’s mother is just an average -earner employee and she couldn’t afford the treatment so this is his only way of helping.

“The treatments will help him survive for a couple of years. Also, he is not allowed to be in a place where he can be exposed to second hand smoke and other lung affecting fumes. If possible, make him stop schooling for now.” the doctor explained and Mr.Jeon nodded.

“I’ll take care of it. Thank you for your hard work doctor.” he bowed.

After talking, Mr.Jeon and Mrs.Jung finally came up with plans for him to help her. He assured that he can still graduate even if he’ll miss the remaining days of classes. He also explained that he will take care all the finances.

Even though her heart was shattered by the news, Mrs.Jung still thanked him for helping them financially. She admit that she cannot pay for everything as she’s just working in a factory while supporting her son alone. Because his father died a long time ago.

An hour later, they were already inside Hoseok’s room. He’s gained consciousness for a minute but he came sleeping again as he was too tired.

He doesn’t even know the news yet and that makes it more heartbreaking. How can they tell him they sad news? How can they break his heart? How can they turn his happy smile into a frown?

“Do you know that my son is always speaking about you?” Mrs.Jung broke the silence inside the room. She was seated beside Hoseok’s bed as Mr.Jeon was sitting by the small couch near the door.

“Me?” he asked, pointing to himself.

“You are my son’s inspiration. He has always dreamt to be a dance teacher ever since he meet you. You see, he loves dancing that he really wanted to be a dancer since he was young. But after he met you, it changed. Suddenly he wanted to teach. He wished to share his knowledge in dancing.”

Mr.Jeon smiled and was touched with the mother’s confession. He can’t believe that he will have this impact on his student. But the information just frustrated him more. As he cannot fullfill his dream because of the fatal disease.

“I’m really sorry Mrs.Jung. I can’t help you on this.” his voice cracked as his tears streamed on his face but he wiped it away completely when he realized that he should be strong for his student.

He can’t cry now.

“Don’t be. This might be God’s wish. He is God’s possession after all and I was just blessed that I came to nurture and guide him. He’s so kind Mr.Jeon even God wants him on his side.”

“I know. But don’t lose hope. There can be miracle if we believe.” his words washed her hopelessness.

“Yes, we must not lose hope. My son would always say this everyday. ‘Mom, don’t lose hope cause I’m you’re hope’.” she chuckled as she immitate her son’s voice.

Mr.Jeon laughed softly too. His gaze moved to his sleeping sunshine. He walked to him and carressed his hair gently to not wake him up.

“Please fight this disease away Hoseok. I’m counting on you. I know you can do it.” he whispered.

Mr.Jeon went home at midnight. He was in a rush to reach home because he’s been holding his tears for hours now.

He wanted to shout, he wanted to cry, he wanted to curse. But he cannot do it in the hospital.

He strode to his room and wished that Lisa was there so that he can burry his face on her chest and just cry there.

But he knows that she's still staying at the orphanage for the night. That's what she said a while ago in a text. And not having Lisa by his side, saddens him more.

Mr.Jeon's tears started running on his cheeks when he opened the door to his room. Finally he cried so hard.

"Baby? Why are you crying?" Lisa's worried voice echoed inside the room. And when he looked up, he saw her there in his bed sitting as if waiting for him.

"Lisa?" he asked. He couldn't believe he will still see her this night. Or is he just imagining things?

"Yes, I am here. What happened?" she got up and took steps to him but Mr.Jeon didn't wait any longer.

He crossed the gap and embraced his love tightly. Lisa's arms sneaked around his torso. She started rubbing his back as a way to comfort him. She's hurt seeing him cry like this. Maybe it is about Hoseok.

Mr.Jeon let his sorrow show when he felt Lisa's warmth. He cried in her while embracing her for a long time.

After a while, Lisa gently guided him on the bed and helped him take off his clothes and shoes. Soon she joined him on the bed and cuddled with him.

There were no words uttered between the two but they still understood each other. Lisa understands that he needs her so she embraced him to calm him down.

Mr.Jeon felt contented. His heart was at peace as soon as she stroked his hair.

Mr.Jeon thought that as long as Lisa is with him, he's assured that he can take any problem that life will throw at him.

□

Author's Note

Side stories are finally done.

Next chapter is a snippet of POVs from all the characters so that you can have and idea what's happening to them.

And also to have a gasp of what's inside Mr.Kim and Ji-eun's mind.

Receiving Text

Class 3-C POV

A week after

Class, let's pay J-hope a surprise visit tomorrow.

-Mr.Jeon

Dahyun

Dahyun smiled when she read the teacher's message. It was the very first time he texted them as he just contacts Namjoon when he needs to tell them something.

Mr.Jeon was used to it as it was only Namjoon whom he trusted back then but now it came to a point where he trusts all of his students so he decided that he will be the one to message them if he needs to.

"Dahyun, come here quick. Help me set up the table for breakfast." she heard her mom call from the kitchen.

"Coming mom!" she sent a reply to Mr.Jeon first before walking to her mom who was already cooking.

Back then, they have chefs to do their breakfast but after the family's business' bankruptcy, their lifestyle changed drastically.

Over the course of the hardship, their family still managed to see the good side in it as they developed closer bond. Just like now, they are laughing as they were preparing their meal. Soon her dad joined them and they all had a warm breakfast.

Dahyun smiled genuinely at her parents. She's really contented this past few days. To her, It doesn't matter if she's not the class sponsor anymore as long as she can get to spend time like this with her family.

Eunwoo

Eunwoo was walking to the pastry shop near their house when he recieved the teacher's message.

He quickly typed a reply saying that he will be coming. He can't wait to visit Hoseok who is now resting in their home.

Then he recieved a message from his girlfriend. "Babe, are you coming?" his face automatically lit up after reading Tzuyu's message.

"Yes I am, let's go there together. Okay?"

"Okay. See you babe."

He pushed his phone back to his pocket and started walking slowly to buy a cake for dessert.

Back then, he cannot walk this neighborhood peacefully as he was always chased but his fangirls. But after his talk with Lisa, his life changed.

He's not sure what really happened but there are no more girls chasing him now. The girl who he recognizes as the craziest in all of them even managed to apologize to him personally.

Thankfully, he was finally relieved of his hearthrob's curse. He can now freely walk, enjoy their neighborhood's fresh air without worrying of saesangs.

He thought that Lisa might be his real lucky charm. And because of this, he sweared to protect his friend's relationship with their teacher.

Jeongyeon

She was contemplating whether to reactivate her Gossip account or not.

She kept staring at her phone the whole morning when suddenly, her phone buzzed with her teacher's name on screen.

"Holy shit!" she crused as she was startled. He read his messaged before typing. "Copy, sir."

Seeing his name alone reminded her of their talk. She realized just how stupid it is for her to consider reactivating her Gossip account when it was Mr.Jeon's number 1 rule to

never spread rumors, false accusations etc. again especially if it's about other people.

So yeah. She closed her eyes before pressing

Permanently Delete Account.

Namjoon

"Son, have you submitted it already?" his mom asked after Namjoon sent a reply to Mr.Jeon.

"Yes mom, I sent my College Exam Application via email last night." he said.

"Good! I really hope you get accepted to this dream university of yours Joonie." his mom said as she sat beside him on their couch.

"I hope so too mom. I will do my best to pass. Don't worry."

"I'm so proud of what you have become and I'm so sorry for all the stressed that I had caused you." His mom's eyes started tearing up again.

After knowing Namjoon's thoughts back at Mr.Jeon's house, his mom changed. This time, she's not pushing him to his limits anymore.

She's even agreed when he told her that he wanted to be a teacher and not a doctor which she's always wished of him to become.

And Namjoon's so happy that she's been supporting him with his dream. He really wanted to become a teacher like Mr.Jeon and inspire his students just like how he inspired the class.

Chae and Jimin

"I want to cry!" Jimin's eyes welled in tears when he saw the result.

"Is that a happy reaction or a disappointed one?" Chae asked while crossing her chest as she faces her boyfriend who's sitting by the bed.

“What are you saying? I even want to jump off of this huge house of yours because I’m so happy.”

“Then why did you say you want to cry?” Chae pouted. She’s being emotional lately and everything makes gives her reasons to cry.

“I want to cry out of happiness. I couldn’t believe we can create an angel!” he smiled as he walked to his pouting girl. “And I’m sure my parents will be happy.” he added before pecking on her nose.

“Well what else would happen if you’re doing it to me almost every night.” she rolled her eyes at him but he just laughed.

“Cause you’re so irresistible you know. But Love, I will marry you after the graduation okay? I hope your parents agrees to it.” Jimin looked at her with eyes full of love. He couldn’t wait to be tied with her forever.

Marrying never came to his mind back then. But when he met Chae, it changed as he now wants to be a husband to her. And now that he got her pregnant, the happier he is.

“I’m sure they’ll be happy. They like you remember.” she smiled when his hands rubbed her still flat tummy.

Chae’s parents has finally reconcilled. Her mother signed the divorce papers to finally free herself from the stressful marriage.

This time, Chae accepted the decision of her parents. She thought it’s just but fair to let her parents decide on this. Besides, they act civil to each other. And maybe It’s all for the better.

“Then we got no more problem left. We’ll just wait after we graduate and I’ll promise I will give you the most romantic wedding you deserve.” Jimin’s eyes sparkled just imagining his girl on a wedding dress.

“Promise?” she asked with hopeful eyes. She really wanted to marry him and have a family with him even though sometimes he’s being a jerk.

“I promise my love.” Jimin was about to kiss her when both of their phone vibrated. And that’s when they read Mr.Jeon’s message. Both typed a reply that they are coming.

Bambam

The family’s business is thriving. It was really a leap of success for their family but sadly, It’s been a month that he haven’t seen her.

On the first weeks in the US, Bambam had always asked updates ubout Lisa. His thoughts were always filled of her even if she’s miles away.

But a week ago, he had heard from Jeongyeon a very heartbreaking news. It is about Lisa and Mr.Jeon’s relationship.

He cried for days and thought he could’ve been him if he just didn’t leave her. But even though his heart was broken. He still find joy in the fact that Lisa is in the great teacher’s arms.

To Bambam, Mr.Jeon is a perfect man. He’s assured that Lisa is in good hands.

Right now, he’s trying his best to move on. But if it ever happens that their relationship fail, he will not hesitate to take Lisa from him.

He’s also known about Hoseok’s disease. And as away to comfort him, Bambam would call him every night just to chat about random things. He wants to make him smile as it was Hoseok who always makes the class smile for three years.

Tzuyu

She was about to brush her hair when her mom came in her room.

“Princess, breakfast is ready. Come and join us.”

She looked at her mom hesistantly, “But mom, I haven’t brushed my hair yet. And I need to change to my dress and I nee—”

“You don’t need to. You are perfectly beautiful wether you brush your hair or not. So come and join me and your father.” her mom smiled at her before leaving.

It’s been weeks since her mother acted like this and it still weirds her out. She could still remember back then that she would be scolded if a single hair strand is out of its place. But now her mom cares less about her appearance.

Mr.Jeon’s words really hit her mom that she changed her ways of parenting. But she’s glad that her mom did ‘cause she can finally breath now.

But old habits die hard as she still want to look good before joining her parents for breakfast.

Tzuyu took her brush and still brushed her hair. She wants to pretty herself not because her mother told her to but because she wants to look good as it’s her way of getting confidence.

She was about to walk out of her room when she recieved a message from her teacher. She smiled and quickly texted her boyfriend’s number after reading the plan.

Tzuyu wants to go and visit their sunshine with Eunwoo and her classmates. She then sent her teacher a reply.

Yoongi

Yoongi and his dad was about to go out for a morning basketball match when he recieved a message from his teacher. “Expect me to come Mr.Jeon” he typed and sent it to his favorite Mr.Jeon.

“Son, I forgot to tell you that I bought you this jersey. It was really hard to get a sign of you favorite player but the luck was on me yesterday.”

“No way?” his eyes widen when he heard his father say this. And he almost squeaked like a crazy fangirl when his father showed him the jersey.

“Thank you! Thank you dad! Thank you so much for this.” Yoongi teared up but his father was able to ruffle his hair and chuckle.

“This is nothing compared to what you’ve been through. I’m sorry for everything.” he sincerely apologized making his son smile.

“Yeah..we should go and play basketball dad before we cry like pussies.” he joked and they both laughed their hearts out.

Jin

Jin was in pretty good mood after ending an early call from Jisoo. She just invited him out again for a tea and of course he replied with a yes.

They are not in a relationship yet because he is still in high school. On the other hand, Jisoo told him that they can be good friends and he could pursue her when he start college.

For the both of them, age just doesn’t matter. He’s so in love with teacher Jisoo that he don’t mind even if she’s 7 years older than him.

And he’s promised himself that he will do his best to make her his after he graduate.

After putting his phone on the side table, his phone buzzed as he recieved a message from Mr.Jeon, he typed a reply because he wanted to join in visiting his dearest friend.

Hoseok is just resting in their house while Mr.Jeon hired a private nurse and a call-in doctor for him that’s why he’s been monitored and taken care well.

Jin really admire his teacher’s love for all of them that’s why he supports him and his relationship with Lisa. To Jin, his teacher deserves the best girl to love him back and Lisa is the perfect one for it.

Jungkook’s POV

I caught Lisa texting by the driver’s seat when I came back from buying us a take out breakfast.

“Who are you texting?” I couldn’t hide the jealousy in my voice when I sat on the passenger’s seat.

“I’m sending you a reply because you sent us a group message so please don’t be jealous of yourself because the

hole in your nose is getting bigger.” she chuckled.

I scratched my head in embarassment. “I thought you were texting somebody else.” I admitted.

“Why would I do that?” she asked but I didn’t answer her.

Last night, I just read a message on her phone. It was a message asking how is she. And i’m sure that the guy was trying to make a move on her. So I deleted the message and blocked the number without telling Lisa about it.

“Nothing. I just want to tell you that I get jealous easily so please avoid on conversing with other man.”

“I won’t of course but hey, I’m hungry already. Shall we head home?” she asked, glancing at the take out that I am holding.

“Yes, let’s go.”

“Should I still drive back home? I’m still not confident about my driving.” she pouted making her cheeks go round.

“You’re a great driver. I couldn’t even believe that you will learn this fast.”

Ealier this morning, I began teaching her to drive her own car and just two hours later, she started driving like a pro.

She smirked.“Maybe I just got lucky.”

“I am luckier because I have you.” I whispered as I lean to give her a french kiss.

“Hmmmnn”

Damn.

The way she moans in my mouth makes me horny.

“Baby, how about we try car sex? Would you like that?” I asked her as I look around the parking lot.

I could feel my breathing getting heavier just watching her beautiful face up close.

“I would love too but I’m on a period.”

Her reply made me frown. I thought I had gotten her pregnant already after having unprotected sex for four times now.

“Does you period come regularly?” I asked.

“Yes. It always does.” she answered innocently.

Oh God.

Don’t tell me she’s……

Barren?

No.

No no no.

I pushed the negative thought away.

She is not.

She will be pregnant when the right time comes.

Maybe she’s just unfertile every time we make love.

Yeah.

That’s it.

We will have a family.

We will make beautiful children in the future.

I’m sure of it.

I kept telling myself these words as we travel back home. I didn’t dare told Lisa about my thoughts as I know it will just worry her.

So far, our relationship has been going on smoothly and I won’t ruin it with a negative thought like this.

Everything will be perfect between us.

I’m sure of it.

□

Author’s Note

Thoughts about the chapter?

I wouldn’t mind reading lenghty and back to back page essays of thoughts guys.

Ex's Visit

Lisa's POV

"Good morning my love!" Jungkook's bunny smile welcomed me in the morning when I woke up.

"Good morning! What's with the new endearment?" I asked cause he usually calls me baby but not love.

"I just want to call you that because I love you." he replied before hovering over me. I became a giggling mess when he started kissing my face down to my neck.

"Jungkook stop! It tickles." my eyes are now tearing up from too much laughing.

"Say you love me too or else I'll eat this." I let out a squeak when he cupped it down between my thighs.

"Okay okay..I love you? I love you too Jungkook. There's no need to eat that. I can make real food. Do you want me to make you a breakfast?" I asked him.

He's really being playful right now. His continues kissing my neck I mean sucking on it which worries me as for sure he's leaving hickeys again.

"Let's cuddle first before we go down. I'm not yet hungry. You?" he asked. Jungkook lay down beside me again and pulled me to him and let me rest in his arm.

"Not yet too. But if we don't go down now, this kissing will lead to something else so let's go now." I let myself out from his embrace then walked to the door.

"Hey…don't leave me." I heard his voice as he rushed to me.

Minutes later, we were already down in the kitchen. I presented to cook while he became a baby koala on my back.

His arms around me, face rests on my shoulder as he watches me cook.

Sometimes he would steal kisses on my cheeks and it was really fun. I pretended that I don't like it when in fact I enjoy what he does.

But Imagine how hard I laughed when I felt him growing down there as it is pressed on top of my ass.

"I can't believe you are getting horny just watching me cook." I teased him and he pouted.

"I get horny even just watching you do your homework." he grinned. Gosh, he's so handsome.

"Too bad. I'm still on my period." My period usually lasts for 3 days and today is my third. So I guess I can satisfy him tomorrow.

He groaned, "I hate your period. I hate that you still have your period." his tone sounded sour so I look at him.

"What do you mean you hate thar I still have my period?" I asked, but he just shook his head and gave me a tight lipped smile.

"Nothing baby. Just continue cooking." he replied with a low voice. After that he became silent. Though he was still hugging my back I could still feel his change of mood.

When we started eating, I have noticed that he's barely touching the food.

"Baby?" I called, I know he loves being called a baby so I had to do it to get an answer. "Is everything okay?"

Jungkook lifted his face from his plate. "Yeah..I uh..I'm fine."

I gave him a questioning look "Seems not like it. What's the problem? Is the food bad? Or is it because we can't have sex? We can do it tomorrow as it's my last day today." I suggested as I try to lighten up his mood.

"No..the food is great as usual and I can wait. It's just.."

“It’s just?” I tilted my head as I look at him. It’s as if he wants to say something very important but he’s just hesitating.

“Lisa, I want to have a family with you. I mean not yet now because you’re young. Maybe in the future…” he shyly scratched his head after saying it.

I don’t know but I blushed really hard after knowing that he wants to build a family with me.

I mean this is the great Jeon Jungkook asking a future with me right?

So it just only means he wants me to carry his future children and it would be an honor. A great honor.

“Of course.” I smiled “I want to have a family with you too Jungkook.”

Just thinking about bearing Jungkook’s child excites me to the core.

“So..uhm..you don’t mind it everytime we don’t use protection?”

“Protection?” I asked.

“Yes, protection during sex. I always cum inside of you. There’s a probability that you’ll be pregnant.”

“Ohh..that..Uhm.. I haven’t thought about that actually.” I admit that I’m too lost in ecstasy when we do it that I forget it’s probable result.

“You mean you don’t mind being pregnant now even if you’re just 18?” he asked again.

“I mean I trust you enough to worry about such thing. And I wouldn’t mind what life offers me in the future as long as it is with you.” my answer to his question made him smile ear to ear. The kind of smile that shows that he’s happy that he’s contented.

“Thank you Lisa.” he let out a relived sigh.

“Thank you for what?” why is he being emotional?

“For trusting me, for loving me. I can’t wait to spend the rest of my life with you. We got few weeks before the graduation and after that we can freely express our relationship to the whole world.”

“I know right. I can’t wait for that day to finally happen.”

I could just imagine the best days coming after the graduation. Imagine Jungkook and I going out as a couple without worrying about other people.

“Come here baby. I want a hug.” he open his arms wide for me. I walked to him and he made me sat on his lap. “Tomorrow, my parents are expecting you at dinner.”

What the fuck?

“What? Why?” I stood from his lap but he pulled me back.

“Don’t panic. Believe me, they are very kind and sweet. I’m sure you’ll like my father too.”

“But…what if he don’t like me? I’m just—”

“Shh..stop worrying. Everything will be fine. Remember that I will be there for you.” Jungkook kissed my cheek after saying those words.

“What should I wear? I only have tshirts.” I pouted.

“My parents wouldn’t mind how you look. Just wear the comfortable ones. But if you want to wear a dress, I can buy you.”

“No..no.. Thank you but no.” I don’t want him spending for me again. The car was already too much.

“So you’ll come with me baby?” Jungkook asked again.

“I…I will.” I nervously answered.

That morning we talked about his family especially his father. He explained that he’s father is the kindest of all human kinds which lessened my anxiety. Finally I can meet his father that part of me is excited.

In the afternoon, Jungkook left for his check up. He always sets monthly check ups as a way to monitor his health.

At first I wanted to come but he didn't let me. He said there's a high chance that we would be caught because his doctor is the same as Mr.Yang's. So I just stayed.

After Jungkook left, I just focused in cleaning the whole house.

I was already mopping the floor in the living room when the doorbell rang.

Is it Jungkook?

Doesn't he have a key?

I tilted my head and slowly walked to the door.

What if it's a theif? a rapist? a killer?

But what if it's his parents?

The thought of Jungkook's parents made me open the door.

But when I opened it, I was wrong.

She's not a thief, nor a rapist or a killer. She's just the person who owned my man's heart for how many years.

"Ji-eun? I mean Ms.Ji-eun?" she looked at me from head to toe. I can tell she was surprised by my presence too.

"Who are you? Where is Jungkook?" she studied my face down to my toes and felt belittled.

"Uhm..uh.." should I tell her that I'm Jungkook's girlfriend? But what if Jungkook gets mad at me?

I decided to play it safe. "I am his student. I work here." I lied.

"Oh..I remember you. So you still lives here?" she asked.

"Uh..yes..Ms.Ji-eun." I stuttered. Damn she's so pretty. I probably look like a rag infront of a rose right now.

"Well..where is he?" he tried looking past me as she searches for him.

"Mr.Jeon is out for a check up. He said he'll be back in the evening. Is there anything you want?" I asked.

If I could only ask her ‘Is there anything you want from my BOYFRIEND?’ Because if she dares to take him away from me, I’ll jump on her this very moment.

“Nothing, I just wanted to talk about something important.” she said. “I’ll just go back next time.”

I almost slumped down the moment she left. I don’t know but I got really scared.

What does she want?

I thought they had called it quits already?

Is she trying to win him back?

What if Jungkook takes her back?

I swear I will lose my mind right now.

I was too close to breaking out out of jealousy that I decided to call Jungkook.

I need his words. I need his comforts to stop myself from having these negative thoughts.

“Jungkook..” I called out when he answer.

“Lisa? Why? Are you crying?” he asked the moment he heard me sobbing. His voice sounded worried.

“Ji-eun…she..she..”

“Ji-eun? What did she do? Did she hurt you?”

“No..she came here and was looking for you. Jungkook I’m scared.” I cried against the phone again.

“No..no..don’t be..Stop crying baby, I’ll be back soon.” just hearing Jungkook’s words calmed me down so easily.

“Please come back soon..”

“I will. I’m now on my way home. So please stop crying. Nobody’s taking me away from you okay?”

“Even Ji-eun?”

“Even Ji-eun. Lisa trust me okay? I’m heading straight to you.”

“Okay…”

“I’ll end the call now baby cause I need to drive. See you at home. I love you!”

“I love you too Jungkook.”

Jungkook’s POV

After giving my semen sample to the doctor’s staff, I sat infront of the doctors table.

I thought it would be hard to masturbate inside the clinic but just imagining Lisa’s face, her amazing body, her beautiful moans, I already came in exploding like a volcano that I almost filled the sterile cup.

“Your result will be out in 20 minutes.” Dr.Won said. “You can just wait here Mr.Jeon.” He said pointing to the sofa inside the clinic.

“Thank you doctor.” I sat and took my phone as I wait for the result.

I took a sperm analysis test today as I was being anxious of what I learned from Lisa. We had been in a relationship for more or less a month and had unprotected sex but I found it weird that I didn’t got her pregnant yet.

It was never my intention anyway to impregnate her but I’m still worried of it. What if there’s a problem with her or me?

So I decided to do this test without telling Lisa. Because I don’t want her to be worried over something like this.

I scrolled through my phone to entertain myself while I wait. I was planning to play some games when my fingers travelled to my gallery of photos.

A smile instantly crept to my lips when I scrolled down thousands of stolen pictures of Lisa.

I would always take pictures of her when she’s asleep because she’s so cute when she is.

My baby is so beautiful and lovely. No one can compare. And she’s mine and she even agreed to make a family with me. Just how lucky I am?

She’s the goddess of the goddesses. I kept admiring her photos when my eues caught something.

It was one particular picture of Lisa. I looked around first before zooming in. She was halfly naked while sleeping peacefully in the bed.

She was laying by her stomach, a soft white sheet covers her bum. I took the picture the night I told her about Hoseok’s disease.

We both ended up crying in each other’s arms and it led to us having sex.

That was the fourth time we had unprotected sex and I came in so hard inside her again. That time I was really sure that I would get her pregnant.

It was a beautiful night with her that I decided to took her photo and—

“Mr.Jeon, you’re result is here.” Dr.Won came back holding a paper.

I tensedly walk back to sit on the chair infront of his table and read the result.

“So far, your sperm count is normal. Everything is fine and your sperm is healthy Mr.Jeon. But you can go back in two to three weeks to have it checked again.”

“Thank you doctor.”

I walked out of the clinic feeling relieved. Thank goodness nothing is wrong with me.

I can reproduce.

So does that mean that Lisa is..

No.

It’s too early to say that.

Lisa is good. Everything will be fine.

I’m sure of that.

I was inside my car reading and re-reading my result when I got a phone call from Lisa.

She sounded like she's crying and she's in panic that I got so worried.

After recieving Lisa's call, I drove too fast to reach home. I know that voice, she always has that kind of voice when she's jealous so I need to clear her mind right now.

And what was Ji-eun even doing there? What does she want? I hope she didn't frighten Lisa.

What if Lisa becomes a jealous mess again and leave me for more than a week just like then? I swear I will not forgive Ji-eun.

When I reached home, Lisa was by the living room. She was sweaty, her hair is messy and her face was damp with tears as she was holding a mop. Either way, she still looked beautiful.

"Baby" I rushed to embrace her tight.

"Jungkook, what does she want with you?" she was really concerned about Ji-eun's sudden comeback.

"I don't know? I have no idea Lisa." I said as I use my thumb to dry her cheeks.

"What if she takes—"

"Sshhh.. Your're over-reacting again. No one is taking me from you. Remember I said we will make our family. It is only you who I want to build a family with Lisa. Take this as an assurance. I love you so much you know that."

"But she's so beautiful. Why would you chose me than her? I look like a rat when I faced her a while ago."

"She is but in my eyes you are the most beautiful girl I had set my eyes on. And beauty is not the only reason for loving someone. I am telling you Lisa that you are perfect. You have a beautiful soul and this" I said pointing at her chest where her heart is. "This love of yours for me is all that I could ask for. Nothing else. Do you understand my love?" I kissed her forehead before she slowly nodded.

"I'm sorry Jungkook for being scared again." she looked down her lap guiltily but I held her chin up.

“From now on, I want you to trust on this relationship, nothing can come between us baby.”

“I will. I’m sorry.”

“Now give me a kiss for doubting me again.” I teased and she finally smiled.

Lisa leaned closer to me and pressed her soft lips on mine. She slowly moved her lips against mine and it was so cute.

Lisa is a cute kisser. She always makes my heart flutter everytime she kisses me first.

And I want to praise her effort really as she always makes me happy.

Author’s Note

THE END

Kidding.

I hope the readers are not thinking that the story is draggy. Just so my loves know, before I write this story, I wrote 100 titles first on my notes as a guide. So expect a hundred boring chapters lol.

Sorry for the late update again.

Unwarranted Threats

To my readers who leaves me comments, I love you! 😘

Ji-eun's POV

"Just abort it. It will just ruin our career." Jingoo uninterestedly checked his watch as if I'm taking much of his time.

"What the fuck? You did this! You should be responsible for it!" I yelled at his face and I don't care. How dare of him suggest such a thing to me?

"You enjoyed it too just like how I did Ji-eun!"

What the hell?

"But you fucking got me pregnant!"

"And I didn't do it on purpose. Look, I'm sorry that this happened but our careers are more important than this." he said pointing at my tummy as if it disgraces him.

"So you would have it aborted just because of your career?" I can't believe this man!

"No offense but yes. It was an accident. I really didn't mean it. I'll just give you enough money to terminate it okay?"

"I can't believe you!"

"Ji-eun stop being dramatic and just take my advice. Continuing that will also ruin your image and reputation. At times like this, you should be more practical."

"You know what? I really regret leaving Jungkook for you. I just realized that he has balls unlike you you. Coward! Get out!" I yelled.

"Ji-eun.."

"I said get out of my car!!!" I screamed at his face.

He really got out of the car and angrily slammed the door.

How dare of him do this to me!

What a coward!

I think I'll lost my mind now.

What now?

I don't know what to do.

Where should I go?

I don't want to abort this child. That's just insane to do!

But how about my career?

What will happen to me now?

I don't have a family to take care of me.

If I only have Jungkook now, there'll be no problem.

I just realized that he's way better than him.

I know Jungkook will take care of me.

So I guess I need to get him back?

He's my only hope to get out of this mess.

Maybe he can take care of me and the baby.

Right! I just need to talk to him and he'll surely accept me back.

That's how he loves me.

Taking my keys, I drove straight to his house.

I knocked and hoped for Jungkook to open, but when it did, I was surprised to see an unfamilliar girl.

"Ji-eun? I mean Ms.Ji-eun?" she politely bowed. I looked at her from head to toe trying to remember if I met her before.

Is this Jungkook's new girlfriend?

"Who are you? Where is Jungkook?" I asked, I felt a little intimidated by her presence.

"Uhm..uh.. I am his student. I work here." She answered. She was obviously tensed.

But student? Oh..so Jungkook really let her live here? I thought he kicked her out?

“Oh..I remember you. So you still lives here?” I asked. This is the very first time Jungkook disobeyed me.

“Uh..yes..Ms.Ji-eun.” she replied awkwardly. Too awkward that it’s either she’s nervous because I am an actress or because she and Jungkook has something going on.

Now I really want to talk to him! He needs to explain this.

“Well..where is he?” I tried looking past her ‘cause it’s as if she’s not inviting me in.

“Mr.Jeon is out for a check up. He said he’ll be back in the evening. Is there anything you want?”

Right! I almost forgot that Jungkook always has this monthly check up as he is so conscious about his body and health. I think he really wants to look good and fit for me.

“Nothing, I just wanted to talk about something important.” I looked at her for the last time.

She’s wearing a wide shirt and cotton shorts only, her hair was in a messy bun and she’s holding a mop. If you would see other girls like this, you would tell that she’s a servant or a maid. But this girl right here looks so fucking pretty even when she’s sweating like this.

“I’ll just go back next time.” with slumped shoulders, I disappointedly walked back to my car.

I can’t believe Jungkook will let a pretty and young girl live in his house. And if you’re a man, It would be hard to not notice how pretty she is. Jungkook would be tempted for sure.

She looks young, sweet and beautiful and I’m…

Ughh! What now Ji-eun?

How will I get Jungkook back?

Taehyung’s POV

“How many years?” I asked again. I already heard the answer

to this question for so many times but I'd still want it to sink in my mind.

"Mr.Kim you have at least 3-4 years." my personal doctor calmly answered the same question I ask each day.

"Thank you Doctor." That's all and I ended the call.

Everyday, I would ask him the same question and he would answer the same thing. But I'm still hoping for a day that his answer will change.

I am dying.

I have this very rare disease that no one has found cure yet. And what's more heartbreaking is I heard about the news after Rubyjane passed away.

Imagine how life shattering it is.

All along I thought I could make my family happy. I built up my company with my own blood and sweat just to make sure that I can give my loving wife a good life.

But she was taken away from me. My love was taken after she had given birth to our son.

She left us alone and I was so scared. I learned the news about my disease and those people who are close to me managed to know my secret.

They had plotted ways to take over my company because they know I'll be gone soon. The same company that I had built for my wife.

That moment, I changed. I became the cruel CEO that they feared. I had to mask myself because I am certain that people will take advantage of you if they see your weakness.

My bestfriend, my cousins and other closed to me even volunteered to take care of my son. But I know their purpose. They are just planning to wait until I die so that they can take over me. That's how greedy these people are.

Everyone is evil.

I really trust no one. Baekhyun, my dearest assistant and Yeri my secretary are the only people I trust right now. But

they both have their own family so they are out of my options.

I don't want my son to be a bastard. He deserves the best.

I was out of options. And time is running too fast. I will soon leave my son alone. I was really desperate and hopeless.

Until one day, Lisa came kicking the door to my office.

She was so brave to threathen me just because I threathened her children.

The point is, the children were not even her sons and daughters but the way she looked at me that night, I could tell that she would kill me for them.

Lisa left an impression in me. That somehow there will still be people who are willing to love and take care of orphaned children unconditionally.

I decided to text her again. No reply yet.

I've been texting and calling Lisa for more than a week now but it seems like she blocked me.

Yesterday, I was planning to visit her house-no, not her house but Jeon's house to talk to her.

But I don't want to cause a scene there and made her mad at me more so I didn't because It will just cause trouble to my plans.

I know every little detail about Lisa now. I know about her abusive uncle and I made sure that he rots in jail. Also I know that Jeon Jungkook took her in his home.

I also have a feeling that they both are in a secret relationship. And if I'm just evil, I can report him to his school so that he'll be put into jail too.

But of course I will not do that. As I said, Lisa must not hate me because I plan to marry her soon.

It's the only way for her to take care of my son.

Lisa's POV

Dinner at the Jeon's

Jungkook and I just finished our dinner with his mom and dad and we are now resting in their living room, chatting about Jungkook's childhood memories.

"Mom stop!" Jungkook was already covering my ears out of embarrassment.

"Why are you being shy. As if you're still doing it now?" his parents are both laughing at him right now.

They just told me that Jungkook would always wet his bed for years upto his elementary days. And Jungkook was really embarrassed.

"If you don't stop, I'll not bring Lisa here anymore."

"Oh come on son! We are just joking right Lisa?" his father who I found really sweet winked at me.

So I nudge Jungkook who's already pouting to lighten up.

"But you're embarassing me in front of my girlfriend. I'm trying to maintain a good reputation here to impress this girl and you both are just ruining it. How did you became my parents again?" Jungkook let out his cute frustration but his parents just kept laughing at him.

Now I really understand why Jungkook is so kind. He's parents are honestly the kindest and sweetest parent I have met.

I kinda feel jealous now that he has such great parents.

I got quiet as I hope I had too. My life was a representation of the word cruelty but it changed when he came to my life.

Right now, I can't stop but stare at him admiringly. He is such a blessing in disguise.

"By the way Lisa?" his father called my attention. Suddenly, their laughter faded. His expression turn to his serious one and it gave me real goosebumps.

I even felt Jungkook tensed beside me. "Yes, Mr.Jeon?" It's weird calling Jungkook's father Mr.Jeon really.

"Ahh..I told you already to call me father. No need for formality." his stern voice made me nod my head. Even if it's

awkward, I really have to call them father and mother from now on. That's what they asked me a while ago when we were eating.

"Oh..okay father." the name I let out sounded awkward but he still smiled.

"I heard you are baking already. That means soon I will be expecting buns?" he smiled as his eyes flashed with so much excitement.

Mrs Jeon..I mean mother also looked at me with the same expression as if I'm going to offer them house and lot.

"Dad! mom! I told you not yet!" Jungkook suddenly became angry and I wondered why.

What does he mean by the way by baking buns?

"Father, I don't have any exemplary skills in baking but I can cook." I replied and with that they both started laughing. Even Jungkook was now laughing too.

"Wh..what's funny?" I asked. Is this some kind of an inside joke?

"Oh..Lisa..just how cute you are. Your father is not asking for literal bread but a baby."

My mouth hunged open..

What the heck did she just say?

"What? A baby?" I asked. I didn't know my voice was closed to shouting.

I turn to Jungkook but he just scratched his head and eyed his parents as if silencing them.

"Yes, Lisa. I heard from my wife that she caught you after the baking. That means I'll be a grandfather soon right?" his father clapped his hands so happilly.

So that's what all of this means. They are expecting me to be pregnant now.

But I have a feeling I'm not yet pregnant.

“So..what do you say Lisa? Can we count on you in giving us our grandchildren?” his father asked again.

The situation made me hard to focus and give an honest answer. Jungkook and I had been having unprotected sex but I’m not pregnant yet.

Does that mean that Jungkook is?

No..no.

That’s impossible.

How about me?

Am I?

Thoughts came running inside my head that I didn’t know that they were already waiting for my answer.

It was Jungkook’s voice who broke the silence for me. “Lisa is still young. It will come at the right time. Please don’t pressure her.”

His parents sadly nodded as if disappointed at Jungkook’s words.

And it’s the most heartbreaking scene when I see their hopeful smiles fade.

Now I had the urge to climb on Jungkook’s thick thighs and let him shoot his main ingredient on me just to make his parents happy.

But Jungkook’s right. It will come at the right time, right?

“I’ll do my best to give you a gandchild.” my words brought back the smiles on their faces.

“Thank you Lisa!” His mom’s eyes teared up out of happiness and his father rubbed her back out of gratefulness.

Jungkook was just silent the whole time but I understand.

Maybe he’s just worried because I am young but I really don’t mind being pregnant right now.

Author’s Note

Babies,

Which worries you more:

A. Ji-eun's plan

B. Mr.Kim's plan

C. The possibility of Lisa's infertility.

Fifth Attempt ⚠

Lisa's POV

Jungkook and I finally reached home after spending dinner at his parents' house.

I was taking off my shoes by the door when I felt him on my back.

Jungkook rubbed my hips and whispered "Take a shower first on your room, I'll wait for you in my room."

I got instant goosebumps just having him whisper the words to me.

I know what he means. What we should do.

We will do the "baking" that's what it is.

I finished my warm bath and got ready. I felt smooth and prepared to be kissed all over by Jungkook's lips.

If his heart-stopping kisses were anything to go by, his skills in bed will be first class.

One last look at my reflection in the mirror and I felt ready for our night of passion.

I left the bathroom and had wrapped myself in a robe. I'm not wearing anything underneath cause it's no use.

I opened the door and caught him already lying on his bed while reading something on his phone.

He looked like he just came from the shower too. He was shirtless and I don't if he's wearing boxers or not as he was covered by the white sheet.

I walked and snuggled next to him. I was about to peek what he's reading when his mouth was already on mine.

His tongue in my mouth had erased all thoughts of reading, he was probing, searching and duelling with mine.

“You took so long.” he managed to say in between heavy kissing.

The pressure of his mouth on mine was intoxicating. I wanted more than anything at that moment but to feel him.

The air in the roomed stilled and a hot flash of heat covered my body, his passionate kisses increased.

He held me tight to his body, wrapping his arms around my back. I just noticed he still had his boxers on, but I could feel his hard cock against my stomach.

I needed something for a change as last time I checked, Jungkook said he wants me on top of him so I decided to do it.

Pushing him over to his back I sat astride his hips and leaned down and took over kissing.

“Oh..Lisa..you’re full of surprises.” he smiled before kissing again.

Kissing his thin lips while him carressing my hips turned me on more. I had control, even if it was only for a few minutes.

I can feel both of us are so turned on that we are starting to get wild. Open mouth kissing, my tongue licking in and out of his mouth. Messily missing where I wanted to go and catching his lips in my teeth.

I began grinding my heat into his boxers I teased his cock harder, this only resulted in my desire rising and more desperate to have him inside me.

Jungkook’s eyes widen for a moment as if not believing that I’m getting wild like this.

But I can’t help it, I want him so much right now. Images of him thrusting hard the last time we had sex flashed through my mind.

“Remove this baby.” he let me took the robe off.

“You’re such a goddess, you know that Lisa.” he whispered as his gaze focused on my naked body on top of him.

I couldn't wait any longer and scooted down the bed and pulled off his one remaining piece of clothing.

I enjoyed the view of his massive hard cock. His tipped glistened in the low lighting of the room. I wonder how he would feel if I kiss him?

"Would you like me to kiss it?" I asked, glancing at his cock and he smiled.

"You have no idea how much I imagined you doing it but baby… But you're too young for this. I don't know if this is okay." he explained gently.

He was hesitant but the more that I wanted to do it. I know I have no experience but I want him to feel how he makes me feel when he kisses me down there.

"I will try. But please don't laugh at me." I said, leaning closer.

"Oh god…" I heard him groan quietly, when my soft hands held his cock, it was thrilling to have the great Jeon Jungkook at my mercy.

Stroking him firmly, watching the beads of liquid form at his slit. I bent down and took the tip of it in my mouth.

"Shit Lisa!" he was so sensitive that even if I'm just gently kissing it, he would moan.

"Am I doing it right?" I asked. While looking at his beautiful face. He's is watching me intently.

"Yes baby you're good but…"

"But please don't look at me like that, I will cum any moment if you don't stop looking at me so innocently." he whined.

"Oh..okay. I'm just looking at you cause I want to know if I'm doing the right thing."

"You are..baby you can lick it or suck it." he suggested. His eyes was being needy as his gaze focuses on me.

So I took his words and began licking and sucking just the end of him.

Open-mouthed kisses, sucking gently any liquid that had escaped.

“Fuck Lisa! You feel so good! I love you baby!” his hoarse voice sounded as pleasured as his face.

This is the first time I’ve seen Jungkook like this. He looked so happy and contented.

I took him by surprise when I took half of his length into my mouth.

“Lisa….stop or I’ll cum!’

I stopped immediately.

“Come here. You deserve a reward for that.” he pulled my hips to his face and positioned me on top of him.

“Jungkook no—” before I could react, he already pulled me down to his lips. Good thing, I managed to grab the bed’s headboard for support.

“Jungkook…” I kept moaning his name when he began kissing me, licking me and sucking my clit.

It was so so good. Jungkook must have pleasure powers in him to do this to me.

I was so closed to my orgasm when he stopped.

“Sorry baby but I badly want you to ride me now.” his hands on my waist tightened as he positioned me on top of his cock where I could sink my p*ssy down his cock.

Placing him at my entrance, I held my breath as I dropped down on him.

Gosh! It still hurts as hell!

Jungkook’s size will always be both Shocking and satisfying to me.

“Come on Lisa. Drive your daddy crazy.” he teased.

Wasting no time at all, I needed to feel the friction of him inside me and supported myself placing my hands on his chest and slide my p*ssy up and down his length. The pain was there but I was too wet that it lessened.

He helped by thrusting his hip to havehis cock meet me more impactfully and it felt amazing.

I needed another of his passionate kisses and we were just getting started.

Leaning forward, I sucked on his lower lip until he caught the nape of my neck with his hand and pulled me in for a deeper kiss.

I began bouncing up and down on his cock, I'm desperate to come, climbing higher and higher I hold onto the headboard for support.

With his tongue in my mouth and his cock in my p*ssy, I came hard while I still allow him to thrust up into me.

I strangle his cock with my first orgasm. It is a powerful throb that I feel in my heart and belly.

But Jungkook is not stopping for a second grabbing my breasts and sucking on my nipples as I come down from my high.

Holding me tight he turns so we are on our side, he's still inside thrusting, not missing a beat and pushing me from behind.

Jungkook's hip action is hard and purposeful, he knows exactly how to push me higher and over the top to my second orgasm. It's a slower throb and vibrated down his cock, I squeeze my walls and I am rewarded with a hard thrust as he stays deep in my p*ssy.

We're both soaked with sweat with our exertions and he still hasn't come. Interlocking our fingers, he increases the movement and fucks me harder.

My pussy is tight around him and I am feeling every inch as he hits the top of my insides. I need to kiss him again and stretch my neck back.

He helps by pulling on my chin and licks into my mouth not bothering with kissing my lips, just duelling tongues.

He kneels and pulls my leg up and rests my ankle on his shoulder and uses all his strength to fuck me harder.

Jungkook showed no mercy. I looked to small compared to his bulky body. His hips and thighs thrusted like he wants to fully rip me.

“Fucking hell, it’s deep this way!” the momentum of the repeated hard slaps echo in the room. His efforts push me further on the bed and I use the headboard as a buffer.

He’s going to make me come a second time and I can’t wait to experience it. He grabs hold of my hips and concentrates on building me up again.

“Fuck it! Lisa cum now cause I’m so close!” he groaned. I can tell he is near his orgasm, but he is waiting for me. He kept pounding his cock mercilessly on me. I was so close too.

It doesn’t take long for Jungkook to make me come again. I felt every bit of my being convulse at the heavenly pleasure of orgasm.

Few more pounds and he cursed “Fuck yeah!!!”

Jungkook shoot his load of cum inside me. I was so filled with his seeds that I could feel it dripping into the sheets.

The pained concentration slowly disappearing from his beautiful face when he collapses next to me, pulling me in for a cuddle, my back to his torso.

He began kissing my lips once again but this time it was slow and very gentle. “Thank you baby. I love you so much!” he whispered before kissing my forehead.

“I love you” I replied and kissed his cheek back.

The next day,

“Boy is better.”

“Girl is better.”

“I said, Boy is better.”

“No Lisa, girl is really better.”

“I’m telling you Jungkook. Boy are the best because he can lead his siblings responsibly.”

“No. Boys are stubborn. Girls are mild. It would be better to have a girl first.” he has a point but..

“Not all girls are mild. But most of the times, girls are weak which is a no no for a first born.”

“Ughh..you’re not making any sense.” Jungkook groaned.

“You’re the one who’s not making any sense.” I pouted.

This morning Jungkook and I started talking about baby stuffs as we share breakfast. I can’t help but open up the topic to him as to which gender is better for a first born and we both started arguing.

What’s funny is that, we just had sex last night and we are already arguing about this.

In all honesty, it is so heart warming to talk about this with him as I can feel his excitement on the matter.

Jungkook has openly expressed that he wants to create an angel soon and it excites me too.

I don’t care if I’m too young for this. I see nothing wrong with it as both of you love each other.

Even Chae is pregnant too. That bitch Jimin did it to her but she was so happy that I came to support it. For her not for Jimin.

“But baby, I think whatever the gender is, we will both love her right?” Jungkook’s voice cut me off my thoughts of my bestfriend and her playboy boyfriend.

“Of course yes.” I smiled. But I really hope it’s a boy if I become pregnant.

“I love you Lisa.” he smiled adoringly at me.

“I love you too Jungkook.”

“Let’s finish this breakfast quick so we won’t be late for school. Okay?”

“Okay Mr.Jeon.” Jungkook and I laughed at that.

Jungkook's POV

Lisa decided to just walk to school today.

She said she can't use her car as her classmates will be suspicious as to where did it came from.

And she added that she will just use it after the graduation.

I was already at the school's parking lot when my phone beeped.

I don't know how she got my number but Ji-eun has been texting me since last night. Good thing Lisa didn't caught me reading the message or I'll go fuck myself last night.

Ji-eun's been asking to meet up and I don't know why. At first I wanted to say no but what if it's really important?

But If I meet her, I'll make sure to tell Lisa about it or bring her with me. Otherwise she'll leave me again. She won't hesitate to do it if I mess up so I'll avoid it.

"Jungkook,

Please meet me. I need to talk to you."

-Jieun

I sighed and typed a reply.

"When and where?"

-Jungkook

Author's Note

Shits about to go down from here so brace yourselves in the following chapters.

But don't worry. Liskook wins!

The Accident

Jungkook's POV

Monday evening at Jeon's Residence.

"I swear to God if you don't stop crying Lisa!" I warned using my threathening voice. The one that I always use to silence my students.

But she didn't stop. She was still crying. Her eyes are already swelling, nose red and her cheecks are puffy with tears.

"Lisa if you don't stop I'll change the channel!"

"No..please..no.. Jungkook there are few episodes left. It'll be over soon." she stopped me from grabbing the remote on the coffee table.

"But you're crying. Look at yourself. I can't believe a stupid anime can make you cry like this." I roll my eye at the TV screen.

"Jungkook this is not stupid! This is the best anime drama in the world." she can still praise it even though her eyes are glistening with tears.

"If this is the best, it wouldn't make you cry. Just stop watching it."

"Shhh…quiet..I can't focus on the subtitles."

I just huffed and lay back to the back rest of the couch beside her. She's now silently weeping but at least, it is better than her loud crying a while ago.

Lisa is watching an anime where the lovers who started as classmates ended up marrying. The girl who got pregnant died when she gave birth. That made Lisa cry all her tears out. It was a really sad drama but ai don't understand why she's crying.

And here I am by her side serving as her tear-wiper.

I was about to take a ply of tissue when I noticed that there's nothing left.

I took another box of tissue and walked back to my cute girlfriend. She was covered with a blanket, legs crossed and she was holding an ice cream on her hand.

Cute.

I want to fuck her tonight and snuggle in bed after.

But the problem is she's crying just because of this stupid Clannad.

"We both know that the wife will die in the end and the husband will take care of their daughter alone." I said while wiping her face again.

"I know but I'm still hoping for some magic to happen so that she can be with her husband and daughter."

"There's no such thing as that Lisa."

"Ughh..Jungkook you're so annoying! Just let me watch in peace okay?"

"But we could've been snuggling in bed now if you're not just binge-watching this drama."

"Shhh" she hushed me out again. Her attention is still focused on the screen.

I decided to just lie there and rest my head on her lap. She didn't complain so everything is good.

It was so boring and I was closed to sleeping when my phone beeped from my pocket.

The sound caught my attention but so does Lisa's.

"Who's that?" she asked eyeing my pocket. I instantly knew who it was. So I sat up straight and took the phone to show her.

It was Jieun again of course.

Lisa's brow lifted "What does she want?"

“I don’t know. She said she has something important to tell.”

“Are you meeting her?”

“I’m about to. Yes. I’m curious what this is.”

“Then go but don’t expect me to be here when you come back.” she’s clearly upset now.

“Who says I’m coming alone?” You are coming with me.” This has been my plan. To go and talk to Jieun with Lisa by my side.

Her gaze snapped on me. “Wait what?”

“I said we’ll go there together so that you’ll hear it too. That way you won’t be anxious. If it happens that she just wants us to get back together, then we can both say no to her.” I told her my plan, I am so confident that this talk will turn out well if Lisa is with me.

Lisa got quiet for a while, “Okay, but we still can’t let her know about us.”

“Why? Don’t you want to be introduced as my girlfriend?” I asked, confused.

“Because it’ll get us in trouble. What if she tells the school about us to blackmail you? I won’t let that happen.”

Now it’s me who was silenced.

Lisa has a point. We only have 3 week before the graduation so we really need to be careful.

“So?” Lisa nudged me to say more.

“You’re right. But I’ll still hear her out. You can go with me and you can just stay in the car.”

“Why are you so willing to meet her up? I sure she just wants to get back with you.”

“Because it’s the only way to stop her from coming here. And her presence always scares and insecures you. I need to tell her to stop but if it’s really not the case like she just wants to return the house I bought her, then we’re good.”

“What the fuck? You bought her a house?!!!” Oh shoot. Why can’t I stop my mouth from talking. lisa will misunderstand it again.

“Lisa that was a long time ago. It was just a small one where she can rest because that time she was shooting on a location far from her home and—”

“Stop. Please stop. You’re just worsening it for me.” she paused and mumbled “A house wow!”

“Baby, stop thinking too much about it. It was nothing.” It was really nothing. It’s just a small house.

“Jungkook, just tell me honestly so that I won’t be surprised in the future.” she paused, Lisa’s gaze was sharp. “What are the other mind-blowing things you bought her?”

“That was the most expensive one Lisa but I swear it was nothing that grand. If you’ll be insecure about this again then let me just buy you a mansion.”

“Are you hearing yourself Mr.Jeon? You really think that I’ll be happy with material things?”

“I know but I’m just raising a fact here. I bought Ji-eun those things because she asked for it which I know you’ll never do. And that was when I didn’t know you yet.”

“Also, you should know that I can offer you the world Lisa just to make you happy.”

“I don’t need the world. I just need you.” Lisa whispered.

“I know and I just need you too. We both are in love with each other. Do you think one meeting can erase all of these?” I said poiting at us. “The bond, the love, the moments, the promises that we shared?”

My words must have hit her hard that she hugged my tightly. And I return it by wrapping my arms around her.

“Trust me okay. Everything will be fine.”

Lisa sighed but she decided to agree, “Okay.Let’s meet her.”

“Thank you baby.” I owned her lips.

I kissed her slowly and I was hoping that we can get it the the next level but when we pulled out, she turn her head to the anime again.

Just like that her attention was back at the TV again.

Tsk. This girl's duality really. One moment she was a jealous girlfriend but jist minutes later she's crying again because of that anime. I let her head to rest on my shoulder which she did.

It sucks that we were not able to make love because Lisa finished the whole drama and it ended around 2 in the morning, we both fall asleep in the living room that night.

Next Day

After Class, Lisa and I had an early dinner first at a restaurant where I'm sure non of my co-workers will go.

And ater the dinner, we headed straight to where Jieun wants to meet.

It was just by the park near the school so we reached the place in few minutes.

"Just stay here okay?" I watch how Lisa fidgetted her fingers. She looked so nervous. "Hey, look at me." I made her face me by holding her chin.

"Nothing's gonna happen. Don't be scared." I said to give her an assurance. Lisa just nodded. She didn't say anything. Lisa leaned closer to give me a tight hug..

"Please be back soon. I love you Jungkook" her soft and warm breathing on my neck felt so good. I took few seconds to just rub her back thinking that it will ease down her anxiousness.

"It's okay baby. I love you too." I pulled back from the hug and faced her. "I better go and talk to her now so that we can go home earlier and we can do IT later." I said.

I kissed her lips before getting out of my car. Good thing the car is tinted. No one can see Lisa there.

Lisa's POV

I watch how Jungkook walk away from the car.

I felt my own heart by clenching my fist over my chest, that's when I realized how it was beating too fast.

I'm scared.

But I trust Jungkook.

I know that this is his way of ending things between them. I can feel the sincerity in his voice and I'm sure he will never hurt me again.

Even if the park was dark and only lighten by yellow street lamps, I could still see Jieun from a far.

She's sitting there like an angel.

She's wearing a beautiful dress like that of a princess.

And Jungkook is walking towards her.

He's so mesmerizing.

As if he's the prince charming she's been waiting for.

A pang of jealousy swept through me when I saw them talk.

I don't know what they are talking and I can't clearly see their expressions.

But when I saw that she kissed him, it was probably the most heartbreaking scene that I've ever seen.

I looked away because I can't take seeing my man being kissed by another girl.

Right now I'm not sure what he did next.

I was too afraid to look back.

But my curiousity won. I did looked back and that's when I saw him walking away while Jieun was left there crying.

I feel sad and guilty seeing her break out like this. Cause even if I did not purposefully ruin their relationship, I'm still the reason why they won't be together again.

I wonder if Jungkook will regret his decision.

Will he be happy with me?

I'm afraid that one day he'll regret his decision and blame me for everything.

Jungkook's POV

I easily spotted Jieun by a bench. She was sitting there idly as if she waited for me for eternity.

"Why are you so late?" she was already scowling at me. This is how she usually is when I get late.

"I had dinner first. I'm sorry." I apologized.

"Okay..but next time don't be late." As if there's a next time? I laughed at my own thought. "What's funny?" she asked.

"Nothing. What is it that you want to talk about?" I asked directly. I don't want to keep Lisa waiting in the car.

Jieun patted the space beside her. I stared for a moment before deciding to sit with her.

"Jungkook." she called.

"What is it?"

"Let's get back together."

I almost choked when she said those words.

Jieun wants to get back together?

So this is all that she wanted to say? Lisa was really right.

"Jieun I—"

"I know I made a lot of mistakes to you. I didn't treat you right back then. I took you for granted. But if you'll accept me again, I will do anything to make up for those mistakes."

"Jieun, I'm sorry but we can't."

"Jungkook, I love you." the words slipped in her lips so easily. Somehow I felt that she was telling the thruth. That she really loves me now.

But it's too late. I met Lisa and she's everything that I could ask for. She's the only person now that I love and I will love.

"I'm sorry Jieun. We can't be together anymore. There is sure a person out there that will love you. But it's just not me." I was about to stand when I felt her cupped my cheeks.

The next thing I knew, she was already kissing me.

I wasn't able to react.

My lips were steadily unmoving but she tried to move hers against mine.

All of this and only one face in my mind.

Lisa.

I grabbed Jieun's shoulder and pushed her to stop.

"Jieun not this! I came here to talk." I took my chance to stand and she also did the same.

"Can't you see that I'm willing to change for you? please Jungkook. Let's get back together." she was almost begging and honestly, it moved me. But Lisa is my life now.

"I'm sorry but you really need to stop asking me this. I'm already happy without you. This is the last time that I will talk to you Jieun. Please don't come near me again."

I turn away and heard her voice. She was still calling for me but she stayed in her spot.

I know she's crying but it's better than seeing Lisa cry.

Good.

This is the closure that we both needed.

Lisa is my life now. Even Jieun whom I loved for how many years will not change that.

I got back to the car and saw Lisa. She was quiet as her gaze are focused outside.

"She tried to get back to you, right?" she guessed correctly.

"Y..yeah..I'm sorry. You were right Lis." I took her hand to hold it tightly. "Everything is good. She will stop coming now.

We can be at peace.”

Lisa finally faced me. “I really hope so.”

“Let’s go now. I want to take a warm bath.” I said and she nodded. I want to rwmove Jieun’s taste on my lips as it feels uncomfortable.

I started the engine and drove the car when Lisa screamed.

“Jungkook!!!”

“Oh my god!!!”

We were almost thrown foreward when a loud crash and bump was heard in front of my car.

I feel numb.

I can’t talk.

I can’t move.

I can’t process what just happened.

I stayed like that for seconds…no minutes.

It was only Lisa’s voice which pulled me back to my senses.

“Jungkook, let’s take her..please let’s take her to the hospital.”

She was shaking my shoulder continuously.

“Jungkook! She’ll die if we don’t move now!” Lisa yelled again but I was still there not moving.

I felt her unfasten her seat belt.

I was only able to move when she got out of the car to check on Jieun.

I managed to get out of my car too

And there I saw Lisa crying as she tries to help her.

Jieun is lying unconcsiously on the ground

Her forehead was obviously bleeding.

“Jungkook! I swear to god if you don’t move!” Lisa yelled again. And that was finally my time to take Jieun’s body.

I carried her to my car as Lisa opens it for me.

I don’t know how fast I drove that I got into the hospital in more or less five minutes.

Lisa was crying the whole time but as for me I couldn’t react.

I was still floating. I cannot take in what just happened.

Everyrhing happened so fast.

Jieun was rushed to the emergency room while we were told to wait.

After an hour of waiting, I finally felt my tears escaped from my eyes.

Jieun.

I crashed to her.

I was just driving when she abruptly stopped in front of the car.

That’s when I hit her.

And now I’m not sure if she’ll survive the impact.

“It was not your fault.” I heard Lisa’s voice beside me.

“It is.” I looked down at my hands guiltily.

“No Jungkook!” she made me face her by grabbing my shoulders. “It was an accident.” she sounded so sure.

“I don’t know…what will happen now Lisa? I’m so scared.”

Lisa gaze softened, she then pulled me in for a hug.

That moment, I cried and cried on her shoulder as guilt washed over me.

“If I just didn’t meet her. If I just listened to you.”

“Shhh…we never knew that this would happen. Don’t blame yourself please.”

“Lisa, I’m really scared.” I can’t imagine how my guilt would eat me up if something happens to Jieun.

“Don’t be..let’s pray that she’ll recover. Okay?”

Even Lisa’s warmth, her gentle rubbing on my back, her soft voice didn’t help me from thinking too much.

I just messed up big time.

What now?

Author’s Note

I am very late 😭

What do you think will happen next?

Heartbreaking Result

Lisa's POV

I left Jungkook at the hospital the moment Ms.Ji-eun was transfered to a private room.

"Baby, I'll get you clothes to change." Jungkook just answered me with a nod.

He was still watching Ms.Ji-eun who's at the moment lying in the bed. She's still unconscious, her body was wrapped with so many bandages especially her head and her legs.

The whole time, Jungkook sat beside her as we wait for her medical result.

It was really a blessing that she didn't die. I could only imagine how Jungkook will beat himself if something happens to her as he's blaming himself for everything.

But it's really not his fault, I saw how Ms.Ji-eun ran to the car and stopped infront of it making us crash on her.

If I was just quick to notice her, we could've prevented it from happening. But it really was an accident. Both Jungkook and I didn't mean to hurt her.

Jungkook was quiet the whole time. I know he's still taking everything in. But I'm sure this all shall pass.

Everything will be fine.

I took a taxi and came home alone.

Jungkook sent me a text and I read it.

"Baby, I'm sorry for not driving you home. Don't come back for the night. Just go back tomorrow. Ji-eun's room has just a couch to sleep, I don't want you to sleep uncomfortably."

"It's okay. I'll see you tomorrow. I'll bring you some clothes to change and will cook breakfast for you. Hopefully she

wakes soon." I replied. This is not the time to be jealous over her. I understand Jungkook's situation so I need to support him.

"Thank you Lisa for understanding. I cannot thank you enough."

"Please take your rest now. See you tomorrow."

That night, I sleep alone in Jungkook's bed.

Jungkook's POV

It was only when Lisa left that I realized that I should've drove her home. But as of now, I am really traumatized with driving. I don't think I can drive anytime soon.

So I just texted her and told her to sleep the night at home without me. I decided to sat with Ji-eun until she recovers.

At the moment, I'm still waiting for the doctor's words.

Good thing, Ji-eun's already here. At least she didn't die.

I took my phone again and dialled Jisoo.

"Jungkook? Why?" she answered the phone a little confused. As it was 11 in the evening already.

"Jisoo, I'll take an emergeny leave for few days. I'll send you a leave form via email. Can you have it printed and give ot to Mr.Yang?"

"Okay. I'll print it and give it to him. Btw, you seemed to be down, is there any problem?"

"I'll tell you about it next time. Thank you Jisoo".

"Your welcome.I' see you"

An hour had passed and it's already midnight. Yet sleep is nowhere to be found. My mind is still filled with thoughts and worries of what's about to happen.

I was so engrossed with heavy thoughts when the door opened. I almost jumped when the doctor came.

"Doctor..I..tell me..is she okay?" I rushed to his side in panic. I want to know if Ji-eun is totally fine.

He cleared his throat and face me as if he's about to announce a bad news. "Mr.Jeon, Ji-eun is still unstable but your baby is fine."

"Wh..what? Baby?" What does he mean by a baby?

"Oh you didn't know. You are her boryfriend right?" the doctor's question made me question myself.

I am the boyfriend? I was.. but I didn't..

The doctor continued his explanation without hearing my answer "Miraculously, the baby survived. Although, Ms.Ji-eun's both legs suffered heavily from the impact. I'm afraid she won't be able to walk in the future."

My mind bursted out in so much information right now. I need to process everything slowly because I feel like I'll explode soon.

"We w..wait..you mean Ji-eun is pregnant and the baby is okay but she will be creepled?"

What the fuck?

"Yes, I'm so sorry for the news about your girlfriend."

"How about her legs. Is there no other way to fix it. I mean can't you perform any operation to make her walk again?" my question made the doctor frown. I know it was offending but I'm taking any chances now.

"Mr.Jeon, there are just some things that is out of our capabilities. Only a miracle can make her walk again."

What the actual fuck?

This could be the worst news of my life.

What now Jungkook?

I slumped down on the chair next to Ji-eun when the doctor left and stared at her for a long time.

So that must be the reason why her legs were wrapped thickly. Also, I can't believe that she's pregnant.

Who's the father? And why would she ask for us to be together when she's already pregnant.

Did he left his responsibilities that's why Ji-eun is planning to seek mine in his stead.

But that's crazy for her to do! How can she involve me in this mess? I am living peacefully without her now and it turned upside down because of her.

Part of me wants to blame Ji-eun for what happened but most part of my mind is still blaming myself.

If I just refused.

If I just didn't meet her.

If I just listened to Lisa.

Nothing of these will happen.

What will happen to Ji-eun now?

If she can't walk, she won't be able to work anymore.

And the fact that she's pregnant doesn't help either.

I just ruined her life.

Her future.

It was all my fault. And now I am left with the responsibility of taking care of her.

What about Lisa?

How will she react knowing this?

Should I tell her that Ji-eun is pregnant?

What if she mistook it as mine?

I don't want to deal with a jealous Lisa right now so I guess I'll just tell her when everything calms down.

My main problem now is how will I break down the news to Ji-eun?

I hope she wakes up soon.

Lisa's POV

Carrying with me sets of clothes, grooming kit and slippers for Jungkook, I used the car he gifted me and drove straight to the hospital.

I have no choice but to use it because it will be hard to commute if I'm carrying a lot of things.

I also made breakfast for us and some fruits for Ms.Ji-eun.

Earlier this day, I sent Chaeyoung a text that I'll be absent from the class. I hope they won't get suspicious that both Jungkook and I are gone for the day.

When I opened the room, Ms.Jieun was still sleeping. While Jungkook is on the couch also sleeping.

I walked to the table on the corner and place the food and the things that I'm carrying. Then sat next to Jungkook.

His eyes already formed dark circles around. Maybe he find it hard to sleep last night.

Now, I feel sorry for what happened. I hope Jungkook takes this matter calmly. And I hope Ms. Jie-eun gets well soon.

I didn't want to wake him so I just stayed beside him for quite a while.

When I remembered that I didn't have a water with me, I decided to just go out and buy some.

As I was walking inside the hospital, my eyes caught something.

It was a line of pregnant women waiting for a check up in the pediatric ward.

My hand moved to my tummy unknowingly.

I don't know but I feel jealous seeing them there with their husbands by their side. All of them looks happy and excited.

Who won't be when you're about to meet an angel inside your womb?

What about me?

When will I get pregnant?

Or am I already pregnant?

I stood there for a long time when the door of the ob-gyne clinic beside me opened and a staff came out.

She looked at me and asked, “Ms. You can fill out the form there if you want to have a check up.” she said pointing at a table where another attendant was sitting.

“Che..check up?” I asked, confused. Why would I get a check up?

“You want to know if you’re pregnant? Right?”

How come she knows that I want to know if I’m pregnant?

“There are so many young women these days who comes to the clinic to ask if they are. Come with me.” she said and she helped me sit on the chair next to the tables where the forms are.

“Fill out this form then give it back to me afterwards.” Just like that, she left me there.

I wanted to laugh because I just wanted to buy some water but now I ended up in an ob-gyne’s clinic.

Jungkook will be worried for sure if he sees that I left him food there yet I’m not around.

But I’m so curious right now. What if I’m pregnant already? That would make him so happy and maybe it can lessen the anxiety in his heart.

“Ms.Manoban?” the young doctor called. I raised me hand and walked to her.

“You can call me Doctor Sana” she introduced herself first before going to the main point.

“So you wrote here that you are sexually active with your boyfriend?” she asked when we were already inside her office. Her eyes focused on the form.

“Yes doctor.” I replied shortly. I am so tensed right now. I don’t know if what I’m doing is right as I just came here unplanned.

“Hmm..let’s see. Your menstrual cycle is regular meaning we can easily detect your fertile days. Also, if we count it, you

would've been fertile in these dates." she pointed at the small flippable calendar on her table.

"Can you remember if you had sex with your boyfriend on these dates?" she asked, pointing at specific dates.

Of course I remember that date. That was the day of the ball, the night he took my virginity away.

"Yes, we had." It feels awkward to talk about your intimates to other person honestly but thank goodness she's a girl.

"Did you use protection? Did he perform withdrawal. Tell me about it." the doctor's voice was so soft and her gentle features made me speak some details about the activity that happened.

I told her that he came inside me on the dates that she pointed.

"So there's a big chance that you are pregnant now." she said making me smile.

Just hearing the "possible" word made my heart so happy.

Oh my god!

What if I'm already pregnant now? Jungkook will be bunny-jumping for sure.

The doctor gave me a pregnancy test kit and asked me to perform it in the comfort room.

So I did. PTs are supposed to be performed when you wake up. She explained that the pee sample must be your first for the day. And I'm really lucky because I haven't yet.

I sat at the comfort room after I took a sample and waited for the result. Finally, a single line formed. I waited for few minutes more but the other line is no where to be seen.

"Ms.Manoban? Are you okay there?" the voice of the doctor's assistant asked.

"Ye..yes..I am." I stared at the test again hoping for another line to appear but nothing…

Nothing.

Just a single line.

I walked out of the comfort room feeling dis-heartened. Maybe there's just wrong with the test kit.

"Single line?" the doctor asked when she noticed me walking to her table with a disappointed face.

"Is this accurate doctor?" I asked as I show her the stick.

"It is. You are not pregnant which is odd. Maybe there's an underlying causes to it. Would you like to have me perform a cervical ultrasound with you just to see if everything is normal?" the doctor asked and even though I'm hesitant to spend so much money on a check up, I would still want to know the result so I agreed.

The doctor made me lay on my back. She rubbed some jelly-like thing on womb area and she took a small machine to press on it on a circular motion. The monitor next to me showed me the inside of my womb.

It looks empty.

After the utrasound, the doctor's mood change. I could feel there's something wrong by the way she looked at my result.

"Ms.Manoban, have you had an accident when you were young?"

I tried to think of any. "I never had an accident Doctor but I was always beaten by my uncle."

"In your womb area?"

"Yes. He would kick my stomach continuously for an hour straight back then." when I shared to her my past, the doctor's eyes got teary. I don't know if she's just normally emotional or my sad story of abuse just got her.

She wiped her tears away and took a deep breath. "I'm so sorry you had to endure all of that. I'm supposed to be an obgyn but I feel like I'm a psychologist now." she laughed slightly but soon her smile faded.

"Ms.Manoban, I'm sorry to tell you this but the structure of your womb and your pelvic bone is abnormal. It can only be

cause by an accident and in your case, it is from all the beating you had experience. I'm sorry but you cannot conceive."

Author's Note

FYI, all of the medical terms and explanations I used were a product of my imagination so please don't come at me. 😅

So, yeah.. That was the sad news for everyone.

Do you think there's a miracle that can make her pregnant?

Clingy Jungkook

Lisa's POV

You cannot conceive.

You cannot conceive.

You cannot conceive.

The doctor's words kept repeating inside my head.

I feel so lost as I was walking that I didn't notice I was already in front of Ms.Ji-eun's room.

The door opened to a frowning Jungkook, his phone pressed to his ear. Whe ln he saw me, his face lit up instantly.

"Baby? Where did you go? I kept looking for you!" Jungkook's worried face welcomed me. He pulled me in his arms and held me in his chest for a while.

Just like that, I felt at peace inside his arms. All the neagtive thoughts vanished. As if I didn't hear a heart-breaking news a while ago.

"I was…I was looking for water." I replied. Jungkook's worried gaze travelled down. His forehead creased when he noticed I'm not carrying with me water.

"Where?" he asked, eyeing me suspiciously. I know he's trying to read my mind but I cannot tell him that I've been in an obgyn's clinic a while ago.

If I tell him the bad news, it'll just worsen his situation.

"I didn't find any." I looked down.

"You could've wake me so I can buy instead. Come here. I missed you." Jungkook pulled me inside and made me sit on his lap.

"Have you eaten?" I asked him. My fingers travelled to his hair to brush it gently.

“Not yet. I was waiting for you. Thank you for bringing me my tootbrush and slippers.” he smiled. I looked down and he was already wearing the comfy clothes and his home slippers that I brought him.

“You must be hungry. Let’s go and eat. I cooked a lot for us.” I tried pulling him on the table but he pulled me down to his lap once more.

“Not yet. Stay here please.” he plead so I let him. I just stayed there sitting on his lap while his arms are wrapped around me. He’s being clingy again.

“Do you know that I always have nightmares everytime your not sleeping with me?”

“Really? Did you have a nightmare last night?” I asked.

“I did. The story from the anime you were watching last night happened to us. In my dream, you got pregnant and you…you died.” Jungkook’s arms tightened more around me. I can feel his being emotional right now. This might be his karma for laughing at the anime I was watching.

I can sense that all of this could be a result of what happened yesterday. He was stressed out by the accident and probably he’s over thinking things.

“It’s just a dream Jungkook. Nothing will happen to me.” I teied to light up his mood but he’s still frowning.

“I don’t know. I’m so scared. I know it is unmanly but I really cried when I woke up. I searched for you and you were nowhere to be found.”

So that’s why he’s acting extra clingy today. Because he dreamt that I died.

“I’m here now Jungkook”

“I know but please Lisa don’t leave me. Please please please. Don’t leave me.” he brushed his nose on my shoulder and kissed it softly.

“Why would I leave you?” I asked. Who in earth would leave Jeon Jungkook?

“Because this. The mess that I did.” he glanced at Ji-eun’s direction. “And what if I get you pregnant and something like that happens. I swear Lisa I would die.” Jungkook shook his head anxiously.

“Hey..stop thinking too much. I will never leave you Jungkook I swear. Besides, what if I can’t bear children and…”

Shit.

Why did I say that?

I was not supposed to open that topic especially now that he has so much on his plate.

“Continue that.” his expression dimmed.

“Continue what?” I asked, looking away.

But he held my cheek to face him. “If you cannot bear children and..?”

I sighed defeatedly. “What if I can’t bear your children. Will you…will you leave me instead?” finally, I was able to ask the question which I have held in my heart for an hour now.

Jungkook got silent.

Of course he will leave me. I would be a trash to him if it happens. I can never give him tha family that he wants.

“So you were thinking about it?” he asked. His gaze soft at me.

“I am..what if I can’t—”

“Then we’ll just adopt. I will never leave you for a reason like that.” Jungkook playfully brushed my nose with his before pressing his lips to mine.

We’ll just adopt.

Will he really settle for that?

“Kiss me back” he whispered. I didn’t know I wasn’t returning the kiss until he urge me to part my lips for him.

So I kissed him back with the same fervor. Jungkook’s hand travelled on my nape to pull me more to him while his other

hand travelled to my back. We kissed for like eternity and when we pulled out we were both breathless.

“Don’t think too much. I will love you and it will stay as that. Nothing will change Lisa.” his words eased my apprehension.

“Okay. I won’t think too much but what about Ms.Ji-eun? Can I tell you to stop worrying too? And what is the result byt the way.” I asked.

Jungkook sighed before telling me everything. He said that Ji-eun’s legs were damaged and that he would have to hire a nurse for her.

Also, he will have to seek other doctors’ say on her case.

He still hopes that a transplant can be made to make her walk again.

I also noticed that Jungkook is calmer now than last night. Just a short amount of time and he was able to plan out solutions to his problem.

That morning Jungkook and I came to this agreement. And for me, it is just but fair to Ms.Ji-eun for Jungkook to take care of everything.

Her future was put at risk just because of an accident. Although it is clearly not his fault, Jungkook managed to be responsible for her and I admire him for that.

I also learned that she has no family left that is why Jungkook will have to hire servants for her.

“Why don’t we just take her home?” I suggested. Making him look at me in disbelief

“What? No!” Jungkook expressed his disgust with my suggestion unhesitantly.

“We can save more if she just stays with us.” I can see nothing wrong with her living with us. That way I won’t have to worry.

“Lisa! No. That house is for us. Only us.”

“But—”

“I thought you were jealous of her? Why are you asking for her to live with us Lisa?”

“I have no time to be jealous now. She clearly needs our help.”

“No. She’ll stay in her house. I’ll provide people to help her. Not just in our house. It’s our lover’s nest.”

“Okay okay.”

Jungkook and I lazily spent the afternoon at the hospital. Jungkook began to be playful again and I feel relieved. I thought he would be sulking the whole day.

As if nothing had happened. He would smile at me, he would kiss me, he would hug me. All of this small gestures mended my broken heart from the news that I cannnot bear his child.

I recalled what the doctor said, that I have still a small chance of conceiving but it’ll be risky for me and the baby.

She also added that I shouldn’t worry much because I’m still young and a lot can happen in the future.

“Baby, on your way here did you see any hotels close by?” he asked an out of the blue question.

“Hotel? Why?” I didn’t notice any actually.

“My back is hurting from staying here too much.” he said pointing at the couch. Jungkook’s size is is longer than it that’s why it’s uncomfortable for him.

“Oh..why don’t you just go home as I take charge of Ms.Ji-eun? That way you can rest.”

“No…I want to be with you. I missed you already. Our plans last night was ruined by this.” Jungkook pouted.

Then one of his hand moved inside my shirt as he brush my waist with it. “You waist is so small.” he smiled adoringly.

“Yours too.” I smiled back. Jungkook’s waist is just as tiny as mine.

“You can stradle it if you want.” he joked showing his bunny smile.

“Let me remind you that we are in a hospital and Ms.Ji-eun might wake any moment now.” I warned but he just smirked.

“The comfort room is wide.” his teasing smile made me smack his arm.

“Horny bunny!” I said sticking my tongue out.

“Did you just stick your tongue out at me Ms.Manoban?”

“I did. Why Mr.Jeon? Will you punish me for it?” I smirked back.

“Stick it out one more time and I’ll suck it.” he warned.

I know he’s serious so I didn’t.

“Coward Lisa.”

“No,I’m not.”

“You are. If you’re not, you’ll show me your tongue now.”

“I know what’ll happen if I do, so no.” I said, crossing my arms over my chest.

“Then you’re a coward.” he chuckled soflty.

“I’m not a coward.”

“Then stick you tongue out. Come on. Let me see your cute tongue.”

“You’re weird. Why would I s—”

Jungkook didn’t let me finish my question. Suddenly his lips was moving against mine already. He tugged my lower lip before wiping it with his tongue.“kook.”

“You’re a tease you know.” he said in my mouth then his tongue fought with mine. Seconds later he was already sucking my tongue. It felt so good that I could feel myself getting wet. In return, he was also growing hard against my hips.

Jungkook groaned again “Oh..how I want you so bad.” He let out his frustration by moving my hand to to his. I touched

his already big bulge.

“See baby, how desperate I am.” Jungkook’s whiney voice mixed with his warm breath sent shivers down my spine.

“I want you too.” Is all that I could say.

But what can we do?we’re inside a hospital room and we cannot do it here. All we can do is wait to be back in his house.

I wasn’t able to protest when I felt being carried to the comfort room.

Author’s Note

Do you think Ji-eun’s accident was real or it’s just planned?

Btw, I am stressed free now. I have no more people to fight on twitter because Lisa’s name was cleared.

I can finally write faster.

Ji-eun's Plan

A Chapter for Ji-eun's POV

Ji-eun's POV

I felt that my head is throbbing in pain when I woke up. The bright light from the windows was not helping either. It's as if I'm about to be blinded with all these lights and this white walls.

What am I doing here?

And why am I alone?

I confusedly look around.

This room looks like a hospital's room.

Yeah right! I had an accident.

Jungkook hit me last night and this is all his fault.

But where is Jungkook?

He should be here.

He should be taking care of me.

He should beg for my forgiveness.

I looked around hoping to see him but there were no people inside.

Although I hear voices…
no..moans..moans of a girl and it sounds familliar.

It sounds close but I can't stand to search for it.

But who would be moaning in a hospital room like this? Maybe my mind is just playing tricks with me.

(A/n: Imagine lol)

"You taste so good baby. Spread it wider, let me kiss it more." the man sounds familliar too.

His voice sounds like Jungkook's. But it cannot be him. Jungkook is sweet and so vanilla. He will never sound like this needy and horny man. Whoever it is.

"Shh..lower your voice. She might wake." the girl spoke again.

Oh my god! Is it a nurse having sex here? What the?

"Then let's be quick. Turn around." That is so not Jungkook. The man sounded so demanding. Jungkook is a baby, not a daddy.

"God! You look so good baby from behind."

Who are these people? Are they nurses? Do they know that these acts are strictly prohibited in this kind of places?

"Bend more Lis..Yeah just like that!"

"Jungkook this is embarrassing."

"Don't be shy. It is perfect. You look perfect."

Did I hear her right?

Jungkook?

Is it Jungkook?

My Jungkook?

Maybe my mind is just playing with me.

These are just horny nurses! I'm sure of that. This is not him.

I kept my mouth shut as I try to focus on the sound they are making.

"Good girl. Yeah bend it just like that. Here I come."

"Ahhh..kook.!" the girl hissed, clearly pained.

Damn. That male nurse must got a big dick with him.

"You like it?"

I just can't believe my day would be spent with hearing people having sex.

"Yeah..continue..there..right. Your hitting me..ahhh God!"

"You're so tight baby. I will come any moment now if you keep squeezing me like this." the man kept groaning in pleasure. He sounds so sexy that I feel like I'm being needy too.

And the girl was moaning so hard too.

I can hear every slap of flesh echoing inside the room, heavy breathing and lewd sounds.

He's fucking her senselessly I can tell by the rythym of the slaps. I could only imagine how rough this male nurse is.

"Common baby push it back. That's right baby..It feels so good… Fuck!"

"This pussy's so tight I can't move."

"Jungkook! keep pounding like that."

WHAT THE FUCK?

She's calling him Jungkook again?

This is not Jungkook! This is not my Jungkook!

Stop calling him that!

But what if it's really Jungkook?

"Spread those legs more so I can get deeper." he breathed every words as if he's in cloud 9.

"Oh my God! Kook you're so deep in me…"

"Feel my cock inside your sweet pussy baby girl."

"Kook, I'm close!" Whoever this girl is, she's at her peak now.

"Wait..Let's cum together love."

He called her love?

No. no! Jungkook will never call another girl love.

He only loves me. No one else. He's crazy for me. This is not Jungkook! Maybe they just have the same name with the nurse.

Yeah. He is a nurse named Jungkook. Not my Jungkook.

"Kook, I can't hold it anymore!"

"I'm cumming FUCK! Lisa cum now!"

Groans…

Then silence.

I could only wait for them to get out and scold them myself. What kind of nurses are they?

But minutes pass by and they're still not coming out. Only for me to realize that they are kissing.

I can hear it. The making out sound. They are still kissing and it's annoying me more.

Who the hell kisses after sex? That's lame.

But what I heard next was something really unexpected.

Because the man who I guessed as a nurse uttered words which I often hear back then. But this time it's different. There's more feelings to it.

"I love you baby. I can't wait for all of this to be over so that we can be together peacefully." his words pinched my heart.

The voice, the loving words made me realized that it is really my Jungkook.

But why? I thought he loves me? I thought he's crazy for me?

And who's this girl he just had sex with?

"I love you too Jungkook. Yeah, I hope this gets over soon. I miss cuddling with you in bed."

"I'll make sure we can do that soon. I miss it too. But for now let's just settle for this."

I rolled my eyes when I heard them kissing again.

I couldn’t believe hearing him say I love you to another girl can hurt me this bad?

Am I finally having feelings for him?

Or is it just my ego?

Whatever it is. I don’t want them to be happy.

I’ll ruin them.

I’ll break them.

I’ll make this girl cry whoever she is.

I’ll break her heart, I’ll crush it and I’ll stomp on it.

I still have my last card. If I play well, I can get him. I’m sure of that.

Thank goodness the doctor last night was a dear friend of mine. He was able to make it look worse as it should.

I wiggled my toes under the heavy wrapping to check if it’s still okay.

Seeing my legs being wrapped like this, hinted me that the doctor really did “The Plan”.

I can’t believe how great the doctor is. He can really make a fool out of Jungkook with this. He deserves a high amount of pay.

I was in deep thoughts of my plan when the door opened.

And there both of them came out, holding hands.

It is really Jungkook

and the girl is….

His student?

Shit!

Before they could see me awake, I quickly closed my eyes and pretended that I’m still sleeping.

I need to think quick. I can’t talk to Jungkook now that I’m still in shock.

The fuck? he just had sex with his student in the comfort room?

I can hear the girl's giggles. Even Jungkook's too. Making me realize that this is the first time he laughed like this.

And I hate it.

I hate them so so much!

All along I though Jungkook would be kneeling infront of me because of the accident and here he is flirting with this girl.

This must be the reason why I didn't like this student from the very start. It's a woman's instinct that I got mad when he called me back when I was in Australia telling me that he's adopting his student.

I had a feeling then that she will take him away from me.

We were good before she came. Jungkook was happy with me but this slut probably seduced him or what.

I am so pissed that I just want to come at her, curse her, grab her hair, slap her face.

But now I need to clear my mind and be calm. I must not be consumed by my anger. It shouldn't mess with my plans.

This act of lying in bed alone is already hard to play. That's why I need to pull this off successfully.

Although the accident was not intended. I literally ran to him hopping he will stop when he sees me but this jerk really hit me.

That hurt my ass and my head so bad that It made me unconscious. I was just lucky that his driving isn't fast. If not, I could've died by now.

But when I got conscious in the emergency room, my friend, Doctor Kunghan explained that my baby is okay. And that nothing serious happened except the head-injury which I got from hitting the ground. But he says I'll get better in two-three days.

Even though the loss of blood from my head made me dizzy and sleepy, I have still thought of something.

The incident led me to take advantage of the situation. It was really genius for me to think about something like this.

I know it's a desperate move for me to do but it's my only way for Jungkook to take care of us. So I asked the doctor to make it look like worse. Like I got blind or what. In exchange of a good amount of payment, he agreed.

The planning was too scandalous for the doctor that's why he made his nurses leave first. Only when they left we had come up with the idea that I won't walk again.

This way, Jungkook will be left with no choice but to take care of me 24/7. After the talk, my head hurt so much again making me lose my consciousness for the second time of the night.

I'm really lucky to have a fanboy like that doctor. Thanks to him, I can make Jungkook mine again.

Author's Note.

Short update for you guys.

So, whose theory was right? 😁

Mother's Pressure

Please ignore typos. As I'm just writing in a dark screen. 😂

Jungkook's POV

Lisa had to leave to buy something for dinner and I was left here in the hospital to watch over Ji-eun.

I was peeling some mandarins when I heard Ji-eun's voice.

"Jungkook?" her weak, hisky voice called.

"Oh my God! Ji-eun? You're finally awake!" I ran to her side and sat beside her bed. I can't believe it! I stared at her face to check if she's got amnesia or what.

"Where am I?" she looked around looking a little lost. Then she tried to sit back up. I helped her by putting pillows on her back.

"You're here at the hospital. I rushed you here after the accident. Can you remember what happened last night?" I asked her gently. Looking at her now, it seems like she's finally okay.

"Yes..I remembered. But what is this?" she asked looking at her legs.

Shit.

This is it.

I am finally faced with this question.

This is moment that I have to tell her the tragic news and it's so hard. Really really hard to announce a news that will break her.

"Jungkook..what's this? I can't feel my legs! What happened?" her eyes widened in horror. Even if it's heart-wrenching, I need to tell her the truth before she hears it from others.

“Ji-eun..please listen…after the accident, it was said that you cannot walk again. Your legs sufferred from the impact. I’m deeply sorry Ji-eun.” I apologized my heart out.

“What??? No! This is not be happening!!!” she angrily shook my shoulders while screaming at me.

“Jie-eun it’s true…I’m so sorry. It was my fault.”

“You’re joking Jungkook! Tell me you’re just lying. Please!”

“Ji-eun I’m not… I’m so so sorry. You can blame it all in me.” I looked down guiltily. I can’t face her right now.

It took time before she started crying. She was blaming me but I understand. And I can’t bear seeing her like this. Her weak sobs made me pull her body to embrace. Her arms snaked around my torso almost immediately and she burried her face on my chest.

“Jungkook what will happen to me now? Who will take care of me? I have no family..If I can’t walk, how will I work?” she tightened her arms around me as she continued to cry on my chest.

“Shh..I’ll take care of you. I will also search for other doctor’s opinion so—”

“What? No!” she shouted before pulling away from the hug. I was confused at her reaction.

“Why?” I asked her. Why is she overreacting?

She calmed down after. “I mean, I know some doctors who can help me. I want to choose mine. I don’t trust other persons easily.” she explained. When did she started having trust issues?

“But we need the best doctors. I want you to walk again so that you can have your life back.”

“My known doctors are the most renowned here in Korea. You don’t have to search for me. I’ll choose my own.” Ji-eun kept insisting her doctors that’s why I didn’t argue anymore. As long as they are the best. I believe they can help Ji-eun’s case.

“Would you really take care of me?” she asked, leaning slightly on me for another hug and I just let her.

I’m sure Lisa won’t mind if she sees us like this. This is one way of comforting Ji-eun. It is just normal to hug her after breaking down the news to her.

“I will, I’ll hire servants and nurses for you. Okay? And I’ll visit you once a week in your house.” I explained my plans but she just frowned after hearing it. She seemed to be against it so I asked her, “Why?”

“I don’t want other people to take care of me. I trusts no one but you. I only want you to take care of me Jungkook.” she pulled away again and pouted.

“But Ji-eun I am working whole week. And these people I’m hiring are professionals. They won’t do something to you.”

“Jungkook, you must be forgetting that I’m an actress. What if they are crazy psychos who wants to kill me?”

“That’s impossible Ji-eun.” I laughed slightly. Her imagination is wild. As wild as my imaginations for Lisa in bed.

“It isn’t. Just please come to me everyday. Like after your class to check on me. Or just let me stay at your house.”

“What? No! You’re staying in your house. I’ll just come to you.”

“Everyday?” she asked. I sighed as I look at her. Why does she want my presence so bad now?

But it’s either I’ll come to her or she’ll stay at Lisa and I’s house. Between the two options, I’d rather choose the first one.

“Fine. I’ll visit you everyday, happy?”

“Thank you so much Jungkook!” she hugged me again. She seems too happy with the news of me visiting her than worrying on her condition which is weird.

When she pulled away, I remebered the other news.“By the way Ji-eun, how long have you’ve been pregnant? And whose the father of that.” I asked pointing at her belly.

After asking her this question, she grew stiff and the color on her face drained.

“I..I was..it was an accident.” she looked down at her belly and rubbed it.

“Accident?” Can you consider having sex as an accident? The news of her being pregnant is still unbelievable to me. I can’t believe she will have sex with another man.

I have respected her so much back then that I didn’t touch her. As I want her to remain pure until our wedding. That was my stupid plan back then.

Until I met Lisa. Lisa’s just so irresistible that I can’t get my hands off of her. If I could burry myself inside her all the time, I will. Lisa’s body is my temple of pleasure and warmth and her heart will always be my home.

“My co worker black mailed me to have sex with him. I swear I didn’t want to but he threathened my life.” Ji-eun cried again as she recalled the horrendous act of her co-star.

“What the fuck? You mean he raped you?”

“Yeah..sort of like that. He just forced me Jungkook. I was supposed to give my first to you but he took it away instead.”

I could feel my blood boiling now. How can a man do this to a girl? And worse he got her pregnant!

“Then let’s sue him for what he did! He deserves to be jailed Ji-eun.”

“No..please no..” she grabbed my arms to stop me

“Why?”

“I’ve had enough damage on my career now. I don’t want the media to know about this. Please Jungkook don’t make it hard for me.”

“So you’ll just let him be? Does he even know he got you pregnant? He needs to face his responsibilities!”

“Yes he knows. He doesn’t want it as much as I don’t want him. So please let’s leave him alone in all of this. The accident was your fault anyway so you should be responsible for me from now on.”

“What the? I know I had a mistake but can you not blame all of it on me. You’re the one who run infront of the car.”

“But I thought you will stop. You still hit me despite seeing me.!”

“But..” I shut my mouth and messed my hair frustratedly. There’s no point in arguing with her now. Especially that I caused her this. The only thing that I can do is to help her.

“So…when can I go home?” Ji-eun broke the silence.

“The doctor says if you gain your consciousness back, you can go home and he’ll just monitor you there.”

“You mean WE can go home! Don’t tell me you’re planning to leave me alone in my house the first night?” spoiled Ji-eun is back at it again.

I didn’t know avoiding yourself from rolling your eyes can be as hard as this.

But I just let her be.

“One day. One day only Ji-eun. I’ll just stay to help you be acquainted with your nurse and servants.” I sighed defeatedly.

No matter how many times I planned everything, it feels like Ji-eun can still control me. And it stems from the fact that I did her wrong that’s why I need to do this.

My answer made her clap her hands. She hugged me back so tight that I couldn’t breath.

Now all I need to do is to tell Lisa about this. I hope she won’t get jealous if I stay with Ji-eun for one day.

Lisa’s POV

Instead of ordering a take out for dinner, I just made a simple meal for Jungkook and I at home.

I was already packing when I heard the door opened.

Who is it?

Is it Jungkook?

I walked out of the kitchen to see who came but I was surprised to see Jungkook's mom.

"Mother?" she was by the door with an assitant. Both of them are holding shopping bags.

"Oh Lisa! You're here!" she excitedly walked to me after placing the bags on the coffee table.

She kissed me on both checks before pulling me on the sofa. "Come here. I have something to give you."

"What is it mother?" I asked. I wonder why she seems to be super excited.

"I bought you these yesterday. It was never my plan to shop for this but I just passed by this baby shop and I found really cute stuffs." she kept explaining as she pulls out baby clothes, toys and and other baby stuffs from the shopping bags.

They were supposed to make me happy but at this point, I don't know if I will laugh or I will cry.

"This one is yellow because we don't know the gender yet."

"The design of this one is also unisex Lisa?"

"And I bought 10 pairs of shoes. 5 for girls and 5 pairs for a baby boy just to make sure. Either way, you and Jungkook can just make another one."

"Mother I…" how can I tell her that I can't give her her grandchild if she's excited as this?

"Where is Jungkook so that I can show him this?" she looked around first, searching for him. I hope she doesn't see that lunchboxes that I prepared.

"Uhm..he's still at school." I lied. I can't tell her about Ji-eun's accident or she'll panic again.

"That boyfriend of yours is really workaholic. Lisa please tell him to take care of his body more. He needs to be healthy

to be able to produce healthy sperms."

"Mother..I.."

"Oh..I almost forgot, I bought you folic acid and vitamins to keep you healthy my dear. Please take this regularly too. This will be good for you and your future baby."

"I.."

"Don't worry.. We are not pressuring you both. Pregnancy will come at the right time Lisa. Umm.. By the way, what were you saying again?" she asked, completely ignoring the fact that she just bought newborn to 3-year old baby stuffs.

She's sure not pressuring me.

Giving me these things is already pressuring me. Now I don't have the guts to explain that I can't do it.

I can't give them their grandchildren. And this is probably the most frustrating feeling in the world right now

How I wish the case was different!

How I wish I am normal.

How I wish I can reproduce.

How I wish I can carry Jungkook's children.

But I can't.

I don't even know what I did to deserve this curse. When all I did was to feed my uncle, to take care of orphaned children, to be kind to my classmates and to love Jungkook with all my heart.

My heart was filled with too much sorrow that I didn't know I was already crying.

"Lisa? Oh my god! Are you crying? I'm so sorry if I scared you..I'm sorry Lisa" she reached out to wipe my tears as she continue apologizing.

I held her hands which is on my cheeks and smiled at her. "No..no..I just remembered a drama. It was very touching. Also these girfts of yours are all amazing. Thank you so much for being so thoughtful of us mother."

“Really? You liked it?” she got excited again. I just nodded and faked a smile.

“You know I have also planned to buy high chairs, stroller and……

Jungkook’s mom continued her long long talk about all those amazing stuffs that she wished to buy and all I could do was nod and smile.

Before she left, she asked for a mother and daughter date on the mall that she went to. She said, she wants my opinion on the items too. And even if it’s hard to act like I’m also excited, I still did to not break her heart.

I’m still holding on the fact that I have .001% chance of getting pregnant. I don’t care if it risks my life. As long as I can make all of them happy.

Afyer few minutes, I was already at the car driving out of the garage when I noticed that a car is blocking the driveway.

Who the fuck is this?

I annoyingly walked out of my car when it didn’t move.

“What the fuck is wrong with this driver? Can’t he/she hear my honking?”

I knocked on it’s window continuosly to have them open.

Thankfully, the window to the passenger’s seat pulled down.

I was so ready to shout at his or her face but I was muted when I see Mr.Kim inside.

“You? What are you doing here?” I asked. Is this a coincidence or he really knows where I live?

“I just came here to give you this.” he pulled my hand and placed an iphone there. “Next time, tell your boyfriend to not block my number.” he turn his head away from me.

I was just there left speechless.

Boyfriend?

Blocked?

Did Jungkook blocked his number?

“Oh..and also, I’ll call you in a day or two to give you the address. Use that phone us our contact. Don’t tell anyone about it especially your boyfriend.”

“You mean babysitting right?”

My question made his thick brow meet. “Huh?”

“I’ll be babysitting your baby is that it?” I asked again. He looked confused at my question. I don’t know if we understand each other but I really guess he wants me to babysit his baby.

“Ye..yeah..babysitting it is.” he hesitantly answered. “I’ll be going now. I will see you soon.”

And just like that, he left.

His baby must be so precious to him that he gave me a phone for just babysitting purposes?

Mr.Kim is really weird.

All rich mean are weird.

But more importantly, the driveway is clear now, I can finally drive straight to Jungkook to see him.

I wonder if Ms.Ji-eun is conscious already.

Have they sorted things out now?

Will she forgive him?

I hope she does. Jungkook deserves to be forgiven as it was not all his fault.

When I reached the hospital. I imagined Jungkook sitting by the couch while waiting for me but I was wrong.

I caught him embracing her as soon as I peek at the door. She’s crying on his chest.

The scene of them embracing each other’s arms was too painful for me. I can’t watch them like this so I walked away.

I know I shouldn’t be jealous. He’s just comforting her because of what happened.

I must understand Jungkook.

As his girlfriend, I need to support him in his decisions and part of it is taking care of her.

He loves me and I trust him. This act is just normal in this kind of situation.

It’s normal to embrace her.

And I’ll never get jealous.

I won’t.

Author’s Note

Between the two, who do you think will be hurting the most at the peak of the story?

Jungkook?

Lisa?

Worried Jungkook

Short Update

Jungkook's POV

After comforting Ji-eun, I got up and sat on the couch to wait for Lisa. It's more than an hour now but Lisa's still not back.

This place is so boring without her. Although Ji-eun tried to talk a while ago, the talk was awkward and boring between us.

There is really not amusing about our relationship back then. It was always Ji-eun whinning about a lot of things and me going extra mile for her.

Nothing much to talk, nothing to bond with, no sweet memories to recall. Life with her was so boring.

I glanced at jI-eun's direction. She's currently playing games at her phone.

Uhg!..I wish Lisa is here already. I miss her. I swear she'll get a lot of tickles later for being late.

I was thingking Lisa the whole time when the door finally opened.

"Lisa?"

The smile that was plastered on my face was replaced by a frown when Ji-eun's nurse came in.

"Sir, this was given by a girl named Lisa." she said handing me a bag of lunchboxes.

"Huh? She handed you this personally? Where is she?" I asked in panic.

Don't tell me that she just left it here without meeting me first?

"She just left—"

“Please help Ms.Ji-eun here for the night and let her eat this. I’ll make sure to pay you back tommorow.”

Just one nod from the nurse and I ran outside of the room. I even hear Ji-eun’s calling but I’m in a rush to chase Lisa.

Where is she?

Where’s my baby?

I kept running, searching for her. But I didn’t see her.

Maybe she’s now on her way home. Come to think of it. Ji-eun’s room is just at the 3rd floor.

I smiled when I remembered one thing.

She hates using the elevators. I’m sure she’s using the stairs.

I run down the stairs hoping that I can still catch her.

And I was never wrong. I saw Lisa’s head. That’s my baby’s head. I know it is her. Cause I kiss that head every morning.

“Lisaaaa.” I screamed when I reached her at the ground floor of the parking lot.

She stopped. And turn around. A fake smile on her lips.

“Where are you going?” I asked, crossing the distance.

“Uhm..I need to do my assignments..so I—”

“Stop lying. Why are you leaving? And can you not smile like that. I know you’re faking it.” I tried pulling Lisa by her waist to mine.

She looked away. “I just don’t want to ruin your moment.” she looked away, looking upset.

“What moment?” Is she referring to me and Ji-eun?

“You were hugging and—”

“Oh..common! Don’t tell me you’ll be jealous of a comfort hug. Lisa if you think there was meaning behind that hug then you’re wrong. Ji-eun was just horrified by the news and I was there as a shoulder to cry on.”

Lisa was still silent. She didn’t even return my when I hugged her.

“Baby, please don’t be upset with me. It’s just like how you hugged Bambam back then.”

“I understand Jungkook..I really do. But she’s still your ex. So at least keep your distance from her. You can stay in the same room without hugging. I’m sure she won’t die without it. This is supposed to be mine.” she said pointing at my chest. Her jealous voice takes over.

“I get it Lisa. I’m sorry. I hope this doesn’t make you think that I have something for her because I really don’t. Ji-eun and I’s story are long over. There’s no point in getting jealous over the past that has long been forgotten. Do you understand me Lis? Come on forgive me my love.” I begged as I kept brushing her arms.

“Okay. But please be mindful of the distance between you two. I mean it Jungkook. You know me.” she warned.

Of course I know. Lisa getting mad scares me more than death, if she only knew.

“I know and I’m sorry. Now hug me back please. I’m missing your hugs baby.” I know Lisa can’t resist my pouts so I used it. And there she goes hugging me back like we haven’t seen each other for years.

I then pecked her lips which looks so tempting to kiss. “I love you Lisa.”

“I love you too Jungkook. I’m sorry for being jealous.”

“It’s okay. Now let’s go. I need to make up to you at home. You can choose either cuddles, non-ending kisses, massage or sex. Name anything and I’ll give it to you.” I playfully winked at her and she blushed.

God! She’s so cute everytime she blushes like this.

“Wait! You mean you’re going home? How about Ms.Ji-eun?” she worriedly asked.

Just a minute she was jealous of Ji-eun and now she’s being worried?

“The nurse can take care of her. Besides she regain her consciousness now. I’ll just go back tomorrow morning. She

will be discharged tomorrow Lisa."

"Oh really? But is it really okay to leave her there?"

"It is. She can just eat the food you brought."

"How about you, aren't you hungry? You need to eat too." Lisa is sounding like my worried mom again.

"I'll just eat at home. Now where's your car?" I asked. I don't want to use mine as I'm still not confident about my driving. So I planned for Lisa to drive for us.

What's with me driving recklessly lately by the way? Last time I hit Lisa and this time it's Ji-eun.

"There's no more food at home. I brought everything here." Lisa tugged me back from searching for her car.

But I pulled her with force making her bump on my chest. I found the opportunity to lean closer at her to whisper, "It's not always food that I want to eat. Sometimes it's you."

Her face turned red after hearing it. I know she's feeling all shy and I just laughed. Lisa's still not used to dirty talks.

"No, I'll just cook for you."

"You don't have to. Let's go Lis."

Minutes later, we were already in the car, It was filled with laughter between us both because I kept on teasing her about my night plans.

"Stop Jungkook! I can't focus on driving." she tried to warn but I know she's enjoying it.

I can even feel her wetness against the thin fabric of her leggings.

"I won't stop until you answer my question. So which is it Lis?"

"I can't believe you're leaving me with no options!" she rolled her eyes. Her gaze is still maintained on the road despite my teasing.

"Well you have an option. As I said, It could either be cuddles that will end in sex, massage that will end in sex or

kissing that will end in sex? Those are very different options babe.” I chuckled. It’s really fun teasing Lisa because she blushes so hard like this. I swear everything in her face is red that she looks like a tomato.

And just no matter how many times I claim her, she still ends up being an adorable shy girl.

“Whatever. It will end in sex anyway.” this time she was laughing again.

“At least we’ll end up in heaven?”

The time spent inside the car was really fun. No forced talks, no forced laughter, no forced emotion.

Lisa and I’s relationship is really healthier than other couples. I can say that because no matter how many times we fought or had a disagreement, Lisa and I will always solve our diffferences smoothly.

Looking at her now, I can say that Lisa is surely the only person who caused me so much happiness and contentment. She’s years younger than me but the amount of joy she’s given me is immeasurable.

The old Jungkook wouldn’t know that loving can be this satisfying. Thank God I met her.

I would probably go crazy if a day will come that she’ll left me.

No. I shook my head when the thought crossed my mind.

No. She’ll never leave me. She loves me so much just like how I love her. No one can break this relationship that we have right now.

“Are you okay?” she asked.

“Yeah..I’m..okay. why?” I tried sounding casual. But Lisa won’t buy it for sure.

“You’re shaking you head for a minute now. Tell me what’s wrong.” the concern in her voice made me open up my thoughts.

“Lisa, have you ever felt of being scared because everything looks perfect. And somehow, you feel that something’s about to happen?” I asked. The thought just crossed my mind and it scares the shit out of me.

“What are you saying Jungkook? You’re overthingking too much.” she replied with a laugh.

I really hope I’m just overthinking.

“Lisa, you will never leave me right?”

She turn her head at me. “Why would I do that?”

“Because..” I tried searching for words. I don’t know what’s gotten into me for thinking like this. “Nevermind. I’m sure you won’t. I know you love me.”

“I think you’re just stressed from the things which happened recently. And I believe it is you who needs a massage so I’ll give you one when we reach home. Is that fine with you?” she smiled. And just one smile, all the anxiousness I am feeling vanished away.

Lisa’s smile > anxiety

“I would love too.”

Author’s Note

Does liskook having sex annoys you? If yes, I’ll not include the details next chap.

Relaxing Massage

Jungkook's POV

I fumbled with my keys to the door of our house. My hands are shaking with the adrenalin that is pumping through my body.

The stiffness in my pants is now unbearable. At last, I manage to insert the key in the lock and after a couple of attempts, the door swings open.

"Geez, Jungkook why such in a hurry?" Lisa laughed out at my eagerness.

"Because I've had enough of teasing." I pulled Lisa in and slam the door behind us.

"Go to your room into the shower while I will take my shower in my room. I'll also get the oil to massage you."

"Huh? But I thought I'm the one massaging you?" she asked, a little confused.

"I changed my mind because I know you're good at it and if it's the case, I might sleep before fucking you." my answer made her laugh again.

"You're a big horny bunny. Where are we doing the massage then? My room?" she asked.

"Uhm..yeah, your old room. Your new room is mine Lisa. We are sharing it remember?"

Lisa uses her room now just for the bathroom. Her clothes are also there but she sleeps in my bed all the time except when she's pissed at me.

Lisa complied and went straight to prepare while I clean myself thoroughly. It feels so good to finally take my bath here.

The one in the hospital grosses me out. I don't know if I have OCD or what but I feel like I'm stucked with germs

everytime I go to a hospital.

After my bath, I took both coconut and almond oil on my drawer and walked straight to Lisa's room. Only a towel covers my waist down.

When I opened the door to her room, she's already standing by the bed. Looking at it as if she can't decide if she'll lay there or what. This made me chuckle.

(A/n: Imagine)

"Are you planning to murder the bed baby?" she turn around, eyes landed straight on the outline of my cock against the towel.

"Uhm..should I remove this?" she asked pointing at her bathrobe.

"Of course. How can I massage you of you're wearing that?" I walked closer and placed the oils on her bedside table. "Here let me help you." I said. My hand travelled to the tie of her robe.

"Jungkook…"

I untied them and let the it flung open.

There my eyes were blessed by her nakedness.

Just two months ago I was covering her with my coat when I saved her from her uncle, and now I get to undress her like this.

"You're a goddess you know that?" my feeling intensified more when I let the robe down.

She shyly covered her breasts which is no use because I'll be sucking them later.

Without waiting any further, I lean to her and owned her sexy lips as I let my hand trace the outline of her body. She returns the kiss with the same fervour as it is given. Her soft hands tightened around my neck.

Our bodies touch and I can feel her nipples harden as she presses against my chest. I have the urge to slip my hand between her legs, but I could run the risk of not proceeding

with my original plan of massaging her so I broke from her kiss.

“Let’s continue later baby. I want to make you feel good first.” she nodded softly. “Now lie on your stomach baby.”

“Lie on my stomach? I feel shy Jungkook.” she glanced at the bed first. Can I wear my cotton shorts? The costumers I massaged back then usually covers their bum down.”

“There’s no need. And you don’t have to be shy. I’ve seen everything already.”

“Still. I’m shy showing my ass to you.”

“But you’re letting me fuck you from behind?”

“But this is a massage!”

I know there’s no point in arguing because she’ll just insist her point so I had no choice but to carry her.

“Jungkook put me down!” I didn’t though. I let her lie down as I press my body to her so that she can’t move.

“You’re so heavy! I can’t breath!” she squirmed against my hold. And seeing her so petite body being poorly squeezed against mine, I let her go. “Okay but don’t move okay?”

“Okay.okay..” she breathed after I totally let go. I straddled her legs between my thighs, her face on the pillow.

“What a view I have, I love the look of a nice ass, and yours certainly fits that description.”

“Stop looking!” she whinned. I let out a small laugh before reaching for the oil.

I took an ample amount of oil and rubbed it against her back. Lisa let out a moan when I massaged away her aches and pains.

“Oh my God! It feels good Jungkook! I didn’t know you’re this good.” I felt proud after she praised my new learned skill. I just read a lot about It honestly. Though I feel good about it, I’m still sure Lisa is better because she has real life experiences on it.

A curious thought ran through my head so I called her, “Love?”

“Hmmn?” Lisa looked so relaxed on the bed. Her arms are folded on her sides. Her head is facing sideways and she breathes sharply everytime I hit a spot.

“Back then when you worked as a masseuse, have you ever had a male costumer?” I don’t want to brought up the question really but I’m really curious.

“Most of the time, yes.” her confession made me frown.

“You mean you massage men like what I’m doing to you?” I asked in disbelief.

Just what the hell?

“Of course not like this. What we are doing is too intimate. I do it professionally. Wearing a uniform while the client wears his shorts.”

Now I get really pissed. Just how lucky are these guys that Lisa’s hands touched them? She should receive millions of pay for it.

I move my hands across her shoulders and around her shoulder blades feeling for any hard spots that need special attention. I manage to find a few and work the knots loose as my fingers knead deeply. I continue to run my hands over her shoulders and upper back for many minutes letting Lisa enjoy the good feeling.

“Have you ever had a rich costumer that gave you good tip?” I asked out of curiousity again. With Lisa’s good looks, she can attract a lot of men.

“Hmm..I can’t remember..oh! Right..there was this actor. I forgot the name who gave me a really big tip that I was able to buy toys for the orphaned children.” she shared excitedly.

“Actor? Who?”

“It was the actor from the drama I’m not a robot.” she exclaimed.

“Who? Yoo Seung-hoo?” I asked while frowning.

“Yes that one. He’s so handsome in real life. And a gentleman too.” Lisa happily said.

“Pshh..they’re just acting like gentleman around other people but they’re real jerk in person.” even if I’m pissed, I still managed to massage her small body properly.

“Huh? Why would you say that? Do you know him?” she asked curiously, twisting her head to look at me.

“I don’t know him but I just have a feeling that he’s not the gentleman that he seems. So when did you met him? Back when you don’t know me yet?” I asked again. Trying to act casual even though I’m getting jealous now.

Who wouldn’t be jealous when your girlfriend just called other guy handsome? This is the very first time she praised a man aside from me.

“No. I met him few weeks ago. Remember the time when that slut P.E.teacher got your attention making me leave this house for more than a week. I worked on part time jobs then. That’s when I met him.” she explained. So that’s the reason why she’s always busy that time.

“You mean you met him just recently and you touched him?” I move down to Lisa’s lower back, moving my fingers in circles to relax her very tight muscles. Using my thumbs to get the deeper knots.

“It was a job. Nothing serious about it. But he was impressed with my job that he asked for my number.”

“What the fuck? Are you kidding me?”

“It’s not what you think Jungkook. He just wished to have my service in the future that’s why he asked for it.” she tried to defend it but I’m not buying it. I feel like it’s not just the service that he wants.

“Did you give him your number then?” I swear if she did.

“I didn’t. I know you’ll get jealous if I do, so I didn’t.”

“Now we are talking.” I smiled.

“Yes so please continue. I feel sleepy now.” she yawned and I panicked.

“Wait, don’t sleep yet baby.” I continued the massage as I used the palms of my hands to stretch the muscles across her back, strecthing and pulling in all directions, working her muscles over well.

“Hmmn you really know just where the sore spots are.” I hear Lisa moan as I work my way lower.

Soon my fingers are working the line just above her ass. I am just craving the feel of her ass in my hands as she has such a nice ass.

Once I am done stretching and soothing the muscles in Lisa’s back, I slid my hands over her ass, squeezing gently. Then I slipped my finger in the crack of her ass, swirling my finger at the point of her tight little pussy

Lisa raised her hips up trying to meet my finger wanting more than just this tease. But I am not buying into it as I have a lot of areas to massage yet.

I slip off so that I am no longer straddling her but kneeling next to her on one side. I reach out and start to rub the back of her thigh, working out all the tension on the flesh.

She’s such a long and smooth legs. She can go viral for this.

“Ahhh..” Lisa can’t help but moan with the sensations. I reached further to the inside of her thigh and she spread her legs a little. I can now see the smooth little flower between her legs and I run my finger across it. She gasped “Koook!”

I then move my hands back to work her thigh muscles some more. Next I continue down to her knee and calf.

Once I am done with her calf muscles, I move to the other side of the bed to work her other leg. As I settle myself into place she adjust herself to be more comfortable.

I reach over and start working the muscles in her leg, as I slide my hands to the inside of her thigh. She spread her legs again so I can reach all the spots easier. “This needs a lot of

kneeding from all the heavy fucking we had in the comfort room." I laughed. Lisa also did.

Once again I can see her tight little cunt as it peeks between her legs. It just hardened my cock more.

I continue with the slow massage as I work her thigh and then down her calf. When I finish with this leg I stand up next to the bed, lean over and bite her on the ass. She squeaked in surprise "Jungkook!"

"Turn over baby let me do your front." I commanded with all of my might. One she turned over, her nipples pointed proudly as she lay there spread, as if aching for my touch.

"Damn! Look at those curves!" my vision dimmed. It took a lot of self control to not jump on her and just fuck her right here, right now.

But I managed to walk to the foot of the bed and sit down between her feet. I grab each foot one at a time and massage the heels, the arches, the ankles, between her toes and over the top, moving my hands slowly but firmly, causing the aches and pains to melt away.

I move around the bed to sit on the side next to her hips. I reach out and place one hand on each hip and start to move them in a cicular motion.

I can definitely see her pussy getting wet with each stroke of mine. I move my hands to run to run near her clit. I am ever so careful not to come close but to not actually touch her pussy or I'll end up fingering her.

Lisa raise her hips trying to get me to touch it and ease the ache that setled there. I wave my finger at her with a little smile. "Easy baby. No need to rush."

She huffed in frustration but I just continued the work. Her arms are the next target I have in mind. I start up at the shoulder and work my way down to the hand. Once I was in her hand, I traced my finger lightly over her palm, before pressing firmly, working her sore hands.

Once both arms are done, I sat next to her chest and reach forward to the back of her neck and rub the back and the sides.

“Oh..Jungkook your touch is heavenly good.” Lisa let out with closed eyes.

I just smiled. Moving my hands across the tops of her shoulders, stretching sore muscles as I go. Down her chest, teasing and tweaking her pink nipples as I pass over them. Lisa moaned delightely. Her face is now relaxed.

“It’s done.” I announced proudly.

But she opened her eyes. As if wanting more than just a massage.

“Jungkook please.” she whinned. Her voice being needy.

“Please?” I raised one brow as if I can’t understand.

“Please fuck me.” she shyly asked.

“I thought you wanted to sleep?” I kept teasing and she pouted.

“I got wet.” she huffed in a cute way. I looked down her now glistening body. She’s covered with oil making her look more tempting.

“Then?”

“Ahh..forget it!” She groaned and tried to pull the blanket to her but I stopped her.

“I’m just joking. Of course I’ll wipe it clean baby.”

And there she goes smiling.

Author’s Note

…

After Massage ⚠

Jungkook's POV

I crossed the gap between us, I kiss her and she opens her lips for me. I suck on her tongue and she on mine, as our bodies relax.

Soon, both of her hands grab the back of my neck, pulling my lips to hers. We devoured each other's lips passionately.

After the long romantic but breathtaking kisses, we both break the kiss and lean back just slightly, so we can get a good look of each other.

Lisa is panting like a beast that has been running from a predator. The lust and passion in her eyes is burning bright.

"Lie down!" The dominant side of me takes over and I smile as she begins to comply with my wishes.

At the same time, I remove the towel that's wrapping me the whole time The aching in my groin is growing more intense. The blood-filled, engorged meat straining to be set free. My cock springs free, and I sigh in relief.

As usual, she stared at it as if mesmerized.

I stared at her for a while. Her breasts are perfect, not too big and not too small. My love's pussy is already aroused.

My erection is now steel hard and I force myself against her now completely naked body.

I reached up and held the side of her neck. My thumb on her jaw. I can feel her pulsing against my palm. The excitement sends shivers through me.

I slip my free hand between her legs and feel the wet, sticky secretions flowing from her opening.

God, this is one sweet girlfriend of mine.

“I’m going to pound the shit out of this!” I growl the words in her ear, and she murmurs.

“Yes. Kook!” her seductive voice sends tingles of electricity through my body and I squirm beneath her.

I moved down to her chest so eagerly. My hand playing with her nipples, pinching them hard. She groaned.

Then my lips move down to her bud. Licking it to ease the pain from my pinching then nibbling back.

Lisa’s back arched in pleasure as I continue attacking her nipples. Creating beautiful hickeys all around it.

“I want to feel my cock in that sweet pussy of yours baby!” I cannot hide the exhilaration in my voice. I pulled her by her hips and made her do all fours.

With her ass presented to me in such an inviting fashion, I lean forward and run my tongue on the length of her opening.

“Oh Jungkook!”

“You tastes so sweet Lisa. I swear, I can’t get enough of you!” the juices from her own arousal coating the outside of my lower and upper lips.

“God, yes! Just there.” She cries out as my tongue flickers over her now swollen clit.

All I am focused on is her sweet pussy, my stiff cock and the fog of primal lust that surrounds me and clouds my brain.

With one finger, and in a circular motion, I tease her clit from its hood. It is stiff and hard under the tip of my finger. I rub it aggressively which elicits a deep sigh that was followed by a moan.

I know that I have hit the spot but I need to feel myself buried deep in her. So I remove my face from her pussy and holding one hand on her hip, place the tip of my cock against her velvet, wet opening.

In one forceful thrust and no finesse, I drive myself cock deep in that luscious little pussy.

“Ahhh!”

The force of it pushes her down into the headboard, and I wait for her to adjust to me.

“Fuck!” How can she remain so tight like this. She is literally choking my dick.

Lisa moaned in return.

I take hold of a handful of her long, hair pulling her head back gently, making sure I’m not hurting my baby. I use it as leverage as I pump in and out of her.

It looked animalistic but damn it still looked hot. Lisa covered in oil on her body as I drive her to euphoria.

My fingers squeeze her hips so that the skin turns white under the pressure. She does not scream or cry out, simply grunts with pleasure.

I increase the speed of my hips as I pound in and out of her and marvelled at the sight of her juices running along the length of my shaft.

“Oh my God! That is so good! Fuck me harder!” Lisa wailed.

For the next three or four minutes, I fuck her pussy hard. I let go of her hair and withdraw my hips and my cock springs free off of her pussy. It is wet and shiny as I take a hold of it.

I need to stop for a moment before diving fully to release.

“Look at that!” I smile as I stare at her pumped pussy, it was almost red from the heavy fucking and juices leakes out of it.

I thrust back my cock making me grunt out loud.

“Oh yeah!” Lisa moaned louder. I reached out for her tits and pinched them making her moan.

“Do you like that?” My lust level surges to almost a violent level.

“Fuck yes. Fuck me hard Jungkook.” Her words are muffled but still audible.

If I am horny, she’s sure horny too. This just gives me enough reason to fuck her so hard.

I need no second invitation and her request is met by a massive thrust from my hips that pushes her forward. I love the sensation of her pussy muscles as they clench around my cock.

It is so so tight that it will not be long before I cum. I push into her, balls deep, and fuck her in a blind fury, releasing all the pent-up, lust-fuelled energy in me.

The feeling I have though is not full percent lust. It was filled with so much love and yearning making it the best experience ever.

I slap her ass cheeks on each forward stroke. Alternating between left and right, they glow red as I increase the intensity of fucking her sweet, tight pussy.

But as much as I want to do it more, I'm still afraid if it's too much.

"Tell me baby if I'm hurting you too much." I might not know if I'm being too rough to her now. I want her to tell me that she's fine.

Good thing she answered, "Yes! I love it. I love what you're doing to me. It's driving me crazy!"

With a smile on my lips, I summon up all the strength I can muster and drive into her harder and harder.

My dick is soaked with the juices now flowing from her pussy. She is so close to climax and I need my release.

Each thrust is met by the same, as she pushes back with her hips, wanting to feel all of me. The slapping sound in the room matches the squeaking of the bed. It will not last for sure.

"Baby, I'm close!" The tightening of my stomach muscles and the quivering in my thighs tell me I am not far now.

And in one last pound, I spurt my hot seed deep inside her womb. It exploded inside for like forever.

"Fuck!" She quivers and shakes beneath me, her own orgasm rippling through her body. Her walls pulsing and clenching around me, holding my cock still in its place.

“I love you so much Lisa!” I was panting so hard on top of her.

“As I do.” she replied also breathless.

Our breathing is ragged and laboured as I collapse on top of her. It takes a few minutes for our heart rates to drop to normal levels.

The perspiration and juices from our bodies mingling together. That was fucking beautiful.

My baby is so damn hot! Who would have thought that she’s my student.

“Let’s rest for a little while and then I’ll go and cook you a dinner. Are you good with that?” I whisper in her ear and receive the reply I want.

“Okay my love.” Her words are like music to my ears.

Few minutes later, we both get down. Lisa is just wearing a wide tshirt and panties. She’s got no shorts and her hair is tied up high. While I was only in my boxers. We’re too lazy to dress up.

I made her sit on the kitchen counter, as she waits for me to finish cooking our dinner.

“Lis, tomorrow I’ll help Ji-eun settle in her house. I need to get her acquainted with her nurse and the people I hired to help her. I hope you won’t mind.” I shaked away the nervousness in me, hoping that she understands.

“How many hours will you stay with her?” she asked, brows furrowing.

“The whole day. But I’ll be back home in the evening. That’s enough time after your class.”

“You mean I’ll go to school tomorrow?”

“Yes, you have to. You’ve been missing a lot. I’ll go back to work on tursday and friday for the review. Your final exam is on monday right?” I reminded her and she nodded.

Lisa got silent as she’s engrossed in thought. Maybe she doesn’t like that I’ll come and help Ji-eun but it’s for a day

only.

“Love? What’s the matter?” I asked as I brush her knee.

“I just realized we got at least two weeks left before graduation. It feels sad that I will part with my classmates. We have been together for three years now.” Lisa looked down on her lap and played with the hem of her shirt.

“Hey, don’t be. I’ll make sure you can bond with them all you want after graduation. For now you should be happy because after that day we can finally be free.”

Lisa smiled, “Yeah you’re right. By the way about Ms.Ji-eun, please don’t forget about always creating a gap between you two. Don’t give me enough reason to not trust you.” she warned.

“I know. I have learned my lessons Lis, no need to worry.”

I really did. I will make sure to it that I will stay at least two meters away from Ji-eun there.

After setting up the table, Lisa and I enjoyed a late night dinner.

Everything looks so well between us.

I hope this goes on forever.

Author’s Note

Short update babes.

Babysitting

Class 3-C POV

"No! I was the one who thought about it first!" Jimin objected.

"No! It was my idea copycat!" Jeongyeon snapped.

"You just said you will gift him a scarf! Why change to glasses then?" Jimin was close to blowing up this time. For him, it is always Jeongyeon who ruins everything.

"I said I was choosing between scarf and glasses and now I realized reading glasses fits him more!"

"Guys! Stop being loud! My ears are hurting!" Tzuyu complained while leaning slightly to her boyfriend, Eunwoo. Eunwoo just pat her back in return.

"Then tell your friend to stop stealing someone's idea!" Jimin huffed.

"Excuse me Mr.Park Jimin but it's mine in the first place!" Jeongyeon was not threathened too. She's now fighting for her right.

Jimin was about to jump on Jeongyeon when the class president Namjoon stepped in.

"Stop! Or I won't hesitate to cancel this plan!" his authoritative tone silenced them all.

As for the moment, the class of 3-C is having a secret meeting to plan out a surprise party for their very favorite teacher, Mr.Jeon.

Namjoon, Yoongi, Soekjin, Jimin, Jeongyeon, Dayhyun, Tzuyu and Eunwoo gathered inside the classroom to have the meeting. Mr.Jeon is on leave so they used the time for his class to plan out things.

Namjoon was standing infront of the board as he is the brain of the plan.

They thought that the teacher deserves a surprise party for teaching them for almost 3 months. Also, all of them have planned to give him special gifts as a token of their appreciation.

Two weeks more and they'll be parting ways. All of them will be walking on their own paths and this might mean that they won't see each other again.

Although Hoseok will not be able to join, he said he will just send Mr.Jeon a recorded message for the party.

Same goes to Bambam who will not be able to go back.

Chaeyoung is absent for the day because she's having morning sickness while Lisa is not yet around.

"Geez! Just let the girl buy him reading glasses Jimin and you just buy him shades. Mr.Jeon will look cooler using shades than glasses just so you know."

Jimin's face lit up and pointed to him. "You're a genius Yoongi!" he clapped his hands before turning his head to Jeongyeon, sticking out his tongue to her.

Jeonyeon just rolled her eyes at him.

Namjoon who has a marker on his hand, rubbed his chin before writing, "So we are finally settled?"

He wrote on the board:

Gifts for Mr.Jeon

Namjoon - Speacial Book
Jimin - Shades
Jeongyeon - Reading glasses
Jin - Recipe Book for Long Lasting Love
Yoongi - (Secret)
Dahyun - Planner
Tzuyu - Beauty kit for Men
Eunwoo - Shoes
Chaeyoung - Jacket

After writing the words, the door flung open making them all nervous.

“Goodness gracious! I thought it’s the principal or what!” Namjoon held his chest as he looked at Lisa.

“What are you guys doing?” Lisa looked around before her catching what is written on the board.

“We are planning something for Mr.Jeon.” Namjoon began explaining the plans and shared the gifts which their classmates wishes to buy.

Hearing the plan, she can’t help but smile. She thought her boyfriend/teacher deseves this surprise.

“How about you Lis? Do you have something to give him?” Namjoon asked. And the whole class’ attention turned to her as hey were all excited to hear her thoughts because they know now that she and Mr.Jeon are in a relationship.

“hmm..” Lisa hummed, decided for a while before being cut off by Yoongi.

“Lisa should juat wrap herself and she’s already the gift.” he blurted out.

Lisa eyes grew wide hearing this, her head snaoped at Yoongi who was quickly elbowed by Jin.

“What do you mean?” she asked. Does her classmates know that they are together?

The thought of them knowing almost gave her a heart attack!

“Nothing. It was just a joke.” Yoongi turn away from her scrutinizing eyes leaving Lisa puzzled.

“Uhm..so Lisa why are you late, you just missed out our subject with Ms.Jisoo.” Dahyun’s question was supposed to be a distraction for Lisa. So that she won’t get the idea that they already know her secret.

But Lisa has something else on her mind when she was asked with it. Her mind immediately recalled the morning spent with Jungkook.

Where she was eaten by her teacher in the kitchen island. They did a quickie before she came to school. That’s the

reason why she's late.

She complied to her boyfriend's wishes because she'll miss him as he will be spending the day with Jie-eun.

Lisa blushed and pressed her legs close. "I just woke up late. I wasn't able to set my alarm." she lied. But her classmates are not buying it.

They have seen beforehand how wild Mr.Jeon is towards Lisa that's why they guessed what's the real reason before she answers.

"Uhm..I'll just think of something else. I have nothing yet in mind." Lisa scratched her head as she has zero idea on what to give her boyfrend.

Moments later, the class finally arranged everything for the surprise party.

It was already 4 in the afternoon when they were dismissed by Mr.Wang.

Lisa planned to go home early to cook something for Mr.Jeon. but before that she needs to go for groceries first to buy some of the ingrediesnts needed.

Lisa didn't bring her car so she'll just walk to the grocery store but when she was almost out of the gate, the phone which Mr.Kim gave her rang.

Lisa took it from her backpack and swiped it to answer.

"Mr.Kim?"

"Come out. I'm waiting in front of the gate." Just one sentwnce and he ended the line.

"Rude" Lisa blurted.

She find her way out of the school gates and noticed the same car that Mr.Kin used from the night that they talked.

She crossed the road and knocked on the passesnger's window. Then, It opened to her.

"Get in" Mr.Kim who was sitting at the driver's seat ordered.

Lisa's POV

Maybe he wants me to start with the babysitting right away so I complied and sat beside him. When he leaned to me to put on my seat belt, I managed to get a better look of his face.

He's really handsome.

But not as handsome as Jungkook. Jungkook is just on another level of perfection. I don't know if I'm just biased towards him but for me, Jungkook is the best.

"Let's go Ms.Lisa?" His deep voice cut me off my thoughts of Jungkook.

"Yes, Mr.Kim."

I wonder what they are doing now? I hope he's practicing social distancing with Ms.Ji-eun.

I took my phone and sent him a message first.

"Baby,

I'll be babysitting today. See you later.

-Lisa

Not even a minute has pass when Jungkook sent a reply.

"Okay baby, See you later. I love you!"

-Jungkook

"That your boyfriend?" Mr.Kim pop the question while his eyes are focused on the road.

"Yes." I replied before sending Jungkook an "I love you too" message. I need to because he will be whinning if I don't.

That's how he usually is.

Mr.Kim just hummed in response. We didn't talk the entire trip. lt feels awkward to sit with him to be honest but at least he's not annoying like the last time I met him.

Almost an hour had passed when we we're already parking infront a big mansion.

My mouth gaped open at how wide the gate is. It is as big as the Jeon's Mansion. Only that this place looks colder. Like there's no emotion to it.

He helped me again with my seatbelt as if he's a gentleman. When we got out of his car, he didn't talk again. He just walked towards the entrance where two servants are waiting and I just followed him there.

When we both walked in, I looked around the spacious place. Just like the outside, the place is also cold on the inside. It looks dull and lifeless. Just like Mr.Kim's personality.

It didn't escape my eyes how the servants looked at me with scrutinizingly. As if I'm going to steal something from them. But instead of snobbing them, I just gave them a warm smile which surprised both of them based on their reaction.

"Is he asleep?" he asked one of the servants.

"No, Mr.Kim. Jihoon is awake."

Mr.Kim just proceed to walk on the hallway without even inviting me. But I still followed him.

"Is that Mr.Kim's new girlfriend?" I heard murmurs from behind.

"I guess so. She looks nice." Another one whispered.

"I hope she can brought back the old Mr.Kim. I miss him already."

"Me too."

Brought back the old Mr.Kim? What do they mean?

He looks young to me.

"Ms.Lisa?" Mr.Kim startled me again. He stopped in front of a door.

"Oh..uhh..yes?"

"This is my son's room." he pointed at the door he is facing. "I want you to meet him." Just mentioning his son, his face lit up, a smile showed on his face.

I nodded and he pushed it open. Then there we caught the worried nanny carrying the baby in her arms while the baby is crying.

“What happened?” the excitement in his voice was replaced by a worried one. He strode next to her and took the baby to his arms.

Then he began kissing its forehead. “Shhh..baby, daddy is here. Please stop crying.”

I observed him for a moment but the baby is still crying. He looked so worried and helpless now, then he turn to the nanny, “Call the doctor please.”

“Yes, Mr.Kim.” the nanny was about to go out when I stopped her.

“No need. The baby is not sick.” I assured. “Let me.” I smiled as I walked to him. Mr.Kim stared at me for a moment before giving the baby to me.

I gently carried him in my arms. “Can you please turn off the lights?” I asked the nanny. She stared at me hesitantly but she still followed when Mr.Kim nodded.

“Bright lights and sounds can overwhelm a colicky baby. Your baby may calm down if you this.”

I sat on the sofa next to his baby’s crib and lay him across my lap, then one of my hand gently rubbed his back.

And just like that, the baby stopped crying. This surprised Mr.Kim and the nanny.

“How did you know it was colic?” he walked to sit beside me. As I continue giving the baby soft massage.

“When a baby arches his back while crying then flails his arms and legs. He sure is colicky. And also he has a red or flushed face while crying while clenching his fists. I usually observe this everytime I babysit. I love babies Mr.Kim. i know my way around them.” I smiled whole-heartedly.

It’s true. I love babies so much but the world must’ve hated me so much that I cannot bear one.

Mr.Kim smiled at me. Then turned to the nanny “Sora, you can rest for a while. Lisa will take care of this for the mean time.” After that, she excused herself away from us.

“You will be a good mother.” Mr Kim remarked in a serious manner but I just laughed. I held the baby back in my arm and smiled at him. I just realized how handsome the baby is.

“Why are you laughing?” he scotted a little closer to get a better look of his baby.

“I will never be a mother Mr.Kim.” sadness filled my heart again.

“Huh? Why did you say that?” Mr.Kim frowned at me. I don’t know why but I had the urge to tell him my secret. So I did and he payed attention to it.

“You mean you and your boyfriend are doing the deed already?” he quoted the word deed as if it’s an absurd thing to do.

“Yeah. But sadly we can’t make one.”

“But you are his student right?”

“In the eyes of other people, it may be wrong but for Jungkook and I, doing it is normal. That’s how we love each other.” My confession made him quiet. I didn’t speak much because I’m not sure if he’s judging my life choices.

I kept playing with the baby while he just watch over us. There was even a small smile on his face. Maybe because of his baby.

“Thank you Lisa.”

“For what?” why does he sound sentimental now?

“For spending this time with us. I really appreciate it.”

“It’s nothing Mr.Kim. this is just my way of thabking you for helping the children.”

After tucking the baby to bed when it fell asleep, Mr.Kim offered to drive me back at home. I refused but he insisted and I also don’t know the way around so I agreed.

Mr.Kim was driving when I remembered something.“Oh Mr.Kim! I forgot, I need to buy some ingredients for dinner. Can you drop me at Kristen’s by the corner of this road?” I stopped him when he was about to turn right to where Jungkook’s house is.

“You’re cooking?” he asked in disbelief again.

“Yes, I promised Jungkook I’ll cook him dinner tonight.” I excitedly checked my notes where I listed some of the ingredients.

“He is very lucky to have you.” Mr.Kim let out a bitter laugh.

“Trust me, he’s not. I’m too plain for him and I cannot even carry his children.” my mood turned sour again after being recalled of my condition.

Fuck my life.

“You’re still young. You don’t have to rush. You are lucky you have years to live while others have not.” Mr.Kim’s words hit me so hard.

Now I remembered that he told me about his illness. It was a hazy memory because I wasn’t paying attention that time but I still remembered some parts of it.

Even though I’m curious and I want to know more, I didn’t ask anymore because we were already parking outside the grocery store.

“Thank you so much Mr.Kim.” I bowed after he opened the door for me.

“No, I should be the one to thank you for spending your day with me. Are you sure you don’t want me to wait? I can wait and drive—”

“No no..it’s okay. The house is just close. Thank you again.”

“I’ll see you soon Lisa.”

“Yes, Mr.Kim.”

I fortunately found all the ingredients I need and went home by walking.

As I was placing the ingredientss on the kitchen island, my phone beeped.

I fished it out of my backpack hoping for a warm message from my Jungkook but his message just pissed me off.

"Baby, I need to sleep here at Ji-eun's house. She's not feeling really well. I'll just see you tomorrow. I love you baby!"

-Jungkook

"Fuck you Jeon Jungkook!!!"

I screamed at the top my lungs. It echoed around the house and I'm sure even ghost would leave the house now after hearing how loud I am.

I grumpily walked to my room and took my bag.

"If he will stay there, well I won't stay here!" I grumbled as I took some clothes and kiddie underwears to bring.

"Who's not staying here?" maybe my imaginations got the best of me. Now I'm suddenly hearing Jungkook's voice.

But when I turn around, he was really by the door grinning like a saddist bunny.

"What the fuck are you doing here?" I asked. I just read his message that he'll stay the night out, right?

"Why? Am I not allowed to see my beautiful girlfriend?" he teased while walking to me.

"You said you are—"

"I was just playing with your jealous brain because you're so cute when your face grows red and your nose holes grows wide like this." he chuckled." Oh! And what's this? My baby is leaving me?" he pointed at my backpack. This time he was laughing so hard.

"That's not a good prank to pull Mr.Jeon!" I crossed my arms and turn away to not see his grinning face.

I couldn’t believe he will play with my feelings like this!

“You know I won’t do that.” Jungkook pressed his lips to my shoulder and kissed it al the way up. His hands holding both my arms.

I bit my bottom lip when his mouth was tracing the side of my neck.

Finally when he kissed my jaw, it was end game for me.

I moaned.

Knowing that he won, he smiled against my ear.

“Come here my love.” Jungkook turned me to face him. “I’m sorry for pulling this prank. I hope you won’t get mad.” he was still smiling and I hate it.

“You should’ve—”

Fuck this guy, I was still speaking but he silenced me again with his lips.

And my weak heart didn’t even protest when he owned it just like how he owns my heart.

“I love you! I love you! I love you Lisa” he whispered against the kiss.

His strong arms lifted me so that I can straddle his waist. Pressing my body against my dresser, his lips traced again the corners of my mouth. His teeth tugged my lower lip as his tongue darted in and fought with my tongue with dominance.

I was left breathless with his attack. He put me down first. Moved slightly away to unbutton my uniform.

“Jungkook”

My skirt.

My underwear.

He removed everything before pressing me there.

Against the wall.

I willingly submitted when he took over my mind, my heart, my soul and my body.

Author’s Note

We’re near the climax guys so fasten your seatbelts and enjoy the rollercoaster ride.

😊

Graduation Day

Comments? 😂

Jungkook's POV

I spent the rest of the week by turoring Lisa and her classmates for the fourth quarter exam. It wasn't hard to teach Lisa because she's really smart.

Her low performance from the previous months was just caused by her uncle's abusive treatment on her. And now that she's being taken care of, she started performing well in school.

And Imagine how proud I was when the problematic class of SNHSU passed the exam with high scores. Even Hoseok and Bambam passed the online assessment.

I was beyond proud of them. Mr.Yang and my co-teachers congratulated me for bringing out the best in my class. The principal even offered me a permanent teaching position in school but I want to take some rest first.

Lisa and I's relationship have gone smoothly for a week. Lisa learned to manage her feelings well everytime I would visit Ji-eun. She will spend her time babysitting while I spend my time taking care of Ji-eun's needs.

Ji-eun's chosen doctors explained that there is really no chance for her to walk again which was really depressing.

Surprisingly, Ji-eun took it positively. She said, maybe there's a miracle that she will walk again when the right time comes.

I really appreciate her kindness everytime we are together but she also started experiencing morning sickness so I would end up buying her the food that she's craving.

Now I wonder if Lisa will be the same if I get her pregnant. Pregnancy is a topic that both of us are avoiding to talk about.

I have a feeling that she's getting worried about her condition but I have no courage to talk to her about it. Since I know that she may come sensitive if we open it up.

We've done it so many times now but to no luck, it's still negative. My parents would even call us to ask how our relationship is going and I would always tell them that it's fine. I know that in between those calls, they are secretly hoping for a good news about Lisa.

It was a day before graduation. Just one day left and I can shout to the world that Lisa is mine.

I can tell everyone that we love each other.

I can walk freely with her on public.

I can propose to her.

After graduation, I planned on giving her the most romantic proposal any girl has yet to experience.

The proposal that will make her both smile and cry in joy.

The one that will make her heart flutter.

The one that will overwhelm her whole being.

I will propose on my knees.

I will open a box of ring with the biggest diamond her eyes has never seen.

She will say yes and she will kiss me.

And then I would marry her in the biggest church.

I will let her wear the most beautiful wedding gown.

I will let her carry the biggest bouquet of white roses.

She will walk down the aisle.

And we will meet in front of the altar.

We will both promise our eternal love.

I will kiss her there and she will cry because she's a cry baby.

But I will hold her and will hush her out.

Perfect.

Everything will be perfect.

I will make it all happen.

All for the love I have for Lisa.

God, I love her so much!

There is no words to describe how much I want her, how much I need her.

She is contenment created to a human form to make me happy. I can definitely say that Lisa is the embodiment of my happiness and contentment.

At the moment, I was with Ji-eun massaging her back. She was complaining about it and asked for me to massage her so I did.

“Jungkook, tomorrow is the graduation right?” she asked all of a sudden.

“Yeah..why?” I asked back. Why is she asking about work-related stuffs now?

“Nothing. What are you planning after finishing your work?”

“Hmm..maybe help mom and dad on our businesses. My teaching contract will end and I want to take a break from teaching for a moment.” I replied.

In all honesty, I really want to help my parents now. They are old enough and I need to take part in our business. This way, I can support Lisa well. I’ll just go back to teaching once Lisa finishes her college. I learned that some schools offers 3-year education courses and Lisa would definitely like it because she wants to be a teacher too.

“That’s nice. How’s mom and dad by the way.” Ji-eun would always call my parents this way as she was close.with them back then.

“They are fine.” I gave her a short response.

“Okay..”

My conversation with Ji-eun will always end like this. Dull, boring, lifeless…whatever you call it. But at least she's trying hard to talk to me unlike before.

"By the way your students, how are they?"

"They're also fine." Ji-eun's really being weird. My students last night prepared a surprise party for me and it was really fun. I never thought they will organize such event just to thank me.

They also surprise me with gifts while Bambam and Hoseok video called to greet me. Among all the gifts, it was Lisa that I loved the most.

Lisa didn't prepare a gift because she was the gift herself. When we got home she offered herself to me which I gladly enjoyed.

Lisa's POV

Graduation Day!!!

"I'm so proud of you Lis!" Jungkook emotionally cried.

He was like a proud guardian as he watches me fix my graduation gown and cap.

"This is all because of you my love. If not for you, I wouldn't be here in the first place." I praised.

The story of my life started chaging when Jungkook saved me from my uncle, he took me to his home, fed me, clothed me, thought me about a lot of things.

He did everything to help me and if it weren't for him, I probably ended up on the streets now running away from my abusive uncle.

Jungkook rubbed both of my arms as he smile at me. "It was still your effort why you got here. Later when you walk on stage, I'll make sure to give you the loudest cheer."

"Don't do that. It'll be obvous. What will Mr.Yang think if he sees you fanboying over a student?" I chuckled at the thought.

“I don’t care. It’s the last day of school. No one can come between us now.” he shrugged. “But now we need to go or you’ll be late for the ceremony.” He kissed my lips and before he could push in his tongue, I stopped him.

“Jungkook, my lipstick will be smudged!” I warned, this is actually the first time that I applied some make up. I need to because I need to look good as it is a special occassion but Jungkook’s addiction in kissing might just ruin my efforts.

“Sorry, I just can’t get enough of those lips.” he bit his lower lip frustratedly before taking my hand. “Let’s go baby.”

Soon, we both travelled to school. I was about to step out of his car when I notice Jungkook with a tint of lipstick on the corner of his mouth.

“Love, let me wipe this.” I offered, reaching out to wipe his lips.

“Thank you baby!” He gave me a soft peck on the cheek before going out.

This is the first time that both of us exposed ourselves from riding a car together. And we don’t care.

We didn’t care if we stepped out of the car together. We didn’t care if some students saw us.

We didn’t care if some teachers saw us too.

(A/n: Sorry for the crappy edit but imagine Lisa and Mr.Jeon together like this.)

We walked to the function hall together where students are already gathered.

This is not to show these people that we are together as a couple.

Apparently, graduating students are by their parents. I have no parent nor guardian to march with me, so Jungkook a.k.a Mr.Jeon will walk with me instead.

Both of us meet our excited classmates. Namjoon, Eunwoo, Tzuyu, Dahyun, Chaeyong Hoseok with their moms. Jimin, Yoongi, Jin and Jeongyeon with their dads.

My classmates took some selfies first and chat for a moment as we wait for the ceremony to start.

Jungkook took the time to congratulate my classmates and their parents. Not long after, the commencement excercises started.

All students lined up to march for the last time. Students walked with their parents while Mr.Jeon walked with me.

I was so emotional the whole time because this will be the last official day that I am a student of this school.

For three years, this school has been a part of my life. The best part of it was when I met my classmates here and they became my real and trusted friends. But most importantly, when I met my lover, Jungkook.

I will miss the strict on the outside but soft on the inside principal Mr. Yang.

I will miss the very beautiful and kind Ms.Jisoo.

I will miss the never boring Ms.Irene.

I will miss the very passionate Math teacher, Mr. Wang.

I will miss the very caring school doctor Sehun.

I will miss the understanding guidance counselor Ms.Jihyo.

I will miss my original homeroom teacher Ms.Jennie.

I will miss President Namjoon.

I will miss the bully Yoongi.

I will miss joker Jin.

I will miss playboy Jimin.

I will miss gossip Jeongyeon.

I will miss pretty Tzuyu.

I will miss hearthrob Eunwoo.

I will miss sunshine Hoseok.

I will miss rich Dahyun.

And I will miss my bestfriend Chaeyoung.

I will miss all of them. All of them played a major role in my life for three years now.

“Are you okay baby?” Jungkook whispered, he must’ve noticed my silence.

“Yeah. I’m just emotional. I’ll miss everything.” I whispered back. I was closed to tearing up now.

“You’ll be fine. I am here.” Jungkook took my hand and squeezed it gently.

We march into the stage and the ceremony started. We, students sat in the middle of the hall where there are chairs placed.

Jungkook sat on the side with his co-teachers and we got a better view of each other. His eyes was on me the whole time so was mine.

It was funny how we have been eye flirting for a while now. We only stopped when Ms.Jisoo noticed us.

We listened to the speeches before receiving our diplomas. I could see the proud smile of Jungkook everytime one of my classmates was called to receive the diploma. He was clapping so hard and it was really cute.

When it was the time for my name to be called, Jungkook stood from his seat and began cheering all out.

“Good job! Good job!” he was screaming from his seat and I don’t know if I would smile or hide. He was so extra and it just made us obvious.

But what can the school do now? I already received my diploma so I just carried along with my crazy boyfriend.

I shaked Mr.Yang’s hand who’s now shaking his head. It was obviously because of Jungkook’s reaction.

“Congratulations Ms.Manoban. Please tell your boyfriend to stop being loud.” the words shocked me to the core.

“You knew?” I managed to ask while the photographer is taking a picture.

“Yes and I’ll let this pass. But Mr.Jeon should behave because this is a ceremony.” he whispered his reply to avoid the guest speaker from hearing it over.

I was so relieved about the fact that Mr.Yang knew about us. And he’s not even against it. So before he changes his mind, I shoot Jungkook a warning look to stop him. Jungkook finally understood so he sat back on his chair.

After the awarding of the diplomas, the guest speaker officially announced that we, the students are now graduates.

Parents and guardians, teachers and administrators started clapping and cheering for us. My classmates and I hugged one another before forming a group hug.

Some of the graduates throw their caps into the air and we joined them as well. It was one of the happiest memory I shared with my classmates ever. Soon Jungkook joined us and congratulated us all.

It was already dark when the graduation ceremony ended. My classmates started leaving with their parents one by one to celebrate with their family.

I was the only one who was left alone because I had no parent. Thank God Jungkook was with me. If not, I would probably look pathetic.

“Let’s go and celebrate. I made us a reservation on my family’s new opened restaurant.” Jungkook took my hand and guided me to his car.

When we got in, he took somethijlng from the backseat. “This is for you by the way” said Jungkook who gave me bouquet of flowers.

I hugged them and sniffed its fragrance.

“Thank you! You know what, this is so far the happiest day of my life. I feel like I have achieved half of my wishes.” he laughed after hearing my confession.

“And what is the other half?” he curiosly asked.

I looked into his eyes and smiled, “To be with you forever.”

This made him smile. “Then all your wishes came true because we will be together forever.” Jungkook looked into my eyes then down to my lips. “The ceremony is over, that means I can ruin the lipstick?”

“Ruin it all you want. It’s all yours.” I breathed, leaning closer. I have been waiting to be kissed by his lips the whole day.

Jungkook didn’t hesitate from diving in on the invitation. He kissed me so deep and so hard which swelled my lips in result.

We were too lost in each other’s taste that we forgot how long we had been kissing.

Everything was perfect. The time, the place, the man that I’m with, the feeling we have for each other. My heart is beating crazily against my chest and so does his.

“Let’s continue later baby. We’re late for our reservation.” Jungkook whispered before fixing the ruined lipstick on my lips.

Then he tucked my hair on my ear. “Congratulations again my love!”

“Thank you!”

Later that night, Jungkook and I were sharing dinner together peacefully when his phone rang.

“Who’s that?” I frowned. I don’t want to be selfish but Jungkook’s supposed to be spending this day with me alone. Distractions are not welcomed.

He guiltily replied, ” It’s Ji-eun. Lis, wait, I’ll just take this. Maybe it’s important.” Jungkook stood and walked away to answer his phone and I was left there grumbling

“What else could be more important than celebrating a day of me acheiving this milestone?”

Why does she have to ruin this night for me?

When he came back, the color on his face drained. That moment, I knew something’s wrong. “Lis, I need to go to Ji-

eun. It’s an emergency. Just finish the food okay and go home after. I’m so sorry. I’ll make up for this soon.” his words were rushed as he take his coat.

He just left me with some money before running out of the restaurant.

Author’s Note

Tbh, I am actually in a rush to end this story because I think it’s getting boring.

I don’t want to lose some readers because it’s taking so long to end.

So yeah, Instead of writing two chapters for this, I mixed it into one.

Last Night Together ⚠

Lisa's POV

That night, Jungkook didn't came back home. And I was left anxious with what happened.

What could possibly go wrong with Ji-eun for him to leave me in the resaturant alone?

To say that I'm hurt is an understatement. But I don't know the story yet so I have no right to be jealous or what.

What if something happened to her? I really hope and pray not. Jungkook will surely blame himself again if something happens.

And as his girlfriend, I need to understand. Jungkook's life does not solely revolve around me.

Unlike mine who only focuses on him, Jungkook has a lot of responsibility in his hands. He has responsibilty in his whole class, he has a responsibilty in their businesses, he has a responsibity to Ji-eun.

I am just a part of his responsibility that's why I must stay where my place is. A girlfriend's place is behind his back. I should serve as his motivator, his comforter, his stength.

That night I didn't cry. Even if he didn't spent the night with me.

The next day, I woke up alone again. Jungkook is still not home. But when I checked my phone there were missed calls from him.

Worried, I dialled him instead. He answered on the first ring. "Baby? I'm sorry for not coming home." his voice was laced with sadness as he apologized.

I heard the sincerity in it so I decided to shrug my jealousy off. "It's okay. But what happened there?" I asked curiously.

I heard him sigh from the other line before explaining.

So I learned that Ji-eun tried to commit suicide last night. One of her servants saw her in her bathroom unconscious. Jungkook said that she took hundreds of sleeping pills. Good thing that the nurse was there to save her.

Hearing the explanation now, I can't help but be worried for Ji-eun. Jungkook said it is probably because of her inability to walk that's why she tried to end herself.

Jungkook sounded really worried so I tried my best to comfort him.

"Please don't be mad at me. I'm so sorry for leaving you last night but Ji-eun could've died and fuck! I don't know what to do. I feel so guilty Lis." this time, Jungkook started sobbing in the other line.

My heart ached so much hearing him cry like this so I repeated the words over and over again. "Don't worry about me. I am fine Jungkook. I will never be mad and I love you. Please stop crying."

"I'm so sorry…Lis—"

"Stop. Stop saying sorry. We'll get through this. Just stay there for a moment and try to talk to her. Okay?"

"Thank you..thank you so much."

After that day, Jungkook started spending days with Ji-eun. He had to because Ji-eun would still plan in harming herself. If not for Jungkook catching her, she'd probably died now.

But even if he's not always around, I didn't think negatively of it. I'm hurt but her life is more important than my petty feelings.

Jungkook is the only person who Ji-eun leans on now that's why she's wants his attention so bad.

Another week had passed since the incident happen, Jungkook would go home just to take some clothes and important stuffs. And that's when I realized that his cabinet is almost empty. It's like he's moving out slowly.

Little by little, jealousy started to consume me. We talk on the phone every night but for me it's still not enough. His

small “How are you?”, “I miss you” or even “I love you” won’t stop my mind from thinking too much.

Maybe he’s really forgotten about me. The thought kept running on my head.

The emptyness of the house came to a point where it was unbearable that’s why I would always go out either to the orphanage or to babysit Mr.Kim’s baby. The distraction helps me a lot.

All along we thought that everything will get better between us after the graduation, but we’re both wrong. Being in a relationship can surely test your patience and I’m close to reaching its peak.

One night, I decided to sleep off the growing emptiness inside of me. I didn’t call Jungkook and surprisingly, he didn’t either.

I fell asleep for god knows how long but it was cut when the door of my room opened.

I quickly get up and saw Jungkook by the door looking at me with guilty expression. And just like that, the pain, the jealousy the emptiness vanished.

I never thought I will miss him this much.

Without any word, he crossed the gap to kiss my lips then he broke it to caress my cheek. “I’m so sorry baby for missing for days but I’m here now and I’ll spend the night with you.” he smiled gently.

I held his hand which is on my cheek. “It doesn’t matter Jungkook,” I said. “As long as you’re here now.” I smiled reassuringly.

We kissed again and again, lips soft and hands intertwined. I loved the way he took his time with me. The way he never seemed rushed, and yet at the same time made no doubts of his desire.

This time we both know that we needed to feel each other’s warmth.

“God! I missed this.” he murmured between kisses.

He slowly eased me to my back, and kissed his way down my body. Jungkook removed every obstacle that can hinder him from kissing me.

He effortlessly removed my clothes and underwear.

Then he took time kissing me between my legs. He kissed my thighs, quick little butterfly pecks that left my heart fluttery.

“Oh Jungkook.. How I missed you!” l looked down to see him smiling up at me. He kissed my sex, making me shiver slightly. While his hands caressed my inner thighs.

He moved to kiss it again, his tongue snaking between my slit. I reached down and ran my hands through his soft, fluffy hair.

Jungkook’s tongue teased my clit. I kept moaning softly. He gently closed his lips around my clit, his tongue flicking at the sensitive part of my skin.

“Oh, Jungkook! oh Jungkook!”

His face was now glazed with my juices. He licked slowly up and down my pussy, and then slid a finger inside me. Making me gasp softly.

He added a second, twisting his hand so that his fingertips could curl up inside me, stimulating my clitoris from inside. I moaned and slapped the bed with her open palm.

“Oh fuck! It feels so good!”

Still rubbing my g-spot, his thumb tkept teasing my clit.

“Fuck! I’m cumming!” I gasped and exploded. My hips lifting off the bed as waves of pleasure rolled over my entire body.

I opened my eyes and smiled at him.

“Come up here,” I invited. “And take off those pants.” He did and moved up beside me.

I rolled to my side so he could cuddle me from behind. We kissed over my shoulder, and I reached between my legs to grasp Jungkook’s cock.

He was hard and big already. And I love it.

We kissed deeply and passionately as if we haven't kissed for years. Jungkook rubbed his cock head against my now swollen pussy.

"I want you Lisa." he breathed.

"I want you too. Please move in." I plead.

He penetrated slowly, and I sighed in pleasure as his size stretched my walls. It was familiar feeling but never ordinary.

The feeling of him being inside me reminded me that Jungkook is really here. Spending time with me. Making love with me. And it was so satisfying.

I could feel his urgency and his control. But he managed to move gently making me feel loved and secured.

Soon he thrust in deeper. I closed my eyes and allowed my head to press back against his cheek. Jungkook kissed me messily as he began to churn inside me, and for several minutes, he drove everything else from my mind.

He pushed back the negative thoughts which built on his absence. All that existed was his manhood, his lips, his finger on my clit.

It was perfect, and I don't want it to end yet. Just to ride that wave forever. But I could feel it approaching the shore.

He thrust in harder, and I gasped, crashing over, my body exploded in ecstasy. And suddenly what had a moment before been just perfect, was now too much. My second orgasm for the night was so perfect.

I gasped as he, again, buried his face in between my legs. Jungkook is not stopping in making me feel good, I see.

His tongue teased my clit. Then he licked it from down to top then slipping inside.

"Oh God," his tongue felt so good. Jungkook kept taunting me and I'm so lost at the pleasure.

Jungkook pulled my hips slightly then slid deep into my eager, ready pussy. I moaned in pleasure. "I love you Lis" he

kept repeating the words to my ears every time he would thrust his hips.

Jungkook thrust inside me so hard, his hands kneading my ass. I lifted my hips off the bed to give him a better angle, and he pressed in deeper still.

I love this man. His beauty. His strength. His kindness. Everything in him. He is my great Jeon Jungkook and he will forever be great in my heart.

Jungkook once again lay me on my back. He hovered on top of me and settled between my thighs.

He continued fucking me as his hands roamed my body. He leaned down to kiss me affectionately.

Soon he thrust in harder, harder. I can feel he was close as his breathing becomes heavy and staggered. While I moaned louder, urging him on.

“Lisa!Fuck I’m cumming!” he cried loudly, before blowing his cum inside. His shooting made me reached my third orgasm. My body shaked in pleasure as I felt him spurt hot sticky fluid inside.

Jungkook’s eyes shut closed, It was the first time I’ve witnessed him cum this much. Not stopping, his cock shoot everything in me and Jungkook could only moan in pleasure.

He kissed my forehead tenderly and lay beside me to wrap his arms around me.

“You know I love you, baby.” he said softly.

“I love you too.”

“Are you upset?” he asked. He looked so guilty.

“A little.” I admit. A week without him really made me upset.

“I’m sorry. But I’m here now. Tomorrow, I’ll take my things at Ji-eun’s and I’ll be spending my time with you from then on. Are you fine with that?”

“I’m always fine with whatever you can give. But just…just don’t forget about me.” indidn’t hide the sadness in my voice

this time and Jungkook notice it.

“Believe me you are in my thought every second baby. How can I forget you?” Jungkook pulled me to his chest and I burried my face there.

I would still want to talk but touching his skin and feeling his warmth makes me sleepy. So I slept in his embrace.

The next morning, Jungkook woke me up with a breakfast in bed.

“Good morning baby!” he smiled like a cute bunny. Jungkook is only on his sweat pants and shirtless.

“Is this for me?” I looked up at him to ask. And he bunny-nodded yes.

“To make uo for the lost time baby. Please eat a lot.” he smiled.

“Thank you!” I finished the breakfast Jungkook has made me. And both of us did our morning routines.

This day, Jungkook will have to go back to Ji-eun’s to get some of his things. He said after a week of begging, he talked sense to Ji-eun already and she promised to not do it again.

And I’m so excited. I feel like we can finally be together now.

“I’ll go now baby, I’ll see you later okay?” Bid me goodbye near the door.

“Okay! See you Jungkook.” One kiss and he walked out of the door.

I was about to head back to my room when the door opened again. I felt his arms wrapped tightly around me. “Jungkook? Why are you back?” I asked turning to face him.

“I just…I just missed you. I love you baby! You’re not upset anymore right?” I looked up at him to see his worried expression plastered all over his face.

I can’t help but smile. “Of course I’m not. I love you Jungkook. Don’t worry about me. I’ll wait for you here.” I reassured.

As a way to tell him that I'm really fine, I tiptoed and kissed his lips.

His so sweet lips which always takes my breath away. I kissed him with so much love as my arms clung on his neck.

Jungkook wrapped his arms around my torso and kissed me back with the same emotion. Our breaths mixing in one as we enjoyed each taste.

He was everything I could ask for and I would never want any man in my life beside him.

"I love you." he uttered for the hundredth time as he brush his nose to mine.

"I love you too Jungkook." We are being dramatic all of a sudden. "Go now and take your things before this could lead to another round." I chuckled as I push him slightly.

He laughed as well. "You really know me. I'll see you later Lis."

I waited for his car to move from the garage, he rolled the window down and sent me a flying kiss before totally driving the car away.

An hour later, I was by the living room reading a cooking book, when my phone beeped.

I checked it to see an unregistered number.

"Is this Mr.Kim?" I asked myself.

When I swiped to read, I frowned.

Lisa,

Please come here at Ji-eun's. I have something to tell you.

-Jungkook

He sent me an address after.

Why would he use another number to message me?

I was hesitant at first but I decided to go. Maybe Jungkook wants to see me or maybe he needs help?

I change to my decent clothings and drove my car to the address Jungkook sent me.

When I knocked on the door, it opened and I was welcomed by a servant.

“Is Jungkook here?” I asked and she shook her head.

“He’s not here. Are you Ms.Lisa? Ms.Ji-eun is expecting you in her room.” she explained.

I frowned, “Expecting me? Why?”

“She said you’ll come. Come and follow me ma’am.” he walked inside and I contemplated for a moment if I’ll follow her or not.

Since Jungkook is not here, why would I come?

But what if she’s got something important to ask?

In the end I followd her.

And that was my downfall.

Author’s Note

Prepare your tissues on the coming chapter.

I’ll try to update the soonest to ease your hearts.

Proposal

Tissues???

Jungkook's POV

"Namjoon, is everything okay?" I asked him when I reached the school.

"Yes Mr.Jeon, everything is ready for the proposal later." he proudly announced.

"Thank you so much for all your help." I pat his shoulders before peeking inside of the classroom.

Summer break has already started and it is good that no students will see this. Although I asked Mr.Yang's permission to allow me to use the classroom for the day.

This night, I planned on proposing to Lisa. And for me, it is just the right time to propose as I want to tie knots first before she enters college.

Lisa is attractive and very lovely. Sooner or later, she will attract more men in her age. Just thinking about it makes my blood boil. That's part of the reason why I want to be engaged with her the soonest.

But of course the major reason for my proposal is that I want to take the relationship to the next level. We both love each other and there's nothing wrong if I do this.

I look around the classroom which is now decorated with romantic stuffs which are Namjoon's idea.

There were no desks and chairs except for Lisa's which sits at the far end corner of the classroom and my teacher's table.

Namjoon helped me remove all of it. And he's the only student who knew about this proposal that I'm planning for Lisa.

At first I planned on something grand but Lisa is not that type of girl who will appreciate extravagant proposal so I opted to a cuter one.

I choose the classroom as it was the first place that I met her. Well, I met her at the road actually when I hit her with my car but that was a terrible experience for both of us.

So yeah, I choose the classroom because this is the place where I first saw her beautiful face. And I know she'll like it this way. Simple yet meaningfull proposal.

The place was lightly decorated and even if it looked simple, I made sure to buy her the most expensive ring. More expensive than the combined price of the rings I bought for Ji-eun. As Lisa deserves the best.

My baby girl deserves the best. And now I am so confident that she'll appreciate my efforts. Despite my absence in her life for more than a week, I am sure that I'll make her say yes.

For the past few weeks, I spent my days at Ji-eun's because she tried to commit suicide. The nurse and the servants can't stop her from doing those terrible things and it was only me who can stop her.

It was really stressfull for me but I managed to stay with her as I feel responsible for her and her baby.

I feel like it's all my fault. The depression she's experiencing was because of the accident I caused her. And I cannot bear to see her and her baby being put to risk just because of me.

So the whole time, I kept watching over her and I would talk to her to stop her attempts. After a week of begging, she finally promised to not do it again.

Yesterday, Ji-eun once again tried to ask for us to be back together but I explained that Lisa and I are together. She was shocked at first and she couldn't believe that I'm in a relationship with my student but soon she said she understands and will support me.

I really feel grateful that she's finally getting positive again.

That’s when I finally came home last night and made love to my Lisa.

Today, she thought that I’ll go to Ji-eun to take my things but I really came here to check out if everything is ready.

And it is.

“Lisa will love this for sure.” Namjoon spoke beside me.

“You think? I’m so nervous honestly. I don’t know if she’ll appreciate it.” I admitted.

“She will. I’ve known Lisa for a long time now Mr.Jeon, simple things can easily make her happy.” he confidently described my baby girl and I nodded. I know it too. Lisa is simple and that’s one trait that I love about her.

“I’m just so lucky to have her!”

“You are both lucky to have each other Mr.Jeon. Lisa will be a great wife to you and I know you’ll be a great husband to her. Thank you for trusting me your secret.”

Hearing this now, I cannot help but to think of his other classmates. “I’m guilty that I cannot tell your classmates about this as I don’t know how they will react. But I will make sure to invite all of you to the wedding.”

“It would be an honor to be invited Mr.Jeon.” he politely said.

“Now, what we need to worry is Lisa’s answer.” I tried shaking off my fingers to ease the tension in me.

“She’ll say yes Mr.Jeon. I can assure you that.”

“I hope so.”

After making sure that everything is on it’s place, I came home to prepare myself for the proposal.

It’s already 5 when I got home and Lisa wasn’t home. Her car is not here too.

Maybe she’s babysitting. She usually babysits around 4-6 in the afternoon. I just let her do the job because I can tell that she’s happy doing it.

Lisa really loves babies and I'm sure she'll be a great mom in the future. But we are not blessed with pregnancy yet. It's sad that of all the people, it is Lisa who seemed to be having problem with infertility.

I took time in preparing myself. I made sure that I smell good because Lisa loves to sniff my neck. It's a gesture of her that I find cute.

I wore my uniform and made sure that I look good. I decided to wear my uniform to propose because this is what I wore the first time I met her.

The proposal will be a reinactment of our first meeting but I'll make sure that she won't break my nose and she won't end in detention this time.

Before leaving, I made sure that the engagement ring is with me. Settled on a box inside the pocket near my chest where my heart is beating.

This is it. I will finally propose to girl who occupies my heart, my mind and my soul.

God knows how much I love Lisa!

It was dark when I came to school. Namjoon was already there waiting for me. A proud smile was on his face. "You look good Mr.Jeon." he remarked.

"Thank you." I said before taking my phone to dial Lisa's number. I don't care if she's wearing cotton shorts or funny underwear. All I want is for her to head straight to our classroom.

But she's not answering.

I dialled her number again but still no answer.

I dialled her number again.

And again.

And again.

But still no answer from her.

"Mr.Jeon.." Namjoon worriedly looked at me.

“She’s not answering? Namjoon.”

My heart is now pounding out of my chest.

I’m starting to get worried.

“Mr.Jeon, try texting her. Maybe she can’t answer right now.” Namjoon tried to calm me down. And I did, I sent her a message.

Baby,

Please come to school. I have a surprise for you.

-Jungkook

I sent the same message again.

And sent it again for God knows how many.

I would also call in between texts but still no answer.

It was past eight in the evening and Namjoon looked tired. Even if I wanted his support, I’m still guilty for taking his time.

“Namjoon, you can go home. I’ll just wait for Lisa alone.” I said, trying my damn best to sound fine but I’m really not. My heart is getting heavy now.

“But Mr.Jeon, I’m ok—”

“No, please. You helped me enough. I’m fine. Trust me.” I gave him a reassuring look and he tilted his head to look at me.

“What if Lisa—”

“She’ll come. I’m sure she will.” I said. And after seconds of him contemplationg, he finally nodded.

“But make sure to call me Mr.Jeon if you need me.” he offered willingly.

“I will. Thank you for your help Namjoon. I’ll forever be grateful.”

He bowed before leaving me.

And when he left, anxiousness started to consume me.

Where is my baby?

Why isn't she answering?

I kept calling her number but it just goes straight to her voicemail.

But I still waited.

I still hoped that she'll come.

She's probably just busy with babysitting that's why she didn't notice my calls or texts.

An hour had passed and my knees are hurting.

Another hour had passed and I was by the floor sitting.

And then another hour had passed and the candles melted.

Not even a shadow of Lisa showed.

With a heavy heart, I decided to just push back the engagement.

Maybe she just got home and too tired to check her phone.

So I defeatedly drove back home and noticed her car already parked at the garage.

My face lit up seeing her car there.

At least she's here!

So I ran to our room and saw it empty.

I turn to open her room and it was empty too.

I was confused at first. So I looked around the house to search for her.

Maybe she's just doing laundry, exercising, or cooking but she's not anywhere. I went back to her room to check if she's at the bathroom but she's not there as well.

That's when I noticed something.

There's a paper on her bed.

And there was her phone.

The phone that I gave her.

I shook my head aggressively before walking to it.

No.

No.

No.

Don't tell me?

No.

She will not do this!

With shaking hands, I took the folded paper with my name on it to read what she wrote.

(A/n: Can you see the phone and the letter?)

Jungkook,

I just wanted to say thank you for taking me in and for feeding me. Thank you for teaching me everything I needed to know and thank you for your guidance.

There are no words to describe how much I love you. And to say that you're a blessing in my life is an understatement.

For three months, you gave me nothing but happiness. But now I realized you deserve to be happy too. And you can only get that happiness if I do this.

You'll forever stay here in my heart.

I love you, Jungkook.

-Lisa

I slumped down after reading her letter.

No! This is not it.

I didn't cry.

Because I'm sure she's just playing pranks with me.

She's just at the orphanage again or she's just working or she just somewhere…

"Lisa will never leave me." I laughed so hard and realized that tears are already flowing down my cheeks.

But why does it feel like she really left me?

There’s a growing pit of a hole inside my chest that I cannot ignore.

The building feeling of worry and sadness mixed into one is now consuming my whole being.

Before I could go crazy, I left the house and drove to wherever fucking place she is.

This could not be the end.

Lisa will never leave me.

She’s just somewhere and I’ll find her.

Author’s Note.

So, who who’s right?

Who was hurt more? Lisa or Jungkook?

What do you think happened to Lisa?

Years Away

Sorry for breaking your hearts my lovely readers. But this is the last sad chapter.

I had to update early to ease your hearts.

Jungkook's POV

It's been weeks since Lisa left me. And I'm still in denial of everything that happened.

I tried searching everywhere for her but unfortunately, I didn't found her.

I am still delusional for believing that she's just taking time her off.

She just wants to be alone.

She just wants time by herself.

This is nothing.

Everything will be fine.

Everything will go back to normal.

Lisa will not leave me totally.

I'm still believing that someday she will come back home. She will open the door and will jump at me. She will kiss me and I will embrace her tight and will never let her go again.

And for the days of her absence, I couldn't eat. I couldn't sleep. I couldn't move.

I feel like I'm a plant withering without Lisa as my source of water and sunlight.

Another month had passed and I'm just getting more miserable. The hope of seeing her again is decreasing as days goes by.

This time I was feeling angry for what happened. I am blaming myself and also Lisa.

I don’t know what I did for her to leave me like this.

I don’t have any idea what she meant by making me happy by leaving me. Because it’s completely the opposite.
The day that she left me was the day that I experience emotional breakdown.

Months had passed and Lisa still hasn’t come home. At this point, I feel like there’s no use in waiting. Maybe she already forgotten about me.

The pain inside my chest was growing each day. I was so lost that I considered that it’s better to jump off a bridge than live life without Lisa.

But Namjoon and his classmates learned about my suicial attempts, that’s why they focused on watching over me.

They all started college and they became really busy, but they would alternately take turns to visit me. Just to see if i’m still alive.

Somehow my class helped me to stop my suicidal attempts. I stopped because I was causing them too much stress. Especially Chaeyoung who is close to giving birth and Hoseok who is recovering from his illness.

A year had passed and Ji-eun finally gave birth to a beautiful baby girl.

That time, I focused on helping her take care of her baby because she still can’t walk.

The distraction of taking care of her baby helped me a lot to forget about Lisa.

But it was never enough. Lisa still pops out of my head every second specially at night when I cry myself to sleep.

Lisa’s absence caused me so much depression for a year and my parents got really worried.

It came to a point where I lose the motivation to live. That’s when they decided to have me visit a psychologist.

For two years, I enrolled in a counseling group. Where I would meet a small group of people regularly to discuss and

interact our problems with each other. Our group leader, Michael would seek to give us, his students a safe and comfortable place where we can work out our problems and our emotional concerns.

Lisa was the topic of it every time I would come to share my problems. And somehow, they helped me a lot to manage my emotions well.

They made me realize that things happens for a reason. And that if she's really for me, she will come back to me.

My mind and my heart still believed that I will see her again and we will be together again. That I need to work hard and to gain back my strenght for that day that she will show up.

Now three years had passed, and little by little, I recovered from the depression with the help of my parents, my psychologist, my students and Yuna, Ji-eun's baby.

I also distracted my self by helping my parent's business. But business is really not for me as I still crave teaching.

Now I planned in applying again for a part time teaching position at a College University.

Maybe the work can help me get my life back.

Four years and Ji-eun miraculously walked again. I was so happy that I was finally relieved of the responsibility of taking care of her.

But I have gotten too close to her daughter that I would still visit her.

Sometimes the three of us would go out to spend time together with her daughter.

But even if we looked like a family on the outside, I was still hoping that it's Lisa that I am with. I swear I would give up anything just to be with her again.

For four years of not seeing her, it's still her embrace that I long to feel, it's still her lips that I wish to kiss, it's still her face that I imagine before I sleep.

It was always Lisa.

And it never changed.

The yearning I have for her just intensified as years pass by. And I admit that Ji-eun would still ask for us to be together but I can't.

It's still Lisa in my heart.

Nothing had changed. The love I have for her is still the same. Even death will not change that.

As of the moment, I was at the supermarket to buy a lunchbox for Yuna. Tomorrow is her first day at the the toddler School.

She will start toddler and I am excited. I am even more excited than Ji-eun.

Sadly, Ji-eun doesn't perform well in taking care of her daughter. The moment that she began to walk, she began partying every night with her friends and Yuna will be left to my care.

If only Yuna is my baby with Lisa, I could just imagine how great a mom she would be.

Lisa will surely make the best homemade snacks for our baby and we would—

Lisa again.

It's Lisa again.

Everytime I would think of something, Lisa will pop out of my mind again and It's so pathetic. I'm not even sure if she thinks of me too.

And maybe my mind is playing tricks because I could definitely hear her voice right now.

"Mom, want chocolate muffins" I hear a boy whinning from the other lane.

"If Jihoon will be a good boy, mommy will make him muffins." The lady who sounded exactly like Lisa replied. I froze on my spot when I heard the voice.

Could it be?

No.

It's not Lisa.

It's impossible. They just sound the same.

"But Jihoon good boy mom!" the boy whined again.

"Na-a, Jihoon will get muffins if you agree to go on the toddler school tomorrow."

"Okay. Jihoon go toddler school." the little boy sounded defeated and the lady laughed.

"Now, let's pay for this so we can get ready for you first school tomorrow."

"And Jihoon will eat muffins?" I laughed at their cute conversation. This boy is smart. He knows how to trade.

"Yes baby, you will." she chuckled.

"Thank you mommy!" he squeaked and her mommy laughed.

I tried to search for the owner of the voices but when I walked to the other lane, they were no longer there.

I shrugged my thought.

It's impossible.

He just called her mom so she couldn't be Lisa.

Lisa is single and she has no child.

Before I get home, I dropped to Ji-eun's house first to visit Yuna. But the servant said she's asleep and Ji-eun met her friends.

I visit Yuna's bedroom and saw that she's peacefully sleeping.

Then my eyes caught something. Her toddler uniform is not yet ironed. It was crumpled and I'm sure her classmates will laugh out at her if she goes to school like this. So I took it and asked one servant to iron it.

I swear Ji-eun should act like a mom not a single lady who's partying every night.

I came down and decided to search for what I can make Yuna for snack on her first day when I remembered the conversation of the lady and her son.

How about if I also try Muffins?

I hope Yuna likes it. That little boy really likes muffins and maybe I can recreate something like that.

If only Lisa is here.

She can surely make good—

Lisa again? My brain mocked me.

But I can't stop my self from thinking about her. Thinking about her is part of my everyday routine. She's the only reason why I'm still fighting to live.

After minutes of reading an online recipe for a muffin, I started baking some.

The outcome was decent. Not bad for a first time.

I just hope it taste as good as that of the muffin that lady makes.

Author's Note

So the sad chapters finally ended, the coming ones are all fun and Tom and Jerry..

Years of Being Fooled

I need passage comments 😭

Taehyung's POV

"Lisa! Over here!" I waved at Lisa who is now carrying Jihoon in her arms, a servant on her side carrying their luggages.

She excitedly waved back with her free hand. But It got me worried because she's carrying Jihoon who looked too heavy for her. So I walked to them instead and carried Jihoon for her.

"Daddy!!!" he jumped on my arms the moment he saw me.

God! It feels so good to see my son again!

"Did you miss me?" I asked while ruffling his hair.

"Jihoon missed daddy. Daddy missed Jihoon?" he pouted while asking.

"Of course my son, daddy missed you too."

He started grinning after I gave him satisfying answer and then turned to Lisa. "Daddy miss mommy too?"

Shoot.

"Uhm.." I awkwardly faced Lisa and realized she looked awkward too. She tried to play with her hair while looking away.

"Yes..daddy missed mommy too." I gave him an honest answer which just made Lisa more awkward.

As much as I don't want her to get awkward, I would still act like we are really a couple in the face of my son. That way, he will think that Lisa is really his mother and he can lean on to her when I die.

"I bet mommy and Jihoon is tired from the flight? We better go home now. Let's go Lisa?"

“Let’s go Mist—I mean hon”

I smiled at her clumsiness, she’s still not used to calling me the name. Maybe because we lived far from each other for years.

The three of us left the airport and my driver drove us back home.

The three of us sat at the back, and on our way home, Jihoon slept on Lisa’s lap.

“Are you tired?” I slightly glanced at her to see her beautiful face. She’s gotten more prettier now than the last time. Japan was sure a good place for her to stay.

“A little but I’m fine Mr.Kim.”

“That..you’re still not used to calling me how I wanted to.” I sighed.

“I’m sorry, I was just used to calling you this because it’s more realistic than calling you hon.” she laughed a bit before turning her gaze at my son.

“I guess you’re right. But please don’t let him know our secret.” I plead while glancing at my son who’s now sleeping like an angel.

“You have nothing to worry. I love your son so much and I will do anything just for him to treat me like I’m his real mother.” she assured.

“Thank you!” was all that I say. Lisa’s hands tightened on Jihoon as if she’s afraid for someone to take him away from her and I trully understand.

For four years that they have been together, I can say that they are now inseprable.

Lisa loves my son so much and I’m confident that even Jungkook will not be able to take her away from us.

I could still remember what happened four years ago.

It was a week without seeing Lisa. I searched for her everywhere but I couldn’t find her.

Until one day, I saw her walking on the road. She looked like a beggar that time that I didn't realized it was her.

She has no slippers, her hair was messy, she looked so dirty, like you would thought that she's a random crazy girl walking on the street. But after passing by her, I couldn't pinpoint what happened but my foot stepped on the break and turned to take a u-turn.

When I got a better look, I realized it was really Lisa. She looked so miserable. She looked like she's out of her mind.

That night, I had a hard time trying to take her with me. She can't seem to recall who I am and that's when I realized that she had a breakdown.

When I took her home, I had to ask 4 servants just to help her bath.

I learned that Lisa has been walking for days. It's like sanity left her. And the only thing she was saying was "I can't give him a baby. Ji-eun can."

She repeated the phrase for days so I called my personal psychiatrist to check her. With constant counseling, Lisa started talking again. Little by little she got better.

But her depression was still there. At night, she would cry out loud calling Jungkook's name.

But I was too selfish to give her back to him. It was clear that he cheated and got another girl pregnant that's why Lisa had a breakdown.

Months had passed before, she started talking to me. Lisa explained that she's so hurt that her boyfriend cheated so I asked her what she wants.

She said she wants to forget Jungkook but it's hard because she's always reminded of him that's when I came up with the plan to send her abroad.

I explained my plan on letting her study any course that she wants as long as she'll take my son with her. She gladly agreed because she's so desperate to get away from Jungkook.

I let her choose between US and Japan and she chose Japan because it was her dream country.

The three of us travelled to Japan that time and I stayed with them for a year so that Lisa can adjust from her studies and the new enviironment.

On the first year of staying in Japan, I proposed Lisa my biggest plan and that is to marry her. She declined at first but I explained further that everything will be fake.

I just need to make it look real for my board members and employees to not suspect that I will just give away my company to a stranger.

At least, if Lisa is introduced as my wife, no one would dare threathen her position on my company. And she will have the biggest claim.

Lisa finally signed the contract and the fake marriage certificate. We had a fake wedding in Japan too which was attended by only Baekhyun and Yerin.

Only the four of us knows my secret. Even my son doesn't know that she's not his real mother.

I came back to Korea after spending a year at Japan as Lisa was already comfortable with her stay there and she began taking a course of education.

It is because she wished to be a teacher just like her ex. For the following three years, I spent my time working hard for the company. For my son and for Lisa. I would just visit them every other month.

Finally, Lisa graduated with flying colors last month, when Lisa successfully passed the licensure exam, she decided that she'll go back to Korea.

I was happy and worried at the same time because I'm scared that the she and Jungkook will meet again. But Lisa said she's moved on already and she's confident that she will not be affected if they meet.

Somehow I felt relieved.

I don’t know why I feel this way but I think, I’m falling in love with her.

Who wouldn’t be when she’s as perfect as this?

She took care of my son very well and she has a good heart. If I’m not only dying, I could probably made a move now.

But I didn’t. What’s the point of loving her when I will just die in the end? It will just hurt her more.

Lisa’s POV

I kissed Jihoon’s forhead before tucking him to bed. When I turn away I saw Mr.Kim by the door staring at me. He’s still in his business attire as he just came back from work.

I walked to him and he closed the door behind me.

“How was your grocery shopping?” he asked.

“Oh…it was hard. Jihoon doesn’t want to attend the toddler school but I did a little trick so he’s finally going tomorrow.” I proudly announce.

Mr.Kim and I walked to the sofa to talk.

“You really have endless tricks on your sleeves Lisa. You know how to handle him well.” he smiled as he loosen his tie down.

“I know your son too well. I know his strengths and weaknesses.” I laughed. “Oh by the way, I had to bake some muffins for his snack. He was really craving for it. I’ll leave you for awhile.” I said, excusing myself but he still followed me on the kitchen.

“I want to watch you.” Mr.Kim’s burning stare didn’t go unnoticed so I turn away quickly.

Gosh! This is so awkward.

“Suit yourself.” I said as I began mixing flours and cocoa powder.

After an hour, I came up with cute chocolate muffins which Jihoon loves so much.

Mr.Kim took a bite. And he said it was so good.

Though Mr.Kim and I are married on the surface, we don't share the same room.

He was really a gentleman to me and never really touched me even when we were in Japan.

It was hard at first because I was always longing for Jungkook's touch. I wanted to taste his lips again, to be gripped by his strong arms and to feel his length inside me.

I have even considered myself as a sex addict because of him. But I can't stop myself from craving for his touch. Also his soft and gentle words of love.

It was all but just a wonderful dream with Jungkook.

But now they are married and they have a beautiful daughter. He must be really happy because he wanted a daughter so bad.

After baking, Mr.Kim and I parted ways and we both went to our rooms. When I opened my laptop to check on some email, I frowned.

I received three emails from:

• Bambam
• Jungkook
• Seoul International University

I opened the first email from Bam.

"Lisa, we will have a class reunion this month. Will you come?"

I thought first before sending a reply. It's only Bam who knows everything about where I am.

I made him promise to not tell my classmates because I know they'll be worried where I went.

"I'll think about it first." I have to take my cards well.

I have a feeling that Jungkook will show at the reunion and I'm still not ready to face him. What if he brings his wife there?

I told Mr.Kim that I'm confident to face Jungkook but I'm really not sure of how I feel.

I opened the second email which came from the University that I applied for online. And it says,

"Mrs.Kim, We recieved your application and we're pleased to inform you that your application has been considered. We hope to see you for an interview in—"

I jumped out of my seat after reading the mail.

"Oh my god!!! I'm going to teach! I'm going to fucking teach!!! And it's not just a normal college but a University! Goodness gracious! I will be teaching college students!"

It took me hours to internalize that I was accepted to teach at a University.

Finally when I calmed down, I sat back on the chair and decided if I will read Jungkook's email.

In the end, I opened it. Even if I know I will just get hurt.

Lisa, look my baby is getting bigger now!

-Jungkook

He attached a picture of his baby girl and I smiled bitterly.

"Good for you" I replied.

For years, he has been sending me updates about his life but I seldom reply.

He would send me pictures of his baby and Ji-eun. They really look happy now.

Jungkook would tell me that he's thankful that I gave him a chance with Ji-eun.

And somehow I feel that it was really a good decision that I left him. If I didn't, he wouldn't have the opportunity to spend time with his daughter.

I shrugged my jealousy away and focused on what's more important. Now that I'm in Korea, I will avoid him and his family by focusing on this coming job.

Seoul is so big, for sure I will not see him.

I tucked myself to bed because I had to wake up early tomorrow to send Jihoon to school.

Jungkook's POV

It was 7 in the morning when I reach Ji-eun's house.

"Is Ji-eun awake?" I asked the servant who still looked sleepy.

"Mr.Jeon, she's drunk from last night. She got home at three in the morning."

"What the fuck? How about Yuna?" I asked worriedly. It's her first day in school and fucking Ji-eun is drunk?

"She's still sleeping Mr.Jeon"

"Okay, I'll help her prepare. Can you prepare the breakfast for her?" I asked.

"It is ready Mr.Jeon."

"Good." I walked to the stairs and opened Yuna's room.

I woke her up and she got up quickly upon seeing me.

"Are you excited to go to school Yuna?" I asked as I was driving her to her toddler school.

"Yes Dada! I want taste your muffins!" she said, as her fingers trace the drawing on the small lunch box on her lap.

"I hope you'll eat all of the muffin I made " I smiled as I focus on the road.

"I will dada!" she replied enthusiastically.

When Yuna and I arrived at her school, a lot of children and parents were already there. We were late but we still manage to get in time before the classroom closes.

Her teacher, Ms.Momo assured me that I can leave Yuna to her care. She asked for my number to notify me if I need to pick her up which I give.

I went straight to Seoul International University after as I have an interview there today.

The interview went smoothly and they said I will just have to wait for an email to know when I will start.

I'm so happy that I can get to teach again. And this time they are college students. That means it will be more challenging.

I was about to drove back to Yuna when my phone rang.

"Hello?" I greeted.

"Is this Mr.Jeon?" a familliar voice of a lady asked.

"Yes it is. What can I do for you?"

"This is Miss Momo, Yuna's teacher. Can you please come at school now?" the teacher politely asked but I can still sense that she's nervous.

"Why? what happened?" I asked in worry.

"Yuna fought with a classmate over a muffin. She throw all the muffins of her classmate and the boy is crying. I already called Mrs.Kim, the mother of Jihoon for her to come."

When I heard what happened, I got really worried.

"I'll go straight to your school now. Please watch over Yuna."

Author's Note

What do you think will happen next?

And who's more pabo? Lisa or Jk? 😂

Muffin Lady

Better late than never update

Ji-eun's POV

"Shit! What time is it?" I groaned as I lift myself from my bed. Twisting my body to look at the clock, my eyes grew big when I saw the time.

"Fuck!" I ran out of my room to go to Yuna's. Today is her first day at the toddler school but I overslept!

But when I checked it, she's not in her room. Jungkook must've been here earlier. "Ugh! Thank goodness he came. I swear Seulgi and Joy should stop inviting me during sunday nights!"

I did my morning routine first before leaving the house. I want to go to Yuna's school to check up on her. I drove my way to school and dialled Jungkook.

"Good morning Jungkook, where are you?" I greeted with a lively voice even if my head is still hurting from the hangover.

"What the fuck Ji-eun? Why did you get yourself drunk when its Yuna's first day at school?" he yelled from the other line.

"Gosh! Don't yell at me. I'm on my way to school now." Ugh.my earbuds are hurting.

"Well congratulations for missing out so much on Yuna's first day. Just so you know she fought with a classmate today!" he announced sarcastically.

"What the fuck? Why?" my hands gripped the steering wheel so hard after hearing this.

I swear I'm going to make this classmate pay for messing with Yuna!

"I don't know. The teacher called me. I will drive my way to school now." Jungkook said on the other line.

“Then I’ll go and see you there.”

I started driving fast and reached the school in a matter of minutes. But when I got there, Yuna was in the play area. She’s playing with some dolls with the teacher.

“Mommy!” she waved.

“Won’t you give mommy a hug?” I asked as I open my arms but she just shook her head and continued playing.

What the?

Then Jungkook came in with a worried expression “Where is she?” he asked and I pointed. “There.”

“Dada!” When Yuna saw him. She ran to him and hugged him like he’s her real parent.

I looked out of place so I turn to the teacher and leave the two alone.

“Where is the child who fought with my daughter?” I demanded.

“Ms.Lee, he was taken by his mother already. The child settled the problem on their own.” the teacher calmly replied.

I am pissed by the way the teacher is handling this matter calmly. She should report this matter to the principal to make that child pay.

“I will let this go for now but if this boy happens to hurt my daughter again, I’ll make sure to report him to the admin!” Inthreathened and the teacher looked like she was taken a back.

“Geez, Ji-eun calm down. We don’t even know whose fault is it.” Jungkook who heard my warning interrupted. He’s already carrying Yuna in his arms.

“As a matter of fact Ms.Lee, it was Yuna who throw the snack of her classmate.” the teacher defended but I’m not buying it.

“Are you saying that it was my daughter’s fault?” I took a step towards her with a questioning look.

“No, what I’m just saying is—”

“Maybe you should do your job well and watch my daughter—”

“Ji-eun!” Jungkook warned. “Yuna is here, can you at least speak calmly!” my attention was brought back to Yuna who was looking back at forth at me and the teacher.

“I’m sorry for the trouble Teacher Momo. We’ll talk to Yuna at home.” Jungkook apologized and I rolled my eyes.

The fuck is he apologizing?

When we got out of the classroom, Jungkook turned to me “You’ll drive Yuna home?” he asked.

“Are you going somewhere? You can stay at my house for a while.” I offered but he looked uninterested.

“I still have something to—”

“Come on Jungkook, Yuna needs you today. Her classmate bullied her, you should talk to her to calm her down. She looks sad.”

My mind secretly aplauded when Jungkook sighed. I know he can never resist Yuna “Okay. I’ll drive her to your house and we’ll just see you there. But I have to go back home early as I have to prepare for my new job.”

“Sounds good to me.” I bid them goodbye.

Jungkook took Yuna and I took my time alone in my car. I can’t help but smile at how easy I can manipulate Jungkook. He’s just as stupid as his ex.

Before leaving the school, I took my phone to check some emails. I don’t want to check emails at home because Jungkook might see my dirty little secret.

When I opened my inbox, I see that Lisa replied. I giggled as I imagined how pissed she is right now.

Now, I had the urge to send the girl some edited pictures again. It’s so fun to piss her off and she deserves it for being stupid.

Manipulating both of them is just a piece of cake to me.

There was a time where I felt guilty of it but when I remembered that it is the only way to get Yuna a father, I grabbed the opportunity to ruin them.

I had to act for almost four years just so I can get my daughter and Jungkook close. And my plan really worked well.

Jungkook won't take me back in his life because of that bitch but he can't say no to my daughter.

And that is my advantage. I'm sure that soon, Jungkook will adopt Yuna. I have urged him to do it for a while now and he's still thinking about it.

If my daughter takes his name, she will surely be the heiress of Jeon Corps. And I can settle for that.

My fingers tapped my gallery to choose some edited pictures of Jungkook and me. I had to pay for a photoshop artist to make these.

Sending Lisa some pictures was my way to make sure that she'll not come back.

It was damn hard to search for her email back then. But with a heavy digging, I've known everything that I needed to know.

I know that she's hiding abroad from Jungkook. But I don't know which country she's at.

It was the same trick that I used four years ago, when I showed her a video of me and Jungkook having sex.

It was all edited but she really believed it. I just can't believe her level of stupidity.

That night I couldn't stop laughing when she walked away from my house crying.

The only thing that made me guilty was when Jungkook had a depression after she left him.

But what can I do? I don't want them to be together so I continued my act especially when he began taking care of me and my baby.

To: Lisa
Subject: Ji-eun and I's Wedding anniversary.

Hi Lisa! Ji-eun and I will be celebrating our anniversary next week. She said she wants to invite you at our small party. We hope you could come.

I can't stop laughing as I type some words and address to send her.

This is really fun! I'm confident that she won't attend because she's somewhere abroad.

Last year, I also sent her an invitation to our "Wedding" and that was hilariously funny.

I pressed the send button and grinned. "Cry bitch! Cry!"

Even if she comes back home to Korea, I won't be threathened.

Jungkook is ours now. He started to love my daughter more than he loves her now.

If Jungkook is to choose between the two of them, I'm sure he'll choose my daughter.

Jungkook's POV

"Yuna, can you tell dada what happened in school?" I asked while I drive her to her house.

"Yuna wants muffins but Jihoon won't give me." she replied with a sad voice.

"But you have muffins right? I already made you." I wonder why she would ask other's food when she has her own.

"Yuna just want to taste Jihoon muffins. They look good." she explained.

"But you shouldn't throw his food just because you want some." As much as I want to scold her. I just speak gently. She's still a child who needs proper guidance.

"I'm sorry Dada." she apologized guiltily.

“No, you shouldn’t be sorry to me. You should say sorry to your classmate.”

“Yuna said sorry to Jihoon and the Muffin Lady promised Yuna muffins.” her tone changed when she mentioned the lady. She sounded like she’s excited now.

“Muffin lady?” My brows furrowed. Why do I always hear Muffins lately?

“The Muffin Lady is beautiful Dada. Yuna likes her.” Even if my eyes are focused on the road, I can still see how she looked happy on the backseat.

“What are you saying? Is this another fairy that you’re imagining?” I chuckled.

“No dada! Muffin Lady is real! Yuna likes her! She’s nice!” she kept repeating the words as she kept on imagining the lady.

“Okay okay. You say so.” I laughed. Yuna’s imagination is really wild. As wild as my imagination for Lisa in bed.

Lisa again? My subconscious mocked me.

I shook my head slightly. I swear Lisa pops out of my head 24/7.

Especially at night when I imagine her sleeping in bed next to me.

God! I miss those times when we would cuddle in bed after making love.

My sex life was in drought for four fucking years without Lisa.

If I could only bring back time, I would never let her go again. If I had to lock the doors and windows of our house just so she could not escape, I would do.

Lisa…

I miss her.

I miss her smile.

I miss her voice.

I miss the sound of her laughter.

I miss her pouts.

I miss her scent.

I miss her body.

I miss her so so bad.

Just once. If I could only see her once, I won't ever let her go again.

"Dada!" My thoughts were cut by Yuna's scream.

"Gosh! Why are you screaming?" I shook my head.

Yuna is now becoming like her mom. Loud.

"Because you're not listening." she pouted.

"I'm sorry. What were you saying?" I asked.

"Yuna said, I want you to meet the Muffin lady and marry her." she announced her plan proudly.

What the fuck?

Who's this muffin lady?

I don't even know if she's a ghost or an imaginary friend?

"Where did you learn this marry thing?" I swear she's too young to learn about this.

"From mommy" she replied.

"Of course" I rolled my eyes.

"Mommy says she wants marry Dada but Yuna want Dada marry Muffin Lady." she crossed her arms over her chest as if she hates the idea of me marrying her mom.

Yuna doesn't like her mom either which is rude but understandable as her mom doesn't pay her much attention.

"Does this Muffin girl have a body? I want to marry someone with a body." I joked.

I swear if she answers that the muffin girl is floating, it will give me nightmares for sure.

“Yes Dada. Muffin Lady has a body and pretty too.”

“Okay okay..next time I will meet this muffin lady for you.” I said, hoping it’s not a white lady.

“Really Dada?”

“Yes.” I lied.

“Yeay!”

Yuna clapped her hand happily. And I just shook my head.

Sorry baby Yuna for breaking your heart but it’s only Lisa that I will marry.

No one else.

Lisa’s POV

After sending Jihoon to school, I went straight to the University for an interview and because I was early, I’m the first one who was interviewed by the dean.

The result of the interview was good and they said I could start next week.

Though it was rare for a fresh graduate to get accepted, mine was still a special case because I was an honor student in one of the best Universities of Japan.

In addition to that, I had already taken units in Masters online.

I also learned that the University president is good friends with Mr.Kim. He must’ve recommended me there.

I was already near the Toddler School when teacher Momo called.

“Mrs.Kim, can we ask for your presence here at school?”

“Yeah, I’m on my way. Is there any problem teacher Momo?” I asked. She sound worried.

“Your son is crying, his muffins was thrown by his classmates. I will also call the father of Yuna.” she explained.

Poor Jihoon. He was so excited to eat the muffins today.

“I’m already by the school gates. Thank you teacher Momo.”

When I got inside the classroom, I saw Jihoon crying on one corner and teacher Momo was by his side trying to comfort him.

“Mommy!” he ran to me and hugged my leg when he saw me. I crouched down to his level and rubbed his back.

“What happened here?” even if my heart is aching upon seeing him cry, I must not let my emotion get ahead of me and scold the classmate who threw his snack.

What if it’s Jihoon’s fault?

“She threw my muffins! Look!” he pointed at the chocolate muffins on the floor. My eyes then travelled to the girl who looked so guilty on her seat.

For some reason, the girl looks familliar, I just can’t remember if I met her somewhere.

The classroom was empty now and only the two kids were there. It seems like the toddler session was over.

“Mrs.Kim, I just dialled the number of the father. He is on his way now. You might want to talk with him over this.” Teacher Momo offered but I shook my head.

I honestly don’t want this issue to blow up. The girl looked terrified already. If she sees me and her father arguing over the matter, it will just worsen the situation.

“No thanks teacher Momo. I’ll just go and take Jihoon with me. The session was done right?”

“Yes, Mrs.Kim.”

“Jihoon, I will go and talk to your classmate first okay?” I gently asked, he sniffed first before nodding.

I walk to the girl’s table and crouched down in front of her. I didn’t even open my mouth yet but she quickly defended herself. “Jihoon won’t give me muffins!” she pouted.

I looked down on her lunchbox which she was hugging tightly. “Don’t you have a snack little girl?” I asked softly.

“Yuna have muffins. Yuna want to change with Jihoon but Jihoon bad.”

“But why do you want Jihoon’s muffins if you already have one?” I asked her gently. I don’t want to scare the little girl off.

“Because it looks good than my muffins.” she looked down again and I smiled.

“Is it okay if I see your muffins?” her eyes sparkled when I ask her that, she quickly opened the lunchbox and show me.

They look cute.

Whoever made this must’ve been her first time.

“Can I take a bite?” I asked again and she nodded her head eagerly. She gave me one and I took a bite to taste.

Not bad. But slightly dry.

“Hmm..it taste good.” I said munching it happily and she smiled from ear to ear like she’s proud of it.

But she looked down again after a moment.

“But Jihoon’s is better.” she said. Technically, the muffins that her mother made is also good. Maybe she’s just the type of kid who craves for other’s.

“Since I’m the one who made those muffins, how about I’ll make you some muffins tomorrow? That’s if you promise to never do it again?”

The girl’s face lit up hearing this. “Really?”

“Really!” I chuckled. As I offer my pinky finger. She looked at it first before offering her tiny pinky too.

“But you also need to apologize to Jihoon. It was bad of him to not share but what you did was also bad. Food is very important. We shouldn’t waste it. Right?”

She guiltily looked at Jihoon who is now talking with teacher Momo. “I’m sorry Muffin Lady.” she said before walking to Jihoon.

I watched how the cute little girl apologized to my son which made Jihoon smile.

In the end, they shook hands as if nothing happened.

Jihoon and I left the school without waiting for the girl's father.

And we were by the car when my phone rang.

Hon calling..

I almost rolled my eyes at the cheesy name. The endearment is really weird for me. I mean for the both of us.

"Hello.." I glanced up at Jihoon who's sitting at the back seat first. When I made sure that he's not paying attention I continued "Mr.Kim?"

"Hello Lisa, I just want to check out on you and Jihoon."

"I am here at the school now. I just picked him up."

"Oh good. I thought you couldn't make it because of the interview. How was it by the way?"

"The interview went well. They said I can start on monday."

"Really! That's good then! How about Jihoon? How was his first day at school?"

"It also went well but he had a fight with his classmate a while ago." I don't want to brought up the issue because Mr.Kim is so protective of his son but I had to tell him everything.

"What the! What happened to him? I'm coming there!" he panicked. Just as I thought, his protective side kicked in.

"Everything is fine. It was just a petty fight and they settled it already. We adults shouldn't interfere." I tried to calm him down.

"You sure?"

"I'm sure." I assured him.

"Okay, please kiss him for me. I'll see you both this evening. I have a good news for the both of you."

Author's Note

I know you're disappointed that they didn't meet but believe me, their reunion will be as epic as the first time they meet.

Wet Dreams

Forgive me for the medical terms. I'm not good at it.

Taehyung's POV

"Okay, so what does this mean?" I asked my doctor, feeling confused as I read my medical exam result.

"You can guess." he playfully smiled.

This is new. Why is my doctor being playful now when he's always serious everytime I would have my monthly check up.

I want him to get straight to the point. But seeing how light and calm his mood is, I decided to play along.

"This means I will finally die because it's been four years now and I'm still alive?" I joked. Yes, I can joke aboit my death llbecause I've been ready for years now.

But seriously, it's been puzzling me for a while now that I'm not yet dead when my doctor said I have at least 3-4 years to live.

"Nope. This time it's a good news for you Mr.Kim and I'm sure you'll be surprised." he smiled.

"What is it? I'm dying out of curiousity now." I urged him to continue.

"Mr.Kim, the reason why you're still not..(coughs) dead is because there was really no illness in you in the first place." he dropped the bomb llmaking my mouth hung open.

What the fuck?

"You are joking right?" I swear if he is.

"I'm not. Look here." he said pointing at the result that I am holding.

"Apparently, the stress you experienced upon the death of your wife led your brain to create this foreign cells which we

suspected as the deadliest cancer cells. But it turned out that these cells cannot regenerate if the patient reach a certain amount of satisfying emotion. They just vanish over time."

"What does that mean?" I asked. i still don't get it.

"In simple words Mr.Kim, there was really no illness. It was just your body playing games with you as you were mourning over the death of your wife. But now that you seemed to move on, everything turned back to normal."

"How's that possible? Is there a mistake then with my previous findings because all of the doctors came up with the same result of an illness?"

"This case maybe rare but it's not impossible. So congratulations Mr.Kim, you have a long years to live if you just continue to take care of yourself." he gave me an assuring smile. I pinched my cheeks first if I'm dreaming or what.

The news seemed so hard to believe that I can't do anything but cry.

Cry out of happiness.

"Thank you! Thank you doctor and thank God! This is a miracle!" I cried.

"It is Mr.Kim! He emotionally pat my back." I didn't stop myself from hugging my doctor who's been with me for years now.

Is this really true?

I'm not dying?

I can't believe I'm not dying.

This only means I can get to spend more time with my son.

And Lisa.

Lisa…

I can get to spend time with her too…

Without worrying of leaving her.

Oh God.

What a great news it is.

My heart was overwhelmed with emotion that I just want to celebrate.

After my talk with the doctor, I decided to call Lisa to check on her and Jihoon. But when I heard that my son fought with a classmate, I can't help but feel worried.

So worried that I just want to confront whoever the parents of the child are. How can they let their child bully my son?

It might be a biased judgement but I won't let anyone hurt my son.

No one should dare touch him or I'll make them pay!

But Lisa's reassuring words calmed me down immediately.

I shouldn't focus on stressing out about these things.

What I need to do now is to tell Lisa about the good news. But there's a problem if I tell her that I'm not really dying.

There's a chance that she'll leave us because there is no more point in continuing the contract.

I can't let that happen. I won't let Lisa leave us. She's been a perfect mom to my son and it will break my son's heart if she'll leave us.

She will stay as his mother and soon I'll make her my real wife.

In the end, I decided to not tell Lisa the truth.

Lisa's POV

I welcomed Mr.Kim by the door when he came home. I helped him take off his coat and grabbed a pair of slippers for him.

"Good evening Lisa." he greeted with a warm smile.

"Good evening Mr.Kim." I prepared dinner already. You must be hungry?" I asked.

"I'm not that hungry a while ago but I suddenly became hungry knowing that you cooked for me."

Excuse me? I stared at him, a little confused. I don't know if he's trying to flirt with me or he's just joking.

This is not the usual Mr.Kim.

I just offered a smile without saying much. I walk to the kitchen and Mr.Kim followed me.

"Daddy!" Jihoon jumped at him when he saw his father.

"My son missed me already?" he asked as started giving the little boy butterfly kisses on his face.

"Jihoon missed you!" he said as he clung his little arms on his father's neck.

The scene was too good to see that it made my heart flutter. A father and son's bond is surely a wonderful sight.

I wonder if Jungkook feels the same to his daughter?

Is that even a question? Of course he is.

Jungkook is probably the best father in the world right now. But sadly, I am not the mother of his child.

If my infertility was not just a bitch, I could have carried his daughter now. We could've been one big happy family.

But the ugly truth was he was never contented of what I can give that he impregnated Ji-eun instead.

He even lied to me that nothing happened in Australia when he really had sex with her there leading to creating a baby inside her. I was a fool to believe that they broke up when they did not.

I shook my head aggressively when I remember the video Jieun has shown me.

Ji-eun admitted that they had sex when Jungkook came to Australia and they even filmed it. The confession broke my heart to million pieces.

"Lisa? Are you okay?" Mr.Kim's voice ended my thoughts on Jungkook.

"Ahh..yes..I am." I replied. He tilted his head while looking at me as if not believing me.

“Oh..Mr.Kim here, this is a new recipe I tried. Jihoon loves it, right Jihoon?” I invited.

“Yes daddy! Jihoon helped mommy cook this.” the little boy proudly announced which made his father laugh.

“Good job Jihoon. Mommy and I are really lucky to have you as our son.” he pat his back before turning at me. When Mr.Kim winked at me, I almost cursed. Good thing I covered my mouth quickly.

What’s with him being flirty like this?

Or am I just over-reading his gestures?

“What was the good news you wish to tell by the way?” I asked when we started eating.

“Uhm..uh..nothing.” he scratched his temple nervously before turning to his son, “I remember, What happened to school by the way? Your mommy said that you fought with a classmate?” he asked.

Jihoon began explaining what happened and Mr.Kim listened attentively.

With a serious expression he said, “I want to talk with the parents of this child. Their child is a clear brat! Not a good thing for a kid to do!” he sounded clearly pissed.

“Geez, Mist—I mean hon. There’s no need for that. We already said that the girl apologized.”

“But Jihoon didn’t get to have his snack just because of her.” he argued but I shoot him warning look.

Mr.Kim got the idea already so he silenced himself.

Mr.Kim and I had an agreement before that we should not show any act of negativity in front of Jihoon to raise the kid as a positive and happy child.

“I’m sorry.” was all that he say.

The three of us continued eating and enjoyed the rest of the night together.

Later that evening,

“Fuck baby!” he growled proudly in my ear, before fucking me to oblivion.

My breathing became ragged as he pumped and ground against me, doggy style. Reaching down between my thighs I could rub the burning nub of my clitoris.

This, combined with his rhythmic thrusts made stars and blackness swirl across my vision.

“Please daddy, please may I cum?” I groaned, rubbing circles to move my clitoris hood, letting my slippery fingers stroke the root of his cock as it ground into me.

“Wait for me baby girl—” Jungkook uttered, so I tried to hold back the tide of sensations which were building in me.

“Cum now Lisa!,” he urged me, “cum now baby!!!”

I was about to cum, when my eyes opened on its own.

A dream.

A dream of Jungkook again.

I sighed and wiped the excess sweat which formed on my neck with the back of my palm.

Lately, after I came back to Korea, I started dreaming of Jungkook every night.

I don’t know if it’s just because my brain knows that he is near me or it’s just me missing him.

And it’s so damn hard to not miss him. After all that we’ve been through. I can’t believe we we’ll just end like this—him having a family of his own while I, acting like a mother of a child which is not mine.

I wish in an alter-universe, our story didn’t end like this. I wish, we’ve stayed together to love each other. I wish in that universe we are inseparably happy in each other’s arms.

But I could only wish as the reality, he is happy with his wife and daughter without me. He even sent me an invitation for their anniversary earlier this morning.

I mean, has he gone mad?

Doesn’t Jungkook know how he’s breaking my heart everytime he would send me photos of his beautiful wife while I almost gone crazy because he cheated?

I shook my head with a determined expression. As I decided that from now on, I will go and move on.

I will date any guy out there who will ask me.. No that’s too much. But if someone asks me out, I will. I deserve to be happy too.

I don’t know how long will Mr.Kim’s life lasts but if he leaves me and Jihoon, I should also start planning for a family of my own.

I deserve to have a family too just like Jungkook.

I deserve to be happy too.

When I moved, I noticed that my panties are wet.

Fuck!

Despite Jungkook being away, he can still make me wet like this?

The power that he holds in my body.

Minutes later, I walked to the kitchen to drink some water when I noticed a shadow of a man there.

“Mr.Kim?” I called with a low voice, making it sound like a whisper.

He was by the fridge too with a glass of water on his hand. Maybe he’s having a hard time to sleep.

“Lisa? Why are you still up?” his face lit up upon seeing me.

“I..I’m just thirsty.” I reasoned out. I cannot tell him that I’m dreaming of being fucked by Jungkook.

What would Mr.Kim thought of me if I say that. He will surely think that I’m a horny bitch.

“Here” he said offering me the same glass he just used which made me raise my brow.

Should I take it?

But it would be rude if I say no right?

He looked serious so I took it to have a sip.

“Lisa…” he called again. I didn’t notice that this time he already crossed the gap between us.

“Mister Kim?” I froze on my spot when he took another step towards me. I noticed that his eyes was burning as it locked on my lips.

What is he doing?

“I’m sorry for doing this but..” that’s all he say before leaning closer to my face.

Wait! is he going to kiss me?

I panicked that my heart started beating so fast!

I don’t know what to do!

I just closed my eyes and wait for him to do something.

Mr Kim’s nose was already touching against mine when we heard a scream from Jihoon’s bedroom.

“Mommyyyyy!”

As if waking from his hypnotized state, Mr.Kim backed away and awkwardly looked at me.

“Jihoon” I said before running to his room. Mr.kim was following me.

When we reached his room, Jihoon was having a nightmare so I decided to sleep with him.

After the awkward encounter with Mr.Kim at the kitchen, none of us dared to talk.

He left the room after Jihoon calmed down and that night I didn’t sleep because I was thinking about Mr.Kim’s attempt on kissing me.

Why?

Why will he attempt to do that?

I could still remember his words when he was asking me to sign the contract. He said, “If you’re worrying about our

relationship, it will remain as professional as it is. I won't force myself to you because I'm dying and I have no more time to be in a relationship."

Those were the exact same words why I signed the contract. I thought it was clear that we are nothing but friends. But why do I feel like he's changing his mind?

Jungkook's POV

"Fuck baby!" I growled proudly in her ear, before fucking her to oblivion.

Lisa's breathing became ragged as I pumped and ground against her, doggy style. She reached down between her thighs and rubbed the burning nub of her clitoris.

This, combined with my rhythmic thrusts made Lisa moan in delightful amount of pleasure.

"Please daddy, please may I cum?" she oaned, rubbing circles to move her clitoris hood, letting her slippery fingers stroke the root of my cock as I ground into her.

God! This is so good! I can feel that I'm close too so she should wait.

"Wait for me baby girl—" I uttered, so she tried to hold back the tide of sensations which were building to her.

And here it is. I'm at the peak of my orgasm..

"Cum now Lisa!," I urged her, "cum now baby!!!"

I blow my cum into my boxers and that's when my eyes opened.

"Fuck!" I groaned when I realized that it was just a dream and I came so hard.

It feels so good to cum but not as good when I cum inside Lisa.

I stood to get some tissue to wipe myself then changed to a clean boxers.

Wiping the heavy sweat on my forehead, I decided to go down and get a water.

It was midnight and I feel like my adrenaline in cuming won't let me sleep again this night.

Seeing my house empty now made me just realize that I'm still alone with no Lisa by my side.

Four years has gone and she still has this effect on me. As lately, I've been having wet dreams of her almost every night.

It's so pathetic for me to dream of a girl who just left me for no reason.

After everything that we've been through, she just left me with a fucking letter. It feels like I'm worse than trash with how she dumped me.

But even if so, it's still her that owns my heart. Nothing has changed for me and I hope and pray that wherever she is right now, she also feels the same.

Author's Note

I will make up for being late in updating today.

Taste of Love

Jungkook's POV

I'm not even close at the door of Ji-eun's house and it's already her screaming voice that I'm hearing.

"Another world war 3?" I asked the servant who opened the door for me and she sighed.

"It's World War 10 Mr.Jeon." she replied with the same "I'm-so-done" reaction which she always uses every morning.

I just let out an apologetic smile before walking in.

As usual, Ji-eun and Yuna are arguing again during breakfast. This is how they usually are everytime I visit them.

"Dada!" Yuna's scowling face was replaced with a grin when she saw me. That's when she came jumping to welcome me.

"What is it this time?" I asked as I carry the little girl to my arms.

"Yuna is becoming a brat!" Ji-eun rolled her eyes but Yuna just stuck her tongue out on her mom which shocked me.

"Yuna! That's bad!" I warned.

Why does she hate her mommy so bad?

Yuna just clung to my neck and tried to make me move to her chair "Yuna want Dada to go to school not mommy!" she scowled at her mom again making Ji-eun sigh.

"I swear Jungkook you need to talk to your daughter! She's giving me a pain in the ass!" she whined.

"Okay okay..I'll take you to school now but you don't have to be rude to your mom Yuna. That's bad." I placed her back to her chair and sat next to her.

Yuna continued eating without even saying sorry to her mom.

“Good that you’re taking her to school. Because I need to go to check the result of my audition for a lead role today.” she announced confidently.

“You’re acting again?” I asked. How about her business in Australia?

“Yes, I have too. The business didn’t go well. We have more losses than profit. So I better start looking for job.”

“But how about Yuna? Who will take care of her if you started working again?” I am worried with this decision of hers.

“We have servants and you can help her right? Besides she’s like your daughter now, I know you’ll take care of her.” she reasoned out.

“But I’ll be working soon? I cannot focus on her all the time.”

“That is why I have been telling you to adopt her already. Why is it taking so long for you to do that when you love her like your own?” she asked and reached out to hold my hand. “Jungkook please adopt her already. If you cannot marry me then just go and take her. What if something happens to me? What if I die? What will happen to her?” Ji-eun wiped her eyes as she seemed like she’s at the verge of crying.

“Dada won’t marry you! Dada marry Muffin Lady!” Yuna blurted out making her mom look at her in disbelief.

And before another war starts between them, I decided to talk.

“I’ll think about it Ji-eun” I said as I turn my gaze at Yuna who continued eating while humming “Muffin Lady~~”

I shook my head.

Who’s this muffin Lady that Yuna is always mentioning? I swear if she’s a ghost!

Ji-eun’s POV

“What do you mean by this?” I almost cursed as I read the role I am having.

“You auditioned right? Then that’s your role.” the assistant of the the director snapped.

“What the fuck? You mean I’m getting a mother role? With three kids? Is this some type of a joke?”

Me? Of all person? They’re giving me this pathetic role when I auditioned for the lead?

“Ms.Ji-eun, let me remind you that it is the director’s choice to pick you for that role. You should be even thankful to him.”

“Are you kidding me? I should be thankful when I will get a side role and worse is it’s a mother’s? Don’t you know who I am? How many lead roles I landed back then???” I took steps closer to threathen the stupid P.A. but she just laughed in a mocking way.

“Have you also forgotten that you’re a mother now? And look at you…” she looked at me from head to toe before continuing “You’re not as pretty and as fresh as before. How old are you by the way? With lots of fresh and young actress out there, it’s impossible for you to take a lead.”

“Well fuck you! I don’t need this role anyway!” I yelled and slapped her face with the paper I’m holding.

I left the area and reached my car, fuming in anger! How dare she insult me?

Fuck you Jingoo! This is all your fault for getting me pregnant!

Ughhh!!! I groaned and punched the steering wheel of my car frustratedly.

Now I can’t land a decent role because I have a child!

Jungkook must pay for this! He should take care of everything!

If I can’t get my life back, he should at least marry me and adopt my daughter!

I swear I will have Jungkook again! I will do it by force if I have to!

If I can't get my career back, at least I can have a billionaire as a husband.

I'm gonna fuck him tonight so he won't get away with me anymore!

Jungkook's POV

That morning, I sent Yuna to school and came back to pick her after two hours.

The session was not done yet so I sat on a bench where some parents were also waiting.

As I wait, I took my phone to busy myself out and opened my gallery where there are thousands of pictures of Lisa.

A smile forms on my lips everytime I would see her beautiful face.

There's a picture of her in the kitchen cooking.

A picture of her reading a cook book.

A picture of her doing her homework.

A picture of her eating.

A picture of her sleeping.

A picture of her naked.

And a lot more stolen pictures.

God! I miss her so much.

These pictures makes me just miss her more.

"Dada!" My attention was grabbed by Yuna's voice. I looked up to search for her but something grabbed my attention.

A girl.

A girl who's walking from a far who looks exaclty like Lisa.

My heart started thumping out of my chest as I watch her back.

The girl was holding a little boy on her hand.

A bodyguard was leading them to a car. A servant on the right shading them with an umbrella.

Is that Lisa? I stood to take a better look.

"Dada!!!" Yuna called again, she was already infront of me but my eyes were still glued at the back of the girl.

I wanted to chase her to see of she's Lisa but she got in the car so quick.

The car moved away leaving me speechless and frozen.

I was only brought back to my conscious state when Yuna began pulling me.

"Dada! Quick before the Muffin Lady leaves!" she tried her damn best to pull me so I let her.

In the end, we came in an empty classroom with no Muffin Lady inside.

"She's gone!" she announced with a down expression.

"Yuna, you're just making up this Muffin Lady am I right?" I gave her a questioning look but she just scowled at me.

"Muffin Lady is real. She's here Dada but she's gone." she still pulled her cute tiger look on me as if it's my fault that her imaginary friend vanished.

"You must be tired, let's go home now." I sighed and carried her to my arms.

Yuna kept whining about me being slow the whole time at the car..she kept blaming me for not meeting the Muffin Lady

but my mind was busy processing about the girl whose back looked exactly like Lisa's.

Was that even Lisa?

But the girl look eiffin rich.

A body guard and servant?

That's totally not Lisa!

It just looks like her.

Besides, the lady was with her son.

It's impossible for Lisa to have a son.

I shrugged my thoughts of Lisa and believed that maybe they just look alike.

Yuna and I reached home but her mood was still sour. Still, she managed to invite me to the dinning area where she proudly showed me her lunch box.

"Dada Look!" she grinned.

When she opened it, I was shocked to see potato chips inside with plastic bottle of coke.

What the fuck?

"Yuna! Why is your snack like this?" I was surprised that her snacks were junk foods.

"Because mommy!" she rolled her eyes before tossing the chips and coke aside.

Ji-eun prepared junk foods for Yuna?

What the fuck is wrong with her?

Doesn't she know that it's a strict regulation in school that no junk foods are allowed?

"Dada, Yuna didn't eat junk food. The Muffin Lady gave Yuna this." she said showing me cute little muffins inside her lunch box.

"This is from the Muffin Lady?" I asked curiously.

“Yuna told Dada she’s real.” she smiled and excitedly picked one. “Dada have a bite.”

So she’s really real?

I took the muffin in her hand and took a bite.

And when my tongue got a taste, an odd but familliar feeling reached my senses.

I suddenly remembered,

Lisa.

I panicked thinking about the possibilities.

“Yuna, baby can you tell me the name of the Muffin Lady?” I asked, almost pleading.

“Her name is Muffin Lady!” she confidently answered.

“No baby…I mean her real name?”

“Dada, She’s Muffin Lady!” she pressed and I thought there’s no use of asking her as she’s too young for this.

In the end, I just decided to catch the muffin lady tomorrow.

Hoping that she’s the person who I hope is.

Please God! Let her be my Lisa!

In the evening, I spent my time with Yuna as I have nothing to do at home. And I’m still waiting for Ji-eun so that I can leave Yuna to her care. But it’s already past 7 and she’s not yet home.

Yuna fell asleep and I tucked her to bed. I was already by the door to leave when I saw Ji-eun walking to me. She looked

pale.

“Jungkook.” she called with a weak voice.

“Are you okay?” I asked, a little worried.

“Can you check me, I’m not feeling well.” She walked to me and slightly leaned on my arm.

“You feel hot Ji-eun. You seem to have a fever.” I said as I reach out to palm her forehead.

“Maybe..I feel weak, can you help me get to my room?”

“But—”

“Please Jungkook..I’m really not feeling well.”

I sighed and held her by her waist to help her get to her room. Ji-eun wrapped her arms around my torso and pressed her body to me which was uncomfortable. I haven’t been in this close proximity to her before.

When I was about to lay her to her bed, Ji-eun clung to my arms.

“Jungkook please don’t leave me yet. I feel cold.” she said with shut eyes, her body slightly trembling.

“But Ji-eun we can’t stay in the same bed together.”

“Please Jungkook, there’s no malice to this.” she grabbed my arm more to her, making me land on the bed with her.

Then she scooted closer, “Thank you Jungkook. You can leave me when I sleep.” she said and I just nodded.

Well she says there’s no malice in this so I’m fine as long as she doesn’t touch me or what. “Okay, Sleep now Ji-eun” I whispered.

I waited for her to finally sleep.

But it seems that she’s got no plan in sleeping.

“Jungkook?”

“Hmm?”

“Can I kiss you?” she asked.

“What? No!” I tried to move away but she already pressed her lips on mine.

“Ji-eun…stopmmnn”

Ji-eun aggressively kissed me with her hands holding me in place.

It was a familliar feeling because we already kissed back then when we were still together but it’s not as good as how Lisa’s lips tastes like.

She tried to hover over me to deepen the kiss but before I could push her, the door to the room swung open with a furious looking Yuna.

“Get away from Dada Mommy!” the little girl pushed her mom away freeing me successfully.

Ji-eun defeatedly sighed. “I can’t believe this is my daughter!” she grumbled.

I don’t know if I will laugh at Ji-eun’s annoyed expression.

Yuna took my hand and pulled me out from her mom’s room. And it’s the very first time that I feel that Yuna can protect me despite her age.

Kissing Ji-eun is a mistake as Lisa is my love.

Even if she’s not around, I would still remain faithful to her.

I could only remember how jealous she can get and if she learns that Ji-eun kissed me, she will be upset for sure.

My dear baby girl, wherever you are, I’m not cheating, okay?

That night, I slept with Yuna in my chest. She said she woke up because she dreamt of a monster which looked like her mom that’s why she barged inside Ji-eun’s room.

I can’t help but laugh at Yuna’s imagination.

Her imagination is wild.

As wild as my imagination for Lisa in bed.

□

Author's Note

Short update for everyone.

I guess we'll have the reunion next chapter.

Please bear with me because I want it to be perfect. 😊😌

Moving On

Jungkook's POV

It was a sunny wednesday. I sent Yuna to school and waited there for a while in hopes to see Lisa.

But it's been hours now yet there's still no signs of her. I waited until everyone in class was taken by their parents.

Still, I didn't see her.

When Yuna walked to me, I asked "Baby. Where is the Muffin Lady?"

She looked around first, "Dada there's no Muffin Lady."

"What do you mean there's no Muffin Lady?"

"There's no Muffin Lady Dada."

I sighed.

Sometimes I just want to get inside Yuna's head so I can understand what she's saying but in the end, I can't do anything about it.

I took her hand and we walked away.

"Dada, Yuna want eat."

"Okay baby, where do you want to eat?"

"House dada cook!" she jumped excitedly. I smiled.

"Okay baby! Dada will cook you the best" I promised and both of us travelled back home.

The rest of the days, I didn't saw Lisa. Maybe I was just creating illusions of her because I miss her. Yuna stopped mentioning her too.

I'm not sure but maybe she was just making up stories of the Muffin Lady.

On the other hand, I focused myself on processing Yuna's adotion papers.

It took me years to decide about this but I realized that Ji-eun is right. I treat Yuna as my own daughter now so what's the point of not giving my name to her?

My attorney says that the process will just take days to process because the mother is willing to sign the adoption papers.

And I can wait. I want to see Yuna write her name as Yuna Jeon already.

Lisa's POV

Wednesday Morning

The three of us were having having a breakfast when Mr.Kim started, "Jihoon, aunt Yerin will send and pick you to school today okay?" he asked the little boy gently but he frowned with his father's plan.

"Why? Jihoon want mommy to go Jihoon to school?" he argued in a cute manner.

"Yeah why? Is there a problem? I can send Jihoon to school today as I have nothing else to do." I added.

I really want to got there. Going to the toddler school makes me happy. It reminds me of the time when I used to visit the orphanage.

Also, I want to see Yuna, she's Jihoon's cute little classmate. She's so adorable and funny.

Yuna's been asking me to marry her father which was weird because she's shipping me to her father. What will her mother think if she knows what her daughter is doing?

Yuna says her father is handsome and I would like him if I see him. If he's father is not only married, I'd probably meet him by now.

As I said, I'm desperate to date anyone because I have to move on from Jungkook.

But I explained to Yuna that I cannot date his father. I will never be a home wrecker.

“Your mommy and I needs to go out. Jihoon will understand if daddy wants to spend time with mommy right?” Mr Kim gave him a suggestive smile and which made Jihoon a little excited.

“Daddy will date mommy?” he smiled widely.

“Yes baby, so please go with your aunt Yerin for today.”

“Sure! Jihoon want baby sister soon!” Jihoon suggested which made us both blush.

No no no.

I lightly shook my head and turned to Mr.Kim. “Uhm..where are we going?”

“You’ll know later. For now let’s enjoy our breakfast.”

And just like that, I was left speechless.

What is Mr.Kim up to this time? This is very new

Last night he tried to kiss me and now he’s asking me out?

But I just followed him. I trust that he’ll not do something unpleasing to me.

Later that day, Mr.Kim took me to Kim’s Real Estate and Development Building.

This is the second time I set foot here. The first was when I interrupted their meeting and I even called him old and evil that time.

Those were the times where I hated Mr.Kim so much and it didn’t for once crossed my mind that I will end up marrying him and living under the same roof as him.

All I thought that time was a future with Jungkook but I guess fate has other plans.

My presence in the building caused a stir to a lot of employees because this is the first time that they saw me.

“Is that Mr.Kim’s wife?”

“She looks average.”

“No, she’s pretty too just like Ms.Ruby Jane.”

“Do you think she’s as evil as Mr.Kim?”

“Shhh..they’ll hear us.”

I stopped myself from rolling my eyes. The audacity of these employees to call Mr.Kim evil when he’s the reason why they have their job!

When we got in the elevator, Mr.Kim must’ve noticed my irritation so he spoke “You’ll get used to it. Don’t worry.”

I stared at him in disbelief. “You mean you hear them call you evil and you’re just leting them?”

“It’s not important.” he shrugged.

“No! That’s just so mean for them to say those things behind your back!” I argued. If I’m Mr.Kim, I will never tolerate such behavior.

Mr.Kim just smile despite my growing irritation. “I told you it’s fine. They are right anyways as I am really mean to them. But it will change now.” he spoke so confidently.

“Huh? What do you mean it will change now?” I asked. He’s really hard to read.

Mr.Kim is calm and preserved just like Jungkook. But Jungkook is wild in bed.

I blushed as I remember our intimate encounters.

“Later I’ll tell you but for now, I will introduce you first to the employees. They know that I married you but they haven’t meet you yet.” the elevator opened and we both walked out.

“Mr.Kim, I’m nervous.” I said, tugging his coat.

“Don’t be. I’m here.” he reassured with his calming voice.

We both walked to a wide room where a lot of employees are waiting.

All eyes moved at me making me more nervous than ever. All I could do was look down on my shoe.

But I could still hear the morning greetings for Mr.Kim.

“Good Morning Mr.Kim”

“A pleasant morning Mr.Kim”

For the first time ever, I saw him smile on his employees. They noticed it too making them all look flustered.

Mr.Kim guided me on an elevated platform. He stood before the hundreds of employees with me by his side.

Mr.Kim cleared his throat and held my hand. “Everyone, I would like you to meet my wife, Ms.Lisa Kim. She just came back from Japan and she’ll be living here in Korea for good now. So I want you all to treat her with respect as she is my other half.”

The employees started clapping their hands after Mr.Kim finished his introductions.

After introducing me to some of the VIPs, Mr.Kim led me to his office where we first had an argument. And It feels like ancient of years ago.

“Sit here.” he said patting the space beside him on the sofa. I followed suit.

“Mr.Kim, what’s with the sudden marriage announcement?” I asked curiously.

He leaned to the backrest and crossed his legs before staring at me. “Lisa, I need to tell you something.” his expressed seriously.

“What is it?” I waited in anticipation at what is about to come.

Is he dying tomorrow? That’s why he’s introduced me to them?

“I have always wanted to tell you this but I was so afraid because of my condition.” he paused before locking his eyes on me.

I could feel the worry in him just by staring through his eyes. “Lisa, I like you.. No…not just like. Lisa, I love you and I have been keeping this for years now.” he confessed.

My mouth hunged open at the confession. I can't believe this. "You..? You love me?" I am shocked. How? When?

"I mean it's not hard to fall in love with you. You're just so perfect in every way. I have countless of reasons why but it's your heart that I loved the most." his gaze was so tender and soft.

"I don't know what to say." Is all I could say. This is confusing me.

"Lisa, before you came into my life, I was really down, with no direction to go to except of thinking that I'm dying. But when you came it change. It made me so happy. You made both of Jihoon and I happy."

"I didn't do anything special Mr.Kim."

"Trust me, you did. You're an amazing person Lisa and because of this, I would like to ask you if you're willing to be in a real relationship with me?"

"Mr.Kim—"

"I know. I know you have no feelings for me yet but why not give it a try? We have all the time in the world to do it."

"But you'll leave us soon?" I don't want to brought up the topic of him dying but how can he start a relationship with me if he will just leave me in the end?

"I won't leave you. Please give it a try. I promise you won't regret it. I will love you and I will make you happy Lisa."

Make me happy?

Will I really be happy with Mr.Kim?

But I don't love him.

It is Jungkook that I love.

But Jungkook has his family now and he's happy without me.

Jungkook left me.

So…

Maybe I should try opening myself to him too?

Besides, he's a good man at all. I don't think it'll be hard to love him too.

"So?" Mr.Kim pressed.

I heaved a deep sigh before giving my answer.

"Let's try Mr.Kim."

"Really???" he almost jumped out of his seat.

"Uhm..I'm not sure if I can return your feelings but like what you said, we can try right?" I smiled.

"Oh my god! You just don't know how happy I am right now Lisa!" Mr.Kim exclaimed.

"I'm happy that you're happy." is all that I say. It's still awkward.

If he's only Jungkook, I would've jumped out of happiness now. But sucks on me because Jungkook and I are over.

Mr.Kim didn't stop himself from pulling me in for a hug. His happiness radiated in me that's why I feel like I'm also happy.

Then he let go shortly after. With loving eyes, he whispered, "Can I kiss you?"

Jungkook's POV

It was a saturday and I was home planning out a course syllabus for my class.

In two days, I will start teaching college students and I can't wait.

I was assigned to teach at the College of Foreign Languages. As an English major, I will handle English subject for the students who are taking BA in Foreign Language.

I'm excited but nervous at the same time. I mean, it's been years since I stopped teaching and I hope I can still teach students well.

My experience if teaching in SNUHS was a success as most of my students finished college and some are excelling in the

business world.

Namjoon passed the teacher's board exam and is now applying for a teaching posititon at another University.

Jin followed the path of his parents and is now busy running his own restaurants with his girlfriend/friend of mine Jisoo.

Yoongi is now a member of one of the biggest Basketball team here in Korea.

Jimin and Chae are happily married with a beautiful daughter almost the same age as Yuna.

Jeongyeon finished her Mass Media Communication Course and is now applying for a job.

Dahyun didn't go to college but tried her luck in business and is succesful in it.

Tzuyu was signed into a modelling company while her boyfriend Eunwoo joined the military. Their wedding will be this month.

A medicine was finally discovered for Hoseok curing him of the pulmonary disease that is why he survived and now opened a Dance Studio where he teaches dancing.

Bambam on the other hand is the only one who's not keeping in touch with me. I don't know why he's avoiding me but just like Lisa, he's never left a word for years now.

My students are all busy in their choosen career but my heart still warms everytime they visit me. Imagine how happy I thrilled I am when Namjoon planned a Class 3-C reunion.

I thought of bringing Yuna with me because Chae and Jimin will bring their daughter. And on that day, I am secretly hoping that Lisa would attend.

Her classmates doesn't know where she is now so it's impossible that she'll attend because they didn't give her an invitation but I'm still hoping for a miracle that she'll come.

I promise myself that I will never let her go again if I see her.

I was surprised when the door to my room opened revealing Ji-eun.

“Oh my God Jungkook! I can’t believe you’re actually adopting Yuna!” she squeaked as she walk to me.

“Did you sign the papers already?” I asked, smiling.

“Yes, of course. I have been bugging about it for a while now. I’m so happy that you finally decided.” she exclaimed as she sat down on my bed.

It feels uncomfortable to have her sit on my bed but I could only careless as we are talking about Yuna.

“Thank you Ji-eun for signing them. Yuna makes me really happy you know.”

“I know. And I’m happy that he’ll have a father like you. She deserves the best.”

“I promise to be the best father to him.”

“So does thar mean that we can…?”

I shook my head quickly before she can even complete the sentence. “No Ji-eun, we have discussed this already. We can be nothing but friends. Lets just focus on giving Yuna everything that she needs.” I pressed.

“What is the reason why you can’t seem to accept me back? Is it because of your student? Jungkook, she’s gone now and she’ll never go back. You’ve been waiting for now .Give yourself a break!”

“I can’t. What if she comes back? What will she think of me?”

“She’s not coming back Jungkook! She’s probably married now and has kids.”

“No! No don’t say that! Lisa will never marry unless it’s me.”

“Keep dreaming Jungkook. That Lisa of yours dumped you like a trash. How can you wait for a girl like that? She doesn’t deserve you. You deserve the best.”

“I don’t care. I’ll wait for Lisa. I love her so much Ji-eun. You may not understand this but love leads us to wait. It teaches us to be patient and my love for Lisa is too deep that I will wait for her however long it takes.”

“Pshh..you need to think clearly then. If I were you, I will choose who’s been by your side for years now. And that is me Jungkook. One day, you’ll realize my worth and you’ll come begging for me to take you back.”

Ji-eun emotionally walked out of the door and left me.

Whatever she says, I will hold on to the idea that Lisa will come back.

I will see her again.

I’m sure of that.

Author’s Note

I know, I know you’re expecting for the reunion but it’s finally the coming chap and I’ll update after this.

Reunited

Short Update

Lisa's POV

My finger's graze at the send button.

Biting my lower lip, I try to decide if I will send it or not.

The message contained my long email of goodbye for Jungkook.

Part of the reason why I can't seem to decide on sending the message is because, it will mean a total end of what we have.

And I'm so scared.

I thought I have accepted that he's a family man already but why is it hard to give our relationship a formal closure?

An hour of decision making had passed before I gathered all the courage inside me, and pressed the send button with shut eyes.

There it says,

Jungkook,

I don't really know what happened to us. What lead you to decide on cheating against my back, what lead you to lie to me, what lead you to forget about everything that we dreamt of.

You kept sending me updates of how happy your life is but have you even thought for once how it hurt me? Have you not thought that it broke my heart to million pieces? Have you not thought that I almost gone crazy?

Was it worth the time of making me fall for you? How could you ever do such a thing to me when all I did was to love you?

Years had passed but it's still you who's in my mind. It's still the thought of you who makes my heart beat. It's still you who

owned my body and soul.

You were my first in everything and it's hard to forget everything that you did to me, for me.

I never for once forget the love I have for you. But you did so easily.

And this time, after all those years of crying my eyes out for you, I've finally decided to end this.

To move on.

I know you're already happy but please wish me to be happy too.

It's all that I could ask for right now.

-Lisa

After sending the message, I waited.

I waited for his response.

Part of my brain was hoping that he'll say "Lisa, don't. I love you. Don't move on from me."

The thought made me laugh.

Why would he say that when he's always said he's happy without me?

And not a minute had passed when I receive a response from him.

It says:

"Lisa,

I'm sorry for everything. But please understand that I have a family now. They are everything to me.

I pray for you to be happy."

-Jungkook

That's it.

That's it and I'm done.

I'm so done!

I hugged myself to sleep and cried my heart out.

This will be the last time that I will cry for him.

I swear.

3rd Person POV

Seoul International University

Walking along the school corridors of the University's Foreign Language Building is a breathtakingly young and beautiful lady.

She was dressed with a formal blouse and a knee-length skirt, accenting her straight long legs. Her hair was curled on the sides, her high heeled shoes were clicking in every step that she makes. Making her look elegant, confident and powerful.

She was so exotic and attention grabbing for Koreans that all of the college students gathered to get a better glimpse. Eyes were fixated on her and most of them are from young college boys.

They were staring at her in admiration while the girls are rolling their eyes in insecurity.

Her movement was straight. Not even paying attention to all the boys who are rushing out to get a good look of her.

And she's still not used to it.

Being called beautiful, hot, and perfect feels like a joke to her.

Trully, Lisa Kim's physical feature was no joke. She is someone you would drool over. She is someone you would dream to be with.

Her chic but warm features would make you think that she's approachable, that she's kind. and that's what attracts the men more.

Today she sets foot to this University for one reason:

That is to become a foreign language teacher.

Yes, she is a teacher. A freshly graduate one but was lucky enough to land a job in one of the biggest International Universities in Seoul.

Sadly, for these boys who are attracted to her, she came here not to flirt but to work.

Besides, she's already married and has a son.

Lisa's POV

I came to the University just right in time for the teacher and students brief orientation.

The University President, Mr. Bang Si-Hyuk led the activity by orienting the freshman college students on the school's rules and regulations.

From now on, I will be teaching students who are taking Bachelor of Arts in Foreign Languages.

It is a 3-year course which helps students to learn widely used languages such as English, German, Japanese, and a lot more.

The course prepares students for career opportunities such as:

Elementary/ Secondary School Teacher, Special Education Teacher, Elementary School-Level Administrator, Foreign Language Analyst, Language Instructional Developer, Language Teachers, Textbook Author and Editors, Research Librarians, Representative of Foreign Companies, Foreign Travel Adviser.

Successful graduates of the course are hired in capacities such as Translator for government organizations, Foreign Language Trainer, Research Associate, Tourist Guide, Interpreter, Air Hostess or Flight Steward,Freelance Writer, Interpreter, Attendant at hotels, Linguist, Public Relations Officer.

And I will be handling the Japanese Language. For the past four years of staying in Japan, I am confident that I can teach the language well.

During the orientation, I met some teachers. Surprisingly, they are young too but not as young as me.

Some of them are with the same age as Jungkook.

Jungkook.

I almost roll my eyes.

Why do I have to think about him all the time?

Just last night I promise myself to move on and stop thinking about him but I guess it's everything that I do these days–think of him.

Stop it Lisa!

Stop thinking about him.

Focus on your new boyfriend.

Jungkook doesn't love you anymore.

He has a family now.

He loves Ji-eun and his daughter.

I kept repeating the words to myself even if I looked like a lunatic, mumbling the words.

Among the teachers which I had met on the first day, it was Mina who I became closed with easily. She is simple, calm and sweet which reminds me of Chaeyoung.

Mina walked with me to the faculty office after the brief orientation. It was just 9 in the morning and the school was filled with students and teachers already.

Even though the University is wide, it still looked crowded as it was still filled with a large population of students.

"Lisa, What time is your first subject?" Mina asked when we got in the faculty.

Several tables lined inside by subjects. Luckily, Mina's who is also teaching Japanese has her table placed beside me.

I looked up my schedule first before answering, "9:30 will be my first load. You?"

“I have a class now. Is it okay if I leave you here?” she politely asked.

“Of course. It’s 30 mins before my class. It won’t be long then.”

“You sure?” she asked again while looking around the office with full of teachers. Just like me, it is also Mina’s first day to teach here.

“Don’t worry about me. Let’s just meet later at lunch. Are you fine with that?”

“That sounds great! I’ll see you soon Lisa!”

“See you!” Mina bid me goodbye and I started gathering my things.

I have 9:30-11:00 load for the freshman college students.

I walked to my classroom slowly as I know I’m a bit early but when I got in, I noticed that the students were already there waiting for me.

I started with the syllabus and gave an introduction to the subject course.

Fortunately, the students were all behave and attentive. That’s why I had no problem with my first load.

After the class, the students moved for their next subject in another room and I was left alone.

Checking my time, I still have 30 minutes before the next teacher comes.

So I decided to use the classroom first as I study my next lesson.

The faculty is too noisy for me to concentrate that’s why I don’t want to go there yet.

I started reading basic introduction of the Japanese language for my lesson tomorrow.

But minutes of reading made me feel sleepy. I blinked my eyes a few times to fight off my sleepiness.

The silence of the room, the ticking wall clock, the cold temperature was not helping either.

Soon I began yawning and leaned on the teacher's table.

"10 minutes."

"Just 10 minutes of sleep is enough." I convinced myself.

I am really sleepy as I didn't sleep well last night thinking about Jungkook.

He was in my head the whole time when I began questioning my decision to accept Mr.Kim's love.

So here I am now, eyes heavy and ready to drift off to sleep.

I closed my eyes.

"Lisa!"

"Lisa!"

"Lisa, wake up you bitch!!!"

"If you don't bring me a slut, I will rape you instead!" he yelled.

My uncle started shaking my shoulders.

My heart beated so fast out of fear of him. My body slightly trembing.

He shaked my shoulder again.

“Bitch! Wake up!”

“I’m going to rape you!”

With this my mind worked so fast.

I need to fight back!

I need to stop him from abusing me!

I didn’t hesitate this time to use all of my force to slap him.

I slapped him so hard that he backed away.

“What the fuck?” I hear a familliar voice groaned.

But when I opened my eyes, I blinked countless times as if I’ve seen a ghost.

I stared at the person in front of me.

Is this a dream?

This could not be.

This could not be him.

This could not be Jungkook.

He also blinked a few times. His hand was on his cheek where I just slapped.

It took us both an entire minute to process everything.

With hunged mouth, eyes wide, and a questioning look, he asked in disbelief,

“Baby?”

Author’s Note

It took me so long my loves.

Will it be a happy ending already?

Encounter

Jungkook's POV

Of all the times that Ji-eun will mess up, why now when it's my first day at work?

My hands were in a rush to make Yuna a sandwich and a milk for school.

As again, Jieun had a night out with her friend last night making her drunk again to the point where we can't wake her up.

"Dada, fast. Yuna school." Yuna was rushing me as she knows we're already late.

"Fuck your mother!" I mumbled. Hoping she didn't hear that.

"Dada fast!" she asked again, tugging my shirt.

"Here it is baby! Sorry Dada is slow." I apologized as I place the sandwiches on her lunchbox.

I asked the servant to wake Ji-eun at 10 so she could pick uo Yuna for me because I will be at the University the whole day.

Soon, I drove Yuna to her school and asked teacher Momo to call me if something happens.

I was already hours late which sucks because it is my first day. I'm sure I won't be able to attend the oientation with this.

Luckily, my first load is 11. But still, it is inappropriate to not attend the orientation especially that I am just new in the University.

I finally reached the campus, I waled to the gym where the orientation was Being held when someone called me,

"Holy shit! Jeon Jungkook?"

I turn to my back and saw my high school classmate Kim Mingyu.

“What the fuck dude? Is that you? What are you doing here?” we shaked hands first. Both of us smiling. It’s been years since I last saw him. He was one of my annoying classmates back then.

We’re not as close as me and Jisoo and Jennie but we shared naughty experiences back then which strengthened our bond.

“I’m a teacher here.” he cockily announced while brushing his nose.

“Oh really? How long?” I asked excitedly. Good that I have friends here.

“A year now.” he grinned.

“Woah! Didn’t expect you can land a decent job.” I joked but as usual he didn’t take it as offense. He just laughed it out.

“Didn’t expect it too. But I need to find a job or else I’ll be living in the streets. How about you? What are you doing here?”

“I’ll also be teaching here.” I proudly said.

“Woah? Really? What department?” he asked.

“In the Foreign Language Department.”

“Bro! That’s cool. I’m also teaching there.” he raised his palm for a high five but I ignored him.

“Are you still the playboy Mingyu from high school?” I teased.

“Nah..but I just broke up with my girlfriend two days ago so I’m in a hunt for a new girl.” his cockiness is surely sending me off.

“Good luck then.” I chuckled.

“How about you? Did you finally get that chic that you’ve been chasing for years?” he laughed.

“You mean Ji-eun?” I asked and he nodded.

“No, we’re long over. It’s different now.” I replied referring to Lisa, my baby.

“Thank God it changed. You’re so annoying then because of that girl.” he said, scrunching his nose.

“Let’s not talk about her. You should tell me why you’re here out of the building?” I asked.

“The orientation is boring as fuck. And i’m looking for someone.” he admitted..

“Looking for?”

“There’s a girl I saw a while ago, I think she’s a new student. She’s cute. I want her to be my next girlfriend.” Mingyu said in a confident manner as of he’s sure to get the girl.

“You know that teachers are not allowed to date students right?” I reminded if incase he forgot.

“I know but we can keept it a secret.” he laughed again.

I suddenly remembered Lisa when we used to sneak inside empty classrooms just to kiss.

God! I miss those days.

I miss those lips.

Kissing her will always be my favorite.

“Whatever.” I rolled my eyes and noticed that the students are already walking out of the gym. “The orientation is over.” I turned to Mingyu.

“Good! What time is you class?” he asked.

“11 is my first load.”

“Okay, we have free time to look for that girl.”

“What the fuck? Leave me out of your pervness.” I groaned but he still managed to pull me.

“Come on Jk! You’re my friend right? As a friend, you should help me. Besides, when I see her, you can go wherever you want.”

“How does this girl look like?” I asked. I’m too lazy to be searching for a girl but I’m sure Mingyu won’t let me get away.

“She has long legs and cute but unique face. I can tell she’ll be my future girl.”

“Okay let’s search for this long legged girl of yours.” I let out a defeated sigh.

After an hour of searching, Mingyu and I finally stopped. We both walked back to the noisy faculty.

When it was my time to go to my first class, I gathered my books and bid Mingyu good bye.

I walked straight to the classroom but when I got in, I noticed a girl sleeping on the teacher’s table.

Her face was covered with her curly hair making it hard for me to see her face. Her body on the other hand looked familliar to me.

“Why is this girl sleeping here?” I murmured.

Afraid of getting punched again, I whispered,

“Miss?”

“Miss”

“Miss, wake up.”

I lightly shaked her shoulders.

I kept shaking her shoulders but she won’t wake.

“Miss, Wake up!”

My students will now come and she’s still here sleeping?

I shaked her shoulders with more force and that’s when she groaned.

The next thing I knew, she already slapped me.

She slapped me so hard that I backed away.

“What the fuck?” I groaned.

Her palm hurt as hell. My cheek feels so hot from the force.

I was about to yell at her when she looked up.

I froze and had to blink countless times.

As I stare at the person in front of me.

This could not be.

This could not be her.

This could not be Lisa.

She also blinked a few times as if she's seen a ghost.

It took us both an entire minute to process everything.

With hunged mouth, eyes wide, and a questioning look, I asked in disbelief,

"Baby?" I took a step closer.

"Baby is that you?" I couldn't believe it.

I took another step closer.

She still unmoving making me question if she's a real person or just a mannequin or worse, just my imagination.

"Baby?" the sight of her beautiful face made my heart flutter.

I finally cross the gap betwen us.

“It’s really you.” I exclaimed as I pull her body to me. Engulfing her with the warmest hug I could ever give.

“I can’t believe this. You’re real.” When I felt her body against mine, It was like heaven for me. I didn’t know embracing her like this can erase all the pent up emotions inside me.

My years of longing.

My years of crying.

My years of depression seemed to vanish entirely.

But Lisa didn’t return my hug.

She was just there staying still as if she doesn’t know me.

I cupped her cheeks frustratedly and locked eyes with her.

“Why?” I asked, confused.

“Why?“she asked back.

“Why baby?” I asked again.

“Why Jungkook?”

“Why did you do that?”

“Why did I do what?”

“Why did you leave—”

I wasn’t able to finish my question when we were interrupted by a clearing of voice.

When Lisa and I turn our attention to the door, line of college students was already there, staring at us.

Lisa backed away completely upon seeing them.

“I need to go.” she said, gathering her things.

I couln’t fathom the reason of her coldness but whatever it is, I’m sure there’ss somewhat a misunderatanding here and I need to talk to her without interruptions.

I ignored the stares of my students and focused my attention on Lisa.

I will never let her go easily this time.

“Where are you going?” I grabbed her by her arm.

“Jungkook, there are students!” she warned, slightly looking around.

“I don’t care. We will talk.”

“Jungkook not now…” her voice almost pleading as if she’s embarrassed by me. I looked at her first and realized that she’s wearing a teacher’s outfit.

My baby is now a teacher?

There were so many questions running on in my head that I wanted to ask but the class was still by the door waiting for me to invite them.

I sighed.

“Class, get in” I invited. I’m still not releasing Lisa’s arms.

But she freed herself from me and walked out.

Of course I also followed her.

She’ll never escape this time.

“Jungkook, why are you following me?” she groaned when she noticed me on her back.

“I told you we need to talk.” I said sternly.

“You have a class. What are we going to talk to? Everything is clear to me.” she replied with a cold voice.

“What are you saying? I don’t understand you?” I asked again.

I feel so lost.

I don’t know what she means by her words.

“There’s nothing to talk to Jungkook.” she turned her heel again but this time I forcefully stopped her.

“We have a lot to talk about! I need your explanation on this.” I said through gritted teeth.

I am clearly pissed at how she acts so cold on me when she just left me on the night that I'm supposed to propose to her.

"I don't want to talk!"

"Well, you don't have a choice. If I have to kidnap you, I will—"

"Mr.Jeon?" One fucking student called. He pointed at his watch making me roll my eyes.

Great timing!

I turn my attention to Lisa.

She's wearing a teacher's I.D., meaning she's really teaching here.

"I'll let you go for now, but I will search for you after this. I swear I won't let you go this time!"

Lisa stared at me with confused expression before answering "Okay fine, we'll talk later. Meet me at the gates at five."

My heart leaped at the anticipation of speaking with her.

After four years of misery, here I am facing the love of my life and she will talk to me?

This is better than hitting a jackpot.

"Thank you! Thank you baby!" I hugged her one last time before releasing her.

I watched as she slowly walked away. My gaze never left her back until she turned on the hallway.

Lisa seemed to be distant. I can feel there's something wrong and I need to know why.

I need to know what made her leave me that night.

I need to know why she broke my heart.

□

Author's Note

Hi readers! I want to say that I have been attached to this story so much now and I'm sad if it will end soon. So, I

want to hear your thoughts about it. Because some are already asking for an ending.

Do you want the story to end already with a sweet ending?

Or Do you want to prolong the story with little problems? (No more stressfull Ji-eun which is my original plan)

I accept suggestions. Thanks.

Kiss and Make Up

***To those who will leave me passage comments, I love you ***

Jungkook's POV

My first day at work was a mess. I couldn't concentrate because I was thinking about Lisa.

Also, my cheek was hurting the whole time because she slapped it so hard. But it's still better than a broken nose, I thought.

My mind is now running with thoughts of her. My brain is asking a lot of questions. However, even if I get to talk to her later, I still have this feeling that there's something wrong.

There's something wrong with how she looked at me. There's something wrong with how she talked to me. And I need to find out why.

My feet was impatiently tapping the tiled floor as I glance at the wall clock. An hour more before 5 and I can't wait for my last load to finish.

When the class finally ended, I gathered my things and ran as fast as I could to the gates.

Disappoibtment crept through me when I didn't see her there.

Was she lying?

What if she's not really coming?

I waited for few more minutes when I finally notice her walking to my direction from a far.

Oh God!

She's really here!

I can't believe it!

That's my baby right there!

I feel like bunny jumping out of excitement as she was getting closer. A smile was plastered on my lips just seeing her here.

As I stare at her, I can't help but notice how she's gotten more beautiful now.

18-year old Lisa was cute and innocent looking but this 22-year old Lisa looks mature and hot.

She was almost close when my eyes travelled down to her body.

I wonder if she's still tight down th—

"Well?" Lisa started with her cold aura when she faced me.

"Let's go to our house and talk there." I suggested calmly, trying hard to mask the excitement that's been bubbling up in me.

"Our house? What do you mean our house?" her brow raised as if she forgot that we have a house.

"Our house of course. Where else would you want to talk? Here?" I asked, glancing at the sorroundings where lots of college students and professors are walking out of the University gates.

Lisa paused for a while to decide. My eyes were on her face the whole time. Especially to her lips.

Oh God those lips…

I want to kiss them so bad. If we're not only in public, I will do it right away.

"Let's just talk in my car." Lisa's suggestion made me raise my brow.

"You have a car?" How?

"Y..yeah.. Or yours?" she replied awkwardly.

I scratched my head too. I don't know why are we being awkward after everything that we've been though?

"My car." I replied. It is wide and we can use the space for a make up se—

“Where is your car then?” she impatiently asked while checking her wrist watch.

“Are you in a rush?” I asked, worried. I miss her but why does it seem that she’s not?

“I have something else to do. Let’s go.” Lisa started walking to the parking lot without waiting for my answer so I followed her.

She quickly spotted my car. She knows it is my favorite among the others.

I helped her get to the passenger’s seat while I sat on the driver’s seat.

When we both settled in, I waited for her to explain but she remained silent. Her eyes looked sad while her fingers played with her slightly curled hair.

“So? What do you want to ask?” Lisa finally broke the silence.

“I mean I deserve an explanation, right?” I want to confront her, to be mad at her but I can’t.

My heart is too soft for Lisa. All I could do is ask her explanation in the gentlest way.

But she seemed to get pissed because of it. With a slightly raised voice, she argued. “I believe it’s me who deserves an explanation Jungkook!”

I can’t help but be pissed too.

“You deserve an explanation? After leaving me with a god damn letter you vanished just like that? Tell me who deserves an explanation between us Lisa?” I didn’t hide the anger in me now. I just want to let it all out.

Why would she expect my explanation when she’s the one who left me?

“It was clear that you don’t need me! You kept on telling me to let you go and be happy for you!” she huffed.

What the fuck? When did I say that?

“I kept on what? Are you on drugs Lisa?”

With raging eyes, Lisa looked at me, “How dare you joke like this when you made me cry an ocean last night?!”

Cry an ocean? What the hell is she talking about?

“Ugh! My head is about to burst! I don’t understand what you’re saying! Lisa, we haven’t talk for years now. Why are you saying that I made you cry last night?” Did she dreamt of me last night that’s why she cried?

“You forgot already about the email you sent me last night? You said I need to respect your family. You even wished for me to be happy! So now I’m trying my best to be happy without you!”

“Oh my God! What are you saying? I didn’t send you an email. I don’t even know where the fuck you went, I don’t have your email, I don’t have your number. And why would I be sending you an email? Are you making this up Lisa?” I groaned.

Lisa shook her head furiously, “No, of course not. I’m not making this up. You were sending me emails for years now about your wife and daughter!”

“What??? What the hell are you saying? I’m not even married and I have no child!” I argued, raising my voice.

This is so unbelievable!

Lisa and I both silenced for a while, when she recovered, she asked,“You mean you’re not married with Jie-eun? How about your daughter?” she asked.

“When did I marry Ji-eun? And what do you mean by child? If you’re talking about Ji-eun’s daughter, she’s not mine.” I explained but she just rolled her eyes.

“I can’t believe you will deny your own daughter. I saw everything Jungkook, I saw how you two fucked each other when you travelled to Australia!” her voice cracked at the word fuck.

But seriously, what the fuck?

“I didn’t fuck her! I broke up with her when I went there. My virginity was taken by you Lisa and that was after I came back from Australia!”

She still raised her brow as if not believing me. “How can I make sure that I was your first?”

“Oh God! I can’t believe this! I wish boys bleed like girls too.” I groaned.

“Still, I’ve seen a video of you doing it with her!” Lisa’s eyes welled in tears now. I can tell she’s about to break down.

“I never fucked her! I swear. It was only you Lisa. How can I make you believe it?” my voice was almost pleading. I hope she believes me.

I never fucked any pussy other than hers!

“And where the hell did you see a video of me doing it?”

“Ji-eun…she…she.. that afternoon when you left, you texted me to come at Ji-eun’s house, so I went there.”

My blood slowly raised to its boiling point.

I swear if Ji-eun is behind this, I will kill her!

Lisa started telling me what happened that afternoon. About the video, about Ji-eun being pregnant, about her carrying my child.

As she was bringing it up, Lisa was crying. She said she was broken so much after knowing that I cheated which are all false and lies.

“I never for once touched her! It was a mistake that I didn’t tell you that she was pregnant. I thought it will never come like this. She was impregnated by her co-star Lisa, not me. Also, the video that you’re talking about, I don’t know how it happened but it’s not me. I swear baby. Believe me!” I grabbed Lisa’s shoulders for her to face me.

She’s still crying. “I don’t know what to believe Jungkook. I want to believe you but there’s an evidence of you doing it with her.”

“Then use this.” I said, pointing at her chest where her heart lies. “You know how much I love you Lisa. You know I will never do such a thing. Do you even have an idea what happened to me that night?”

Lisa didn’t answer my question, she just continued crying.

“I was about to propose that night Lis.”

Hearing this, Lisa turned her gaze on me, “What?”

“I was with Namjoon that night planning for a marriage poposal. I waited for you for hours. Only to find out that you already left me with just a letter. Do you have any idea how painful it was for me when you left me?” A tear escaped my eyes but I wiped it quick.

“I didn’t know…I thought…” Lisa covered her mouth which was hunged open.

“You choose to believe her lies when all I did was love you. You could’ve at least asked me first if it was true. I’ve been psychologically depressed for four fucking years Lisa. It was so hard to live and survive when my head was running thoughts of you. Where you are? did you eat? Are you still alive? Lisa I was almost crazy!” I frustratedly messed my hair as I recall the depressing years.

“And I have gone crazy for months too Jungkook! Not only you had suffered! I lost my sanity when Ji-eun told me everything! I couldn’t eat, I couldn’t sleep! I couldn’t talk! I couldn’t function like a normal being anymore because my thoughts were filled of you and you kept on sending me emails after that. Your wife, your child! You even invited me to you wedding!!!” she yelled at my face but I didn’t mind.

We were clearly hurt with what happened and I need to know the thruth between all of this.

“Show me!” I urged.

“Show you what?” she asked.

“Show me those god damn emails! I need to see them!”

Lisa took her phone, with few taps of her fingers she finally gave it to me.

My eyes grew wide as I scroll at the emails which this “Jungkook” had sent her.

They were all updates about my so called “happy life” with Ji-eun and a kid with the same age as Yuna.

I can’t believe someone would do this!

“This is not me!”

“But the pictures?”

“I don’t know. They look photoshopped.” I said, shaking my head.

Now I fully understand why Lisa left me and hide from me for years. Because we were manipulated into believing all these lies.

“Baby, I swear I didn’t do anything to hurt you. Please believe me. This is all a misunderstanding. Someone was trying to set me up so I will look bad for you and I believe it’s Ji-eun.”

“How could she do that? You were helping her with her condition? why would she purposely hurt us both?”

“I don’t know. But I’m at lost for words at how evil she can be. She saw my struggles for years. She witnessed how I tried to cope with your absence by enrolling in counseling shits. I still can’t believe she will do this!”

“If what you’re saying is true. That all of this is just a misunderstanding and you were just set up, I believe she deserves the worst karma Jungkook. Four years. Four years of me believing this lies!”

“So much time has been wasted, we could’ve been happily together now. I will make sure she’ll pay for this! For everything that she did to us!”

I want to kill her so bad! If I only could!

“I want you to clear this issue with the video first. I need to make sure you really didn’t do it.” Lisa is still not believing me.

“I already told you I didn’t do it!”

“Just show me an evidence Jungkook because that video looks so real to be edited.”

“I will prove to you that I’m innocent Lisa. God! I was so stupid to not realize this. All this time I thought you just left me without a reason. All this time I thought you don’t love me anymore that’s why you left me.” I shook my head not believing all of this. These is just Ji-eun’s craziness the whole time.

“There was no day where my heart didn’t stop beating for you. I love you Jungkook, then until now it is always you. Nothing had changed.”

When Lisa said those words, the frustrations, the angst, and the sadness I was feeling was replaced with warmth and satisfaction.

“Then until now, nothing had changed Lisa. It was always you that I could think of. It was always you who owns me.”

Thinking about the lost time made me realize just how much I missed her.

“I love you baby. Only you.” I reached out to caress her cheek.

“I love you Jungkook.”

I smiled. I know I have to deal with Ji-eun but for now, I just wanted to kiss her. To feel her presence which I longed for so many years.

I just want to hold her body against mine.

Lisa’s POV

“I want to kiss you…” his gaze landed on my lips.

I want to kiss him too. After hearing his side. I am sure that we really manipulated by that bitch. Only that I need to know the truth behind the video.

I search his gaze, his deep brown eyes, framed by long dark lashes soften.

(A/n: Imagine)

“Jungkook..I—” was about to tell him about Mr.Kim and his son but my words were silenced by his lips.

When his lips touched mine, I forgot everything that I wished to say. My words were drowned by his loving kiss.

That fire was in his eyes and my breath caught. His hands cupping my face, capturing my lips with his. He used his size and strength to back me up against the car’s door.

His tongue pushed into my mouth and I touched it with mine. I can feel his feelings in every stoke of his tongue inside.

Arousal blazed through me and I sank against him, loving the feel of his body. Jungkook’s strong and hard body pressed to mine.

“God, I missed you so much baby”. His lips feathered across my jaw and I tilted my head back, exposing my throat.

He kissed my neck, the sensitive skin rising in goosebumps with every lick and nibble.

Jungkook palmed my breast and pinched my already hardened nipple against my blouse and bra between his thumb and forefinger. The pinch was just the right amount of pleasure and pain and I gasped, my arousal reaching up another notch.

Jungkook had always known exactly how to work my body.

“You missed this baby?” he murmured against my skin.

“I miss it so bad.”

Our kiss deepen and a frantic urge takes hold of me, all I want is him, all I need is him.

I missed him so much. I miss my Jungkook.

The thought of him inside me fills me with a longing so powerful that it almost steals my breath.

Long moments pass between us, our lips never part company, not once. The world seems to slow down as everything intensifies.

A gasp escaped my lips as he cupped my breasts, his large hands engulf them and my stiffened nipples press into the fabric of my underwear.

My head falls back in the ecstasy of anticipation as a moan flows from my lips.

“Oh my god Jungkook, How I miss this,” I whisper, as waves of pleasure wash over me.

Jungkook leans forward, his hands left me and I momentarily mourn the loss of the warmth on my breasts.

I needn’t have worried before I know it his fingers were already unbuttoning my blouse in a quick manner exposing my chest.

He tugged my bra down while his palms have been replaced by his lips. He split his attention between my nipples, drawing first one into his mouth and then the other.

He runs the tip of his tongue over the erect buds, swirling over them in such a way that my nerves are on fire.

“Jungkook….”

My most sensitive area begins to throb now, pulsing with expectation. I ache inside, my body is filled with longing, I yearn for that space to be filled by his delicious length.

I pull away, my nipple tugged from between his teeth as a delectable shot of pleasure laced with pain shoots through me.

“I want you baby.” Jungkook’s warm breath sent goosebumps all over me.

I gave him a permission to go on. Not caring if we’re inside his car.

At least it is tinted.

Jungkook smiled for the first time. His hands moved to the hem of my skirt. With a rushed movement he tugged it up exposing my underwear.

“Let’s remove this baby.” he asked trying to pull my panties down.

But a ringing of phone stopped us both from what we were doing.

“Who’s that?” he groaned.

I searched for my phone and paled when I saw the caller i.d.

Hon calling…

Shit!

Just shit!

Jungkook’s fiery eyes didn’t go unnoticed. I’m sure he saw it too.

“Lisa! Who’s that!”

“I’m sorry…I wasn’t able to tell you about him.” I almost shrinked at the disappointment I caused him.

“Who the fuck is that?” jealousy and hurt sparked in his eyes. His jaw clenched as he stared at me, waiting for me to give him an explanation.

But the phone kept ringing and I was torn into explaining or answering it.

That moment I feel guilty.

I cheated. I cheated on the both of them.

With all these misunderstandings, Mr.Kim became my boyfriend that means I just cheated on him when I kissed Jungkook.

But my heart will always be owned by Jungkook that means I cheated on him by being in a rwlationship with Mr.Kim.

I felt so lost as guilt washed over me.

“I’m sorry.. I’m sorry.. I’ll fix this. I will. I promise.” I rushed to fix myself and walked out of his car.

Leaving him there confused.

I ignored his voice as he repeatedly called my name.

I didn’t answer Mr.Kim too, I just ran to my car and started driving.

I will fix this, Jungkook.

I will fix this, my love.

□

Author’s Note

2 more chapters left.

2 chapters before smut

Evidence

Jungkook's POV

"Where is she?"

"Where is that woman!" I growled when I got inside Ji-eun's house.

"Mr.Jeon, she's in her room. She's drunk." one of the servant answered with a shaky voice. I know she's scared of me right now but I don't care.

After clearing things with Lisa, I finally realized that we were just fooled, we were manipulated, we were played by her.

After everything that I had done for her, I can't believe she will ruin my life like this!

I need to see her and make her explain to Lisa that I didn't do those things which Lisa is accusing me.

"Mr.Jeon…" the servant kept calling as I walk further inside. "Mr.Jeon, what are you going to do?" she kept on asking me but I didn't pay her attention.

My movement was straight to Ji-eun's room. I don't care. I don't fucking care anymore. I just want to kill her!

I opened the door and found her sleeping. She looks like an angel but I better know now that not all innocent-looking are good. Others are just plain evil just like Ji-eun.

My mind was hazy and my vision was blurry as I look at her. All I want to do is strangle her and choke her to death!

I walked to her side and was about to wake her up when I noticed her phone by the bedside table.

That's when I changed my mind. If I kill her now, I will end up in prison without Lisa by my side.

I must not act out of impluse or I will lose everything now. Specially the chance to be with Lisa.

I need think clearly on how I can make her pay for everything. Also, I need evidences to clear my name. It's the only way for me to have Lisa back.

She was still sleeping when I grabbed her phone. And just as I thought, it has a passcode.

Considering that she's a mother, I believe she will have Yuna's birthday as a password. But when I tried it, it was wrong.

I shook my head and tried her own birthday, but I'm still unsuccesful.

How about….*Perfect?*

I tried the word and surprisingly, it opened.

What the fuck?

She has the word perfect for a password?

Perfect what? Perfect evil?

I shook my head at how narcissictic she can be. Ever since, Ji-eun thinks so highly of herself. I know this since we were kids but I stell fell in love with her.

I took my time searching for anything suspicious then I saw it.

Fuck!

There was really a video of me and her having sex. But the guy looks thinner than me. And my dick is way more longer and bigger than this.

This is probably deepfake.

For a girl not as techie as Lisa, she will really believe this shit.

I tried searching for more and was surprised to see an album of photoshopped pictures.

There were so many edited photos of us. Intimate pictures of me and Ji-eun and also photos of our so called daugther.

They were enough evidences to show Lisa that I'm not guilty and evidences to file a case against her. If I can't kill her, then I'll just sue her.

My fingers scanned for more.

Then I noticed something.

There were history of conversations with her doctors.

I read all of them.

Everything.

Until I realized that there was more to her lies.

I can't help but clench my fist as I read her previous plans with her doctors.

So I learned that the accident, her inability to walk, the suicide attempts were all just an act.

None of it were true and I was so stupid to believe them!!!

I can't believe that she acted for years!

Fuck!!!

My vision darkened as I read more of it. All I wanted now is just to kill her!

This evil evil human! I don't even know if she's a human when she do something like this!

I walked to the her sleeping form and strangled her neck.

"I will kill you!" Ji-eun's eyes opened and she gasped for air as I continued my asault.

Her hand hand moved to my chest to push me but I'm too strong for her.

"J..Jung…kook.." her eyes watered as she tried her best to stop me from killing her.

But I can't. I'm so mad at her. For all the lies, for all the years that I helped her and her child just because I thought she can't walk when all of it was just an act.

And she didn't even stop there. She lied to Lisa for her to leave me! I almost killed myself because of it!

She’s so evil!

She’s an evil!

“Juuung…kook pleaseee..”

“I want you to die!!!” I groaned. Ji-eun was gasping for more air but my hands just tightened more around her neck.

I was so close to killing her,

Until I hear a voice.

“Dada?”

Shit!

That’s when I let go of her.

I turn to the direction of her voice and saw Yuna standing by the door with confused expression.

Ji-eun held her neck as she started coughing.

“Yuna…” I called. My innocent baby doesn’t deserve to see all of this.

“What you doing Dada?” she asked innocently.

“I…nothing baby…” I walked to her to hug her tight. “I’m sorry.” I whispered as I carry her to my arms.

I’m sorry that you had to have this woman as your mother.

She doesn’t deserve an angel like you.

I turn my attention to Ji-eun who’s now looking at me with a terrified expression.

“I know everything now Ji-eun! And I swear I won’t let this pass!” I warned.

She slowly walked to me as if calculating my move. “Jungkook, listen I didn’t do it. It was just—”

“I won’t listen to your lies anymore! And this” I said showing her her phone. “I will take this!”

Ji-eun’s face contorted in fear. “Nooo…Jungkook please!”

That moment, I was so close to hurting Ji-eun again. But having Yuna next to me stopped me from doing it.

I don’t know if Yuna will agree but I want to take her with me away from her mother. I’m the only person who can take care of her now.

“Baby, you’ll come with Dada, okay?” I asked the little girl.

She nodded her head eagerly, “Yuna come Dada”

“No, No you’re not taking her!” Ji-eun took Yuna by force but I stopped her.

“Remember you let me adopt her. So she’s mine now!” I growled.

“No, Jungkook please.. Not this..please I beg you..not Yuna!” she tried to persway me with her great acting skills but I know better now.

“Then let her choose between us.” I threathened. I trust Yuna that she will not choose her mom over me.

“Baby, baby..I’m your mom… Jungkook is not your dad, right? Please tell your Dada that you’ll stay her.” Ji-eun’s tears were already streaming down her cheeks as she tried to convince her daughter.

Yuna stared at her for a while before tightening her grip on my neck. “Yuna go Dada. Yuna hate mommy!” she snapped.

“What the fuck? Yuna, I’m your mother, please choose me. He’s not even your real father! Come here! Jungkook give me back my daughter!!!” she screamed.

But Yuna didn’t listen. She just embraced me tighter as if she doesn’t know her own mother.

If you don’t know Ji-eun, how crazy and evil she is, you will say that this is the most heartbreaking scene for a mother.

But Yuna and I are those who were a victim of her. She doesn’t care for her daughter, she only cares for herself. She’s that bad that even her own daughter won’t choose her.

“Jungkook please!!!” Ji-eun now kneeled infront of me. Her arms were open wide hoping that Yuna will embrace her.

“Mommy bad!” the little girl huffed and pulled me by my hair to leave her mom’s room.

“Oh god! I can’t believe this!” Ji-eun groaned in return.

“You can talk to my attorney Ji-eun. From now on, I don’t want to see your face ever again!”

Just like that, I turned away, leaving Ji-eun in her room crying.

She deserves this.

She deserves the worst type of Karma.

I will file a lawsuit against her and I’ll make sure that she’ll pay for everything that she did to me.

“Dada, don’t cry” Yuna said when we settled in my car.

“I’m not crying baby.” I said, shaking my head but she reached out to wipe my face. That’s when I realized that I am really crying.

I know that I’m crying out of frustration.

Frustration of being fooled for years.

“I’m okay baby. Thank you for wiping Dada’s tears.” I said, smiling at her before kissing her forehead.

“Yuna love Dada.”

“I know baby. Dada loves Yuna too. I’ll take you to my house okay?”

“Okay, but Dada uniform?” she asked.

“I’ll buy you a new one. If we go back, your mommy will take you away from me. Would you like that?” I asked and she shook her head aggressively.

When we got home, I helped Yuna to sleep inside Lisa’s room. Knowing how kind Lisa is, I’m sure she’ll understand that I have to take Yuna with me.

Ji-eun could get imprisoned if I file a case and Yuna will have no place to go except with me. Lisa has always had a soft heart for orphaned that’s why I’m confident that she won’t get mad if she comes back to our house.

I took my phone and dialled my attorney’s number. It was already past 10, fortunately he’s still awake. I told him

everything about Ji-eun and seek for his advice.

He explained that if we have enough proof, Ji-eun could be jailed for 3-5 years. She will also have to pay $10,000 fine.

I don't care about money, I just want her to rot in jail but the case is not that big.

So all I could do now is make up for the lost time with Lisa.

Although I'm enraged by knowing the thruth, part of me is still happy that I get to know everything about why Lisa left me.

I can't believe I just saw her this day. And she even said she still loves me.

Only me.

After four fucking years, it's still me who owns her heart.

But who is that person who called her?

Hon.

Who is hon?

Is he her boyfriend?

I swear to God if he is, I'm gonna break all of his bones.

Lisa is mine.

She's only mine and I won't let anyone get in between us.

The Next Day,

"Good morning Yuna!" I greeted when I entered Lisa's room.

She was still sleeping so I wake her up with butterfly kisses and tickles.

“Dada!” she giggled as I kept on tickling her feet. I know it’s her weakest spot.

“Yuna needs to wake for school. Come now.” I asked.

“Dada meet Muffin Lady?” she asked excitedly.

I groaned frustratedly, “Muffin Lady again?” I thought she forgot about her already?

“Dada Marry Muffin Lady please?” she plead with her cute pout.

“Baby, I’m sorry but this Muffin Lady of yours is probably be married already. I can’t marry a married woman.” I explained but it just pissed her more.

“No! Dada marry muffin Lady!!!” She huffed before running out of the room.

I can’t help but roll my eyes. Now I have to deal with her tantrums because of this Muffin Lady. And I swear, Yuna’s tantrums is the worst.

How can I even explain to her that I have my Lisa now and she’s the only one that I’ll marry? She’s too young to understand all of this.

So the whole ride to the school, Yuna kept ignoring me. She’s still upset about her Muffin Lady and she also hates that she’s not wearing her uniform.

Yuna is wearing a dress which I gound in my cabinet. She has few clothes at home which she uses everytime she and Ji-eun visits me back then.

Those were the times when I thought Ji-eun’s the angel that she pretends to be.

When we reached the school, parents and toddlers were already rushing inside the classroom.

I carried Yuna by my arms and walked in when someone grabbed my attention.

“Is that Lisa?”

My jaw dropped when I saw her by the door of Yuna's classroom.

She didn't notice me yet because her back was on me.

When she turned, her gaze landed on me, her expression tensed.

"Ju…Jungkook?" we were both shocked to see each other there.

What the hell is she doing her?

Then her eyes travelled to Yuna.

"Muffin Lady!" Yuna screamed before jumping out of my arms to ran to her.

Yuna embraced my Lisa's leg tightly and Lisa crouched down to meet her.

Imagine how shocked I am when I witnessed both of them hug.

She's the Muffin Lady Yuna is talking about?

How *convenient*.

I smiled as excitement crept through me.

But my smile was automatically replaced by a frown when I heard another voice.

"Mommy, mommy, Jihoon forgot pencil"

My eyes travelled to the little boy who walked out of the classroom to tug Lisa's dress.

Lisa bit her lip nervously as she glance at me.

What the fuck is happening?

Did he just call her mommy?

Author’s Note

It took me years to update. Sorry.

Do you think 3-5 years of imprisonment is enough as a punishment for Ji-eun?

Explanation

By the way, I changed my mind. Instead of writing 2 chapters, I will write more than two. Because there are still things to resolve like Ji-eun's case, Mr.Kim's contract and Lisa's infertility. I hope you're not mad that I can't give you the ending yet.

Lisa's POV

"Where were you? I've been calling you but you won't answer?" Mr.Kim's worried face welcomed me when I got home. And seeing him like this, the more that I feel guilty.

"I..Uhh.."

He walked forward to hold my kiss my cheek, "It doesn't matter. At least you're here now. Are you hungry?" he gently asked while one of his hand move to carress my cheek.

"Uhm..yes. How..how about you?"

"I was waiting for you. I want to have dinner with you Lisa." he smiled. "You must be tired from work. I already asked the chef to prepare us our dinner. Let's go."

Now I really feel bad. How can I tell him that I can't do this anymore without breaking his heart? Will he die if I tell break up with him?

"Mr.Kim…I need to tell you something." I tugged his hand when he started pulling me but my words came out as a whisper.

"Oh..can you tell me about it later? I'm really hungry."

"Okay…" was all that I say. Mr.Kim excitedly guided me to the dinning area where dinner was already served.

Then I looked around. "Where is Jihoon?"

"I forgot to tell you, Jihoon has a fever. That's the reason why I was calling you earlier." he explained.

“Jihoon has what???” I stood from my seat but Mr.Kim held my hand to make me sit back.

“It’s okay. He’s sleeping now. But he hasn’t eaten yet. Jihoon was looking for you for hours now. I believe you should eat first before going to your son.” Mr.Kim suggested calmly but I was too worried. When it comes to Jihoon being sick, it really terrifies me.

Jihoon is a sickly child and I believe he’s gotten it from his father. Back when we were in Japan, I really had a hard time taking care of him every time he gets sick.

“Lisa, don’t worry about him.” Mr.Kim urged me to eat when he noticed my still worried expression.

I just nodded.

After dinner, both of us went to Jihoon’s room where he’s already sleeping.

I reached out my palm to feel his temperature, he’s skin is still hot.

“His temperature has lowered now.” Mr.Kim said.

“I’m still worried. Has he taken a medicine?” I asked.

“Yes, don’t worry. I will just stay with him tonight. You can go and rest in your room Lisa. You still have work tomorrow.”

“It’s okay. I think I’ll just sleep with him to monitor him.”

He raised his brow. “Are you sure?”

“Yes I’m sure. I’ll just freshen up and I’ll sleep right away.”

“Okay. Thank you Lisa.”

I walked out of the room feeling a little hesitant whether to talk about Jungkook now.

I guess this is not the right time. Seeing Jihoon sick makes me forget how I wanted to go back to Jungkook’s arms.

It’s not that Jihoon is more important than Jungkook. Both of them are but this is not the right time.

I don’t want to break their hearts now. And I hope Jungkook will understand.

That night, I slept with Jihoon by my side. And when I woke up in the morning, Mr.Kim was already in the room, sitting in the chair next to the bed while reading a newspaper.

“Good Morning!” I simply greeted.

My voice got his attention so he folded the newspaper and greeted me back “Good Morning Lisa! How’s your sleep?” he asked with his still gentle voice and loving gaze.

I feel bad for this. On the surface, we look like a happy family and I could’ve been fine with that—taking care of his son and returning his love.

But after seeing the love of my life yesterday, everything changed. All I want now is to be with Jungkook.

The problem is, how can I leave them and be with Jungkook? I had signed a contract that I will pretend as his wife for as long as Mr.Kim is breathing.

I pushed the thoughts away and turn to Jihoon who now opened his eyes. “Mommy?”

“Mommy is here.” I smiled.

“Mommy sleep with Jihoon?” he blinked his eyes, small hands reaching up to touch my face as if he’s not believing that I slept with him.

“Yes baby, mommy slept with Jihoon. You will not go to school today okay? You need to rest.” I ordered but the little boy scowled.

“No mommy, Jihoon school. Jihoon play Yuna!” he whinned.

I shook my head. “No, Jihoon will stay here. You got a fever last night. I’ll just call teacher Momo to excuse you.”

“Mommy, Jihoon go school!” he demanded. I was about to convince him more when Mr.Kim cut me off.

“It’s okay Lisa. I guess he’s better now. It will just bore him if he stay here in this house without us.”

“But—”

“Please mommy!” Jihoon plead again.

“Okay fine, but mommy will be sending you to school today okay? I need to tell teacher Momo that you had a fever last night so that she can call me if something happens.”

Jihoon smiled thriumphantly, “Thank you mommy!”

“Now, let’s have a breakfast so that little Jihoon get’s his energy back.” Mr.Kim suggested.

“Breakfast!” When Jihoon ran out of the room, Mr.Kim and I was left alone. He stared at me for a while.

“Is something wrong?” I asked him nervously.

“I should be the one to ask you that, Is something wrong Lis? You seem to be deep in thoughts?” his soft expression and gentle voice makes me want to tell him about Jungkook but when I was about to open my lips to confess, Jihoon came back with a gleeful chuckle.

“Mommy, Daddy, let’s go!” he interrupted before running away again.

“I’ll just tell you later.” I said before standing from the bed.

Mr.Kim stood also, walking next to me. “You can tell me anything Lisa.” Mr.Kim’s leans closer to kiss my cheeks. His soft lips landed too close to my lips.

So when he left the room, I almost shrink at the overwhelming feeling.

I swear Jungkook will kill me if he knows somebody else just kissed my cheek.

I could still remember last time when Mr.Kim asked for a kiss in his office. That time, I was too convinced that Jungkook and I are over so I said yes. But we were interrupted again by Baekhyun making Mr.Kim a little frustrated.

If I only knew that Ji-eun just messed things up between Jungkook and me, I will never accept Mr.Kim’s offer. To be honest, he’s such a good man and I don’t deserve his kindness.

The good side is, I met Jihoon because of it. I got closer to him and he considers me as his mom now. Something that I

will never be as I can't bear child.

Being infertile was something the 18-year old Lisa would cry over. But the new me doesn't mind my condition anymore. Right now, I don't care if I'm barren. As long as Jihoon calls me mom, I'm fine with it.

That morning, I decided to push back my talk with Mr.Kim. Besides, he is too busy with his company as they have new projects to start with.

"Goodbye mommy!" Jihoon kissed my cheeks before going inside his classroom.

When I turn away, my gaze landed on a specific person standing near the gate.

Shit! What is he doing here? I tensed.

"Ju…Jungkook?" I was shocked and I can tell he is too.

Then my eyes travelled to the little girl in his arms.

Yuna?

"Muffin Lady!" Yuna screamed excitedly before jumping out of his arms to ran to me.

Yuna embraced my leg tightly so I crouched down to meet her.

"Hi baby!" I greeted while patting her head gently.

Jungkook looked surprised at first but smiled after.

"Mommy, mommy, Jihoon forgot pencil" I heard Jihoon on my back and I was like…

Shitue.

Jungkook's eyes travelled beside me where Jihoon is tugging my dress.

I bit my lip nervously as I glance at my bunny love. He will be bunny jealous for sure.

He walked closer, scowling the whole time but he still waited for me to explain and clear things out.

I settled Jihoon's pencil problem first and helped both of the kids inside the classroom before facing Jungkook who looked pissed but still managed his emotions well.

"Well? Mind to tell me who that kid is?"

"I will Jungkook." I said while looking around. "Let's go to my car and talk there." My class is still at 9:30 so I have enough time to explain things to him.

Jungkook didn't argue, he just followed me to my car. Unlike the last time, he sat on the passenger's seat while I was on the driver's seat.

Now that I came face to face with him, I'm really glad I drove alone. Because usually, Mr.Kim let's his driver send me and Jihoon to the toddler school.

Jungkook scanned the car first before asking, "How did you bought this?"

Although his tone was not accusing, I still need to explain.

I breathed deeply before I start. "Jungkook, Four years ago, after parting with you, I ended up on the streets for a week with no place to go, no direction to head. I was so lost until…… someone found me."

"Someone?" I was not even finish with my sentence, he cut me off already.

"Yes, the man who called me last night. He's the one who took me. He fed me, clothed me, sheltered me for years while I was shattered by the news that you got another girl pregnant."

"I can't believe this!" Jungkook groaned.

"I'm so sorry…I didn't let you explain first before jumping into conclusion. Ji-eun was so good in making me believe that it's true. I don't know how she'd known my email but I was led to believe that you were really sending me updates about your life. Especially updates of you taking care of your child. That you both are happy and all." I paused and wait for Jungkook to say something but he just nod, urging me to continue.

"That man, he asked me to marry him—"

“Fucking hell!!!” Jungkook cut me off again. His brows were definitely meeting as he clenches his jaw.

“No..that’s not it.” I quickly stopped him from thinking too wrongly. I explained everything. From Mr.Kim’s illness, to the fake marriage contract, to me acting as Jihoon’s mother, to Mr.Kim kim sending me to Japan to study while I take care of his son.

I waited for him to yell at me and be mad at me but surprisingly, he remained silent until he ruffled his hair in frustration.

“This is all Ji-eun’s fault! If she just didn’t do this, we could’ve been happy now and you don’t have to be in that lousy contract!”

“I know. But we can’t do about it. We can’t change the past now. It already happened.” I looked down guiltily. “I was at fault too for believing her. Now I’m stucked with this contract. I cannot ask him to die immediately so that I can get free. He is good. He doesn’t deserve to be left just because I messed up.”

“But how about us? I thought you love me more than anyone. You will fight for me right? You will choose me? Please say yes Lisa, please baby.” he took my hands in his. I can feel Jungkook’s worry through his voice. And I deeply understand.

“Of course, you. I will choose you Jungkook but my situation right now is hard. Jihoon believes that I’m his mother. I cannot tell the truth in a rush and break his heart just like that. I need time. I hope you understand.” I explained.

I looked into Jungkook’s eyes hoping that he will give me more time to fix everything.

“I can always wait but I hope it won’t be that long. I miss you baby. I miss being with you, I miss kissing you, I miss cuddling with you, I miss your cooked food and my bed has been so cold for years now without you by my side. I want you to come back to me soon please.”

“And I miss you too Jungkook. I miss your kisses, your warmth, your loving words. Do you have any idea how many times I dreamt of you for the past four years?” I leaned closer to carress his cheeks before tracing the outline of his sharp jaw.

God, he looks ethereal.

“I always dream of you too. I always dream that you’re by my side, I always dream of spending time with you, I always dream of burrying myself inside of you.” Jungkook whispered the last words as he crosses the gap between us.

He captured my lips with his. “Oh baby I miss this… This lips of yours. So soft, so sweet.” he says in between kisses.

Jungkook and I began kissing. It started slowly, just feeling the familiarity of each other’s taste until he used his teeth and tongue to deepen it.

One of his hands carressed my thigh under my pencil skirt and I rewarded him with a soft moan.

“I love you Jungkook, please don’t be mad. I need to explain everything to him first to come up with a good resolution.”

“Okay baby…but..” he moved away to look at me suspiciously, “This fake husband of yours, has he ever tried to touch you?”

Mr.Kim touched me? I blushed hearing the question and Jungkook took it the wrong way “I swear Lisa!” he warned.

“No, no..he didn’t. He’s never touched me. He’s a gentleman and we don’t share the same room.” I explained sincerely, he smiled.

“Good! Because you’re only mine Lisa.”

I didn’t told Jungkook about my relationship with Mr.Kim anymore as I plan on breaking up with him when I get home this night.

I know it is a bad idea to break up with Mr.Kim but I cannot lie to myself and to him now that Jungkook is here.

My heart will always beat for him.

“I’m yours.” I replied.

He grinned in satisfaction. “Baby, how about later…” he paused to scan my body down. “you know, we both missed each other and…”

I know that look and I understand the thought of his sentence even if it’s not complete.

Of course, I’d love to have sex with him. It’s been years of drought for me but I can’t. I need to check Jihoon after work. I’m still not certain that he’s okay.

“I have things to do later.” I shook my head. “You know mommy-mode” I guiltily answered.

“I can’t believe you’re being a mother to other’s son.” he pouted.

“Same goes to you. What are you doing with Yuna by the way?” I asked curiously.

“Yuna is Ji-eun’s daughter. Surprisingly, Ji-eun didn’t use her pictures to send you. She used other girl’s photos instead. Lisa, I adopted Yuna and I hope you won’t get mad. She’s got nowhere else to go besides me. I’m so determined to get Ji-eun to jail for what she did to us.”

“Huh? But what about Yuna? How will she feel if you do that to her mom?” I asked worriedly. I don’t mind him adopting the sweet girl but what will Yuna say if Ji-eun gets in prison because of Jungkook?

“Don’t worry about it. Yuna hates her mom so much. And by the way, just how charming you can be that this child keeps mentioning you almost everyday to me, so you’re the “Muffin Lady?” he smiled, looking like a bunny.

“I don’t even know but this cute little girl is asking me to marry her father for a while now which I was against first. But knowing now who her father is, I guess I will have to think about it.” I wiggled my eyebrows, teasing him.

Jungkook frowned, “What do you mean think about it? You will marry me whether you like it or not and that’s on periodt.”

“What a romantic proposal Mr.Jeon.” I rolled my eyes.

“I had set a romantic proposal before but you didn’t came remember?”

“Not my fault that you have a sex video?” I snapped.

“Well, I’ve seen the video and realized how poor your eyesight is Lisa. It was really insulting that you think I’m the man in that video when his dick is clearly small. You of all people knows how big I am.” he laughed causing me to laugh too.

Okay, so this is a weird conversation.

“I’m sorry for insulting your dick.” I apologized and we laughed again.

Now our laughters echoed inside my car.

“You need to make up for him for insulting him baby” he leans in closer to murmur the words in my neck.

I just bit my lip and locked eyes with his crotch. A bulge was already forming there. “How?” I asked, as if I don’t understand.

“Oh baby, I’m sure you know how. So can you please visit me at our house soon? I badly want to feel you again.” Jungkook asked with a needy tone and I smiled.

“I will. After taking care of everything, I will go straight to you.” I promised.

“I’m excited then.” he smiled. “How about we do it now? Your car looks wide, this man who took you seems rich.” he guessed.

Jungkook doesn’t know that it is Mr.Kim I am in contract with. And I have no plans on telling him because I know how jealous he is at the CEO back then.

“Yeah..he is.” I answered shortly. But I don’t plan on taking anything that he gives me. I will return everything to Mr.Kim. “But we can’t make love here. It will be disrespectful to him and also, we still have a class.” I reminded.

“Oh shoot. I forgot about it. Why do I always forget about work when I’m with you?”

“Stop hitting on me.” I rolled my eyes at him

He shrugged. “I already hit you countless times and I will hit you more to make you hit those high notes again.” I can’t believe he’s laughing so hard at his own joke.

“Mr.Jeon, you better go to your car now so that we can work in peace.”

“Okay ma’am! by the way would you please send me your class schedule so I can flirt with you during breaks.” he asked with a serious tone.

“I’lI give it to you at the University. Good luck in flirting by the way.” I smiled.

“See you baby!” he kissed me back again. He took so long that I kept pushing him to free me but he didn’t.

“Jeon Jungkook!” I gasped for air when he finally let go of me,

“Oops, sorry I ruined your lipstick.” he grinned. “See you at the University baby!”

Jungkook hooped out of my car like a bunny and I started driving to work.

I really hope Mr.Kim will understand my situation. There’s a high chance that he will but I’m more worried about how Jihoon will take the news if I tell him that I’m really not his biological mother.

Now I feel really bad.

I treated him like my own son. We have been together for years and I can’t just throw my relationship with him like that.

It will take time Jungkook. It will.

□

Author’s Note.

A smut chapter coming and I plan on uploading an adult pic of Lisa and Jungkook. So I ask your suggestion if it’s

fine with you.

Yes ❤

No ✖

You can also skip the next chap if you're not comfortable. Thanks!

Make Up Sex ⚠

Lisa's POV

The following days, Mr.Kim left the country for a business trip so the talk about Jungkook was pushed back again.

I tried calling him to ask if we can talk on the phone but Mr.Kim was too busy that my calls were always answered by Baekhyun.

Baehyun told me that Mr.Kim has to close a deal with some Japanese investors and it will take them more than a week before they could go home.

So even if I want to be with Jungkook already, I still can't. Technically, I'm still Mr.Kim's girlfriend and it would look like I'm a cheater if I entertain Jungkook.

That's why the following days, I focused solely on teaching but I found it really hard especially when Jungkook kept messing with me

If Jungkook says he wants to flirt, he really wants to flirt.

For the following days, he's been passing back and forth wherever I am. Sometimes, he would pass by the open door as if he doesn't know I'm inside holding a class.

Other times, he would pass by just to wink at me or wave to me.

He would also interrupt my class just to ask for a sneaky kiss.

He doesn't even care if there are college students seeing him doing all of it.

It was fun at first but it got so annoying afterwards. I can't focus on my work because of him.

It is finally friday afternoon when the Dean of the college of Foreign Language called us for a meeting.

Being known as a married teacher, I made sure to not sit beside Jungkook. I am Mr.Kim gor my colleages and not Mrs Jeon so I should act like it.

And Jungkook noticed that I'm avoiding him so he chose to sit infront of me. Maybe to annoy me.

The long table was now filled with teachers and even if I'm trying to not make eye contact with him, he still uses his long legs to tap my shoes underneath the table.

But I kept on ignoring him as the Dean is close with the University President and the President is close with Mr.Kim. I don't want to create a scandal in this University by being lovey dovey with Jungkook.

The meeting started, explaining that the University will be requiring teachers to submit a research by pairs. When the Dean mentioned the word pair, Jungkook's gaze automatically turned on me.

I quickly shook my head to disagree. I can't pair with him. Doing research takes a lot of time and knowing Jungkook, he will make it a cuddling research instead.

I was about to ask Mina to be my pair when Jungkook raised his hand with his mischievous smile.

The fuck is he doing?

"Yes, Mr.Jeon?" the Dean asked.

"With all due respect ma'am but I would really like to be paired with Lisa. She's my student back then and I believe we can work on a research harmoniously."

'You mean harmonious fuck?' I thought, shaking my head but the dean looked amazed by it.

"Oh really? That's good then. I'm sure you can work on it well if you have this teacher and student relationship back then."

"Thank you ma'am!" he clapped his hands excitedly which made it more obvious that there is more to us.

So I just looked down and pretended that I'm not affected by his charms.

The meeting ended early and I rushed to leave because I need to check on Jihoon at home. He is only with his nanny and some servants. I was almost at my car when my phone ring.

Jungkook calling…

I forgot I already gave him my number.

"Where are you? You disappeared too soon." he asked on the other line.

"I'm at the parking lot, about to go home. Why?"

"Oh come on! I thought we'll be spending some time together this friday?" he whined. I can almost see his pouty face now.

"Did I say that?" I chuckled, leaning against my car.

"Yup, last night you agreed that we will cuddle and all."

"Only cuddle?" I asked to clarify.

"I said cuddle and all Lisa."

"So cuddle?" I continued messing up with him. This sounds like a familliar conversation from the past.

He groaned on the other line. "I mean cuddle and fuck!"

His answer made me laugh so hard. Just like old days, he never changed. Still my horny bunny.

"Then just say you want to fuck. Why sensor it?" I chuckled lightly cause I'm sure he's getting pissed by now.

"I can't tell you that, Mingyu is just around. If he hears me, he will be pestering me for sure."

"Oh I almost forgot about your annoying friend." I rolled my eyes.

"Why? What did he do to you?"

"Nothing."

"Lisa, is he trying to hit on you?" he asked in a serious tone.

“No.” I lied. Mingyu has been always vocal about his intentions on me, even if he knows that I’m married (fakely). I can’t deny that he’s a playboy. I suddenly remembered Jimin in him.

“If he tries to make a move on you, just tell me.” he warned.

“And? What are you gonna do?” I smiled. Things has never changed with Jungkook, he’s still the jealous Mr.Jeon back then.

“You don’t want to know and enough of talking about him already. I am now walking to the parking lot to meet you”

“Wait..I didn’t say yes yet.” I want to object on his plans. We can’t do it right now, I haven’t even spoke with Mr.Kim yet.

“I don’t take no for an answer baby.” he chuckled and before I could even stop him, he was already in front of me.

Smiling like a bunny. “Surprise baby!”

“Jungkook..we can’t—”

I was not even finish with my sentence when he began pulling me to where his car is. “This is kidnapping Jungkook.” I rolled my eyes but he still managed to shove me to the passenger’s seat effortlessly.

He climbed on the drivers seat and began driving. Jungkook’s face showed excitement in it. I know what he wants and I want it too. But I’m still hesitant because of Mr.Kim.

The whole time that he’s driving, his big hand was massaging my thigh as he kept humming a song.

Both of us were silent on the trip. But it was never awkward. Silence with Jungkook feels like home to me. He is definitely my home.

Then he took a turn to the opposite side of the road which confused me. I thought he’s taking me to his house?

“Aren’t we going to your house?” I asked, confused.

“Yuna is there with her nanny. I don’t want her to hear how the Muffin Lady moans and screams my name.” Jungkook started laughing and I can’t help but shake my head.

Jungkook and I finally reached a hotel which worried me because Mr.Kim owns some Hotels as well.

“Jungkook…” I worriedly tugged his suit when he walked further inside the lobby.

He turned to face me with a calm expression. “Don’t worry baby, this is our hotel. You’re safe here.” he explained making me feel at ease.

Thank God then!

Jungkook and I rode the elevator and stopped at the top most floor.

“This is yours?” I asked when he pressed a key card to the door.

“Uh huh.. I have my own room in every hotel that we own.” he replied. My mind automatically scanned for worst senarios and he noticed it.

“I know that look baby. And to answer those questions on your head, I had never brought a girl here or anywhere. Only you.” he explained genuinely.

“Good then” I simply answered.

⚠ ***Smut part, you can skip this.*** ⚠

Jungkook pushed the door open and hurried in pulling me inside.

“Do you want to take a shower with me?” he asked, his hand started removing his clothes.

“Uhm..you..you go ahead.” I replied.

Oh God! This is it! I will be able to see his body once again.

After four years!

“Sure then, there’s another bathroom on the corner, you can use it of you want to freshen up first.” he suggested.

Jungkook's voice was calm but his movements were in rush and his eyes shows great anticipation in it.

We both part ways and after the preparations, I walked out of the bathroom and wore the the same blouse and skirt that I am wearing earlier.

But this time, I left my underwears as there's no use to wearing them.

I feel hot, needy and horny just thinking about what's about to happen.

My core ripples with arousal, heat surging between my legs, and my nipples are visibly swelling against my pink blouse.

In an instant I want him. I want Jungkook so badly, I walked closer to where his bed is. Silence greeted me and my eyes scanned for him.

'Is he not done yet with his shower?' I asked myself.

I stopped, feeling the warmth on my skin that dances with my desire. I bit my bottom lip and wait.

Jungkook doesn't keep me waiting long as two large hands covered my eyes and the feel of a strong body pressed into me from behind.

I gasped, drawing in a sharp breath before he turns me and backs me up to the wall with his hands in my hair.

"I missed you so much baby.." His breaths are uneven when he looks into my eyes.

His body is hot which is wrapped by a small towel. His eyes are burning with lust that matches mine.

Then he crashes his mouth to mine, fusing our lips together in a kiss that is desperate and fluid, frantic yet carefree.

I miss this so bad! His mouth on mine, his powerful movements. His lips is just perfect.

His tongue sneaked over mine to explore my mouth with confident strokes. He rolled his hips as he bites my lip, he dips lower as he kisses my neck and his hand slips into my skirt.

“Is this for me?” he smirked, as he feels my wetness against his fingers down there.

“Only yours.” I whispered.

I feel so hot and desperate for his touch that sharp breaths escaped my lips as his fingers find my clit and he rubs it in circle.

This is it! After 4 years of being away, Jungkook will finally take over me again.

He kissed me with so much intensity that makes me gasp. His fingers fuck me with the confidence that always makes me moan and pray for more while hoping it will last forever.

“Oh Jungkook…how I love this.” I moaned, praising his way of pleasuring me.

Easing me back to lay on the bed, he keeps me on edge by cupping my pussy and stroking it that roars through him and makes the outline of his hard cock visible against the white towel.

He lay me down and lift off my blouse. Jungkook’s eyes sparkled in lust when he saw me semi naked form. “Oh baby, I can’t wait to fuck you.” he moved closer to kiss my belly going north to where my breasts are.

Jungkook began licking my nipples alternately which earned moan from me. He started sucking it and biting while his hands slipped again between my thighs.

He moved his face to mine, strokes and fuses his lips to line, swallowing the moan that escapes when his fingertip catches my clit.

He removed my clothes along with my skirt, He parted my legs widely and looks at my already wet and aroused sex.

“I can’t imagine I survived four fucking years without this sweet pussy.” he smiled before diving in between them.

“Gosh! Your mouth is so good!” it’s just as incredible as his cock.

He laps and sucks at my swollen lips, his tongue making leisurely circles over my clit as he hums against my sensitive flesh and makes my legs quiver.

I can't breathe. I can't draw a deep enough breath to clear the euphoria his mouth creates.

His tongue swirls and circles, flicks and sucks, strokes and plunges.

But I want to return the favor. I missed him so much and he deserves the same pleasure as what he's giving me.

I sat up, denying myself the pleasure my mind and body crave, delay our release a little longer to push him to his feet and reach for the towel that is wrapped around his small waist.

"Baby.." his eyes was on me when I free him from the restraints of it, taking him in my hand, needing him in my mouth.

I admit I may not be good at it but I want to perform well in it. To pleasure him. To make him feel good.

Looking up at him, I extend my tongue and take my first taste of his glorious cock. "Oh my god Lisa!" he shuts his eyes close.

I suck and lick. He sighed and groaned. I stroke his long length. He slipped his hand into my hair.

I need him trembling for me. I need him panting and wild for me.

I should be at home taking care of my son. But I am here pleasuring the love of my life, my Jungkook. My one teacher who became my boyfriend.

Instead, we're at a hotel, immersed in our desire for each other and I want him to be buried inside me, giving us what we both need.

He flexes his big cock against my tongue and nudges further into my mouth. I kissed and sucked and kept my eyes on his as I take him.

I gasp when he steps back and takes hold of me, turning me around onto my hands and knees and preparing me for the main event.

I love the way he breathes against my flesh, heating me from the inside out.

I love the way he loves me and his way of showing it is to command my body.

No words are spoken, they aren't needed and there isn't time.

He knows I want him. He knows I'm ready to take him and embrace him and fuck him the way we both need.

It's been four years without feeling each other and we both deserves this. And right now, I know he's preparing to give me everything he has. I know he's tense and trembling and impatient.

He buried his face between my legs, fucking me with that sweet tongue and whispered beautiful against my cunt.

"I love you baby." he kept repeating the words and my heart is satisfied with it.

"I can't wait any longer!" he growled. And pulled his lips away from my pussy.

He positioned the head of his cock against my opening and I waited in anticipation.

"Four years of drought." he whined. "Be ready to get wrecked cause I'm not going to be gentle this time." he warned with his husky voice.

I bit my lip as excitement crept over me and when he pushed it in, "Oh God Jungkook!" I almost screamed at the feeling of his penetration.

It hurts like hell, just like the first time.

"Your pussy is as tight as your first time baby girl." he groaned, half of his cock is in.

My breathing hitched. It escapes in a rush and refuses to return when he eased every perfect inch into me and almost fill

me to the hilt.

With one powerful thrust and he's inside me, my breath is no longer in my possession.

"Fuck baby! This feels so fucking good. So wet, so warm, so hot! You're squeezing my dick so tight!" Jungkook groaned in pleasure.

With his hands on my hips he started thrusting in and out. One hand gives me a gentle smack and I gasp. Then I moan. Then I close my eyes and focus on the feel of him.

I pushed back, trying to take a breath.

He shunts me forward with powerful hips and a hard thrust. My nipples hardens more, desperate to be groped in the sensitivity Jungkook creates.

The wet collision of flesh, the sound of heavy breaths and the creaking of the bed are the only sounds that accompany us and lend anticipation to the rush.

Is he watching his cock slide in and out?

Is he watching my skin redden with a warm flush?

Is he watching how wet I am?

How I coat him with slick heat as he plunges himself inside me?

My body begins to tighten when he strokes the spot deep inside me. My stomach quivers and my legs tremble in an uneven rhythm.

Arching my back I grip the headboard and look back over my shoulder.

Me.

He's watching me.

When I lick my lips and keep my gaze fixed on his, he squeezes me a little harder, drives into me a little slower and a thousand times more intensely.

"I can't believe how good your pussy is around my cock baby!"

In a quick move, he flips us over, lays on the bed and pulls me to straddle him.

The way he looks at me almost splits me in two as I lower myself onto him and throw my head back with a moan.

“Oh my god baby girl, just how good you are. I love you so much!”

I like it. I like it when I control how deep he goes, how fast I allow him to fuck me, and I get to watch his beautiful face contort with pleasure and control.

“Go on baby! Fuck me hard, yeah just like that! Faster Lis!” Jungkook watches with a sedate smile, his hands pinches my nipples as I ride him until he’s as deep as possible, filling me completely and meeting my thrusts to give me the friction I need to get off.

My blood heats as the cool air licks my chest. My heart pounds as he meets my movement.

My pussy clenches around him as he drives into me and keeps his eyes on mine. I kiss him. I kiss him with so much hunger and love-hunger to come, to detonate around him as quickly as he plunges into me.

Our tongues danced and duel. Our breaths escape in fast huffs and collide to fill the room with harsh moans and sighs of primitive lust.

I allow him to manoeuvre me, shift me on top of him so I’m facing away and he takes all of my weight.

With my hair tickling his hard chest and my body quivering around him, on the edge of the cliff and ready to take flight, he holds onto my waist and drives up into me.

His hand reaches around to seek out my clit and he strokes wildly as I moan and groan and buck on top of him.

“Jungkook…”

“You like this baby?” he breathed against my ear.

“Yes.. I love it!” I admit. He’s still fucking me from behind as he plays with my clit.

“Then moan for me.” he demanded. “Yeah just like that, moan for me, stop holding back.”

And I did, I gave into his desires and as I moan, the harder he fucks me.

I want to cum, I need to cum, but the exertion becomes too much and the battle to hold my own weight wins over my body’s need to let go.

“Now let me help you.” he offered, cockily.

Jungkook flips us over again, commanding my body like he has since we first became one, and lays me next to him to keep me on the edge.

“Oh yeah… I’m cumming! I’m cumming Jungkk….”

I allow my body to finally succumb to the intoxicating pleasure and the tremors ripple through my body as I clamp tightly around him and let my eyes roll closed.

My clit throbbed in celebration and need for more. My walls tightened around him, drawing his orgasm closer and asking him for another.

My body knows his. I know what he’s capable of. I know what he can do.

He holds me still, driving in and out, stealing a moan from me every time his balls collide with my body.

“Touch yourself baby!” Taking hold of my wrist, he guides my hand to my pussy, encouraging me to stroke myself. I obliged, rubbing furiously as the need to come again crept up on me.

Hooking one of my legs over his shoulder, he turns me. Once again our eyes connect and it’s enough to tip me over into a gentler yet intense orgasm, as my release ripples around him and he slows his pace.

Leaning over me, he begins his own race and I take my bottom lip between my teeth, keep my eyes on him to encourage him to let go, and I let him use my body to extract his own satisfaction.

He thrusted in and out. He groaned and took shallow breaths. His fingers flex on my skin and perspiration lines his top lip.

Jungkook becomes a god all over again, he becomes a god of passion.

A man lost in his own desire.

I love him for it.

I love the wild Jungkook.

I love the wild Mr.Jeon.

A while ago we were teachers at a University, formal and polite.

Now we are primitive. We are frantic and frenzied and lustful. We are naked and perspiring and wet. We are trembling and exhausted and aching.

But still we want each other.

I still circle my clit as he finds a pace that will get him off.

He still touches me like he can't get enough, while I look at him and smile like I can't, either.

He's still hard, still strong, still the wild teacher that I fell in love with.

It still makes me moan when he stills, his cocked jerks inside me.

He hissed, "Lis,…I'm cumming! I'm cumming baby!!!"

He moved faster this time. I can feel how pumped my pussy is that it reddened againsts his roughness. He's wrecking me so good and the pleasure is unimaginable.

"Lisaaaa!" he screamed when Jungkook came inside me.

His load shooting into the depths of me. I can feel his hot, sticky cum coating my walls and I live for it.

He emptied himself until the very last drop.

"I'm so happy Lisa." his eyes sparkled in joy and I'm sure mine too.

“I’m happy too, Jungkook.” He smiled and leans in to kiss my lips. Owning it again as his cock’s still inside me.

It feels unreal to make love with him again after so many years but this way we are both happy.

Our breathing finally calmed down but our lips are still tangled.

Jungkook doesn’t want to let go. He continued kissing me affectionately until both of us drifts off to sleep.

Author’s Note

I missed you guys.

Flirting over Phone

Lisa's POV

"Fuck Lisaaaa!!!" Jungkook grunted as hot silken cum pulsed inside me, filling my hole again and I took it all.

He smiled contentedly, kissed my lips before lying beside me.

Jungkook lazily feel asleep after that. His arms encircled around me. Holding me tightly as if afraid that I'll leave him again.

I lost count of how many times Jungkook fucked me this night.

4?

5?

6?

I'm not sure.

But one thing is clear,

I was wrecked.

I was definitely wrecked by Jungkook.

My hair is damp by my own sweat,

My skin glistens with our mixed sweat,

My voice is hoarse,

My legs are trembling from too much exertion.

My lips are swollen,

My skin is now full of kiss marks,

My nipples has few bit marks,

My hips reddened with too much gripping,

My sex is leaking with so much cum.

I was spent.

Sore.

My body is aching.

Jungkook showed no mercy.

He fucked me relentlessly as if there's no tomorrow.

Jungkook is…

His stamina is just crazy!

Never have I imagined my whole life that we'll make love like this!

Wild, crazy.

Is this the result of being apart for four years?

It probably is and we deserve it.

We deserve to feel each other's love.

But I wonder what time is it?

We were too focused on the pleasure that I lost track of time.

I tried to shift on one side to reach for my phone but he pulled me closer to him. "Hmm..stay" the sleeping Jungkook groaned.

After series of attempts, I finally freed myself from Jungkook's arms.

I took my phone and saw that it's already past 9 in the evening.

"Shit!" Jihoon must be looking for me now!

I hurried and grabbed all my clothes from the room to dress myself up.

“Jungkook… I need to go.” I kissed his sweaty forehead before leaving him. If our situation was just different, I will never leave him while he’s sleeping like this.

But things changed now, Jihoon needs me. In his eyes, I’m still his mother.

I walked out of the hotel with wobbly legs. My body aches so much that I can’t walk properly.

I grabbed a taxi to go back tothe University to pick my own car.

When I reached home, Jihoon was already sleeping. And I feel bad just seeing him there alone so I decided to sleep with him.

But before I do so, I took a bath to erase Jungkook’s scent which lingered on me.

I lay beside Jihoon, then my phone beeped.

I bit my lip when I read the sender.

2 new messages

✉ Hon
✉ Jungkook

Seriously? Why send me a message at the same time?

This is confusing me more!

And why do I feel so guilty recieving two messages from them?

I feel like I’m a player, a cheater, a user.

I just had sex with Jungkook while I’m with Mr.Kim.

What kind of a person I am for doing so? I should’ve waited for Mr.Kim and I to be over before being intimate with Jungkook.

I tried to clear my mind and believed that I did nothing wrong because I love Jungkook.

But still, it’s very unfair to Mr.Kim.

He doesn’t deserve to be cheated like this.

I tapped on the first message to read Mr.Kim's text and it goes:

"Lisa,

I'm sorry if I can't answer your phone calls. I've been really busy these days. I'll try to make up to you soon. I'll be back in few days. Please kiss Jihoon for me.

I miss the both of you."

Now I feel really bad.

Ugh! Lisa, what did you do?

I just decided to send him a reply.

Mr.Kim,

"It's okay. I'll wait for you to comeback. I'll take care of Jihoon. Don't worry about us."

I sent the message and not a minute later, I received a reply.

"Mr.Kim again? I thought we talked about this already?"

"Uhm..I'm sorry Tae." I replied.

"Now, that's better. By the way Lisa, It's late. You should sleep now and get some rest.

I love you."

Shit.

What should I say?

Before I can even type a message, he replied.

"You don't have to tell me. I know you don't have feelings for me yet. But It'll come."

He assured and I don't know if I'll be happy, relieved or worried because of it.

If I can just break with him on the phone, I will. Just so I can get rid of my guilt but that would be rude. Now, I understand why Jungkook had to leave for Australia just so he could personally break with Ji-eun.

"Goodnight Tae. Please have your rest too."

That's all and I pressed my phone against my chest.

I closed my eyes to think clearly.

What is happening to my life?

This is so complicated!

My conscience is being split into half.

I feel guilty towards Mr.Kim and I'm so sad for Jihoon.

But my other half is asking,

How about Jungkook? He deserves me too. He suffered for how many years without me just like how I suffered.

My other half argues again.

But Mr.Kim did so much for me.

What now?

Oh shit! I almost forgot to read Jungkook's message.

I swiped my phone open again and saw that the bunny has 5 messages already.

"Where are you baby?"

“Lisa? Are you home? Please tell me I’m so worried. Is it okay to call?”

“My love, please send me a reply. I’m going to lose my mind again if you don’t.”

“Are you upset that I did it with you for 8 times?”

“I can’t believe you will leave me after using my body.”

“I’m just joking baby. Please send me a reply or else I’ ll go to your house, wherever it is. I will look for it.”

I panicked when I read the last message so I went out of Jihoon’s room to call him.

“Finally!” he exclaimed when he answered from the other line.

“I’m sorry for leaving you. I was just worried about Jihoon.” I whispered my apologies as I cannot be heard by any of the servants. Mr.Kim has at least 20 of them that’s why its’s very risky.

“I thought we would cuddle?” he whined. I can almost see his cute pout right now.

“I’m really sorry. I’ll just try to make up with you when we meet on monday at the University.”

“What do you mean on monday? We have the whole weekend to spend with each other Lis. Why wait for monday?”

“I can’t, Jihoon is—”

“Jihoon, Jihoon, you’re always concerned about him. He has his father right? Why not let him take care of him?” I can hear jealousy in his voice and I understand. Whenever I’m with Jungkook, it’s always Jihoon I talk about.

“Mr.Kim is not here. He’s out of the country for a business deal.” I explained briefly.

“Oh..is that so? Then just bring that kid with you here in our house and let him and Yuna play while we, adults play.” he chuckled.

“Jungkook!” I warned. “We can’t. Jihoon is possesive of me. He’ll know instantly if you’re flirting with me.”

“How did you know? has he ever seen how people flirt?” Jungkook asked curiously.

“Back in Japan, there were few admi—”

“Ugh..spare me the details. I don’t want to hear tell tales of jerks hitting on you.” he groaned which made me laugh.

“If I know, you have more admirers than me. Tell me, how many girls has tried to hit on you while I was away?” I asked and he became quiet.

“You don’t want to know.” his answer turned my mood down.

“Jungkook!” I swear my nose is now fuming just imagining him flirting with other girls.

Jungkook started laughing on the other line. As usual, he’s amused that he got me jealous.

“I’m just joking baby, how can I let other girls do that when my mind was filled with thoughts of you.”

“You sure?” I asked, raising my brow.

“Swear. You can even ask Namjoon about it.”

“I’ll do that when I see him” I replied. It’s been years without seeing them again. I wonder how they are right now.

“Oh by the way, I almost forgot. He organized a reunion this coming sunday. Will you come?” he asked with a hopeful voice.

“Right. I almost forgot about it too. I’ll think about it.” I replied. I don’t want to decide now. It would be unfair if I go because Bambam has been pestering me about it and I clearly said I won’t. So he’s not attending too.

“You knew about the reunion? How? I thought they lost contact of you?”

“Well except Bambam. We always communicate.” I admitted. It’s only Bambam who knows everything that

happened in my life.

“What the? How come he didn’t tell me that he contacts you?”

“I told him not to. Did you forget that I was fooled to believing that you are already married so that time I don’t want to be reminded of you. I haven’t contacted my classmates for years because I know they will somehow talk about you and I don’t want that. I was too hurt to hear news about you. And that’s the reason why I was avoiding this reunion.”

“You were avoiding me?” Jungkook asked with a hurt voice.

“Yes, and I’m sorry. I didn’t mean to hurt you too. Your ex-girlfriend is such a psycho to send me those emails that’s why I believed them.”

After my explanation, Jungkook sighed on the other line. “I already filed a case against her. I’ll make sure she’ll pay. And I have all the evidences I can use to make sure of that.”

“How about Yuna? How is she?”

“She’s fine. Still the happy kid she is. Yuna has no soft spot for her mother. I have a feeling, it’s Ji-eun’s karma for her evilness.”

“Still, that would hurt for a mother. Imagine being hated by you own child.” For me, it’s the worst punishment already.

“She deserves it. She can’t even take care of Yuna well.”

“Poor girl. But I’m glad that you’re taking good care of her.” I smiled. Jungkook has always wished for a daughter and now he has one. I’m happy because I can’t give him a child and Yuna is probably the answer to it.

“It still amazes me how you feel that way towards Yuna even if she’s Ji-eun’s child.” Jungkook said.

“Yuna is not her mother. She’s innocent from all of these. And she’s a sweet little baby.” I remarked.

Jungkook laughed, “She is. Imagine if the three of us can stay together in one house.” he announced his plan excitedly

as if it's possible.

So this is what Jungkook wants? The three of us living together?

But Jihoon? How about him? I love him so much.

Jungkook must've noticed my silence so he cleared his throat. "I mean if that's when you talked with this old and fake husband of yours already. Have you cleared things with him yet?"

"Old husband?" I want to clarify if he's referring to Tae.

"Yeah, that Mr.Kim."

Right he doesn't know it's Mr.Kim as in Mr.Kim Taehyung. The handsome and young CEO that every girl whould drop their panties for.

I shook my head, "No, I haven't spoke with him yet. As I said he's out of the country. But I will if he comes back." I tried to assure him even if I'm confused as hell as to how I will break the news to Mr.Kim.

"Good, I can't wait for you to be back at home. I miss you so much Lis."

"Me too, I miss you Jungkook."

It feels sad that both of us are missing each other but we can't do but wait for the right time. I'm still having a hard time deciding on how I'll tell Jihoon about it.

"Seriously, You need to attend the reunion. Since you're not avoiding me anymore. Why not go there? You need to know the updates of your friends' lives. Don't you miss them?"

"Of course I do. But Jihoon and I usually spend time by doing groceries every sunday. I don't—"

"Wait, have you ever been to a supermarket before with this kid asking for muffins?" He cut me off to ask the question.

I tried to recall, "Yeah..I remember one time. Why?"

"So that was you! Can't believe how stupid I am not to realize it. Anyway, please consider the reunion. If I can't see

you tomorrow, at least let me see you on sunday. Please baby?"

"I'll try my best Jungkook." I replied.

Then I heard him hiss on the other line as if in pain. "What's wrong?" I asked, worried.

"Ugh..I just realized you left me so many scratches on my back. You should be gentle with me next time Lis. Stop abusing my body like this."

What the?

"Excuse me? I believe I'm the one who's abused not you." I beg to disagree.

"Nah..I'm sure you loved it."

"Yeah, I really love that I can't even stand straight because of you." I rolled my eyes and he laughed.

"If you just didn't leave me, there's more to what I can do to you."

"Of course I know." I giggled. I missed this playful chat with him.

"Did you even leave me a goodbye kiss when you left?"

"I did. I kissed your forehead." I proudly replied.

"Lisa, you should've kissed me on the lips. I'm not even your grandfather to be kissed on the forehead." he protested.

"But it suits you because you're a teacher. The great teacher Jeon, my most RESPECTED teacher." I put emphasis on the word respected and he laughed again.

"Not when you take my cock in your mouth. Baby, you're getting better at sucki—"

"Okay, it's already late. We need to sleep. Good night Mr.Jeon." I shut him off by ending the line.

When I got back to bed, Jungkook sent me another message.

"You'll get a punishment for shutting me like that baby."

"Oh I'm scared! 😜"

“You should be. Just wait and see.”

Jungkook’s punishment will always be my favorite punishment so I ain’t scared. I’m sure he knows it.

“The same punishment that makes me go crazy?” I bite my lip as I wait for his reply.

“Uh-huh, I bet you’ll cry harder next time.”

“Oh..now I’m scared. Lol”

“What a tease. I’m gonna pump that pussy soon.”

I was about to send a reply when Jungkook called again. I look at my sleeping Jihoon before answering.

“Miss me already?” I teased.

“Yeah..I can’t wait to be with you again. I love you so much Lisa.” Jungkook expressed the words with so much love. It’s fun how he changes from being this horny Jungkook to the affectionate Jungkook.

So I gave him my sincerest reply. “I love you more kook.”

“No, I love you more.” he argued.

“I love you morrrrrreeee!”

“I love you more than you love me baby girl.”

“No, I love you—”

“Mommy? Is that daddy?” Jihoon’s voice cut me off my endless flirting.

Shit.

I woke him up from my noise.

“You’re sleeping with that kid?” I heard Jungkook’s jealous voice from the other line but I shrugged it off.

“No, baby it’s not daddy. Now, go back to sleep. Mommy will stay here.” I replied and pressed the end call button.

“I can’t believe this!” Jungkook sent me another message but I ignore it this time.

I guess I’ll just go to that reunion to make up with him.

Author’s Note.

I apologize for the boring and short and chapter.

Class 3-C Reunion is coming 😊

Mommy Angel

Jungkook's POV

Yuna and I were eating breakfast in peace when the door bell rang.

Who is it?

Is it my baby girl?

I excitedly stood but Leni, Yuna's nanny beat me to it.

"I'll check it Mr.Jeon." the 40-year old woman offered

"Ys, please." I gave her a nod, hoping it is my Lisa behind the door.

But I was wrong cause when she came back, Ji-eun was already following her. "I'm sorry Mr.Jeon, I told her she's not allowed here but she persisted."

I sighed when I saw Ji-eun walking straight at us as if she did nothing wrong. Yuna glanced at her mother and so does Ji-eun, who spotted her daughter at the table eating silently.

"Baby…baby, mommy is here. I'm here to take you home." She tried to walk to Yuna but the little girl just hoped out of her chair to hide behind my back.

"Leni, please take Yuna to her room." I asked her nanny. The woman rushed to Yuna to take her away which made Ji-eun frown.

"No, Jungkook please. Give her back to me." Ji-eun tried to stop the nanny from taking Yuna away but I stopped her before she could do so.

"Please Jungkook, just let this go. Give me Yuna back and I promise I will not show myself again to you. If that's what you want. Just giver her back." Ji-eun plead.

I stared at her for a second and noticed the drastic change in her appearance. She looked stressed, worried and down now. Dark circles formed around her eyes. She's also gotten thinner and she's not wearing the elegant and classy outfits she usually wears.

But however she looked right now, I'm still determined to make her face the punishment she deserves.

"Do you think I will just give her like that? We have a legal agreement that I will be her parent/ guardian. You've always asked for it, right? And you willingly signed them. End of discussion. Now leave." I answered calmly. I hope she leaves in peace.

But she didn't. Tears began streaming down her face and I don't know if I will pity her or not because Ji-eun is the best actress to ever exist in this world. I have learned my lesson now. And that is to never trust her again.

"That was a mistake. I want to take it back. Please Jungkook give me my daughter back!" she walked closer, her hands reaching out to me.

"Then give me my four years back!" I yelled. I can't help but let out all of the frustrations in me. She ruined my life, and now she only wishes to call it quits?

"Jungkook, I didn't do it…believe me.. Please.."

This made me shook my head in disbelief, "I can't believe you're not admitting what you did up until now."

"Because I didn't. Whatever it is that you're accusing me. I didn't do it." she defended. Just a I thought. She will never admit her mistakes.

Ji-eun will never change.

And I will remain a fool if I still believe that she will change.

"Leave now before I call the security." I warned.

"Jungkook, why? won't you believe me?"

"I said leave!"

Ji-eun started wiping her tears away which I assume is fake. She's good at this. Acting innocent as if an angel and I will not fall for it anymore.

She maybe Yuna's real mother but it was me who took care of her the whole time. It will just be bothering if she takes Yuna's custody.

And right now, I'm really glad that I signed those papers. Legally, I'm Yuna's parent so Ji-eun has no claim in her.

"Okay, I will leave but can you at least withdraw the lawsuit? I promise I'll not show myself again if you do." Ji-eun tried to bargain which is obviously the reason why she came. She just want to get away from it.

"Withdraw? You really think I'm still that soft boy who've been chasing you? Do you even have an idea how much I sufferred because of you? Ji-eun, you ruined my life! I almost killed myself because Lisa left and still you feel no remorse in it? How can you even do those things when all I did was be good to you?" I bursted out.

All I did was love her but she didn't returned it. In those two months of having a relationship with her, all she did was cheat right in front of my face.

When I finally freed her, she returned it by creating lies, manipulating me to the point where the only person that I love left me.

And Lisa isn't back yet. She's still stucked in that stupid contract and I can't blame her. 'Cause It was all Ji-eun's fault.

"I told you I didn't do it!" She still managed to lie when all evidences are pointed on her.

"You're a lost case Ji-eun. You better leave now before I drag you out of here!" I warned and I'm not joking.

I have no patience left for her. I can drag her out of my house if she continue this.

She stared at me for few more seconds as if testing my words then she finally left quietly.

I slumped down on my chair when she left. My day just got ruined because of her presence.

But knowing that it's a saturday, a much awaited day by Yuna to bond, I tried my best to lift my spirit to be cheerful for her.

For this day, I planned to focus on spending time with Yuna while my lawyer takes care of the case I filed for Ji-eun.

He said that the evidence was enough to put her into jail. And I hope that day comes soon.

Lisa's POV

"Bambam!" I waved at my dearest friend in excitement when I spotted him walking out of the airport.

He instantly heard my voice and turn his head on me.

"Lisa!!!" he shouted back before running to me, dragging his luggage.

Bambam hugged me tightly while lifting me from the ground.

"Woah! Put me down!" I laughed at his warm approach.

He laughed too, "I can't believe it will take me years to finally see you!" he exclaimed.

"Me too! I'm so happy to finally see you! We have a lot of catching up to do." I smiled.

It was a saturday morning when I received an email from him that his arriving. And the news of him coming thrilled me so much.

I really had no plan in leaving the house today but it is Bambam—my closest male friend who I didn't saw for a long time so I decided to see him and welcome him.

"Yeah, I will be here only for the reunion so I didn't bring much." he said pointing at his small luggage. "I'm a little hungry. Is it okay if I spend lunch with you, Lisa?" he asked unsurely. But not the typical Bambam who would usually shake or stutter when asking me to spend snack at the canteen back when we were in high school.

I noticed the confidence in him. Back then, he's really shy and awkward around me. Bambam has also died his hair blonde which looks good on him.

"Sure!" I smiled while nodding at his proposal. Anyways, it'll just be a lunch so it won't be that long.

Last night, Jungkook asked me to spend the weekend with him but I refused because of Jihoon. So I kinda feel guilty that I am spending it with Bambam.

Although he should understand because I just missed my friend so much.

That morning, we went to a restaurant for a catching-up-with-friend lunch. Bambam told me that he'll be staying in the US for good as he's also trying his luck in the business world.

The whole time of spending lunch with him was never awkward. It feels like I'm still talking with a bestfriend rather than a man who'd confessed his love to you back then.

It was just a casual talk. He was so proud of telling me his plans and I feel so happy for him. At least I have talked with one of my classmates now.

"So, how is your relationship now with your fake husband?" he asked with curiosity.

I shifted on my seat when the topic changed to mine. I hate to admit it but it feels uncomfortable to talk about Mr.Kim. "It's fine. He's not here at the moment. But I plan on clearing things with him." I replied.

"Clearing things?" Bambam's gaze scanned my whole face making me feel more uncomfortable.

Should I tell him about me and Jungkook?

As his eyes was on me. His gaze suddenly landed on my neck. Then his expression changed into a shocked one as if he'd seen something there.

"You're back with Mr.Jeon?" he guessed. He's probably seen some love marks there which I tried to hide but there were just too many for a person to not notice.

And this is Jungkook's fault!

"Uhmm.." I tried to search for words. It feels bad to have Bambam know that I had been intimate with our teacher when he knows that I'm living with Mr.Kim.

"It's fine. You don't have to worry. I had a feeling that you two will get back together once you came back here in Korea." his understanding smile encouraged me to open up.

"No matter how I hide, I will always go back to where my heart is. And that is with Mr.Jeon." I finally admitted, feeling a little shy.

"But Lisa. Isn't he a family man?" he asked worriedly.

I quickly shook my head and began explaining everything and ood thing that Bambam listened attentively.

"You mean the whole time you both were just played?" Bambam asked in disbelief. No one would actually guess that we were manipulated becase Ji-eun is too good at it. She managed to break my heart for years now. So now that I had Jungkook back, I will never let him out of my life again.

"Yes, the emails were not true. It was Ms.Ji-eun's trick the whole time." I explained.

"Damn! I can't believe someone can be that evil!"

"Me too. Imagine how she made me stay away from Jungkook that long. I was so stupid!"

Bambam threw me an apologetic look "It was partly my fault too. If I just talked with Mr.Jeon, I could've known these things. Instead, I avoided him and our classmates because I thought he really did those things to you. I'm sorry Lisa, I wasn't able to help."

"No, no. You were just on my side and chose to listen to me but that doesn't mean that it's your fault. Through the years, it was only you who comforted me among our friends and I'm so grateful for that Bam." I squeezed his hand on top of the table.

"Ahh..I still feel bad for you and Mr.Jeon." he groaned.

“It’s okay. Jungkook and I are back together now. And he filed a case against Ms.Jieun to make her pay for what she did. All is well.” I assured Bambam who now looked so guilty.

“But how about Mr.Kim? What will happen to the two of you?”

“That’s the problem. I don’t know exactly how to break things with him especially that he’s helped me survive and live.”

“But you took care of his son for years too Lisa. I guess it’s enough payment for being a good mother to his son.” Bambam’s words somehow lessened the guilt in me.

He’s right. I took care of Jihoon in exchagne of him feeding me.

But will that be really fine with Mr.Kim if I suddenly leave him?

“This is really hard.” I admitted. “Jihoon is like a real son to me. It’s still holding me back Bambam.”

“But isn’t your love for Mr.Jeon enough for you to decide on this. Don’t get me wrong Lisa. I know how you love this kid but Mr.Jeon is supposed to be your future. If you stay with Mr.Kim, all you can ever be is a replacement of his wife.”

…Well, that hit me so hard.

But it can be true. Mr.Kim just probably sees me as a convenient replacement of his wife.

Jungkook loved me from the very start. He chose me over Ji-eun. And that speaks a lot for a man who had loved her for

years.

After lunch, Bambam and I parted ways. He made me promise to attend the reunion and I did. It is all that we can do to make up for hiding away from our classmates.

When I got home, I caught Jihoon in his room crying while her nanny was trying to comfort him.

“What happened?” I asked worriedly as I rush to my son who’s sitting on the floor while hugging his knees.

“Ms.Kim, I don’t know but he began crying after seeing some photo albums in the stock room.” the nanny explained.

Photo Albums? Why would it make him cry?

“I’ll take care of this. Thank you.” I took Jihoon in my arms and rubbed his back to comfort him. His nanny left us alone so I asked the little boy, “What’s wrong my baby?”

“M..mommy, daddy has..daddy woman.” he hiccuped in between sobs. His eyes were so puffy that I guess he’s been crying for awhile now. And it hurts my heart so much.

“What do you mean? Daddy has no woman Jihoon.” I defended.

Mr.Kim and a woman in a sentence is a no-no. One thing I notice about him is that he’s eyes has never landed on other girls. Even though Mr.Kim is sorrounded by hot and young employees, he has never ever took glance at them. Which is something I really appreciate.

I feel like he is a loyal person. While Jungkook would—I pushed the thoughts away when I remembered the time that we fought over Ms.Eunbi.

“Jihoon show mommy!” he freed himself from my arms to grab my hand.

Jihoon pulled me towards I suposed as a stock room where there are some old stuffs. Most of them are office papers from Mr.Kim’s work.

Then my eyes widened when Jihoon pulled out an old photoalbum inside a box. He opened it up, flipped it and

pointed on a picture, “Mommy, Daddy kissing woman!”

He kept pointing at some more photos with an anxious expression. Soon, his eyes welled in tears again as we both stare at it.

And there they were photos of Mr.Kim and probably the late Ms.Ruby Jane.

They looked so happy and in love. They were hugging and kissing in almost every picture inside the photobook. And I feel really sad at how their story ended.

Imagine dying while giving birth? It must’ve been so hard for Mr.Kim to lose his love in exchange of his son.

This is actually the first time that I’ve seen her picture as Mr.Kim tried to hide them away from Jihoon.

“Daddy bad! Mommy don’t cry” The little boy tried to comfort me with his small hands , rubbing my cheeks gently.

“No baby, Daddy is good. Daddy is real good.” I convinced him. This is just a misunderstanding in the eyes of an innocent child.

“But..daddy he..” he glanced at the photo album again with the same down expression.

I sighed. I guess I need to explain to him slowly before he thinks poorly of his father.

“That’s daddy’s old wife Jihoon. He’s not bad okay?” I explained, hoping he can understand these things.

With these his eyes grew wide, curiousity sparked in it. “Wife like mommy?”

“Yes baby, but she’s in heaven now.” I smiled. I hope Mr.Kim won’t get mad at me for telling Jihoon the truth. But it’s the only way to correct his thoughts about his father.

“Like an angel?” his face lit up when he uttered the word angel.

“Yes baby. Do you know that she’s an angel now and she’s looking after you?”

“Angel looking Jihoon?” the little boy asked curiously. His eyes fixed on the lady on the photo album who looked exactly like my teacher, Ms.Jennie Kim.

Except that Ms.Ruby Jane looked more innocent and has softer features. While Ms Jennie looked more fierce, sexy and hot.

“Her name is also mommy but you can call her mommy angel because she’s an angel.” I suggested and Jihoon seemed like he liked the the idea.

“Jihoon like angel!” he smiled widely.

“And mommy angel loves Jihoon too.”

In the eyes of Jihoon, the thought of having a mommy angel is like the best thing that he’s ever heard. He soon stopped crying and continued flipping through the photo albums of Mr.Kim and his love.

There were so many of them. Most of them are just stolen photos of Ms.Ruby Jane. And I guessed it was Mr.Kim who takes them.

Just like how Jungkook is to me. Jungkook would always steal pictures of me especially when I’m sleeping. I tried to stop him from doing so because it feels embarrassing to have my face all over his gallery but he won’t.

Jungkook doesn’t even take a selfie of himself, he just takes mine. His gallery has only two albums. One album is titled “My Baby Girl” which contains all of my stolen shots while the other album is “For Lisa” which has a collection of sexy and kinky outfits.

And if I say kinky, they are REALLY kinky. There were even some outfits for BDSM that I somehow think that he likes that kind of sex but he’s just hesitant to hurt me.

But I wouldn’t really mind if we do that. I have watched a movie about it and it looks fine.

“Mommy, look!” Jihoon cut off my thoughts when a paper fell from the last photo album from the box.

I took the paper which seemed to be a letter to read.

To my dearest Jihoon,

I haven't met you yet but I already love you. And I can't wait for the day to finally see you, hug you and kiss you. You are mommy and daddy's greatest blessing.

Mommy will see you soon!

I love you!

The paper looks old and the smell of it is like of a scent of a rose. Maybe this is how she smells like?

"That from mommy angel?" Jihoon asked.

"Yes baby, Why don't you read it for mommy?" I gave him the paper and Jihoon read it aloud.

Jihoon can already read simple words inspite his young age. I thought him how to read at an early age and it's fascinating to me that he's now reading his mother's letter.

When he was done, I turned to him, "See? The mommy angel loves Jihoon right?"

"Yes mommy!" he smiled and hugged the paper. "Can Jihoon bring this to room?" he asked.

"Of course, baby! You can."

The whole saturday was spent with Jihoon. I cherished the moment with him because I know that I will part with him soon.

In my heart, he will always be my son and I'm so grateful for the love that he's given me.

But a life with Jungkook has always been my dream. I want a family with him. Even if I can't bear a child, I would still try my luck with him.

Maybe..just maybe God can bless us with one.

Author's Note

I really apologize for missing in action for weeks and for leaving you hanging.

The reason was, I got really down these past few days. From YG being a bitch to Jungkook not posting anymore.

It has gotten to a point where I don't want to ship liskook anymore. But I'm starting to like them again lol

Class Reunion

Class 3-C POV

Warm welcome, kisses and hugs.

That's the scene when almost everyone from Class 3-C started arriving at the venue.

Namjoon rented the top floor of a leisure building for the said event. He chose the location because he find it refreshing and relaxing since the panoramic view of the City is laid before them.

At the moment, Namjoon, Dahyun, Jeongyeon, Hoseok, Yoongi, Chaeyoung, Jimin and their daughter, Chaeryong were already there.

So they are still waiting for Mr.Jeon, Ms.Jisoo, Ms.Jennie, Jin, Tzuyu and Eunwoo.

The rooftop has an enclosed room which Dahyun and Jeongyeon designed as a playpen for the kids.

They have to make one because they heard that Yuna and Chaeryong are coming.

Now everything is set. The venue, music, the food and drinks. The only ones missing are the teachers and the couples.

"Bambam!!!" almost everyone jumped in excitement when the Class Introvert suddenly walked in.

"Guys! Guys! I can't breath!" he complained when all of his classmates jumped on him to hug him tightly.

They were too excited when they saw him so he can't blame them for reacting this way.

"What the fuck is wrong with you?"

"Where did you hide all these years?"

"Where were you?"

“Dude, I thought you were dead!”

“You should’ve sent us a message!”

Questions after questions was raised and Bambam couldn’t help but just shake his head.

He began explaining everything except about Lisa’s request. He believes, it’s not for him to tell.

Though he explained that he just got busy on his business, his classmates are still upset.

For them, it was clear that Lisa and Bambam didn’t care at all cause they disappeared just like that.

“Hi guys! Oh shit! Bambam?” Eunwoo and his fiancee Tzuyu was puzzled when they saw Bambam there being squeezed by everyone.

They rushed to him and began asking him the same question and Bambam just patiently answered back.

“You mean you got busy with your business that made you forget about us?” Tzuyu pouted. She was quiet upset about his explanation. He is being unreasonable.

“I swear if I see Lisa today! I’m going to grab her hair and pinch her cheeks so bad for being MIA just like you.” Chaeyoung pouted too.

And everyone nodded in agreement. Seeing that his classmates are upset at Lisa too, Bambam decided to tell them that she’s also coming.

“Uhm guys, she’s coming.” Bambam finally dropped the bomb.

“WHAT???” the whole class asked in surprise.

“Lisa is attending the reunion. She’s probably on her way now.” Bambam announced, surprising all his classmates.

“How did you know? Are you and Lisa in contact?” Namjoon clarified.

“Yes, and I’m sorry for keeping it from you. She’s just..she was trying to hide from—”

“From Mr.Jeon?” Namjoon finished his sentence. His expression was down the whole time. He can’t believe that Lisa really ran away and hide from them. Especially from their great teacher.

Bambam looked down guiltily. He knows that his classmates are feeling bad for Mr.Jeon but they don’t know what happened to Lisa.

They were just played. And it was never Lisa’s fault.

Bambam and Lisa believed that Mr.Jeon cheated and had a family. While Mr.Jeon and the rest of the class believed that Lisa left without a reason.

And all of the misunderstanding was cause by Mr.Jeon’s ex, Ji-eun.

“I’m still mad at Lisa. How could she do that to Mr.Jeon?” Jimin shook his head in disappointment.

“Babe, we don’t know what really happened. We should listen to Lisa first. It’s even good that she’s coming. We can finally ask her reasons why.” Chaeyoung tried to defend her bestfriend who’s not there to defend herself.

“No, I really think it’s Lisa’s fault this time. Mr.Jeon suffered for years because of her. She should make up for what she did.” Yoongi argued.

“I agree with Chae. We shouldn’t judge Lisa. We don’t know what really happened.” Eunwoo said.

“So, you’re telling that it is Mr.Jeon’s fault?” Jeongyeon asked Eunwoo, raising her brow. She’s on her teacher’s side.

“We don’t know yet. As much as we love Mr.Jeon, I know Lisa too well and I know she wouldn’t leave without a reason.” Hoseok now joined the argument.

“And what could be this reason? Mr.Jeon loved her and even tried to propose to her but she left just like that!” Tzuyu also expressed her disappointment on the matter.

“But Lisa was good to him too! Just because she isn’t here to defend herself, we should accuse her of this and that.” Jin who just came with his girlfriend Jisoo, joined the argument.

He’s expecting that he will catch his classmates having fun at the reunion but here they are arguing over Lisa and Mr.Jeon’s problem.

“You’re just defending Lisa because she’s laughing at your jokes. You should be rational Jin!” Dahyun barked back which surprised all of them especially their former teacher, Jisoo.

To be honest, Jisoo was offended because Jin is her boyfriend and also because she find Jin’s jokes funny.

“Excuse me Ms.Kim—” Jisoo tried to defend her boyfriend but Namjoon was quick to stop them.

“Guys, guys! Can we all calm down? Look at you? We are having a reunion to celebrate each other’s presence but we’re here fighting over our teacher’s problem. We may have our own opinions on this but this is actually not the right time for us to argue. Lisa and Mr.Jeon’s problem are still theirs to solve. Let’s just have them settle this.” Namjoon expressed his thoughts to calm everyone down and surprisingly, they all listened. The Class president’s words will always be law to them.

“Now, since Mr.Jeon and Lisa are coming, why don’t we let them talk to clear things out.” Namjoon suggested and all of them nodded, agreeing that they can settle it by themselves.

“Uhm guys, I—“Bambam who wanted to explain that Lisa and Mr.Jeon are now doing good was cut off when the teacher himself arrived with Yuna in his arms. Following them is Yuna’s nanny.

“Hi class! Hi Jisoo!” he smiled so brightly at all of them as he let Yuna down.

The class welcomed him with hugs. He was so pleased to see everyone again but when Mr.Jeon’s eyes landed on Bambam, he frowned.

“What the fuck? Is that you Bambam?” He asked, walking to him to check if he’s real or just a wax figure.

“Yes Mr.Jeon. this is me.” Mr.Jeon walked to him and hugged him tightly. Bambam does the same.

This is the first time in Bambam's lifetime that he recieved so much hug in a day.

"I can't believe you're finally here! Does Lisa know you're coming?" when Mr.Jeon asked the question, everybody got confused.

Why does it seems like he has met Lisa already?

"Yes Mr.Jeon, Lisa is also coming. She actually fetched me on the airport yesterday." he answered proudly.

Mr.Jeon automatically frowned upon hearing this. He's being jealous again at Lisa spending time with another man.

But realizing that Lisa is coming at the reunion, his frown turned into a smile.

"She's coming?" his face lit up, eyes sparked, lips curved at the excitement of his love coming.

The class saw this and because of it, they realized that the two probably patched things up.

"Yes, she will see us all. So we better have fun today." Bambam looked at his classmates making them all nod for the third time of the day.

"Yeah! We seldom see each other. So we better make the best out of it." Namjoon added.

Mr.Jeon had Yuna and Chaeryoung play. The nannies were there to watch over them.

Soon they all started chatting, catching up with everything they missed on each other's life.

Although everyone looked settled and happy Mr.Jeon's heart is not yet eased. He kept glancing at his watch, wondering why Lisa isn't there yet.

The eating and drinking started. Mr.Jeon would go and check Yuna only to see her playing with Chaeryoung on the room next to the rooftop.

Now he's wondering if Lisa will bring her fake son with her. He silently hopped not because he has plans for them for the evening.

Alone Plans for Adults only.

And just like that, a woman came to view, it was of course the most awaited Lisa.

Mr.Jeon almost ran to her to embrace her tight but she was carrying the small boy with her.

“Lisaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” she was barely in when the whole class ran to her to welcome her.

Lisa quickly placed Jihoon down as she knows she will be squeezed by them.

Chaeyoung cried embracing her. She missed her bestfriend so much and Lisa rubbed her back in return.

Mr.Jeon smiled at the warm reunion before his eyes turn to the little boy who looked confused.

To be honest, he’s jealous of the boy and he wished Lisa didn’t brought him with her. It will just be hard for him to be cuddly with Lisa when this boy is around.

After the small welcome, Lisa’s eyes scanned the whole place before landing on her man.

A pink blush formed on her cheeks when she caught him staring at her with loving eyes.

“Hey!” Mr.Jeon walked to her, gaze not leaving her as if hypnotized. The class noticed that two needs their moment to happen so they stepped back to give both of them space.

“Hey!” was also her reply. Lisa tucked some hair behind her ear in a shy manner as if they weren’t wild last last night.

He wanted to kiss her, to hold her, to say how much he loves her but the little boy was there, staring at them confusedly so he can’t.

But still, their eyes were glued to each other. As if magnetized by each other’s presence. Lisa can’t help but crave for the taste of his lips. She suddenly regretted bringing Jihoon with her.

“Uhm… Lisa, who’s he?” Chaeyoung confusedly asked when her attention was grabbed by Jihoon. This cut Lisa and

Mr.Jeon's staring moment.

Lisa scratched her head. "He's..ugh..he's my son." she hesitantly answered.

"Your son???" their asked in unison, mouth hunged open in surprise when they heard her.

"You're joking right?" Jimin gasped.

Lisa wanted to explain that she's not the biological mother but Jihoon was there listening so she didn't.

She has actually no plans on bringing him but Jihoon begged to come with her when he heard that Yuna is probably there too.

"Yuna is at that play room with Chae's daughter. You can let him play with them." Mr.Jeon suggested which made Lisa nod.

Lisa crouched down to her son's level and said, "Yuna is there. Do you want to play with her?"

"Jihoon play Yuna!" the little boy squeaked in excitement before pulling Lisa to the room.

Lisa chuckled and just let her son pull her. When they got in, she was welcomed by Yuna's embrace "Muffin Lady!"

Lisa was smiling the whole time. It really gives her joy seeing both of the kids and to add it up, Jimin and Chae's beautiful girl was also there, smiling shyly at her.

Lisa watched as Jihoon adjust with the new playmate. She didn't even notice that Jungkook was already behind her. His body pressed against her back as he whispers "I missed you so bad baby."

Lisa got goosebumps when she felt his hot breath fanned her ear. She wanted to turn to kiss him but her classmates are closely watching them and she's not sure if they already know their relationship.

Mr.Jeon noticed her hesitance. He just knows Lisa too well. "They know about us. Don't worry." he assured her making her turn to him.

“Really? How?”

“I don’t know how they found out about us. But Namjoon said they knew for a long time now.”

Lisa got shy glancing at her classmates. What do they think of her now for being in a relationship with their teacher? “I thought only Namjoon, Eunwoo and Bambam knows.”

“Maybe Namjoon told them when I got depression.” Mr.Jeon guessed.

The two aren’t even aware that the whole class first handedly witnessed their making out session at the ferris wheel.

“Maybe..” Lisa nodded before glancing inside the room where the three kids are happily playing.

“Let’s join them. They are waiting.” Mr.Jeon took her hand to walk back to where the rest are.

Mr. Jeon pulled Lisa to sit beside him. His hands holding hers in a tight grip.

The scene of them holding hands makes it weird for them to look at as she just said she has a son.

“You have a son?” Chaeyoung automatically asked when they settled.

“He’s my adoptive son. His father took me after what happened..” Lisa apologetically looked at Mr.Jeon and her teacher just noded to let her continue the explanation.

“You two are back together? How? When? What happened? Care to explain Lisa?” Chaeyoung asked again.

Lisa began explaining everything about Ms.Ji-eun and her lies and all of her classmates couldn’t believe at what they heard.

“I told you that she’s up to no good Jungkook!” Jisoo is now fuming in anger at what she heard.

She couldn’t believe that Ji-eun would do this after seeing how her friend loved the girl.

“Hey calm down” Jin rubbed his girlfriend’s back to lessen her anger.

“How can I calm down? She just ruined their relationship! Jennie was right all this time. You should’ve left that psycho a long time ago!” Jisoo expressed her anger.

“I know. It was my fault for trusting her.” Jungkook admitted. He thinks he’s lucky because his friend Jennie is not around to scold him too.

“Oh just wait for Jennie. She sure will reprimand you for being stupid!” Jisoo annoyingly warned.

“Jennie is coming?” Jungkook asked looking at Namjoon. He thought Jennie is busy with the legal papers that why she couldn’t come.

“Yes, Mr.Jeon she’s coming because we invited her too.” Namjoon announced.

This made Jungkook quiet and Lisa who sits closely beside him noticed it. “Are you okay?” she whipered.

“Yeah” he smiled at her. She’s just not comfortable about Jennie knowing the things which Ji-eun did because he’s sure Jennie will attack Ji-eun for hurting him.

But his attention was quickly grabbed by Lisa’s plump lips which looks too soft to kiss.

Unintentionally, he leaned closer hoping to kiss her. Forgetting that the class is around.

“Hey hey hey… We’re here okay? Stop right there Jeon!” Jisoo warned her friend making them all laugh.

Jungkook just scratched his head. Whenever Lisa is around, he couldn’t control his self.

After the explanation, they began chatting about each life’s update.

Namjoon shared that he’s accepted in a University to teach.

Hoseok shared his story of fighting the disease and opening a dance school.

Yoongi shared that he got scouted to be a part of a National Basketball Team.

Dahyun and Bambam shared their experiences in the business world.

Jeongyeon shared the result of her interview application in a broadcasting company.

Chaeyoung and Jimin shared their hard experiences with raising their child.

Jin and Jisoo opened up about Jin's restaurant.

While Eunwoo and Tzuyu invited everyone in their coming wedding.

(A/n: Imagine)

Jungkook shared about the case he filed against Ji-eun which they all agreed including Lisa.

They all believe that Ji-eun needs to face the consequences of her doing.

Soon it was Lisa's turn to share her experiences for the past four years. They were all excited to hear her story when they were cut by the arrival of a certain someone.

"Uhm…" Jisoo was the first to see him and their gaze made it's way to where the man was.

When Lisa's eyes moved to him, she automatically let go of Jungkook's hand.

"What the fuck is he doing here?" Jungkook was the first to ask when he saw Mr.Kim walking to them.

Lisa paled. She was confused at how and why Mr.Kim was able to follow her. She thought he was still abroad.

She became tensed and nervous for both Jungkook and Mr.Kim.

"You're here?" was all Lisa could say. Then she stood to meet him.

“Hi! I came here because I was looking for Jihoon. The driver said you came to your reunion.” Mr.Kim smiled calmly, slightly glancing at the group of youngsters at the back.

When he saw Jungkook behind, his gaze hardened.

Jungkook stood too. He walked to where the two are. The lively atmosphere was now replaced with a tensed one.

Now both of them are glaring at each other. No one dared to cut the heated eye contact.

“What’s he doing here Lisa?” Jungkook growled. His mood turned sour when he saw the handsome CEO in front of him.

Mr.Kim chuckled at the teacher’s word as if he’s not welcomed their.

He hates that he’s acting cocky as if he owns Lisa so he thought of a better clapback.

“I came here to look after my *wife* and son” he answered with a smug smile, putting an emphasis on the word Wife.

The class who heard him gasped at the announcement. So this is Lisa’s husband?

“What?” Mr.Jeon couldn’t believe at what he heard. He faced Lisa quickly waiting for an explanation.

Lisa doesn’t know what to say. It was never her intention to have Jungkook meet Mr.Kim this way.

“So, where is OUR son hon?” Mr.Kim teased, annoying the teacher who looked really pissed and jealous.

“Th..there..” she pointed at the room where Jihoon is.

“I’ll go check him so we can go home.” Mr.Kim said and turned his back on her to walk to where Jihoon is.

“What the actual fuck is this Lisa!” Jungkook asked, clenching his jaw.

“He is Mr.Kim.” she answered.

“You didn’t tell me that the Mr.Kim you faked-married is actually the CEO that I hate!” he groaned at her.

The class was silently watching their heated moment and they are all worried with what's about to happen next.

"Jungkook, calm down!" Lisa whispered.

"How can I calm down? You are clearly living with this man under the same roof?" Jealousy consumed Mr.Jeon when he realized that his girl is living with this handsome and rich man. This is just too much for a rival!

"You should know now that everything is fake between us!" she reminded.

"I know but still he's..ugh! This is so annoying!" Jungkook groaned again.

He rolled his eyes more when he saw the man walking back with his son in his arms. No wonder the boy looks familliar.

"We'll talk soon. I need to go." Lisa tried to walk away when his hand stopped her.

"You're leaving so soon?" he asked. Jungkook is so disappointed.

"Yes, I need to talk to him." she replied taking back her hands which he was tightly holding.

Now Mr.Kim and Jihoon is standing next to them.

"I'll just say my goodbye to them." she asked Mr.Kim and he nodded. Lisa took the boy to have her say goodbye to the others too.

This just ruined Mr.Jeon's mood more. He faced the CEO when Lisa and her fake son started bidding others goodbye.

"How much?" Jungkook didn't stop himself from asking the CEO.

"Excuse me?" Mr.Kim asked the teacher back.

"How much money did you spend for her? So that I can repay you to free her." Mr.Jeon asked Mr.Kim. "Million? Billion? Name it and I will give it to you. Just give me my Lisa back!"

This made Mr.Kim laugh. “I don’t care about your money Jeon. No amount of money can equal her worth to us! She’s mine!”

“You’re probably dreaming because she loves me.” Jungkook replied.

“Oh really? Then why is she going home with me if she loves you?” Mr.Kim snapped back, silencing Jungkook.

Lisa finally came back with Jihoon. “I’m going Jungkook she said, looking down. Her eyes can’t even meet his hard gaze on her. She feel guilty at the situation they are at.

“I swear to God!” Jungkook warned. He doesn’t care anymore if the child was there. He has no patience now after how the CEO acted cocky in front of him.

Lisa was about to explain more when Jihoon’s voice cut their exchange. “Mommy angel?”

The little boy began running to the lady who just arrived.

It was Ms.Jennie Kim who was late at the class reunion because she settled the divorce papers first.

All of their eyes moved to the new arrived guest including Mr.Kim’s eyes who softened when he saw her there.

A lady who looked exactly like his wife was hugged by his son. Mr Kim’s eyes widened when he saw her. She couldn’t be his Ruby Jane?

“Are you okay?” Lisa asked him.

“Uh..yeah..” he replied back.

“I’m going Jungkook.” Lisa spoke again before walking to where Jihoon is.

“I’m sorry Miss Jennie for this.” she apologized to her former teacher before carrying Jihoon in her arms.

“It’s okay Lisa. Is he your son?” Jennie asked and Lisa just nodded.

“Mommy, she mommy angel right?” Jihoon asked.

“Uhm..” Lisa was about to say no but Ms.Jennie beat her to it.

“Yes, you can call me mommy angel.” she smiled at the charming boy. Jennie loves children so much and she always wished that she could have her own but sadly, her marriage with Joong-in failed.

“Yeay! Mommy angel! mommy angel!” Jihoon chanted rejoicingly.

At that moment, Mr.Kim’s eyes was fixed at the girl, he was so confused by how Jihoon is calling her mommy angel and how the girl looked exactly like his late wife.

Jungkook on the other hand was just watching Lisa who is just near yet so far. He can’t believe that his most anticipated reunion will turn out like this and worse is that he learned that Lisa actually married this smug.

Not long after, Lisa, Mr.Kim and Jihoon left, leaving Mr.Jeon, Jennie, Jisoo and their former students.

The reunion finally ended and everyone had fun except Mr.Jeon who was still thinking about Lisa.

He misses her so much and he wished she stayed longer to spend time with him. But that CEO ruined their night.

He knows it’s bad for people to die but he actually wished that he would die soon so he can have Lisa back.

Author’s Note

I was touched when I saw an edit for GTJ on IG. The comments are good too. So I came here to update.

To Jeonprint, Thank you for the cover.

Back Home

Lisa's POV

Jihoon was already sleeping when we got home. After tucking him to bed, I went straight to Mr.Kim's room to talk about what I wanted to tell him, about me and Jungkook.

But when I knocked at his door, he was quick to open it as if expecting that I would come.

"Tae…" I called out softly. I'm quiet nervous about my intention of coming to his room but I have a feeling that he knows already.

Mr.Kim didn't speak a word. He just widened the door for me, a gesture of inviting me in his cold and spacious room.

"Please sit." he gestured at the sofa next to his bed. So I followed his request and I wait for him.

"I'll just change. Can you wait for a minute?" he asked.

I realized that he was still wearing his suit and it seems that he just got straight from the airport.

"Sure…take your time." I nodded.

Mr.Kim walked to his bathroom and I waited.

As I wait, I saw the luggages scattered on one corner so I stood to arranged them.

Knowing that he really just got home made me more guilty. I can't believe he went straight to our reunion to fetch me.

I was back at the sofa when Mr.Kim emerged from the bathroom. He was wrapped in a robe, hair damp as he just took a bath.

He walked to where I was while rubbing his hair dry.

"Ahh..that was refreshing!" he said then sat closely beside me. I stared at him for a moment. Admiring how a beautiful

man he is. But no matter how perfect looking he is, I can't seem to fall for him. Even with those years of us being in Japan, no one has occupied my heart except for Jungkook.

"So, what do you want to talk about?" Mr.Kim's gazed locked on me. His tone was gentle but direct.

"I..uhm.." suddenly I got nervous, as if my tongue was stucked inside.

I forgot what to say!

What was it again?

About Jungkook?

Yeah…

What about him?

About breaking up with Mr.Kim.

I closed my eyes before proceeding.

I have to choose the right words or else I will end up hurting him. I will hurt Mr.Kim who's been nothing but good to me.

And the fact that I am breaking up with a dying man makes it even worse.

He's dying yet I will be breaking his heart.

What kind of a person am I?

A selfish one. Yeah, that's what I am.

I'm a selfish girl who wants to be freed just to be with Jungkook.

I am a terrible person.

A cheater.

I don't know how long it was. But my silence made him scan my face as if reading me.

Finally his eyes zeroed down on my neck. And that was it for him to realize what I was about to say.

He saw it.

I'm sure he saw Jungkook's marks.

It was Jungkook's way of saying that I am his. I am owned by him.

He owns my body, my heart and my soul.

Mr.Kim smiled bitterly after seeing it. "I thought I was just mistaken when I caught you two holding hands. But It was really true." his hurt voice didn't go unnoticed and if you'll ask me if I'm guilty, I really am.

"Tae I—"

"Since when?" he shut my words with a question.

"Uh..uhm..A week ago. I met him at the University and.." I began explaining to Mr.Kim what happened. That it was all Ms.Ji-eun's lies. That Jungkook never cheated. And surprisingly, Mr.Kim listened.

"I didn't mean to hurt you, to cheat on you. You were so good to me…but Jungkook he..he suffered too just like me. I'm so confused. I don't know what to do." I explained eeverything without even noticing that I was already crying.

I'm crying because I love Jungkook so much and I want to spend my life with him but Mr.Kim is dying and I will hurt him and Jihoon if I leave.

What will happen to Jihoon if Mr.Kim dies?

Who will take care of him? He has only me other than his father.

This is probably the hardest decision that I had to make.

"Why are you confused when you love him?" my head snapped at him when he asked the question.

His gaze at me was understanding as if not mad. I thought he would lash out on me but he didn't.

"Because you…you said you love me and I just cheated and I chose to do it despite the fact that you're dying."

My tears continued streaming down my cheeks.

He doesn't deserve to hear the word that I cheated. Mr.Kim has been nothing but a great man. He took care of me for four

long years.

I looked down, feeling bad and guilty. Then I felt a hand on my cheek.

It was Mr.Kim's. His hand felt so warm against my skin.

"Shhh..stop crying. I don't like seeing you this way." he whipered as he brush my cheek gently.

"But I feel bad! You're dying!"

Mr.Kim raised my chin so that our eyes would meet. He shook his head. "Lisa, I have to tell you something. Please listen."

Mr.Kim's expression became serious. Like he's about to drop a bomb.

"What is it?" I asked curiously.

"Lisa, I'm not dying." he sighed. "So don't feel bad about it."

"What? What do you mean? You're lying?" I asked with a slightly raised voice. Don't tell me he was lying the whole time? Or he's just saying this so that I won't feel bad?

"No, what I told you then was true. Lisa I.."

Mr.Kim explained to me everything. About how he was cured of his mysterious disease. And he believed that my presence in his life caused it. He said that I was his lucky charm and because of me he got cured which I highly doubt. I didn't even do anything to help him.

"I can't believe this! I can't believe you're going to live Mr.Kim!" I screamed out of joy. I'm so happy about the news. I can't believe it!

I hugged the man so tight at the joy and he laughed at it. Mr.Kim's arms sneaked around me pressing me more to him and I just let him do it. It feels so good actually, knowing that he has long years to live.

When our bodies parted, he once again looked at me and smiled. "I am fine. We'll be fine." he assured.

“You mean you…? You will let me?” I gasped.

Oh my God!

Is he allowing me to be with Jungkook?

“I don’t like seeing you cry. I would rather have you be with that jerk than staying with me and being miserable like his.” he said, brushing my cheeks again.

“But how about Jihoon?”

“Jihoon may be young but he understands things. I’m sure he will understand if we explain things to him.” he said. He tried to muster a smile but failed.
I know he’s more hurt for his son than himself.

“I’m sorry Tae…” I looked down apologetically.

“It’s okay. I love you this much to understand.”

“I don’t deserve your kindness. You’ve helped me so much. How can I ever repay you?”

“Believe me, you have helped me more than I have helped you. You raise my son so well. He grew up to be a kind-hearted and respectful boy. And that’s because of you Lisa. You were a great mother to him. So, thank you for that.”

“I love Jihoon so much. He deserves all the love in the world.” I smiled, reminiscing the years that I spent with him. Those years without Jungkook might’ve been the worst but it was Jihoon who made my life worth living, worth surviving.

“Thank you. You have no idea what a blessing you are. After my wife passed away, I thought no one would love Jihoon the way that you do. But thank God I found you. Although I have known from the very start that this will just be temporary, I still hoped that you will learn to love me and you will choose to stay with us.”

“I’m sorry.” was all that I could say.

“Don’t be. After all, we can never lie to our heart.”

“Indeed.”

After settling things with him, both of us got quiet. We just stayed there in silence.

As my thoughts travelled to how I will surprise Jungkook with the news, I felt Mr.Kim shifted in his seat.

Mr.Kim is silently watching me.

I faced him to meet his gaze, curious about what he's thinking at the moment. The I realized he was staring at me with a loving eyes.

I became consious when Mr.Kim's eyes travelled down to my neck where the marks are.

"Why?" I asked awkwardly.

"Nothing. It's just that… this Jungkook is really lucky. He was able to kiss you there." he smiled mischievously making my ears grew hot when I realized what he meant.

"Lisa?" he called out, almost whispering.

I turn to face him slightly, "hmm?"

"Nothing, I just want to do this for a very long time now. And now that you're leaving, I might not have the chance to do it." he said.

I got confused. I didn't understand what he meant.

"Do what—"

Suddenly, I felt his lips on mine.

My eyes grew wide when I realized that he's kissing me.

His lips was pressed against mine.

And with that one person came in my mind—Jungkook

This can't be!

I tried to protest but before I could even, he already stopped.

"I'm sorry for stealing a kiss." he smiled. "We are always interupted everytime I ask for a permission That's why I had to do that."

"It's…it's okay." I replied even though it's not. I could just imagine Jungkook's scowling face right now.

“Good.” Mr.Kim said, biting his lower lip. Then curiosity sparked in his eyes as if he remembered something. “Lisa?”

“Yes?”

“That girl…the one who came late at your reunion, may I know who is she?”

Mr.Kim’s question made me smile. He probably noticed the resemblance too.

“She’s Ms.Jennie Kim. Our former homeroom teacher in highchool.”

Mr Kim nodded his head “Can you tell me more about her?” he asked again.

Just as I thought, he will be intrigued about her.

“Miss Jennie Kim is…..”

The night was spent with me and Mr.Kim talking about Ms.Kim. I also explained about the mommy angel thing which Jihoon has been saying during the ride back home. Mr Kim thanked me after hearing how I managed to explain the photos of Ms.Ruby Jane to Jihoon.

I have a feeling that this night will be the last that I will stay under Mr.Kim’s roof.

So I have to cherish it. I slept beside Jihoon that night and hugged him tight in his sleep.

This is the night that I’m finally free.

I can finally go back to Jungkook’s arms, to his warmth and I can’t wait.

Jungkook’s POV

I can’t sleep!

I’ve been shifting here and there on my bed for hours now but I still can’t figure out a good sleeping position.

What’s the best position?

Of course, the best position will be Lisa bending as I thrust from behind. Or her lying on her back as I drive her to

oblivion.

That's the best position my mind could come up with.

But I shouldn't be thinking about it if I want to sleep, right?

It's not right to be thinking about having sex with her but I can't stop myself from imagining things.

This is maybe because I missed her so much. And making love with her gives me the assurance that she's physically present and that she's just with me.

I swear my morals as a teacher vanishes everytime Lisa crosses my mind. And I can't wait for her to finally come back.

If that time happens, I'll make sure that we would cuddle and kiss until our lips swell from heavy kissing, until we both gasp for air.

But I could only imagine.

Cause Lisa's there with that CEO instead of being with me. And to say that I'm jealous is an understatement.

I've tried to call her the whole night but she won't pick up.

All I got from her is a message saying that I need to give her time to fix things up so I'm here now, trying my best to sleep the night without being jealous.

When will she be back?

Until then, I won't be able to get a good sleep.

The next day,

I was too early to send Yuna to the toddler school as I was hoping to see Lisa there also sending Jihoon but I didn't.

Jihoon didn't go to school. Teacher Momo told me that his father called and had Jihoon excused.

I wonder what's happening to them now?

Is Lisa finally leaving Jihoon and that jerk?

I hope so.

I pushed my curiosity away and excitedly drove to the University, hoping to see my baby there.

But I didn't. Lisa was also absent. The Dean told me that Lisa called to ask for a leave which worries me so much.

Why does she have to take a leave?

Where is she?

Where are they?

Is she spending time with that man and his son?

Are they having a vacation somewhere like a real family?

Damn.

That one hurts.

And It's even bothering that I don't know where she is. She's not picking my calls.

What happened to their talk?

Did he stopped her from coming back to me?

Did he persway her to stay with him?

I won't be surprised if he did.

He's a jerk after all.

I just wish I knew where she lives so that I can go there and take her forcefully with me.

The day at the University without seeing Lisa was miserable.

I can't stop thinking about her. I can't stop worrying about us, about our relationship.

To be honest, I feel worried and treathened.

It has come to a point where I don't know where I stand in her life anymore.

'Cause the way that she let go of my hand when he saw that man last night tells me that she's not ready to let go of them.

That I'm not worthy to be chosen.

And I can't blame her. I admit that I messed up. For believing Ji-eun. For lowering my guard down. It was my fault that Lisa left me back then. If I just stayed away from Ji-eun, nothing of this would've happened.

Now I am being punished for my stupidity.

Lisa is now with another man. Taking care of another child. And even if we had sex the other day, it didn't change the fact that she's not staying with me.

She's not mine anymore.

It was almost dark when my last load finished. So I drove my way home feeling disheartened.

Right now, all I could ever think is seeing her face, and telling her how much I missed her by looking into her eyes.

I miss her.

I miss my baby girl so much.

When I got home, I was surprised to see the lights at the kitchen on while laughters echod from there.

My brows furrowed as I hear Yuna's laughter and a voice of a familliar girl.

Is that…?

Oh my god!

How come I won't recognize that laugh?

I'm sure who owns that.

Realizing who she was, my steps quicken.

I reached the kitchen with just four long strides as excitement crept in me.

She's here!!!

That's definitely her voice!

Finally my heart rejoiced when I saw her there sitting in her usual seat, laughing loudly with Yuna.

Her eyes almost watered from laughter. They're not even aware that I'm already here.

And she looked so damn pretty.

Her smile that I missed so much was like an energy booster that refilled me. My bad day was turned into the best day when I saw her there.

“Baby..” I called out, grabbing both of their attention.

And then our eyes met.

It feels like like forever ago that I didn’t saw her.

That’s how much I missed her.

And I didn’t wait for an invitation. I ran to her as fast as I could and engulfed her into a tight embrace.

“You’re back!” I swear I’m at the verge of crying. It’s like an alien feeling seeing Lisa again in the kitchen. Our kitchen. Inside my house. Our house.

Am I just dreaming?

Am I just imagining things?

But her warmth and scent tells me otherwise. She’s here and she’s real!

Not a dream.

Definitely not an imagination.

“I am!” Lisa’s voice was crystal clear. She’s really here.

Back in my arms. Back where she belongs.

“I missed you my baby.” I whispered, tightening the hug. If I could just crush her inside my arms at the joy that I’m feeling.

I pulled back from the embrace to look at her beautiful face. Cupping those chubby cheeks I plead “Please stay with me..please please don’t leave.”

Lisa clung her arms around my neck and smiled at me.

“I will stay. From now on, I will stay with you Mr.Jeon.”

Author’s Note

I have a question for my readers,

Do you ship Liskook?

If yes, why and how long?

Do you think they are in a relationship in real life?

Or not?

I wouldn’t mind long answers. I just want to hear your thoughts about it because shippers cannot talk about Liskook ship without being called delulu. Kekeke

Morning At Peace

Jungkook's POV

If I could just shove Yuna to her room so that she can stop clinging to Lisa, I would.

She's like "Muffin lady let's do this… Muffin lady let's do that." and Lisa was just complying her requests even if she knows that I'm totally annoyed right now.

At the moment, the three of us are at the living room watching Yuna's favorite cartoon show.

Yuna sat on Lisa's lap and I had no choice but to just sit closely beside her.

My feet was tapping the floor impatiently as I pray for Yuna to get tired so she can sleep and leave us two alone. But an hour had passed already yet she's still energetic.

Seeing how she's far from getting tired tested my patience.

"That's it! Yuna, you have to sleep now!" I ordered with a stern voice. Trying to scare the little girl away but she just glanced at me, unfazed.

"Dada Yuna Muffin Lady watch!" the little girl argued while crossing her little arms over her chest like those teenage girls having attitude.

She's cute but sorry little girl, I may love you but my longing for Lisa is stronger.

I shook my head no.

"Muffin Lady is tired now. She will have to sleep too. Right Lisa?" I asked her which she quickly nod her head.

"Yuna, We have to sleep now. It's already late." Lisa answered and I smiled. I'm glad that she's getting along with

her but Lisa is mine and she should be spending her time with me.

Yuna's face lit up as if she thought of the cleverest idea. "Muffin Lady sleep Yuna room?"

Hell no!

"No baby, Muffin Lady sleep Dada room!"

"No, Muffin Lady sleep Yuna room!" Yuna kept arguing and if I can just curse in front of her I will.

"No! She sleeping with me!"

"No, Muffin Lady sleep Yuna!" Yuna glared.

"I told you no—" I almost stood from my seat when Lisa stopped me.

"Jungkook it's okay. I will sleep with her." Lisa smiled defeatedly.

"What the—"

"Please your language." Lisa widened her eye, stopping me from cursing and I'm glad that she did because I was really about to curse infront of Yuna.

Honestly, It sucks to be me tight now!

All I want os to be with Lisa but why does it seem like people are stopping us from being together?

In the end, the little girl won. She pulled Lisa to her room which was Lisa's old bedroom and I just followed them.

I was really pissed at the moment especially when Lisa was about to close the door of Yuna's room.

"Baby…" I pouted. I can't believe I won't get to sleep with her tonight?

"It's okay. Expect me there in an hour." Lisa winked and damn my cock almost explode at that.

I mean my heart almost explode.

Seriously, just what did she just say?

She meant she will come at my room later, right?

“Oh my God!” I alsmost squeaked at excitement. Just thinking about a night with Lisa can send me straight to heaven.

She gave me one last smile before closing the door. And I fucking ran to my room to check it.

If Lisa will be coming in an hour, everything should be perfect.

Pillows—check!

Linens-check!

Soft bed—check!

Comforters—check!

Lights—check!

Everything looks fine. But I’m still wearing my uniform from school. I better wash up before she comes.

Who knows if she’s still the Lisa who loves sniffing things.

I’m probably overreacting because I almost tripped when I ran to the bathroom to shower.

I’m not expecting that we can have sex.

Honestly, cuddle is more than enough for me but I need to look presentable and smell good for my baby girl, right?

I got out of the bathroom and readied my self if she suddenly comes. I didn’t bother on locking the door hoping she can open it without knocking to save us some time.

So I lie on my bed with just my boxers and waited patiently for her.

The energy in my body was too high as if anticipating for a battle but almost two hours had passed and Lisa isn’t here yet.

I wonder what happened?

Did she fell asleep and forgot to come?

No.

I'm sure she'll come.

I have a feeling that she misses me too so she better come.

So I waited.

Minutes had passed and my eyes grew heavy. Now, I couldn't stop myself from closing my eyes.

When I open them, the room was already bright.

Am I dreaming or it's already morning?

The fuck?

I looked around the room searching for Lisa.

But I'm still alone.

Where is she? Did she slept with me or not? I stood up to check Yuna's room if Lisa's still there but when I opened it. Only Yuna was there, sleeping.

It was just past five in the morning when I checked the time and not seeing Lisa here makes me think that I was just dreaming about her the whole time.

My shoulders slumped down realizing that Lisa isn't home yet. I was just dreaming that she came home and I'm stilk alone.

With a heavy heart, I made my way to the kitchen to make Yuna and I a breakfast when I noticed something when I got there– food was already served.

The usual breakfast that only one person knows how to prepare was laid on the table.

I excitedly looked to my right and saw Lisa there making some coffee. Her hair in a messy bun, She's wearing a wide shirt which exposes her beautiful legs. She looked tempting than the breakfast she prepared.

"Good Morning my love." she smiled so sweetly at me.

And my broken heart was mended upon seeing her. My heart fluttered in joy and excitement that my feet walked on its own, dragging my body to where my source of happiness is and that is to Lisa.

“Baby?” I kissed her lips, sealing them with mine in a way that I can make her feel how much I love her.

I don’t care anymore. I don’t care if Yuna sees us kissing. I don’t care if the nanny is just around, I don’t care if I spill Lisa’s coffee, I don’t care what time it is. I just want to kiss her. To own her lips again.

So I did. My lips moved against her soft ones as my hands press her more to me by holding her nape.

Lisa returned my kisses with the same amount of emotion.

It feels so good.

It feels perfect.

Our tongue soon joined the fun and began exploring each other’s mouth.

We kissed for like forever and no one dared to let go. Now that she’s with me, there’s no stopping me from doing this.

My hand travelled to her bum and lifted her from the ground.

Lisa was quick to wrap her legs around my waist. As she clung to me, her fingers got a hold of my hair. She kept on tugging it, pulling me more to her.

I placed her at the kichen bar and cupped her crotch, rubbing her as my head moved down to attack her neck with wet kisses.

Lisa widened her legs for me giving me more places to stroke. She as well tilted her head to the side offering me more of her skin.

“hmm..Jungkook..I missed this.” Lisa moaned in pleasure. Her moans made it hard for me to concentrate. I couldn’t get hold anymore of my senses. All I want is just to make love with her.

“Baby, let’s go back to our room.” I asked, breathing heavily while moving my hips against her core.

My thing down there is already awake for battle and Lisa is sure streaming in wetness too, I could even feel her wetness against her underwear.

But Lisa shook her head, “No, we have work and Yuna might wake any minute now.” she reasoned out.

“Then fuck work! Baby, please…I need you. I need to be inside you. I missed you.” I hardly begged as if my life depends on it.

“Let’s just continue after work. We have all the time in the world to do it. I’m already here there’s no need to rush.” she smiled reassuringly before hopping down from the counter.

“How about we start having breakfast?” Lisa offered. She pull me to sit on my usual spot while she sat on hers.

“I can’t believe you will deny my request after teasing me like this.” I pouted. And Lisa quickly took a glance at my bulge which looked so obvious. Good thing Yuna isn’t here. That little girl is quick to spot anything weird about me.

“When did I tease you?” she asked while raising her brow.

“Oh, now you’re trying to be innocent after wearing that shirt? Not at me Lisa.”

“Why? What’s with this shirt?” she asked while looking down her body. I can even see her titties against the soft fabric of her shirt. How dare of her to not wear a bra when she knows that it’s one of my weaknesses.

“You’re seriously asking me that when I can almost see your soul inside that shirt.”

“I didn’t mean to tease you. It’s just that I came here without my clothes. Only my school uniform. Tae said he will have it delivered this morning. That’s why I had to pick random shirts from the guest room.”

Just hearing the name Tae, turned my mood down. The once happy and excited me became a sour and jealous one.

“Okay.” was all that I said and began eating. I know it’s rude but I can’t help myself from getting jealous everytime she mentions his name.

Tae

Mr.Kim

Jerk

Smug

They are synomyms to me.

And how can I even stop myselfbfrom getting jealous when I have all the reasons to be.

I mean they’ve been together for years and we’ve only been together for three months. How can I level to their bond? They even have their so called “son” I rolled my eyes when I remembered what happened at the reunion when Lisa just left me because tof them.

“Is everything okay?” Lisa asked, staring at me with her worried expression and I just nod.

“Yeah, I’m fine.” I lied while playing with my food.

“No, you’re not. What is it? Is it about having sex? I told you we can do it late—”

“No, no. It’s fine. It’s not that.” I was quick to answer her. I don’t want her to think that it’s only having sex that I’m concern at.

“If it’s not that. Then what is it?” she asked again.

I took a deep breath before saying what’s in my mind. I need to be honest or else she’ll think that I’m just horny for her. “I’m jealous. That’s just it.”

“Jealous of?” she raised her brow. “Are you jealous of Mr.Kim?”

“Who wouldn’t be?” I mumbled.

Lisa shook her head as if I’m unbelievable. “Why would you be jealous? You’re supposed to be happy that I’m here now.”

“How sure am I that you’re not going back to him?”

“Why would I go back?”

“Don’t answer my question with question Lisa. I asked you, how sure am I that you’re not going back to that prick?”

“Don’t call him a prick Jungkook. That’s bad. He’s not like that!” she fucking defended him.

“Oh, so you’re now defending him? Good. Just Good Lisa. I’m so impressed.”

“I can’t believe we’re arguing about this!” Lisa groaned before massaging her temple.

“Why not? I’m just asking you a simple question. Is it hard to answer?”

“If your question is about me leaving again, well you’re wrong. I have no reasons for leaving. I chose to be with you. What’s not clicking?”

“Then you’re willing yo leave that little boy alone? You sure you’re not changing your mind even if you see your fake son?” I snapped back.

My words must’ve hit Lisa hard that she got silent. Her mouth hunged opened and her eyes began to water.

That’s when it dawned on me that I am being a jerk. I can’t velieve I said those words to her just because I am jealous.

“Baby…baby..I didn’t mean to..” I stood and walked to her side. “I’m sorry, I’m sorry Lis..I didn’t mean to hurt you.” I apologized while kneeling in front of her.

What the fuck did I just do?

I just hurt my baby!

Lisa understandingly shook her head. He hands moved to cup my cheeks, “I am here for the reason that I chose you. So please do me a favor and trust me on this Jungkook. I love you more than anything.”

That was all that she had to say for me to be very emotional.

I stood and pulled her in for a hug. Pressing again her body next to mine, I whispered, “I trust you. I really do and I’m so sorry. I love you too baby.”

“It’s okay.” Lisa smiled. Then she gave me a peck on my lips. “Let’s continue our breakfast.” she said and we both started eating.

“I thought you will sleep with me last night?” I asked.

“I did sleep beside you. You didn’t realize I was with you the whole night?” She asked back and when she realized that I was shocked, she laughed so hard.

“You were with me the whole night? Why didn’t you wake me?”

“Because you were sleeping peacefully and to be honest I was so tired so I thought waking you might be a bad idea. I exactly know what you can do to me.” she rolled her eyes and I hate it that she knows what I am planning to do to her.

“And what exactly are you thinking that I will do to you?” I asked, faking my innocence.

Lisa got embarrased. Her cheeks blushed and she looked so cute because of it.

“I mean..you want to do it right?” she answered hesitantly.

“Do what? I wanted to cuddle. I didn’t know cuddling can be exhausting for you Lisa? Unless you were expecting something else?” i gave her a little smirk and my baby girl cupped her cheeks in embarrassment.

“No! I was just..”

“You were what?”

“I..nevermind!” she sighed.

“You were assuming I wanted to have sex? Is that it baby?” I bit my inner cheek to stop myself from laughing. Lisa is close to being a tomato now.

“No..” she shyly answered.

“You sure babe?” I pressed.

“I am.” she lied.

“You’re lying. Tell me Lis, you were thinking about it last night, weren’t you?” I teased again and this time she glared at me.

“Fine! Fine! I was thinking about it! Happy Mr.Jeon?” she easily got annoyed, making it entertaining for me.

I didn’t stop myself from laughing so hard at her answer.

Oh how much I love it when I tease her like this.

“What’s funny?” she asked while pouting.

“Nothing. It’s just that I was thinking about it too.” I replied honestly.

“You were? I thought you only wished for cuddles?”

“I said cuddle and more.”

Lisa and I started laughing after that.That morning we had an agreement to fullfill each other’s desire after work and I can’t wait.

Unlike the previous week, I wasn’t alone anymore in going to work.

I drove Yuna to her school while Lisa was with me the whole time and that was the first time in four years that I was at peace.

Lisa is with me now.

She chose me.

And I am not letting her go again.

Author’s Note

Short update for everyone.

Thank you for answering my previous question about Liskook. I can’t believe you were shipping them for years now.

Praying that they become real. Heheh

Fighting Liskook!

Making Up for the Lost Time

Short and boring update!

⚠ Light smut ahead

Lisa's POV

Jungkook is calling…

"Yes?" I answered.

"Done with your last period?" Jungkook asked in a high-pitched voice. He seemed to be in a really good mood today.

"Yes, I just finished my last load. I'm heading to the faculty first. Where are you?" I asked.

"I'm at my car waiting for you." he answered.

"How long have you been waiting?"

"Almost an hour now." he replied.

"What the? Why would you wait that long? You should just left without me."

"Why would I left without you?"

"Because your period finished earlier. Now you had to wait an hour long." I shook my head, feeling guilty towards Jungkook.

I hear him sigh, "But if I don't wait for you, you might forget about going home and worse you'll go back to that CEO."

"I know my way home Jungkook and my home is you. So you better stop thinking like this."

"But—"

"Shhh..I'm heading to you now. Stop. Just stop worrying!" I cut him off.

“Okay.” I heard him sigh again from the other line before I pressed the end call button.

I don’t know why but Jungkook’s trust issues this time just hightened up and I feel worried about it. He should know by now that I’m serious with this decision. Even if it was hard seeing Jihoon feel hurt, knowing the truth that I’m not his real mother, I still left them for Jungkook.

I could still recall Jihoon’s crying face when he found out that I’m not his real mother and that I will leave him. It was the most heartbreaking scene for a mother.

So I promised Tae that I will always visit them. And I will try to ease the little boy’s heartache.

But as long as Jungkook has trust issues, I cannot simply go to them. I have to make him feel first that I’m not leaving him again, that I’m here for good.

When I reached his car, his bunny smile welcomed me and it definitely was the best smile in the world. He looks like a human bunny. And the way his nose scrunches adds to his charm.

“You’re here” he murmured, kissing me. It was just a quick kiss but his familliar taste lingered on my lips. Nothing feels better than tasting him.

“See, I’m here now.” I smiled proudly as if I’m a trophy or some sort of a prize.

“I can’t believe we’re going home together!” he beamed.

“You should get used to it. From now on, I’ll be hitching with you. I returned my car to Ta.. I mean him” I was able to stop myself from mentioning Tae’s name before I ruin Jungkook’s mood. I swear his mood changes just a single mention of his name.

“You don’t have to use his car. Your car is still back at home. Although it’s a little old now. I can buy you a newer model if you like.” He suggested, nodding at his own decision which I don’t approve.

Here goes the rich Mr.Jeon again, flexing his wealth without him noticing.

“No thanks, I can use that car you gave me back then if It’s inconvenient of you to drive me around.”

“Who says it’s inconvenient? As a matter of fact, I like this set up. Both of us going to work and home together.” he grinned.

Jungkook guided me to the door of the passenger’s seat and helped me in. When he sat on the driver’s seat, I answered. “Me too, and it’s energy consuming.” I nodded.

“And we can spend more time together during the ride.” he smiled and took my hand in his. “Lisa..” he called out, his hands are now holding mine in a secure manner.

“Hmm?” I asked, looking at our hands.

“Let’s make up for the lost time, please?”

Hearing Jungkook’s excited tone and seeing his hopeful eyes made me feel all sorts of emotion.

I feel like this is the part where we have to let go of the bad memories that we had. That we have to walk forward hand in and hand.

That we need to make this relationship work as it deserves to be.

So I smiled, “Yes, We will. We’ll make up for the lost time and this time nothing or no one can separate us, even death”

“You have no idea how happy I am right now.” he smiled back.

“The feeling is mutual.”

Later that night…

It was already ten in the evening when Yuna fell asleep. And that was my cue to move. I slowly stood from the bed and walked to the bathroom to check myself.

This night, Jungkook asked me to sleep in his room. But I told him that we need to have Yuna sleeping first before trying

our chances.

After getting done with “some preparations”, I slowly walked out of the room and went straight to Jungkook’s room.

And bless me for witnessing such a great sculpture of a man because there he is, the great Mr.Jeon with just his boxers on. His hard chest and toned muscles exposed.

“Finally!” he grinned when he saw me walked in.

“You’re not sleeping yet?” I asked innocently as I walked towards him.

Jungkook’s eyes quickly scanned my body and there I knew it would turn him on. I was just wearing a silk nighties and had no underwear on.

His expression darkened as his gaze locked down my hardened nips against the soft fabric of m. “I can’t sleep cause I’m waiting for you. And look at this.” he moved closer and played with the strap of my nighties. “I thought we would be sleeping, why seduce me like this baby?” he questioned, smirking.

If I know, he likes the idea of being seduced like this.

“C’mon, I know you like it.” I smirked.

Jungkook’s hand sneaked around my waist pressing me to him while my hands moved to rest on his hard chest.

He flashed me his killer smile again and lifted me onto the edge of his desk.

“Now, more interestingly, what have we got here, Ms.Manoban?” He slid his hands up under my dress to my bare ass and licked his lips.

“You have to find out.” I playfully winked at him.

Jungkook drew back to look at me. “Now there’s a sight I love. My beautiful queen.”

I smiled, the yearning on the past years away as passion ignited between us again.

“Jungkook, l want to make love.” There I said it. I want him just as how much he wants me. And the thought that we are back for good is the most amazing feeling that I have felt for the past 4 years.

“We will baby girl. I’m gonna show you tonight how much I love you.” he uttered those words with so much emotion that I could feel every bit of sincerity in it.

Jungkook fell to his knees and crawled up between my thighs inhaling my scent. His hands moved to open my legs to welcome his face.

I sighed a deeply and let my head fall back as he rolled his tongue around my core, sucking and teasing at my wetness.

“Mmmm,” he groaned and kept licking and sucking as if I’m a melting ice cream, bringing my arousal higher and excitement to burning point.

My cunt started to twitch, and he roughly slid two fingers inside me, fucking me hard while bringing my clit to the brink of orgasm in a manner of tonguing.

“Oh fuck Kook, fuck, I’m going to…”

Just as my pelvis started to buck and stars twinkled in my peripheral vision, but he stopped and stood up.

“Jungkook!” I glared. Is this some sort of a play?

“Let’s not rush my love. We have a long night to go.” he said, leaning closer.

I smiled, “Yeah..”

And that was a night to remember.

The following days had been peaceful and happy for the both of us. Although we got busy taking care of our own issues, we made sure we’ll spend the night with each other.

Jungkook took care of his case against Jieun while I took care of changing my name from Lisa Kim to Lisa Manoban. It was easy changing my name because I was never really married in the first place.

And Jungkook was so happy about it. He said he can't stand when someone at the University calls me Mrs.Kim. He would glare at the students if he hears them calling me that way.

I also got a chance to visit Tae and Jihoon. So far, Jungkook was fine with as long as I will go back to him.

It was a saturday afternoon at Mr. Kim's House.

"You seemed really happy." Tae commented. At the moment, we are watching Jihoon color his drawing. It was his assignment for school.

"Me?" I chuckled. "Yeah, I am happy. Very much!"

"I'm glad. You look blooming these days maybe because of it." he smiled lightly at me before his eyes drew back to Jihoon who's too focus on his work.

"How about you? How are you? I hope Jihoon is fine." I guiltily asked.

"Don't worry about us. We're good. At first he was really having a hard time. He's always looking for you so I had to take a leave on work to spend time with him. I've been busy with work ever since he was born and I admit I don't make time for him that much so this is an opportunity for me to make up for him. And he seems to enjoy it."

"That's good to hear." I nodded as I felt relieved by Tae's words. Now I am certain that everything will be fine.

"By the way Lis, remember that teacher Jennie?" Tae asked as he shifts in his seat. It seems like he wants to share something really exciting about my former teacher.

"Yes, what about her?"

"I asked her to tutor Jihoon and she said yes. She will start tomorrow." Tae smiled, the kind of smile which reaches the eyes.

"Oh really? Wow! That's amazing!"

"Yeah, Jihoon is excited too." he chuckled. He really thinks she's the real mommy angel. I just nodded, I'm glad he likes her.

My gaze went back to the little boy who's still enjoying his painting session. Looking at him, I can't help but wish all the love for him. Even if I'm not by his side anymore, I promise to always look after him and make sure that he will grow as a happy kid.

Jungkook's POV

It was dark already when I arrived at the CEO's house. It's time to take Lisa home. I took my phone and dialled her number.

"Jungkook…"

"Baby, I'm here outside Mr. Kim's house. Come now. Let's go home."

"Oh okay, will be there in a minute." she answered rushly and so I wait. Just a minute and she was already running towards my car.

"What's with that smile?" she asked the moment I opened the door for her.

"Nothing. I'm just glad to see you." I replied with a genuine answer, making her nod. Lisa gave me a warm peck on the cheek before fixing her seatbelt.

"I can't believe I let you visit your ex-husband yet you'll just gave me a peck." I pouted, making it seem like I'm disappointed but the truth is I just want Lisa to baby me. I just want her attention, I just want her love.

Without saying any word, Lisa leaned forward and cupped both of my cheeks, "Kissing you should not be made out of guilt or demand. Kissing you must be made out of love." she explained before pressing her lips to mine.

I was surprised to be honest by her words. But she's right, it was wrong of me to demand something just because I gave her the permission to visit Mr. Kim and his son.

That night, Lisa made sure to give me the attention that I want since it was all I ever needed.

Lisa's POV

S*unday Morning*

“Muffin lady! Dada!” Yuna’s loud calling woke me and Jungkook so early in the morning.

I felt her little body jump on our bed as she hugged both of us.

“Ughh! Yuna it’s too early!” Jungkook groaned. His eyes were still shut close as he pulls me more to him.

That’s when my eyes widened when I realized both Jungkook and I are still naked after our heated sex last night. Only the white sheet covers both our naked bodies.

Shit!

Yuna settled between us, she’s too innocent to realize what we just did.

“Muffin Lady let’s eat! Yuna hungry” she whined.

I grabbed the sheets to my chest more hoping that she won’t peak underneath. Why did we even forgot to lock the door?

“Hmm.. Just ask your nanny Leni to cook you some breakfast. Muffin lady and dada is still tired.” Jungkook spoke again before pressing his face on the soft pillow.

“But I want muffin lady food…” she pouted again. I couldn’t even answer Yuna because my mind was busy thinking how we will get up without her knowing that we’re naked. And I’m really glad that Jungkook is lying in his stomach, if not his morning wood would be easily noticed by the little girl.

Finally the door opened and an apologetic Leni came in. She looked shy and couldn’t make an eye contact because of how Jungkook and I looks like.

“I’m sorry Ms. Lisa, Mr.Jungkook for coming in but I need to take Yuna now. Her breakfast is ready.”

“Yaayyy! Breakfast!” Yuna jumped out of the bed hearing it. Leni walked forward and took Yuna in her arms.

Jungkook just hummed while I gave her a little smile. Soon both of them got out. I was about to stand when Jungkook's strong pair of arms pinned me on the bed, he hovered above me, he licked his pink lips.

"Jungkook! Yuna might—" I warned.

He didn't say a word, intead he moved forward and began sucking a portion of my neck. "Jungkook, stop! it tickles!"

But he didn't, he just continued sucking on it and slowly moved to my nipples. He began sucking while massaging it.

I felt his hard cock pressed on my thigh and I tried to protest because Yuna might comeback any minute now.

"Shhh.. This will be quick." he whispered and the last thing I knew. He was already pounding in and out of me.

I feel like I'm about to go crazy at how fast he was. His hips was unbelievable powerful as he thrust his stone hard cock on mine.

My eyes focused on the door knob hoping that it won't open as was Jungkook doing me.

Jungkook on the other hand has his concentration on me. He was breathing heavily as he fucks me with full speed, he kissed my forehead and smiled "I'm close to cumming princess."

After feeling his cock brush inside my walls, I came so hard before him.

"Oh.. That was so good!" I bit my lip harshly, as I convulse beneath him with an earth shattering orgasm.

Few more pounds and Jungkook was already moaning my name.

He shoot all of his loads inside of me as he plop down above me. Both of us were catching our breath.

"God, how much I love you Lisa!"

His cock was still burried inside me when the door of his room open.

“Oh my God Jungkook!”

“Mother???”

Author’s Note

I know.

I know I’m terrible for leaving you behind. I’m so sorrryyyy.

And I apologize for the boring chapter.

Will try to finish the story as quick as possible.

Wedding

Lisa's POV

After getting caught, Jungkook and I took a bath to face his mother. And I sure don't know how to face her right now. The last time I've seen her was 4 years ago and our relationship back then was pretty good.

But after what happened, I don't know anymore how she will react at me. I'm sure she's mad that I left Jungkook back then and I would totally understand. I'm just hoping that she'll forgive me for it.

"I'm scared." I admitted once I came inside Jungkook's room. He was already dressed just like me.

"You'll be fine babe, don't worry." Jungkook smiled and took my hands in him. Just like the first time, here I am nervous again facing my love's mom.

Hand in hand we both went down to face his mom, and as I was expecting her to slap me or curse at me for hurting her son, it was the opposite.

Cause Mrs. Jeon ran to me and embraced me in her arms. Just like a mother and daughter's reunion, she cried and hugged me tightly.

"I'm so glad you're alive!" she sobbed. "Please don't leave my son again, please. We almost lost him when you left." Mrs.Jeon's confession crushed my heart to million pieces.

"I'm sorry… I didn't—" I felt so guilty seeing a mother cry like this.

"I don't care if you can't give us our grandchild, just please… Please don't leave Jungkook again." she cupped my cheeks to look into me with hopeful eyes.

"I won't leave him again. I promise mother." that's all that I needed to say to make her smile. She wiped her tears and pulled me in for another hug, tighter than before.

“Geez mom! Stop being dramatic!” Jungkook teased while chuckling. He looks at as if amused.

“Who’s being dramatic when it was you who almost jumped off a bridge crying like a little baby while screaming Lisa’s name? Thank goodness someone saw him and was able to stop him from jumping off the Han River.” her mom rolled her eyes ar him.

My head snapped to Jungkook, “Is this true?” I asked and he looked away, feeling a little embarrased.

“Ughh.. I’m hungry! Let’s eat.” he turned and walked straight into the kitchen where Yuna is eating.

“That boy really!” Mrs. Jeon sighed as we both watch him leave.

“I have so many thing to ask you and to talk to you but right now I’m just so happy that you are back with my son.” the old woman smiled, taking my hand for her to squeeze.

“I’m so sorry for all the trouble I caused you and you son. I will explain everything mother.” I bowed.

“There’s no need. I just want both of you to be happy. I heard from Jungkook about your condition Lisa and trust me, we don’t think less of you for it. We will still support your relationship whatever it is that you can and can’t give. So please don’t be hard on yourself, Lisa.” She understandingly explained and I feel like shit for worrying about being infertile back then. If I only knew that they are as understanding as this.

“Thank you so much for your support. I feel so blessed to have you.”

“So are we.” she smiled again. “Let’s go and I will join you for breakfast.

That morning Jungkook’s father also came and spent the day with us. They thanked me over and over again for coming back which I still feel guilty.

But I cannot turn back the time now, all I can do is to move forward and make up for the lost time with Jungkook.

~•~

“Lisa!!!”

“Lisa… Where are you???”

“Baby?”

I ran down the stairs and almost stumbled on it out of panic of Jungkook’s shouting.

“I’m here!” I answered, I saw him running towards me with an eager expression on his face, as if he was to share with me the best news in the world.

It was already 4 in the afternoon and he just came back from the court’s hearing. And damn, he looks so good with his suit and tie, typical hot Mr. Jeon.

“Baby!!!” Jungkook hugged me so tightly. “Baby, I won! I won against Ji-eun! She’ll go to jail!” he proudly announced too loudly in my ear as if he won the lottery.

When we pull back from the hug, I had to look around if Yuna heard him because as far as I know, Ji-eun is still her mother.

Thankfully, Yuna is out with the nanny. She said she wanted to buy something on the toy shop and the nanny volunteered to go with her.

“Really?” I smiled, asking the question. But deep inside I feel really bad.

I know Ji-eun did a lot of mistakes to us but she is still Yuna’s mom and I kind’a feel bad about it.

Jungkook must’ve notice my faked reaction so he moved closer to raise my chin.

He looked at me in the eye and asked “Aren’t you happy? She’s finally getting to pay for the things she did to us.” Jungkook asked in worry.

“I am, but.. How about Yuna?” I said shaking my head. If she’ll go to jail then what would happen to her daughter?

“Shhh..You’re overthinking. Yuna will be fine. She’ll have the best mother which is you and she’ll easily forget about Ji-eun. Everything will be perfect with just the three of us.”

I bit my lip in frustration at how Jungkook said those words. I can’t believe he’s making me a mom for Yuna when she has her own mother, alive and kicking.

Me standing as her mother is not what I expected to happen when we got back together. I don’t hate Yuna. To be honest, I love her. But this is a fake family that jungkook wants to have. Neither of us are her real parents and I’m scared of the day that comes that Yuna will hate the both of us for taking her away from her real parent.

Things like this makes me think that Jungkook just really held on to Yuna because he knows I can’t ever give him the child that he wanted.

My insecurity of being unfertile was the reason why Ji-eun easily manipulated me for years. And though I accepted that fact that this is already my condition. It still hurts to think that we have to use Yuna just to be complete.

“Hey..please don’t be silent. We should at least celebrate. Although Ji-eun’s sentence is just for 5 years, that’s enough time for Yuna to warm more up to you and at least treat you like you’re her real mother.” Jungkook eagerly said like I agree to all of his ideas.

But I didn’t opposed anymore. I just smiled and nodded. Cause if I want a future with him, it’ll be with Yuna for sure. Take it or leave it.

Jungkook’s POV

“Mr. Jeon, you look too tensed. It’s as if you’re the one to be married.” Hoseok joked, lightly laughing at me. I realized he was right. I am literally shaking as I wait for Lisa to arrive together with the other girls.

Today is Eunwoo and Tzuyu’s wedding and here I am, palms sweaty, heart beating so fast as I tap the floor of the church impatiently.

I am nervous, yes.

For seeing Lisa because she will arrive anytime soon wearing her white bridesmaid's dress which I didn't even see when she bought it because she said she want to surprise me with it.

That's why I am nervous and excited to see her. I know Tzuyu is pretty and probably the prettiest in this venue but in my eyes, Lisa will always be a goddess. That's how much I adore her.

"Sir, the girls are here." Namjoon announced, who also looked good in his white suit. He will stand as Eunwoo's bestman.

My eyes quickly scanned the parking area where a white van arrived. I smiled once I see the girls emerging out of it. All of them look really good.

Soon my heart raced when I finally saw a glimpse of my baby who was the last to get out of it the vehicle.

She looks like a doll in her white dress as if she's the bride. And this part right here is what I am giddy about.

The part where she looks like a bride.

Oh how I wish to marry her.

I badly want to marry this girl soon and looking at her now just heightened up my plan.

I honestly can't wait any longer. I want to propose and ask her to marry me but the timing is really bad.

First, it is Tzuyu and Eunwoo's month so I dare not to take away the spotlight from them. Second, Lisa just finished processing fixing her family name which is stupidly Kim Lisa back to Manoban Lisa.

I swear I hate hearing our students calling her Mrs. Kim that's why I asked her to change her name quick before I lose temper.

"Am I that pretty that you can't keep your mouth close?" I heard her voice and when I focused on her, I saw her grinning

as if teasing me. I didn't even notice that she's already beside me.

"You have no idea." was my only answer.

She smiled at me "Thank you! "

Soon, we locked arms as the marching began. Lisa and I slowly walked on the aisle of the church. I took a deep breath and imagined us both in Tzuyu and Eunwoo's place. "One day, You'll walk you to the altar too, but you as my bride." I whispered enough for her to hear.

With that, Lisa's arms tightened around mine and blushed at the idea.

Soon.

We finally parted to get to our seats. She was on the left wing where the bridesmaids are while I was at the right where the groomsmen are.

Tzuyu finally walked down the aisle and Eunwoo didn't look any more emotional as he waited for his bride.

The whole time during the wedding ceremony, the girls were silently weeping out of joy. From time to time, I would glanced at Lisa who looked emotional too. Her nose has gotten red and it was too much of a scene for me. I don't know if she's crying out of happiness or because she wants to be married like Tzuyu.

I heard girls gets jealous towards other girls who marries their love. If that's the case, then she shouldn't be because my proposal will be anytime soon.

The reception followed and the guests and the families shared their blessings and best wishes to the newly wed couples.

At the moment, the girls were having light drink on one table while I was with the boys on another table.

"So, Mr. Jeon, what is it that you want to ask of us?" Namjoon asked.

I glanced at the girl's table first before answering. I don't want Lisa to know what I'm planning.

"I'm planning my proposal 2.0 soon and I need your help." I answered with a low voice.

"Oh my god! Lisa is sure lucky, If I were Mr. Jeon, I would give up already. What if she ditches you again?" Jimin laughed so hard. And I shook my head.

"That's why I need your help, I need to make sure she'll not leave before I could even propose to her. "

"That's easy! Let's just lock her in your room. Problem solved." Yoongi said.

"That's so unromantic of you! No wonder you got no girlfriend yet!" Jin teased the now drunk Yoongi.

"Don't believe him Mr. Jeon. His ideas are the worst. If I were you, take her to the stars, the beach to the sky. Anywhere romantic and propose their." Jin suggested making me nod.

"Ughh.. That's always shown on those dramas. Of course they are romantic but why not make it more unique like propose to her in school where you meet her and reinact your first meeting?" Hoseok clasped his hands as if it was the most creative suggestion in the world.

"Dude, that's how Mr. Jeon proposed back then but she didn't come." Namjoon reminded.

"Ohh.. Sorry!" Hoseok grinned.

"Hmm.. I bet Lisa will still accept your proposal even if you just do it at home, simple yet meaningful." Bambam said. I smiled at the suggestion though. To be honest, I'm thinking about just proposing back at home.

Nothing grand yet romantic. But I'm still thinking about it. Just as they said, any proposal is good as long as Lisa won't leave me this time.

That's why I'm asking for their help this time just to make sure she'll not leave again. Hopefully she'll answer me with a yes.

Class 3-C POV

Meanwhile on the girls table

“What do you think are the boys talking right now?” Jeongyeon curiously asked while glancing at the table where the boys at.

“Probably about girls. Boys do talk about girls all the time.” Dahyun answered.

Lisa’s brow creased, guessing that her man is talking about another girl. She glanced at him to see if he’s checking other girls but it seems not.

“They seem serious. I wonder what it is they’re talking about?” Chaeyoung rubbed her chin. “Nevermind I’ll just ask Jimin later.” she said.

“Guys, did you hear the MC? it’s time to catch the bouquet!” Jeongyeon squeaked in excitement.

“What about it?” Lisa asked.

“It means the one who’ll catch it will be married next! I want to get married soon so let’s go!” Dahyun stood and pulled Lisa who was against it.

Rosé stayed at the table watching her bestfriend amusely. She can’t join the fun cause she’s already married.

“I don’t want to. It’s embarrassing.” Lisa protested, tugging her arms from Dahyun’s strong grip.

“Come on Lisa, what if Mr. Jeon gets the thigh garter? Would you want him to wear the garter on another girl’s leg?”

Hearing this, Lisa’s nose fumed in anger. Jungkook would never dare to touch other girl’s legs. She’ll make sure he’ll not get laid forever if he does.

With full determination, she went straight to the stage along with 20 other girls. She looked at them insecurely and imagined if her boyfriend will touch one of them later.

“I will not lose!” she whispered to herself.

Soon Tzuyu walked in front of them and turned her back at them. The she signalled “Ready, set, go!”

Tzuyu threw the bouquet aiming at the group of ladies at her back.

And Lisa, who felt very competitive that time for the sake of Mr. Jeon. jumped a little too high compared to the other girls making her the actual winner.

Tzuyu glanced at her back and smiled upon seeing that it was Lisa who caught the bouquet.

“I won! I won!” Lisa, Jeongyeon and Dahyun were rejoicing. As well as the boys.

“That’s my baby girl right there!” Mr. Jeon clapped his hands from afar.

“Wow! Lisa looks like she would kill just to get that bouquet.” Jimin chuckled.

“She’s just competitive. My baby is so competitive.” Mr. Jeon brushed his nose. He’s acting like a proud father.

“Well, lucky is the guy who’ll get the thigh garter. He’ll get to touch Lisa’s legs.” Bambam smiled. If Lisa was just single, Bambam would definitely fight just to get that garter.

“What?” Mr. jeon’s attention was grabbed by his word. What does he mean by touch Lisa’s legs?

“Oh you forgot that the bachelor who will win the garter can wear the same garter on Lisa’s leg?” Yoongi explained.

When Jungkook realized this, he stood from his table and spoke “Where is that goddamn garter!?”

The boys secretly laughed at him. Mr. Jeon’s eyes was burning in determination to get wherever the garter is. He won’t let any guy touch his girl.

Over his dead body!

Finally, when the MC called for the bachelors on stage, Mr. Jeon was the first to walk there. Yoongi, Bambam, Jin, Hoseok and Namjoon joined some of the bachelors too. But it was never their intention to win. They just want to join and

give way to Mr. Jeon who looks like he would kill just to get that garter.

“So the game will be like this, we will play a music and you’ll pass this garter to each other. Once the music stops, the person who’s holding the garter will be out. The process will continue until only one is left.” the MC explained.

“Easy!” Jungkook smirked feeling confident.

Lisa who is watching in her seat was nervous. She’s hoping for her man to win. She doesn’t want other guys to touch her. Her body belongs to Jungkook alone even if it’s just for a game.

“Let the game begin!”

And the game started…

Author’s Note

Do you think Mr. Jeon will win?

Anyway, how would you want your boyfriend to propose to you?

The Baby Groom

Class 3-C POV

The group of men formed a circle and with the cue of the MC, the music started playing.

They started passing the garter to each other and everytime the garter touches Mr. Jeon's hands, he would pass it quickly to the guy next to him.

One by one, the number of participants decreases. And soon only three of them are left: Mr. Jeon, Bambam and a good looking guy name Jaehyun which is Eunwoo's cousin.

"This is exciting hon!" Chaeyoung clapped her hands from her seat. Everyone's attention was at the three guys.

"I know right! Look at Mr. Jeon's face. He looks so serious, I bet he'll win." Jimin commented while holding Chae's hand. They are now seated next to each other and enjoying the little game.

Even Lisa was tensed at the most awaited game of the evening. She definitely knows what's going on inside her boyfriend's head. She knows he will do his best to win, for her.

Meanwhile, Mr. Jeon was sure that Bambam will make way for him and so he's only threatened towards the other guy who seems as competitive as him.

"Bambam, take the garter and lose." he ordered his former student but Bambam just smiled and shook his head.

"Sorry Mr. Jeon, I won't lose this time." he smirked. Bambam won't let Mr. Jeon win this time. This is his only chance to get close to his crush after so many years away.

Mr. Jeon was surprised to hear this. He felt a little betrayed but at the same time challenged. "Really? Then challenge accepted."

And the music started again. The boys passed to garter to each other until the music stopped, the garter stopped at the guy named Jaehyun but he was too quick to throw it at Bambam's side which succesfully landed on Bambam's hand.

Mr. Jeon secretly laughed at this. Bambam is finally out. And only the two of them are left.

'The guy is good looking. I can't lose to this one' , Mr. Jeon thought.

No words are spoken between them. Yet the audience could feel the tension between the two. By the way they stare at each other screams as if they'll fight to death.

"At this point, the game will be played differently. The one who gets to hold the garter when the music stops, will be declared as the winner. So, let the music begin!"

And at that point, both good looking men pass the garter to each other. Mr. Jeon makes sure that he holds the garter tightly everytime it was pass to him.

The music finally stopped and the garter fell on Jaehyun's hands but Jungkook charged forward and took it from him.

"I will kill you if you don't give this motherfucking garter to me." that's all that he had to say for Jaehyun to let go of the garter. He was frightened to be honest.

"And we have a winner!" the MC announced while Jungkook smiled in victory.

"I can't believe I won." Mr. Jeon jumped up and down showing the garter to the audience.

Lisa also stood and clapped her hands. She's so proud of his man. Actually, the whole class of 3-C was.

Jungkook looked around and searched for Lisa. When he spotted her on her chair, he smiled and mouthed "Baby, I won!"

Eunwoo and Tzuyu was smiling at the turn of events.

"This couple is really competitive." Tzuyu laughed.

"For real, I hope they get married soon." Eunwoo added.

“For sure they will.”

The MC spoke again “And finally we have our baby bride and baby groom, may I request the both of you to come forward?” he requested.

So Lisa stood and Mr. Jeon ushered her to the stage. Lisa bit her lip as she felt nervous, tensed and excited. Cause fortunately she got paired with her man.

“Normally, the winners will just dance—” the MC started which made Mr. Jeon frown. He thought he can get to wear the garter on her legs?

“But this evening we’ll spice things up and let the baby groom wear the garter on the baby bride’s leg.”

The way Mr. Jeon smiled after hearing this, Lisa’s ears grew hot when she was made to sit on a chair while Mr. Jeon kneeled before her.

“May I?” Mr. Jeon asked teasingly, holding the hem of her white dress.

“Su—sure!” she answered shyly. Pink blush was now forming on her face. Especially when Mr. Jeon lifter her dress exposing her smooth and long legs.

“Wetweeew” Jimin shouted.

The audience are being entertained by both good looking couple. Especially the newly wed and Mr. Jeon’s former students. They love watching how Lisa covers her face in awkwardness while Mr. Jeon was lifting her skirt.

Soon, his hands was already inside her…

dress as he slowly lift the garter on her left leg.

“So smooth.” He complimented. Her legs are really smooth and it’s one of his favorites in her.

“I guess we’re taking time.” she reminded him.

“Don’t mind them, I’m sure they’re enjoying it too. Later I’m gonna shower these legs kisses as I cannot do it here.”

Lisa felt a little uncomfortable when Jungkook's hands reached her upper thigh.

'Is it fine to get aroused?' She asked herself, because she is. Even the slightest touch of Jungkook's sends shivers in the depths of her body. She call it the "The Law of Mr. Jeon's touch"

Luckily, Mr.Jeon's hands withdraw after securing the garter in her thigh but he didn't stop himself from moving forward to cross the gap between their faces.

The audience gasped when they witnessed how the baby groom, all of a sudden kissed his baby bride.

Their lips entangled as he held her cheeks sexurely. That moment they took the spotlight from the newly wedded couple. But both Tzuyu and Eunwoo were just glad to see two people lost in each other just like how they are.

Few minutes later they are already dancing to a sweet song. Mr. Jeon danced the night with Lisa and both of them were happy and contented.

Jungkook's POV

Later that evening

"How do you think will they react to our gift?" Lisa asked curiously. She was already wiping the make up from her face with some wetted cotton.

"I think they'll be happy with it." I smiled, reaching out to massage her shoulders from the back. She was still wearing the white gown from the wedding.

"Paris is such a romantic place." she smiled at her own reflection, remembering the Paris-tour we gifted the couple.

"And our "20 Best Sex Postions Book" will come in handy for them when they get there. " I chuckled.

"You didn't have to include that one!" Lisa rolled her eyes at me over the mirror. She was really against the idea of giving

them that book.

“Why not? What do you think they will do in their honeymoon? Measure the Eiffel tower?” This time, I didnt stop myself from laughing loudly which made my baby roll eyes again.

“I don’t think Eunwoo is as horny as Someone out there” she answered back.

“We don’t know about that. Some guys seems innocent whenever in public but the wildest creature whenever in bed.”

Lisa looked at me and rubbed her chin “That, I guess you’re right.” she smiled.

“Do you know someone like that?” I asked. Because I don’t think I’m like that.

“You of course.” her answer surprised me.

“Me? What do you mean? I’m very decent whether in public or in bed.” right?

“How do you call yourself decent whenever we’re in bed? You’re totally the opposite.”

“What? I’m just doing my own thing, making you feel good.”

“Yeah yeah the way you do me feels like it’s the end of the world.”

“Baby, you’re exaggerating. I’m being in my gentlest whenever we make love.”

“Wow! You call that gentle? Remember what you did last last night when Yuna ended up knocking at our door thinking that there is an earthquake.”

“Because there was really an earthquake.”

“It’s just your Jeon Jr.!”

“If you don’t believe me, I can show you my rough side. I swear not only Yuna will knock but the whole neighbourhood” I offered and both of us started laughing.

When the laughter subsided, Lisa continued wiping her face.

“Baby?” I called out.

“hmm?”

“What do you think of me when we first met?” I asked curiously. I wonder how she thought of me back then.

“At first I thought you were a jerk for sending me to detention when it was your fault why you got punched.”

Yeah.. I remember. Our epic meeting.

“And after that?” I asked again.

“I started admiring you when I heard that you helped my classmates with their troubles. Also, you saved me from my uncle and took me in. That time I fell in love so hard. But you were still with Ji-eun so I didn’t told you how I feel. I don’t want to ruin your relationship.”

I almost puke the moment she opened up about Ji-eun. Those times were the dumbest version of myself.

“I see..”

“How about you? What do you think of me back then?” Lisa asked, slightly curious.

“The first time I saw you sleeping in that room, I got intrigued over your face. You look so tempting, I don’t know why but I wanted to kiss you so bad that time.”

“Really?”

“Yeah.. And thank god you punched me before I could even kiss you. I’m sure i’ll end up getting fired if the school learns that a teacher kissed his student.”

“hmmm. That would be hilariously funny!”

“Anyway, after that I became more interested in you. And I realized later that I already fell in love.”

“How did you realized?” she asked.

“I can feel it in my heart. The way it beats for you. The way I crave to see you everyday. And I hate it when men takes a

move on you. I haven't been jealous like that even in my previous relationship. It was only you you who made me feel that way. Also, Ji-eun asked me to kick you when I asked her if you could stay at my house but I realized that I would rather break up with Ji-eun than make you leave."

"I see." Lisa nodded.

"We've come so far Lisa." I said as I watch her adoringly. It feels so good that after all these years you will still end up with the one you love.

"Yeah and I'm so happy that we got back together." Lisa turn around and stood to face me. Her make up was already wiped yet she's still as beautiful as ever.

"You are beautiful my love." I smiled after kissing her soft plump lips. "Are you ready?"

Looking confused, she asked. "Ready for what?" she asked.

"For sleep, please come now I need some cuddles." I plead.

"What a baby." she rolled her eyes again for the hundredth time.

"Shall I help you remove the dress?" I asked, my hands hovered over her body, ready to remove the distraction.

"Hold it Mr.Jeon. let me do it myself." she stopped me before I even start to unzip it.

"Why not?" I asked innocently, blinking.

"I'm just too tired to have sex." she reasoned out.

"Who says we're having sex? Baby, why are you always thinking about sex?"

"No I'm not!"

"Yes you are."

"No, I'm really not!"

"Yes you are. Do you want to have sex that bad? I can give it—" I started unzipping my pants when she glared at me.

"You're bad!" She huffed and walked towards the comfort room. I heard her lock it and I waited.

“You’re so cute you know.” I laughed at how I can piss her that easy. Anyway, I don’t want to tire her that much because lately she’s been complaining about her sore muscles. That’s why I just want to cuddle this time.

As I wait for her, I tried to make up my mind.

“It’s better early than lose her again.” I whispered, nodding at myself.

When she emerged from the bathroom, Lisa was already fresh in her pajamas. She lied down on the bed and the clingy me made it’s way to press myself on her back, cuddling her in my arms.

“I’m mad at you.” she huffed. I know she is but It’s so amusing to tease her.

“I know.” I replied. I kissed her hair softly. “Let’s sleep baby, tomorrow is a big day.”

Before I could even receive an answer, I already heard her light snoring.

I smiled and scooted closer. “I can’t believe you’d fall asleep that quick. Such a baby!”

Author’s Note

Sorry for the short chapter.

The Stranger

Lisa's POV

"Baby, could you just pick Yuna from school?" Jungkook asked when I reached the faculty after my morning period.

"Why? Won't Leni pick her up?" I asked. It is always the nanny's duty to pick her.

"She just called. She said she's not feeling well. Is it okay baby? If not, I can just ask mom to pick Yuna cause I still have a class—

"No, it's okay. I will pick her up." I offered.

"You sure?"

"Of course. Besides I want to check Jihoon too."

"Oh.. Okay.. So I'll see you later 'kay? Please drive safely baby."

"I will. I love you."

"I love you too." one kiss and I made my way to my car.

I drove straight to Yuna's toddler school thinking how Jungkook loves the little girl so much. To him, Yuna is his own child. He never thinks of Yuna as another parent's kid. His love for her is just so genuine like that of a real father.

And I feel sad that I didn't get to feel the love of my own father because he died so early. My mother also abandoned me and my uncle abused me. All my life, family is just a dream for me. Even up until now, I cannot make my own family.

I can't bear a child.

And it's so frustrating that I wanted it so bad but I can't. I want to have my own Jihoon too. I want to have my own Yuna too. But why? Why is life so cruel to me? Why can't I be pregnant of Jungkook's child?

Is it really my faith to be Yuna's second mother? Is it Ji-eun's punishment that she got parted from her own daughter?

Only God knows. But life is sure complicated.

My thought was cut when I noticed that I was already at the Toddler school's gates. When I got out, I noticed most parents were already picking their child.

And the first one I noticed was Ms. Jennie Kim holding Jihoon in her hand.

(AN: Imagine this is Jihoon)

"Mommy! mommy! " Jihoon ran to me.

"Baby! How are you? I missed you so bad!" I didn't stop myself from giving him butterfly kisses all over his cute little face.

"I missed you too mommy! Visit Jihoon please?" Jihoon plead. My heart burst in uwus seeing how cute he is.

"I will baby! I'm gonna visit you soon." I promised.

I didn't notice Ms Jennie was already beside me smiling ear to ear.

"He really misses you. He keeps talking about you" Ms. Jennie commented.

"Me too. By the way, How are you and Mr. Kim?" I asked, making my former teacher blush. I heard from Tae that thay are getting to know each other better.

Ms. Jennie Kim's previous marriage failed so she's taking light steps to opening up in a new relationship. But Tae seems eager to make a move on her. He kept on sending me text messages asking me questions about what Ms. Jennie likes and dislikes and I willingly answer them all.

To be honest, I want them to end up together. They look like a perfect match. Also, Jihoon likes her very much. It's rare for Jihoon to warm up easily on strangers but he did with Ms. Kim. Probably because his mommy angel and Ms. Jennie looks like twins.

“We’re doing good Lisa. He’s on a business trip that’s why I offered to take care of Jihoon for a moment.” she explained.

“Thank you so much for looking after him Ms. Jennie.”

“It’s nothing. Besides, I really like this kid and his father.. I mean.. Jihoon.” she said scratching her head.

“Mr. Kim is a very good man.”

“He is. By the way, please tell Jungkook that we miss him. Jisoo said we need some catching up to do.”

“I will tell him.” I said then went back to kiss Jihoon “Be a good boy, okay?”

“Yes, mommy! Jihoon good boy!” he proudly announced. Just one more hug and kiss from Jihoon and I proceeded to the classroom where I suppose Yuna is.

But once I saw the figures under the tree nearby the little building, I almost got a heart attack.

Cause I saw Yuna talking to a stranger wearing a leather jacket paired with a hat and a mask. My pulse quicken as my heart beat fasten. I ran towards them but the stranger noticed me appoaching and he quickly left leaving Yuna behind.

“Baby! Baby are you okay?” I asked checking Yuna from head to foot.

“Yes Muffin Lady, Yuna okay.” She smiled as if nothing happened. I hugged her so tightly in my arms. I’ve never been scared like this before.

(AN: Imagine this is Yuna)

“Oh my god baby! Who was that? Why are you talking to a stranger?”

“Muffin Lady, Yuna like stranger”

“No Yuna. Don’t talk to that stranger again! Okay? Listen to me please.” Jungkook would kill me if he learns this.

I quickly carried her in my arms but before leaving, I reported first what happened to the school and asked for a better security. How can they let a stranger talk to the kids.

Ms. Momo apologized for allowing the guy to pick Yuna. She thought it was Jungkook.

I guess I got lucky this time but what if the case were different? What if that was a kidnapper?

What does he want from Yuna? At this point I'm really really scared.

When both Yuna and I reached our car, I asked her again "Baby, what does the stranger want from you? What did he say to you?"

"Stranger is good muffin lady!"

"Why would you say that stranger is good? Did he gave you anything?"

"Nothing Muffin lady."

"Then what did he say?"

"Yuna forgot?" I shook my head in frustration. It's so damn hard to talk to an innocent child.

"Does the stranger always comes to school to see Yuna?" I asked gently. I hope she would answer me this time.

"Yes, stranger always play Yuna."

"What???"

"Muffin Lady I'm hungry." I swear I'm gonna lose my mind right now."

Lisa you need to calm down! I kept telling myself as I drive Yuna to our house. When we got there I immediately asked Leni if she knows about the stranger but she said she hasn't seen anyone talk to Yuna there.

I was so nervous and scared so I told Jungkook what happened when he came back from school.

"What???" just as I thought, he would panic. "What do you mean a stranger has been seeing Yuna?" Jungkook asked.

"I asked her and she said she's playing with that stranger. What should we do Jungkook?"

"Have you reported to the school?"

“I did. They said they would tighten the security this time.”

“Motherfuckers not doing their job properly!” Jungkook said through gritted teeth. He stood and took his phone then dialled someone who I assume as police to report the incident.

I know he is terrified at the news that he hasn’t even change his uniform. That’s how he is when it comes to Yuna. That’s how he loves her.

I was about to rub his back to help him calm down when he turned, “Where is Yuna?”

“She’s already sleeping in her room.” I replied.

“I’ll sleep there for the night.” Jungkook kissed my forehead and just left me afterwards.

The following days, Jungkook had been spending the nights at Yuna’s room. It’s as if he’s scared that someone would take her away from him. In addition, it has been a routine for him to send and fetch Yuna from school just to make sure she’s safe.

Weekends were spent for the “Father and daughter” bonding. Jungkook explained that he needs to step up his father skills to Yuna or else she’ll entertain stangers for a playmate, and that’s the part where I got left out.

There is a pinch of jealousy in my heart towards the little girl by how Jungkook spends most of his times with her but I definitely understand.

I just hope he won’t forget that I’m here too.

Jungkook’s POV

Sunday morning

“You’re getting better at that Yuna!” I ruffled the little girl’s hair. This day I taught her how to decorate her own cupcakes and we’re both really pleased at the result.

“Really dada? You like it? “

“Yes, little girl I like it.” I smiled, admiring the unicorn design she made on her cupcakes. She’s really creative. “Can I

take a bite?" I asked.

"Sure dada, eat cupcake." she excitedly took one to feed me "Say ahh dada"

I took a bite and munch on it. "hmm.. Really tasty!" I'm sure Lisa would also like this.

"Leni!"

"Yes, Mr. Jeon?"

"Could you please ask Lisa to join us here."

"Mr. Jeon, Ms. Lisa already left a while ago."

"Huh? Where did she go?"

"She said she'll do the grocery."

"Why? We still have enough supply here."

"Maybe she has somewhere else to go to Mr. Jeon."

Somewhere else to go to.

That silenced me. I wonder if she'll visit Jihoon today. I mean, i haven't really spent much time with her for the past week for my attention was always on Yuna.

The reason is because I wanted to make time for her. After that "Stranger" incident, I got really scared that someone might take Yuna from me if I lose my guard down. What if Ji-eun hired some child kidnappers to take her? It's possible even if she's locked in jail.

I am too worried to lose Yuna that my schedule got messed up. Even my plans of proposal for Lisa was pushed a little further than the planned date because of it.

But where could she possibly go? I tried dialling her number but she won't pick up.

"Baby, where are you?"

Lisa's POV

I tensedly waited on the bench for Ji-eun as she was being

fetched by the jail guards. And when she finally stepped in the visitors area, I noticed the drastic change in her appearance.

She's no longer the beautiful Ms. Ji-eun that people would imagine. Her appearance totally changed probably because of stress and her environment.

"What do you want?" she asked raising her brow. I can see that she got disappointed that I'm her visitor.

"I.. I just want to visit—"

"You just want to laugh at me right?"

"No, Ji-eun that's not—"

"Cut the bullshit. Go straight to the point. Why are you here? I heard you and Jungkook are happily back together so why visit me if you're happy?" Ji-eun would roll her eyes everytime she mentions the word happy, I know it disgusts her.

"Are you attempting to kidnap Yuna?" there I asked her the question. The question that's been bugging me for a week now. Is she behind the stranger scheme.

"What?" she asked, confused.

"You're trying to kidnap her right?" I asked again. I'm sure it is her. Nobody else would take interest in Yuna other than her own mother.

"What do you mean bitch? I'm locked up here. How can I kidnap my own daughter? And what do you mean try to kidnap? Did someone attempted to kidnap her?" Ji-eun was almost yelling. By the look on her face, it only showed one thing–the face of a worried mother.

Yes, it is. That's how I react everytime I hear something bad about Jihoon back then. Or is she just acting? She's an actress right?

"Someone came to her school—"

"Motherfucker! I swear to god if you let something happen to my daughter, I'm gonna make you bitch pay! And where is Jungkook? Can't he do something about this? My daughter is in danger!"

This time I am certain that Ji-eun is not acting. She's really worried. Therefore she's not the person behind it. Then who's that person? What does he want from Yuna?

"Lisa?.. Lisa are you listening?" Ji-eun cut me off my trance. "I said, where is Jungkook? Where is my daughter?"

"They're back at home. She's fine. Jungkook is keeping an eye on her 24/7." I replied making her sigh in relief.

"I know he will not fail me on my daughter. But I just wanted to make sure. He treats Yuna like his own and I'm more than certain that he cares for my daughter more than he cares for you." she chuckled like a crazy woman.

I can't believe this! One moment she was worried and now she's mocking my position in Jungkook's life.

"Excuse me?" I asked.

"Must be hard to accept the truth, right Lisa? You will never be anything else but just a decoration in Jungkook's life. Probably just his sex toy. But my daughter is more than that. He treats her like his own blood, someone you'll never be.

"Shut up!" I glared.

Don't you dare cry Lisa. She's good at this. Making me feel worthless when I'm not.

"No, you shut up! No child, no opinion."

Ouch!

"I'm leaving, it's a waste talking to you" I stood and collected my things.

"It's a waste talking to you too." she barked back and I turned my heel as quick as possible before hearing more hurtful words from her.

Settling on the driver's seat, I clenched my fist on my chest which is badly aching. The way Ji-eun spits those words could still affect me after all.

Suddenly, I got dizzy. I feel cold. "Gosh! I want to throw up so bad!" I covered my mouth as I step out of the car again and started puking on the trashbin closeby.

What is this? What's happening to me?

Author's Note

Who do you think is the stranger? Any guess?

Btw, we're close to the ending to just hang in there. Muwahhh 😘

Stranger's Motives

Lisa's POV

Jungkook's worried face was the first sight I saw when I drove my way to the garage. He was just wearing his night robe and a pair of slippers as he was walking back and forth outside our house. And I wonder if it's me he's waiting for.

"Oh god! You're finally here! Where have you been?" Jungkook asked, eyes wide as if I came from a crime scene. He pressed me on chest and locked me there with his strong arms as he gave me kisses on my head. I could hear the fast beating of his heart against his chest.

"I.. I just went out to buy something." I replied, wiggling myself out of his embrace.

"Buy something? What is it? Why did it took so long?" he raised his brow as if not believing me.

"I also went for a walk." I added. I can't tell him I went to visit Ji-eun, he'd be more worried.

"Lisa it's ten in the evening. Why would you go out for a walk as laye as this? And what happened to you? You look pale. Are you okay?" he asked continuous questions while cupping my cheeks in his hands.

"Yeah.. I'm fine don't worry." As much as I'm happy that he looks concerned, I'm still too tired to talk to him. After throwing up everything I had in my system, I fell asleep on my car and when I woke up, it's already dark.

"Baby—" I convinced myself to not listen to him because I'm too lost with my own thoughts. First, I'm too worried about what happened to Yuna and the fact that I learnt that Jieun's not behind it is not helping my brain either.

Second, Ji-eun's hurtful words still stings in my heart, I guess she'll never change.

Third, I'm still hurt over Jungkook who is for everyone's information MY BOYFRIEND for ignoring me for a whole damn week.

If he managed to ignore me for a whole week, then I'll do just that. I can give him some time alone. I won't bother their father and daughter bonding anymore.

Jungkook's POV

Lisa locked our room this time, as if not allowing me to sleep with her. Of course I have my spare key but it seems like she's not in the mood to talk. She also doesn't look good. I mean she looks sick and I'm fucking worried.

What now Jungkook?

I admit I had been terrible with my time management the past week because of Yuna but it's not the little girl's fault. It was solely mine. And Lisa probably hated it without telling me.

Now, I feel so guilty. I promise I will make up for my baby. I've yet to propose to her and marry her soon. I shouldn't get distracted that much. Or maybe I should just hire more bodyguards for Yuna so that no one can take her.

Yeah.. That's right. I'll do just that.

For four years, I have prayed for Lisa to come back to my life and now she's finally back I won't lose her again. I shoukdn't make the same mistake I did back then.

Class 3-C POV

After class, Mr. Jeon gathered his former students on a private lounge inside one of their owned restaurants. He made sure that all of his male students will come excluding the girls because he thinks girls can be a little loud especially Jeongyeon.

Of course, he won't let his plans be spoiled by the gossip girl.

Namjoon, Hoseok, Jin, Jimin and Yoongi are already present. Eunwoo couldn't join because he and Tzuyu are

already in Paris enjoying the honeymoon tour Jungkook and Lisa gifted them. While Bambam has now gone back to US after the wedding.

“You sure you didn’t tell Chae we are meeting?” Mr. Jeon asked to make sure.

“I didn’t I swear.” Jimin answered truthfully.

“Good. How about you Jin? Does Jisoo know we are meeting?” he asked again. He wanted to make sure no one will tell Lisa about it.

“No, I told here I’ll just visit my sister.” Jin winked at him.

“Oh.. Okay..” Mr. Jeon smiled in excitement and took a deep breath before facing all of them with a serious expression. . “I’m really sorry for taking much of your time but could you please help me with my engagement proposal, I badly want to marry her soon but I want to ask her in a way that she will cry out of happiness.”

“Of course Mr. Jeon, anything for you and Lisa, we’ll gladly help.” Namjoon replied. “But please don’t overstress yourself. We all know Lisa would cry out of happiness however you propose to her.” Namjoon reassuringly smiled and all of the boys nodded. Lisa will definitely say yes under any circumstances.

With this, he felt a little confident. So he started giving them instructions on what to do.

Lisa’s POV

“Baby, aren’t you coming to school? come on it’s 8.”

“hmmm… Not.”

“Lisa, baby are you okay? Do you have a fever?” Jungkook shook my arms again but I’m too tired to open my eyes. I don’t feel like leaving this bed anytime soon.

I know it’s wednesday morning and I have work but I’m really not in the mood to work.

“hmm.. I just want to sleep.”

“Lisa you’ve been sleeping for more than 12 hours now, I’m so worried. What’s happening to you?” I could hear Jungkook’s worried voice but I’m really tired to talk to him.

“Just go ahead, I’ll just sleep an hour more and will go to work after.” I said. And hugged the pillow again.

“Okay, but please eat breakfast too. You hadn’t joined us for dinner last night. When you got home you immediately slept. You must be hungry now.” he reminded me again.

“Lisa..”

“Lisaa! Can you hear me?”

“Baby!!!!!”

“Yes I can hear you. Just go.” ughh Jungkook is so annoying.

“Do you want me to stay with you?” he asked, still worried.

“No, I’ll just sleep. Just go Jungkook please…” Why can’t he leave me alone?

“Fine but I’m really worried. Common give me my goodbye kiss. I miss you so much. I haven’t even touch you for more than a week now.”

“Baby?”

“Baby Lisa! I swear to God are you going on a coma?” Jungkook aggressively shook me this time and I had no choice but to sat up a little and give up to this whining man.

I pressed my lips in his hoping to give him a little peck but he managed to deepen the kiss. He kissed me ferociously as if not wanting us both to breath.

“Hmmnn” Oh God! The way Jungkook lips and tongue moved against mine almost awaken the sleeping soul in me. I swear if he don’t stop, I’m going to get wet down there.

And thankfully he stopped, “You’re such a tease my love. I badly want to fuck you but I’m so late.”

“Then go.” I say. It’s as if I’m taking most of his time when he can’t even spend it on me.

“You’re being cold lately but I understand. I promise I will manage my time well. I already hired guards for Yuna.” he explained. I already know about this. I saw 5 of them guarding our house yesterday.

“Good” I said and plopped down the bed again. Ahh.. I feel so sleepy. Is it okay to just sleep forever?

“Hmm.. I miss you baby. I’m going now but I’ll see you later. I love you Lis.”

“Lis!”

“Lisa…”

“Lisaaaaa!”

“What?”

“I said I love you!”

“I love you too. Just lock the door when you leave.” I hear him sigh before kissing my forehead. Then I heard his footsteps going outside.” thank God! I can finally sleep.

I woke up to the sound of my grumbling stomach. “Ugh I’m so hungry.” I checked the time and upon seeing that it’s 10 already, i just decided to skip work.

I took the stairs down and made my way to the kitchen to make me some breakfast. As I was eating, I felt a little dizzy again. And I wonder what’s going on with me? Am I sick or what? I feel like I’m getting weaker as hours goes by.

Nevermind, I'll just pick Yuna today and maybe get my chances of seeing Jihoon.

Soon, I prepared myself to the Toddler School and waited for a moment at the school's playground for the session to end. Leni, was already there together with the 5 bodyguards Jungkook hired yet I still wait.

But as I was looking around, I noticed a man, the exact same guy who was talking to Yuna the past week.

It's him! I'm sure it's him. I could still recall his features even if he's aways wearing his mask. He was looking around as if looking for someone. And I don't know where I got the courage but I stood to go to him.

He was actually across the street so I crossed it just to talk to him. He haven't notice me until I was at least two meters ayaw from him.

"Hey! Stop! Let's talk" I shouted before he could even run.

He slowly face me and stopped on his tracks. "Who are you? What do you want from Yuna?" I asked, my fingers are slightly shaking as I am scared. Who knows if I'm talking to a criminal or what.

"I.. I.. " he hesitated, looking around.

"Do you know her? Did Ji-eun hire you?" I asked to confirm my suspicions.

"No!" he snapped. "This' got nothing to do with her!"

"Then what? Why are you talking to our child?"

"Your child?" he asked back with a mocking tone.

"Yes, she is our child!"

"No, she's not!"

"How do you know? Who exactly are you?" I pressed. I'm really curious about this guy's motives.

"I just want to see her."

"Why?"

"Because.. Because Yuna is.."

“Yuna is?”

“Yuna is my daughter! She is my child!” he cried out.

“What???” I gasped at the man’s words.

I can’t believe this! Is he saying the truth?

“You’re lying!”

“No,I’m not. She’s mine. She’s my own flesh and blood!” I don’t know why but I felt so bad when the man started crying. The way he showed his emotions reminded me of Mr. kim’s love for Jihoon and Jungkook’s love for Yuna. This one right here is a genuine cry of longingness for your own child.

Later that day,

Mr. Goo and I ended up on a bench by a park near the school. I know it’s weird and probably terrifying to talk to someone I don’t know but I want to hear him out. I want to know why. What happened to him and Ji-eun. Where was he when she got pregnant and when she gave birth? Why is he suddenly showing up now?

“I know you Lisa. I’ve just recently learned about your relationship with Jungkook.” he started.

“Huh? How?”

He took a deep breath and faced me. “You see, I’m an actor too just like Ji-eun. 4 years ago we were casted in a commercial. Jungkook and Ji-eun were still together that time but I had my eye on Ji-eun. So I started flirting with her and even followed her in Australia even if we both knew that we’re cheating on Jungkook.”

“How could you!” I clenched my hands tightly as anger crept through me. I can’t believe they would do this to Jungkook!

“I know, I’m a terrible man. But hear me out please. I want to tell you everything and hopefully Jungkook would know this too.” even if I was fuming in anger and my hands are itching to punch the guy’s face for hurting my Jungkook I still tried to remain calm for the sake of knowing the truth.

“Then tell me everything.”

“Our affair in Australia led to Yuna.” I gasped realizing that the sex video Ji-eun had shown me years ago was this guy’s? Shit! I was so stupid believing that it was Jungkook.

Mr.Goo looked at me at once before continuing, “Then Ji-eun told me about it. At first I got really scared. I was terrified that I’d lose my career, I’d lose everything I had worked for how many years. In short I was a coward and I can’t take the responsibility. So I told her to just abort Yuna.”

“How could you?” I swear I’m close to killing this man!

Mr. Goo looked down, “After our fight, I haven’t heard of her more. And I thought it was a blessing that she’s not forcing me to take the responsibility. But my conscience ate me up. I couldn’t sleep at night thinking about her and my baby. So one day I went to her and asked her if she can take me back but her narratives changed. She told me that she was mistaken and it was really Jungkook’s child in her womb.”

“I felt really bad that time but I believed her. She told me Jungkook is already taking care of her and the baby because he is the real father and I just wished her happiness that time. I don’t know but she was on a wheelchair that time and she said I should leave cause Jungkook might think that she’s cheating on him if he finds me in her house.”

“Believing in her lies, I chose to stay away. I really thought Jungkook and her were already a big and happy family but recently I heard he filed a lawsuit against her. Which confused me so i dig up and learnt that Ji-eun has been lying to him the whole time. That time I found out about you. You and Jungkook’s story and I found out also that you both were fooled by her.”

“I can’t belive this!” I said, shaking my head.

“That time, I confronted Ji-eun about our child and she told me the truth. That I was the real father but she chose Jungkook because Yuna could be the heir of Jungkook’s wealth if he adopts her.”

“Ji-eun is so evil!!!” I didn’t stop my self from saying those words because she really is the most evil person I’ve known apart from my uncle.

“Lisa, Ji-eun fooled me too. She took me away from my own daughter. I want to see Yuna, to talk to her but I can’t! I could’ve been there for my own daughter from the very start if it wasn’t for Ji-eun. She is a good manipulator. She made me believe all those lies. And here I am, just watching my own daughter from afar. Can you imagine how hard it is for a father like me to see your own child but you can’t even kiss her, hold her and tell her that you love her so much?” Mr. Goo cried his hearts out. And I feel really bad. I’m so sorry for him for being in this situation.

“So please, help me Lisa.”

“Huh? Why me?”

“I know you are a good person. I can tell by how you take care of my daughter. I know you care for her and I know you can help me as well. If Yuna fell in the hands of other step mother, I’m sure they would mistreat her. But you’re different. You care for her even if she’s not your blood.”

“Because I love her.”

“And I love her too! She’s my daughter!”

“But how? How can I help you?” How can I help him without hurting my dearest Jungkook?

“Ask Jungkook to talk to me. I need to talk to him. I owe him my daughter’s life and I am in depth of gratitude towards him, but I need my daughter back. Please Lisa please.”

“But—”

“Just ask him to talk to me. That’s all.. please.” Mr. Goo almost kneeled infront of me just to get my approval but I was quick to stop him.

“Please stand, Mr. Goo.”

“Just help me please.”

“Okay..okay! I will try to ask him but not yet now. Please give me a little more time.”

“Thank you so much Lisa! You are an angel!”

“Don’t thank me yet. Jungkook loves Yuna so much, i don’t think he will give her that easily.” I answered.

“I am sure he will. Sooner or later, both of you will be blessed with your own child and that will make him realize how it is to actually love a child of your own. Trust me, his love for Yuna will not compare to your own child.”

Child of our own?

His words silence me

Is that even possible? But I’m not normal? I can’t give him that.

Instead of feeling better, I went home feeling more down.

It’s still bugging me. The thought of being blessed with our own child.

Please God! Even just one, just one is more than enough! Grant me one and I promise I will love him or her with all of my heart.

Author’s Note

On a scale of 1-10, How crazy is Ji-eun in this story?

Sorry for the problematic chapter, I swear next chapter will focus on happy Liskook.

Proposal

Lisa's POV

First thing I see in the morning is Yuna eating peacefully at the dinning table with Leni.

"Good Morning Muffin Lady!" the little girl excitedly ran to hug my leg.

"Good morning baby Yuna!" I replied, crouching down to her for a morning kiss. "You are eating?"

"Yes, Muffin lady eat too!" she politely offered. Once we settled on our spot, I immediately noticed Jungkook's absence.

"Leni! Have you seen Jungkook?" I asked.

"He went to school an hour ago Ms. Lisa." the woman answered.

"But it's just 7? Why go to school this early?" It means he left the house at 6? Is he jogging his way to the school this time?

"I don't know too Miss. He was in rush to go to school."

"Weird but nevermind, as if he cares about me!" I muttered under my breath, feeling disappointed.

I am pissed, yes.

I can't believe that after ignoring me for almost all week, here he goes ignoring me again like I don't exist in this house! He didn't even gave me a goodbye kiss or a smiple hug? What happened to the 'Let's go to work and back at home together?'

"Muffin lady angry?" Yuna asked, her eyes are now observing me as if reading my mind.

I swear Yuna can read people's mind. But just exactly how can a little girl like her notice how I feel while Jungkook can't?

“No baby, Muffin lady is not angry, okay? Now please eat all your food and prepare so that Muffin Lady can drive you to school. You like that, yeah?”

“Yes muffin Lady but please don’t mad Dada. Dada love Muffin Lady.” she pouted cutely at me. Aww what a cutie she is! I still can’t believe that she is Ji-eun’s child!

“What a precious soul you are. Yes baby, I know Dada loves muffin lady. But Muffin lady is not angry okay?”

“Love Dada please!” she plead.

“Of course I love your dada, don’t worry.”

“Muffin Lady please marry dada.”

I was surprised when she said those words. I mean how did she learn the word? Even Leni was surprised.

“Marry dada? But dada needs to ask muffin lady first before I marry your dada.” I replied and I just realized it’s seems like Jungkook has no plans in proposing to me het. What’s taking him so long? I thought he wants us to be together forever?

“Dada will ask Muffin Lady and muffin lady marry dada!” Yuna kept saying the words until she made me nod, agreeing.

“Yes, I will marry your dada, now continue with your food, love.” You just have no idea how much I wished to marry your dada, I thought.

The little girl beamed at my answer and continued eating. Looks like she’s playing cupid to the both of us and I appreciate it.

Yuna is really the sweetest. No wonder people falls for her so easily. And thinking about it drew me back to my talk with Mr. Go.

I guess I need to speak with Jungkook soon. It’s really heavy for me carrying this information alone. But I wonder if he’ll get mad at me for talking to the man.

Though he’s still Yuna’s biological father. Thus, he have all the right to take Yuna if he wants.

If that happens, poor Jungkook will be left with nothing but me. Makes me wonder if he'd be contented with just my presence alone?

That morning, I sent Yuna to her school with a lot of thoughts running on my head. Thoughts of how I wil tell everything to Jungkook, how will we tell Yuna? How will the little girl react? That she has her own father and it's not Jungkook

As I was driving my way to the University, I can't help but fell sad for my man. I feel sorry for him for the possibility of Yuna leaving but at the same time, I'm feeling upset too. I'm still not over the fact that he gave me cold shoulders just to parent Yuna.

But processing a lot of information and thoughts made my head throb again. I need to go to the hospital for a check up soon. I feel like I'm getting worse as days goes by.

Finally, I reached the university and made my way to the school gates. But as I was walking, a college student stopped me from my tracks. He was wearing a university I.D. which confirmed my thought that he is just a student.

Still what grabbed my attention was the white flower he is holding. "For you!" the young man spoke. I had to blink twice when the student offered me the flower.

"Oh.. No—" I tried to refuse because I'll get Jungkook jealous again if he sees me walking to the faculty with a flower but the young man left after placing the flower on my hand. "Wait—"

"Damn, he's fast!" I shook my head and looked at the flower. Nevermind, maybe I'll just keep this in my bag and hide it from Jungkook.

But I was not even three steps away when another college student offered me a flower. I was surprised when he just placed the flower on my hand and left immediately.

Wait, is it Valentines day? Why are students giving me flowers?

I kept walking and every student I would met does the same, giving me a white flower. I was really confused but I just took all of them, guessing that it is another thoughtful activity of the the University. Probably there's a special occassion just like the Love Day where students can give teachers their gifts? But when I looked around, I didn't see any teacher getting the same. In fact, it seems like there no other people except me and those students who passed by just to give me a flower.

What's happening?

My arms are now clenching to almost a hundred flower, I don't know why but I'm so nervous at what's happening. First, I don't want Jungkook to see this. Cause everytime he gets jealous, he makes sure to give me a rewarding punishment.

Honestly, I don't consider it a punishment anymore because I love the things he do to me. The last time he got jealous, he made sure I won't be able to catch a breath as he made me reach my orgasm one after another. But still I am nervous, I don't want him to think that there are still men out there ready to snatch me away from him. Also, I'm in no condition today to be making love.

I'm really not feeling well.

"Lisa!" I heard a familliar voice, when I followed the voice, I was surprised to see Namjoon near the Foreign Language Building, waving at me.

"Namjoon? what are you doing here?" I asked as I ran to him. Is he working here? I thought he got accepted at another University?

"I'm just here to give this to you." he answered, offering me another flower.

"Wait.. Him also?" I stared at him showing how confused I am.

But he just smiled "He said you were so beautiful that day, the day that he saw you sleeping by that table at the back end of the classroom."

"Namjoon—" I gasped. This can't be…

“He said, he was drawn to you that very moment. That he wanted to kiss you. He was too drawn that he almost forgot he has a girlfirend, suddenly everything just seemed to revolve around you.”

“Oh God!” I teared up as I realized what is happening.

I swear to God Jungkook!

Namjoon stepped back as if guiding me to walk forward and I did. I walk past him and entered the building which is surprisingly empty.

Then another familliar face came to view. “Your legs were distracting that’s what he said.” Yoongi scratched his head as if being awkward.

“Not you too!” If I could just smack my friends. But my hands were full of flowers. I can’t help but just pout at him.

“He said he regrets nothing when he saved you that night. He also said that that was the best decision he’s ever made. Because that night, he didn’t just help a soul in need but he also met the girl of his dreams.”

“Yoongi!” I’m literally crying now.

“Shh.. Don’t cry. You’re ugly when you cry.” the man chuckled and offered me another flower. When he stepped back just like what Namjoon, that was my cue to walk forward. I’m getting a feeling that I’ll be meeting my precious friends today and it warms my heart. I can’t explain how happy I am seeing them here.

Walking forward, I was faced with Jin who was already at me smiling ear to ear.

“The way you welcomed every morning with him makes his heart flutter. He said when you came to his life, it was as if it’s all rainbows and sunshines. Your your smile, your hugs and kisses were like drugs, he can’t get over.”

“Jin please—”

“He said he’s never been this blessed all his life. Your presence alone was his contentment. It’s all that he’s ever wanted.” Jin gave me another flower before speaking, “Your

home made chocolates were the best, by the way.” Jin winked and smiled before stepping back.

“Man-hater Lisa!” Jimin’s annoying voice echoed throught the building. I want to roll my eyes at him but I’m so happy to do it.

“Jimin”

“You really are extraordinary for making the Great Teacher Jeon go crazy for you this much.” Jimin gave me a teasing smile but went serious after. “He said you’re the only person who made him jealous over anyone. He said your presence was a blessing but also a curse.”

“A curse?” I asked, why?

“Oh shit, I forgot my lines. But yeah.. He said something like that.” Jimin scratched his head and looked away. “Damn! I thought I memorized that one!” I heard him mutter under his breath.

What does he mean by curse?

“Go ahead, meet your man. He’s waiting for you.” Jimin said. Making me more anxious and excited at what’s about to come next.

After receiving a flower from Jimin, I walked further and saw our sunshine, Hoseok leaning by a classroom which has a sign: “The door to your man.”

“My dear Lisa.” just a smile from him almost took all my anxiousness away.

“Hobi!”

“This man of yours is really whipped.” he teased.

“You think so?”

“He is. He even said that the day he lost you was the day he stopped breathing. It was as if the world stopped.”

“Jungkook… “

“He only hopes that this time, you won’t leave him again. So he asked me to say this… Lisa, don’t leave his side again.”

Hoseok gently pat my head like that of a big brother before giving me his flower.

And swear, I was almost a crying mess. I didn't know having your dearest friend say those words which your boyfriend wishes to speak hits this hard. Maybe because they're all precious to me and I'm really grateful towards them. I smiled at him and looked back, seeing the boys at the back gathered with smiles on their faces was like a dream. They look like proud dads right now.

But seriously, Just how romantic Jungkook is?

That moment, the only present in the building was the proud boys at my back, the flowers that I am holding and me with my fast beating heart.

I could suspect what's about to happen next, but I still feel overwhelmed.

I took a deep breath and gathered my thoughts before pushing the door to the classroom lightly, struggling while hugging the flowers I received from all of them. And when the dpor was pushed open, that was it for me.

Because there he is.

The man of my dreams.

The man who owns my heart and my entire being,

Standing at the center of the empty classroom, his loving eyes was on me, smiling gently.

My breathing hitched when he took steps forward, i panicked and didn't know what to do.

Suddenly, I got conscious over my appearance. How do I look? Does he find me decent looking enough?

I was consumed by a lot of thoughts that I didn't realize he was already infront of me.

"Baby…"

"Jungkook…"

Jungkook's eyes fell to the flowers I am hardly holding, he nervously cleared his throat and took them.

"Let me help you with this." like a gentleman that he is, he took all the flowers and placed them on the table near us.

"What is this?" I asked, though I know and I could feel he's about to ask me something, the question I wished to answer so bad.

Jungkook faced me, with the same intense expression and smiled, "I thought everything was clear. I made sure to say the words I needed to say." the handsome man spoke referring to my friends.

"I don't know what to say." I bit my lip. I really don't know what to say.

"You don't have to say anything but just one word." Just like that, Jungkook suddenly kneeled infront of me.

God! Is this finally it???

He pulled a box and opened them before me, my eyes grew big seeing a shinning stone of ring inside.

"Oh my god Jungkook!" the way that I gasped when he showed me what's inside, I quickly covered my mouth which was hunged open.

"I need you not say anything but the answer to this. Lisa, for years, I have never felt such a great amount of love towards a person until I met you. Your love is all that I want and is all that I need. Baby, I need you by my side forever so please…" Jungkook's voice was almost pleading. "Please marry me."

Oh my god! This is just too much! The proposal was too much! I was left there crying and just crying.

I am deeply overwhelmed by joy and love for this person. My heart is racing, my mind was just lost, too lost for words.

Imagine having the man of your dream ask you this? He wants a future with me. This is what it is.

He's finally asking me to marry him! To be with him forever unless death tells otherwise. I was so emotional and I

kept sobbing that I didn't realize Jungkook has been kneeling infront of me for like forever.

"Baby? Please answer me so that I can stand to shed those tears." Jungkook spoke again, cutting me from my emotional outburst.

"Oh.. Sorry." I quickly wiped my face with the back of my palm and nodded, "Yes, of course yes! I want to marry you too!"

His face lit up at my words, "Thank you baby! Thank you so much! I promise I will love you always." Jungkook took the ring and pushed them on my finger. Then just like that, I was already engulfed in a tight embrace. And I snuggled in his arms feeling warm and contented.

"I love you! I love you so much Lisa, my baby!" he spoke so tenderly.

"And I love you more!" I smiled while crying, if that's even possible. Jungkook's fingers were quick to wipe my tears away.

"Shhh.. Please don't cry. Let's be happy."

"But I am happy—"

"I know, I just don't like the sight of you crying, it pinches my heart."

"That was cheesy, Jungkook." I giggled.

"I'm just in love, don't mind me." he laughed and carressed my cheek.

"Now that you are my fiancee, can I finally ask for my fiance's kiss?"

I eagerly nodded, I don't want to speak more cause I know I'll just stutter. I'm still on a cloud nine for everything that happened. So Jungkook leaned in and captured my lips with his.

We we closed our eyes and began kissing. We just stayed there in each other's arms, lips tangled expressing how much we love each other through the deep and passionate kiss.

Ignoring the fact that we are inside a classroom. Because all we are right now are two madly in love people.

When our lips parted, our gaze has reconnected. “Let’s be together from now on baby, promise me you’ll never leave me again?” he asked.

It really hurts me how Jungkook keeps asking me to never leave him. I’m sure he was reminded of how I left him back then. But I want him to know that this time is different, I will not put us on that situation again where I easily judged him and left him like that.

“I will never leave you again.” I reassured.

“Promise?” he pouted.

“I promise.”

Jungkook kissed me again for the second time and God, how heavenly it is. Especially when his hand was already stroking my breast. But remembering that we are still inside a classroom, I stopped him before he could even cup something else down there.

“Jungkook, let’s just continue at home.” I pushed his hand lightly.

“Oh.. Sorry. I got just carried away.” he consciously looked around and smirked back at me. “Let’s go home, I asked the dean for our leave today. We don’t have to work.”

“Huh? But how about our class?” I asked.

“They already know we won’t be holding class today. Don’t worry, I planned ahead.”

“What are we gonna do?” don’t tell me, he wants to make love so early in the morning?

“Nothing grand, I just want to date my future wife. I know I’ve been a terrible boyfriend for the past week that’s why I need to make up to you.”

“Yes you were, I am even planning on ignoring you if not for this proposal.” I chuckled and he frowned.

“Please don’t do that. You know how hard being a parent is and being Yuna’s adoptive father can be tough sometimes. Baby, don’t be mad at me. I promise I’do even better from now on.”

“It’s really okay. I want to apologize too for craving much of your time.”

“No, you deserve all the time I have Lis, don’t apologize. It was really my mistake. But I swear everything will be fine from now on, okay?”

“Okay.”

“Right, Now let’s meet your friends and thank them for helping me with the simple proposal.”

Jungkook guided me out of the classroom and we both thanked the boys who helped him. I’ve never felt this happy and secured all my life. As if I won a lifetime insurance.

That morning, Jungkook took me to his parents house. And imagine how his mother squeaked out of joy when she heard that I agreed to marrying her son. The old couple never stopped thanking me for coming back to their son’s life as if I am the air he breathes.

“But seriously Lisa, thank you so much for choosing my son. And for coming back.” Mother repeated for like hundred times now. This time, the four of us were sharing a lunch together.

“I love your son so much mother, I wish not to part from him again.” I smiled at them and Jungkook’s hand squeezed mine which was on top of the table in gratitude.

“By the way, Mom, Dad, I plan to marry her soon. Please give us your blessing on this.” Jungkook bowed his head for their approval.

“Of course, you can marry her now or even tomorrow if you both like. I can arrange all the things that you need. If you want the grandest wedding, I can give you that…” His mom was so excited that she began planning ahead but Jungkook shook his head.

“No mom, I want Lisa to decide on how the wedding will be. Grand or simple whatever she wants, that is what I am going to give her.”

“Oh yeah.” mother and father nodded understandingly. “Do you have any wish for your wedding my dear?” His father asked.

“Me?” I asked pointing at myself.

“Yes you. You are the bride to be, right?” they all laughed and I just scratched my head.

“Dream wedding?” I mumbled. What is it that I like? I honestly don’t have anything in mind.

“Hmmm.. I don”t have anything in mind. As long as it is Jungkook that I am marrying, I can agree to anything. Even civil wedding would do.” I answered genuinely. I’m not that picky of a woman.

“Aww.. That’s so simple and thoughtful of you Lisa. No wonder why Jungkook is so whipped for you—”

“Mom!” Jungkook warned but the old lady just chuckled more.

“Cause you really are. Remember the time when Lisa left and you’d ran infront of moving cars just so they would hit yo —”

“What???” I almost stood hearing this. I can’t believe Jungkook would do such a thing.

“Mom please stop saying these things. Now my future wife thinks that I have suicidal tendencies!” he glared at her.

“Fine, fine. That was from the past Lisa. Luckily Jungkook survived all of his craziness back then. And now that you’re here, I’m sure he’ll not do it again.”

I didn’t stop myself from facing Jungkook this time. “We will talk later.” He needs a lot of scolding. What if he really died? I swear I would die too!

“Uh oh.. Jungkook will be in trouble later because of you hon” Jungkook’s father commented, making them both laugh.

“Aww they remind me of our younger selves.” Jungkook’s mom clapped her hands. “Remember honey when we were as young as them? You were always jealous of other men sorrounding me. It makes us quarrel a lot of times which leads to se—”

“Mom! Not in front of my salad!” Jungkook scrunched his nose as if disgusted by their story.

“Hmp! If I know you’re also doing it!” the old woman smirked.

“Do what?” Jungkook asked, a little confused.

“Do punishments and stuffs. Your dad likes it back then.” the lady laughed again which made Mr. Jeon a little uncomfortable.

Realizing about the punishments and stuffs, I blushed.

“Mom!” he tried to warn his mom but she just continued laughing, ignoring her glaring son.

I smiled.

They are a really fun family and I’m so blessed that I’ll be a part of it soon.

I promise to not leave Jungkook again whatever the circumstances is, I will try my best to be understanding to him and to be there for him for the rest of our lives.

Unless God has other plans.

Author’s Note.

It took me years to update but I’m finally here. Again, sorry for keeping you waiting.

I think there are at least 5 chapters left 😭😭😭
Will be missing this story.

Wedding Day

Y'all, it took me years to update because it was hard editing Lisa. My editing skills sucks but I tried my best. 😂😂

Lisa's POV

"Ready Baby?"

"Yeah." I nodded before stepping out of his car.

Today, Jungkook and I had set up an appointment with a wedding planner and I am beyond excited. I can't wait to get tied to this man, I can't wait to spend the rest of my life with him, I can't wait to make him happy by fullifilling his needs and wishes.

Jungkook led me inside a building of one of the most famous wedding planner in Korea and I was surprised when a young lady, just the age of Jungkook welcomed us.

"Hi! I'm Maria, i'll be your wedding planner. Mrs.Jeon set up your appointment with me." she offered her hand to shake and I excitedly shook them.

"I'm Lisa. I'm glad to meet you."

The lady smiled lightly and faced Jungkook "Mr. Jeon, it's been a long time." she smirked and hugged him which surprised me.

Jungkook worriedly looked at me, I can tell he was shocked too. "Uhm..Yeah. been a long time. So shall we proceed with the plan?" he asked as if not wanting to waste anymore time.

"Of course, let's go! " Jungkook held my hand so tightly in his as Maria lead us inside her office.

When we got in, she introduced us to her team. There were five ladies there which will cater to different matters regarding the wedding. From the wedding dress, to the reception to the ceremony and all.

She started discussing our plans about the wedding. Apparently, the bride to be should be delighted but I can't. I can't shrug the feeling that there's something off about the planner. By the way she uninterestedly listens to my wishes but is way too responsive when Jungkook is the one talking.

"How many people are you planning to invite?" Maria asked.

"Jungkook, is it okay if I invite the orphaned and mother Yasha?"

"Sure baby, you can invite all the people you want." Jungkook lovingly rubbed my back but it didn't escape my eyes how the planner rolled her eyes.

"Orphaned? Who in the world invites them?" I heard her mutter under her breath and I was surprised. Jungkook seemed to not hear it so I just pretended I didn't too for the sake of Mrs. Jeon. I don't like the planner but who am I to complain when the Jeon's planned everything before hand.

All I could do is be grateful.

We began discussing about the visitors and then proceeded to choosing the wedding dress.

"I like this one." I said pointing to a specific wedding dress on the brochure they provided. It looks simple but nice. And the price is cheaper, I can afford it.

"Baby, I'm sure you'll look good in that but I'm afraid that's too simple. Why not choose this one?" Jungkook showed me another wedding dress which will have to take at least 10 people to usher in walking cause it's very long and the style is too dramatic.

"No, that's too much." I shook my head to disagree. And the fact that it is expensive, makes it the least of my options.

"If you're worrying about the price, you shouldn't..I can—"

"Jungkook, let the girl be. Maybe she wants that simple wedding dress." I was surprised when the planner spoke as if she was that close to him. "Besides, it fits her. You know

average girl matches average dress.” she laughed at her own words.

“Excuse me?” Jungkook’s gaze hardened at her.

“What? I’m just saying that Miss Lisa here loves simple things and it’s very rare to have someone like that these days.” She tried to explain but I know between the context of her words, she wants to scream to my face that I’m just too average for him and I know that. The only thing is, I can’t be affected by these comments anymore. I love Jungkook and I will stay with him no matter what.

“You know what Ms. Maria, I think we’ll just go back.” Jungkook grabbed my hand and stood.

“Wait, where are we—” I panicked.

“Jungkook, we still have things to discuss.” Maria tried to stop us but Jungkook shook his head.

He looked around the office and poked the inside of his cheek with his tongue, “Too bad, I thought this is the best planning team in Seoul, but I only see judgemental people here. And I won’t let people like you mock or hurt my fiance’s feelings.”

Jungkook quickly walked away while holding my hand tightly in his hand. When I looked back, I could see the burning eyes of Maria at me, as if she’ll eat me alive.

What’s her problem?

What did I do to her?

“What was that?” was the first thing I asked when we got inside his car.

“Nothing, I just thought we need to leave toxic people like her out of our wedding.” Jungkook sighed and turn at me. “No matter what people say, you are not average Lisa. You are more than perfect to me.” He explained which is no use because I wasn’t really affected.

“You don’t have to say that. I know I am not perfect but there are no words she can say that’ll make me change my mind. I am me, average or not I am special.”

“That’s what I like it. I can’t believe you are getting more confident now.” Jungkook proudly smiled at me.

“Insecurities does nothing good. I made a mistake of leaving you few years ago just because I got insecure of my condition and it led us to heartbreaks. I won’t do the same mistake this time.” I assured him.

“Oh baby, you have no idea how happy I am hearing this from you.” Jungkook got too satisfied that he pulled me in on his chest and began prepping the top of my head with kisses.

“But,” I let go, “Who’s that girl? Does she know you?” I asked curiously.

“Yeah.. That was Maria. She was my schoolmate at highschool. She has a thing for me back then. But I told her I don’t feel the same way because that time I was into… Uhm —”

“Ji-eun.” I finished his sentence which he seems hard to say. And he shouldn’t be because I don’t feel anything bad about his past anymore. It was only normal for him to fall for her back then. Everything changed now, Jungkook loves me more.

“Yeah..” he scratched his head awkwardly again.

“I see, so it seems like she hates me because I’m about to marry you.”

“Yeah.. Sort of. But hey, I can’t let her ruin our most precious day, that’s why we need to look for another planner.”

“I’m sorry I caused you inconvenience.” I apologized. As far as I know, it was Jungkook’s mother who set us and appointment with that wedding planner and I kinda feel bad for cancelling the contract.

“You don’t have to say sorry baby. They said wedding preparations are really stressful, so what couples must do is to just enjoy the process together. That way the stress will be replaced by fun memories.” Jungkook explained.

I looked at him with admiration as his words hit me hard. He’s still the teacher back then with deep words that could hit you and make you reflect on our own.

No wonder why the most problematic class of ours fell in love with him as easy as that.

“Why are you staring?” he asked.

“Nothing, I just can’t believe you’re real and that you’re mine.” I answered.

“Hmm.. Same goes to you. I can’t believe you’re mine baby.”

“That means we’re both lucky and we both love each other. All we could do now is start the preparattion so that we can marry each other.”

“I agree. I love you Lisa.”

“I love you too Jungkook.”

Jungkook pressed his lips on mine and kissed me. “I love you so so much baby!”

Wedding Day

It took us three weeks of preparation for the wedding and now is finally the day that we have been waiting for.

“My make up is already ruined!” I laughed at Chaeyoung who’s still absolutely pretty despite crying her eyes out as she was being emotional. It’s as if she’s my mother.

At the moment, the make up artist is doing some final touches at me and Chaeyoung was there to assist me for she is my Matron of Honor.

“Chill, I’m just going to get married, I’m not yet dying!” I chuckled.

“I know but I’m so emotional. I’m still not over the fact that my ship sailed.” she cried out.

“Your ship?” I raised my brow.

What ship?

“I was shipping you with our teacher back in high school, remember? And now here you are marrying the Great Teacher Jeon.” Chaeyoung reminded me and I smiled.

Yeah, Good old days.

“Yeah.. Me too. I still can’t believe we would end up together. It’s as if everything’s just a dream.”

“And now is finally the day where you’ll be tied to him. So, enough of the talking and let’s go Lis. Your man is nervously waiting, Jimin texted me.”

“Let’s go.” Chae helped me walk out as I was wearing a very heavy gown. This is actually a special gown because both Jungkook and I liked it. So we decided to choose this one.

I took a deep breath before riding the wedding car which will go straight to the church where my future husband is waiting.

This is it, the happiest day of my life.

Jungkook’s POV

I’m nervous.

I’m excited.

I’m happy.

And i’m so tensed.

I’m feeling all sorts of emotions as I wait for her.

Several visitors were already out of the church waiting for the ceremony to start while I am here patiently for the love of my life, Lisa.

A/n: Imagine Jungkook.

“Don’t be nervous.” Namjoon patted my back to comfort me.

“I’m not.” I lied. I’m really nervous and I don’t even know why.

“Your fingers are shaking Mr. Jeon and your face is pale. Lisa would be nervous too if she sees you like this.” he gently reminded.

I’m so grateful to Namjoon for pointing it out, he really is the best “Best Man”. Who would’ve thought that there will

come a day where I will have to ask my former student to be my support at my own wedding?

And he's right, I'm really nervous. Nervous to the point where I'm about to faint. But who wouldn't be, if I waited for four fucking years just to see her again, just to have her again.

I struggled all those years without her and now that's she's finally agreed to marrying me, I can't be any happier.

Just how lucky I am!

"The bride is here. The ceremony shall start in a minute!" The planner's voice echoed inside the church at his announcement.

"Oh Lord!" I panicked, I don't know if I would pass out of excitement or just die our of happiness right now.

"Did you hear that? Lisa is finally outside!" I told Namjoon.

"Yes, Mr. Jeon. She's finally here." the young man answered.

"How do I look, Namjoon?" I brushed my hair and dusted my suit neatly. i want to look perfect for my baby girl.

"You look perfect Mr. jeon, don't worry." Namjoon assured.

Oh God, oh God!

The music started playing, and the door of the church opened.

My Mother was the first to walk in. Chin up as she was smiling warmly at me. I know my mother so much and the smile that she's showing right now is definitely a genuine happy smile. She marched her way to the seat provided for the parents and I waited for everyone to get in.

Then one by one the sponsors of the wedding walked in. They are my parents most trusted business partners. Mother Yasha, Mr. Yang, and Mr. Bang Si-Hyuk whom I asked to be a sponsor walked inside too.

The flower girls walked in which was led by Jimin and Chaeyoung's daughter, Chaeryoung. Followed by Yeji and Lia. And the last to walk down the aisle was my baby Yuna.

Imagine how I almost cried when I saw her walking while flying flower petals on the floor of the church.

“My baby Yuna is so cute, I want to hug her so bad.”

Yeojun,Soobin, Taehyun walked the aisle too. But the last one was the ring bearer who I admit caught everyone’s attention.

I smiled when Jihoon proudly walked in holding a tiny pillow with the box of our wedding ring.

I’m sure my baby Lisa would be so proud seeing Jihoon here. It was just two weeks ago when we asked Mr. Kim’s approval of our wedding and his son’s participation in it. Surprisingly, he agreed, so now Jihoon is here standing as our ring bearer.

Eunwoo soon marched in with Tzuyu.

Jin and Jisoo.

Jimin and Chaeyoung.

Yoongi and Irene.

Hoseok and Dahyun.

Bambam and Jeongyeon.

And lastly Mr. Kim and my friend Jennie, who both looks good together.

My heart is now racing especially when the doors of the church closed.

She’s coming!

Everyone waited in anticipation and finally it opened, to the face of the girl I have been waiting for.

My Lisa.

A/n: Imagine Lisa wearing this.

At that point everything just stopped moving. She was all that I am seeing and all that I could hear was the fast beating of my heart.

It just beats crazily for her.

God, just how beautiful she is.

My father walked with her as she has no more family to walk her to me.

Despite the distance, I could still see her pretty face. She was smiling like a goddess and I was just there waiting patiently for her to cross the gap between us.

Everything was just perfect.

She was so perfect that I want to keep her forever.

The marching finally ended and soon I was faced with her beauty.

Father gave me a hug before giving her hand to me.

“Baby, you are so beautiful, I want to kiss you right now.” I admitted. I can’t wait to get tied to her, to lose my bachelor’s name.

“I can’t wait too, but let’s wait after the ceremony.” She whipered.

“Let’s go.” I gently guided her to sit infront of the altar where the pastor is already waiting.

The ceremony started and the vows exchanged followed. I took one ring and slid it slowly to her finger.

“I, Jungkook take thee, Lisa to be my wedded wife, to have and to hold, from this day forward, for better, for worse, for richer, for poorer, in sickness and in health, to love and to cherish, till death do us part, according to God’s holy ordinance; and there to I pledge thee my faith pledge myself to you. I will respect you, honor you, and cherish you as long as we both shall live. Today I take you to be my wife and vow to help create for us a life of honesty, fidelity, trust, and love. To love you not as some idea of you, but as you truly are. To grow with you, learn with you, and to live out our days hand in hand. I vow that you shall be the most important person in my life, above all others, and that no one will ever stand between us. I love you baby.”

Lisa teared up hearing my vow, I know she’s beyond happy this time and I’m glad. I’m the reason to her happiness. I can’t

wait to make her happier for the days to come.

Now it was time for Lisa to express her vow so she took the ring for me. Then slid it on my ring finger.

“I, Lisa, take you Jungkook as my husband. To be your lawfully and spiritually wedded wife, in sickness and in health, in all faith and with all openness for our future together.” Lisa looked me in the eye, meaning every words. “I’m so sorry if there are things which I cannot give you.” she paused and shed a tear. “Nevertheless, my heart and soul above all things is what I pledge to you. My devotion, my faithfulness, and my undying love. I promise to put you ahead of all others, to be by your side through thick and thin, through good times and bad. When the rains fall and the cool breezes blow, you can count on me. I will never leave you again.”

“Baby…” I didn’t stop myself from pulling her into a tight embrace. I was overwhelmed by her words that I almost forgot we are still to follow the order of the ceremony.” Realizing this, I quickly let go of her.

The pastor smiled, “Well then, the ceremony is over. Jungkook and Lisa, I pronounce you husband and wife. You may now kiss the bride.”

I poured all my emotion to it and kissed Lisa with full of love and affection. I swear to my life that I will love her and cherish her for the rest of our lives.

Lips entangled, I lifted her in my arms and the people loudly cheered in support.

That moment, nothing else mattered but my wife and I.

Lisa’s POV

Later that evening.

I was drying my hair with the blower when Jungkook stepped out of his room fresh from shower, only a piece of white towel covers his body.

“You look so good.” he commented.

“This is my bare face and you’re still complimenting me. Is this how husbands should be, lie to his wife?” I teased.

“But I’m telling the truth baby, with or without make up, you look good.” he smiled.

“Thank you then, I hope you still find me pretty even after I grow old.”

“You’ll forever be beautiful in my eyes Lisa and besides if you grew old, I’ll still be older than you so that’ll make us even.” he lightly chuckled.

“Yeah.. You’re right.”

I continued brushing my still damp hair while Jungkook walked to our bed to sit by the edge of it. His eyes are still on me, I can see through the vanity mirror.

“If you keep staring like that, I’m going to melt like ice cream.”

“Is it bad to admire your wife? Because i’m just admiring you.”

“I won’t deny you still make my heart flutter like the first time we met especially when you say those words.”

“That’s good then. I don’t want you to get bored easily with me. Sometimes I wonder if I’m worthy enough to have you stay by my side.” he admitted.

“What are you saying? Of course you are. It’s even the other way around, I think im the one unworthy of you because you are ha—”

“Shhh… There there, let’s just agree that we both are worthy to have each other. That way, we won’t fight on our wedding night.” he laughed.

“Oh yeah.. I almost forgot it’s our first night together as husband and wife.”

“Yes so please finish what you’re doing and join me here.” Jungkook patted the bed beside him.

“Are we going to make love?” I asked. As much as I want to, I’m hesitant.

“Of course, it is our wedding night and we are supposed to convey our love through “IT”. Unless you don’t want to, I

won’t force you.”

I raised my brow in surprise. This is new. Jungkook being a gentleman in bed? Wow!

“It’s just that.. I’m.. I’m tired.” I answered truthfully. I dont know if it’s because of the wedding preparations but I get easily tired lately.

“I know, I can see that which concerns me. Are you okay?”

“I am, I’m even better that we finally got married.”

“Hmm.. But if your condition worsened, I guess we need to have you checked baby. I’m really worried.”

“Yes but maybe after our honeymoon, remember we’ll travel tomorrow.” I reminded him incase he forgot that we’ll be going on a honeymoon and our flight is tomorrow.

“Yes, I didn’t forget. Let’s make the most of our trip baby. For now, let’s rest.” Jungkook stepped closer and pulled me into his arms. He kissed me intensely before walking me to the bed and I let him be.

The bed squeaked when we both landed in it. And Jungkook fell on top of me which turned me on. Suddenly the temperature of the room changed, it seemed as if it increased a few degrees higher.

Now, I crave for Jungkook’s touch. Just wha”Jungkook…” I uttered his name as if pleading for something.

“You know that there’s a saying, that the first couple should make love on their first night so that they will be blessed with a lifetime of pleasure.” he smirked.

“There is?”

“Hmm.. Yeah.. Something like that but those are just saying and you’re tired—”

“Please…”

“Huh?

“Please Jungkook…” Jungkook being extremely hot with just atowel on while being on top of me made me feel

aggressively needy.

“Please what my love?”

“Please make love to me.” I politely asked. Now I don’t care if I’m tired.

“You sure you’re not tired?”

“Not that much.” I shook my head and pulled him closer.

“Okay, but what’s the magic word?” he smiled, showing me his bunny smile.

I rolled my eyes at him. He’s still the same Jungkook I fell for few years ago.

“Please make love to me, daddy.”

“That’s more I like it.” he satisfyingly smiled before kissing my forehead.

“Just lie there while I do the job.” Jungkook stripped himself in one go and took all the garments which covers my body.

And just like how he said, he made love to me that night with him doing all the work while I just stayed there enjoying the feeling of him inside me while his lips kissed every part of my body.

Jungkook promised me words of love on our first night as wedded couples as I snuggled in his arms, happy and contented.

Author’s Note

The End.

Joke, last roll of tissue and we’re done.

😊

After Wedding

Lisa's POV

"Jungkook, please join me for breakfast. I cooked you something special" I offered as I ran to him when he passed by the dinning area early morning.

"Sorry, can't. I'm too late Lisa." he answered without even looking at me. He just strode to the door, and walked out in rush.

The only thing I heard next was the sound of his car leaving the garage.

I sighed and held my chest which is badly aching, today I am hurt again.

Looking back on our wedding day, I never thought we would end up like this. The promises of love he made is nowhere to be felt.

Jungkook ended up being cold to me for three weeks now after we got married. It hurts but there's no one to blame but me.

It was my fault that Jungkook lost Yuna, his only daughter.

And I deserve this kind of treatment from him. I deserve to be ignored by him. Even though he vowed of loving me and taking care of me, I still understand his frustrations.

"I'm so sorry Jungkook." I whispered in the air as if he can hear it.

Yuna is gone and so is Jungkook.

And I am all alone.

No Jungkook, Yuna or even Leni to join me for breakfast, lunch and dinner. No people to share my thoughts and worries.

I've never felt so alone in my life after what happened that day.

"You are my greatest blessing." That's what Jungkook's been telling me over and over again. We were already on our fourth day of honeymoon in Hawaii that time, enjoying each other's company. No distractions, no third party, just the two of us playing in the beach, soaking our feet in the fine white sand while being kissed by the sun.

In the morning, day and night, Jungkook never stopped making love to me as if our lives depended on it. I almost think that he can create a basketball team inside my womb if not for me being unfertile.

He promised me the moon and stars which made my heart flutter, he promised me undying and eternal love, he promised me happiness and contentment. And all I did was believe him because I could feel it, he meant every words.

We were very happy until that one phone call.

Just one phone call and everything changed.

The phone call that ruined our moment together.

I wiped my tears as I began sobbing again. It still hurts how all of this happened.

I could still remember the terrified look on Jungkook's face when his mom called.

"What? What do you mean Yuna is gone!" I witnessed how his fingers tightly gripped his phone as his jaw clenched. I got nervous but I just stayed there and calmly wait to get an idea of the conversation between him and his mother.

"What? Father? Who? I am her father!" Jungkook almost screamed this time. And just the mention of him being a father made me realize one thing,

I haven't told Jungkook yet about Mr. Go.

Shit! I gasped realizing how I just forgot telling him about the man. And that day is the day that Jungkook learned about him.

Jungkook went hysterical after that. He explained that the actor named Jingoo took Yuna from school. And that the police authorities are in search of the little girl.

No amount of comfort words eased Jungkook's heart. It's as if he's about to go crazy of worry. So the same day, we took a flight back home, forgetting that we're about to celebrate our honeymoon for the whole month, cancelling everything we had planned.

Jungkook immediately left me at home and helped searching for Yuna. Until he find him and talked with Yuna's biological father.

Father to father, the grown men talked. I wasn't there when the two met because I don't feel really good. I think I'm in no condition to witness a fight.

And that night when he came home without Yuna, I was expecting to face with a furious Jungkook but I didn't. He came home to me with a sad and fake smile.

I asked him how the talk go and where Yuna is but he just answered, "The real father deserves Yuna more than me. I am not the real father Lisa." Jungkook defeatedly cried his eyes out, I can tell by just looking at him that he was so heartbroken.

I don't know how Yuna easily agreed to stay with her real father and I don't know too how Mr. Go convinced Jungkook about Yuna's custody but Jungkook also agreed just like his daughter. He was really crushed that moment and my heart pains seeing him that way.

The days without Yuna in our home changed the mood of the house. I miss her so much as much as Jungkook misses her but why does it seem like I lost the both of them?

After what happened, Jungkook changed, he seldom smiles, he doesn't eat that much either, We don't make love anymore. And I forgot the last time he kissed me passionately.

Of course, he would talk to me casual things like if I eat already, if I'm feeling okay, if I had a good sleep. But that's just it. Nothing more.

However even if he's being down, he still cuddles me in bed before we sleep but I would wake up in the middle of the night with him crying, tears dampening my shoulders. And I hated it. I hate how sad he's become after losing Yuna.

But I hate myself more for not being able to give him the child that he wants to have.

If I could just give him a child, just one child, this problem won't even occur in the first place. I feel like he badly want to have the child of his own for him to feel complete. And since I can't give him that, he's not contented woth just me on his side.

The following days was worse, Jungkook was almost out of our house almost everyday. When I asked him why, he explained that Mr. Go and him came up with visiting schedule. Jungkook said he wants Yuna to be comfortable with her new home by always being there for her, and I understood. And this day is another day of him visiting her that's why I am left alone again.

Jungkook and I were on a two months leave of work. So I have all the time in the world to spend it however I want. Sadly, Jungkook won't spend it with me. Which is a pity because I still remember him say that those two months will solely be spent as a married couple. And now I'm here with nothing to do.

I looked around the house and thought of doing something productive but I can't think of any. All I wanted was to spend time with Jungkook, maybe cook something together or watch television together.

"Now what do I do?" I aked myself. I don't know how long I was contemplating before I heard light knocks at the door.

Huh? Who could it be?

I stood and opened the door only to see a chipmunk smiling ear to ear at me.

"Chae!" I hugged her tightly, feeling emotional. Finally I'm not alone!

“Woah! What a great welcome!” she giggled and hugged me back.

“Why are you here?” I asked when we both let go of each other.

“I was just checking on you. I heard you came back from your honeymoon too early. Is everything alright?” she asked while tilting her head on the side.

“Alright? Uhm.. Uh. Yeah.. I’m fine. Come on in.” I invited her inside, hoping she’ll not notice how puffy my eyes are. After the wedding, I’ve been secretly crying myself to bed because I feel really sad.

“Where is your annoying husband?” I asked when we sat down on our couch.

“Jimin and Chaeryoung are spending some father and daughter date because our little girl has been bugging her father for always coming late from work. So, Jimin took a leave this time to spend it with his daughter. I was left at home bored that’s why I came here. I hope you don’t mind me interrupting your honeymoon.” she smiled and looked around. “Where is Yuna and Mr. Jeon by the way?”

I paused and thought first if I’ll tell her everything that happened. But I can’t tell her that Yuna is no longer living here and Jungkook is always at Mr. Go’s house to spend time with the girl because I’m sure Chae would be worried for me. In the end, I chose not to tell her.

“They’re having a father and daughter date too.” I simply answered.

“Oh really? I swear Mr. Jeon is a great dad to Yuna! Better than Jimin to Chaeryoung!” she joked while laughing.

He really is a great dad. I think he’s even better being a father than being a husband?

Wait…

I shook my head after realizing what I just spoke inside my head.

No matter how unfair I get treated after our wedding, I can't just simply judge him right now.

We're just weeks past our wedding and I'm sure he'll do better after everything is settled with Yuna. As his wife, I promised to understand him and to support him with whatever he eeds. That was my vow.

"Lis, are you okay?" Chae leaned closer and caressed my cheek. "You look pale?"

"Me? Of course I'm okay." I lied.

"Hmm.. You don't look good. I think you need to go out with me today. I'm heading on a spa for some pampering time so you should come with me." Chae excitedly tugged me to stand but I didn't.

"But Jungkook might look for me."

"Just send him a text, I'm sure he'll be fine."

"I don't know." I sat still. I don't want to disappoint Jungkook if he comes home without me.

"Please Lisa, we haven't spent time together for how many years! I miss you so much. Don't you miss me too?" and just one pout from Chae, I'll end up agreeing to her wishes. That's how convincing she is.

I defeatedly sighed. "Hmm 'kay but let's go home early because Jungkook might—"

"I know I know, don't worry I'll return you to him as early as possible." she giggled again and pulled me once more. "Let's go."

On our way to the spa, I took my phone and typed Jungkook a message.

"Jungkook, I'm with Chae we're heading on a Spa. I hope it's okay?" I pressed send button and waited for a reply. Not a minute after, I received a message from him.

"Okay."

Disappointment washed over me as I read the only word he sent. I can't believe he would sent me with just one word. Not

even I love you or take care?

As my heart was aching so does my head. Suddenly everything turned blurry, my head was almost spinning and I grasped Chae's arms which was driving. I closed my eyes in panic.

"Lisa? Oh my god Lisa? Are you okay?" I heard her voice but I can't seem to open my mouth to speak.

"Ugh.." I groaned and massaged my head with closed eyes. "Chae, my head.." I felt her slow down with her driving and stopped on one corner.

"What's happening?" she worriedly asked.

"My head is spinning, I want to throw up." I replied.

"Wait.. I think I know what's happening." I heared her once more, her voice was laced with excitement this time.

"Lisa, hang on in there and just close your eyes. I think I know where I should drive you. You'll be fine, I'm sure of this." she squeezed my hand and drove her car again.

Moments later, Chae was already parking me infront of a clinic.

I confusedly looked around. "Why are we here?" I thought we're about to go on a spa?

"Shhh.. Just follow me, I will introduce you to my OB, I'm sure you'll like her." I was confused but I just let her my bestfriend guide me inside the spacious clinic.

"Doctor!" Chae hugged the woman.

"Mrs. Park, what brought you here?" A middle aged woman smiled warmly at us.

"I'm with my friend Lisa Jeon." Chae pointed at me and smiled. "I think she needs to get checked. She's showing symptoms just like me back then." Chae explained and I just left there listening.

What exactly are we doing here?

“I’m glad to meet you Lisa. I’m doctor Liu.” she offered her hand for me to shake.

“I’m glad to meet you too.” I smiled back.

“So, you suspect that you are pregnant?” thw doctor asked which surprised me.

What? Did she just say pregnant?

My travelled to Chae and back at the doctor. No, no. I’m not.

“No, no. I don’t think so. You must be mistaken Chae.” I shook my head. This is impossible.

“Come on Lis! Just try to have yourself checked. What if you’re really pregnant?”

“What if I’m not?” as much as I wanted to be pregnant, I don’t want to get my hopes up. This is just impossible. I don’t want to get hurt.

“There’s no harm in trying. And besides, I was just like you when I got pregnant.”

“I don’t know.”

“Please Lis. This won’t take long.” Chae plead again. And if it’s Chae pleading, I dare not say no.

In the end, I ended up agreeing to my friend. I filled out a form which asks information about my recent sexual ativity and other personal details.

The doctor gave me a pregnancy stick and asked me to perform the test on the comfort room.

I admit, I’ve never been this nervous performing this because the last time I talked to an OB, I was crushed with the news about my condition. And here I am again four years later, trying the same procedure.

Sad thing is, I know i’ll get the same single line again.

I sat on the bowl of the comfort room and took a sample of my urine in it. Waiting a minute after, I stared at the little stick expecting for a single line to appear.

But what surprised me was when not only a single line formed but two.

I blinked.

And blinked again.

And blinked again and again.

My fingers shaked as I stared at the stick.

“Oh my god!!!” I didn’t stop my self from shouting.

“Lis? Lis, are you okay?” Chae asked out of the door. She was already there knocking.

“Chae! look!” I opened the door to her and hugged her tightly. “Chae…I’m pregnant! I am!!!” I jumped up and down with her but my friend stopped me from doing it.

“Lis, I’m so happy to hear this but please stop jumping. Your baby is already here.” she gently reminded and rubbed my belly.

“Oh.. Sorry I forgot!” I stopped immediately after realizing that I already have a tiny angel inside me.

“But I still can’t believe it!” my mouth is still hunged open.

“Let’s show the doctor?” Chae offered and helped me walk to the doctor who was waiting for us. I took quick steps as my hands were tightly gripping the pregnancy stick as if it was my baby.

I showed her the kit and she performed another cervical ultrasound to make sure. After getting the result she faced me with a big smile.

“Congratulations! You are really pregnant.” The doctor announced. And once again I feel like jumping out of happiness.

“I can’t believe it. Chae, I’m really pregnant!” I shook my friends shoulder to remind her which made her laugh.

“I know Lis. I know. And I’m so happy for you. I’m sure Jungkook will be the happiest if he hears this great news.”

‘Jungkook?’ I thought.

Oh yeah.. I almost forgot. Now, I can't wait to tell him about the good news. I'm sure he'll be bunny jumping out of happiness too.

I smiled thinking about him, imagining how will he react to it. Will he be contented this time that I'm finally carrying his child?

The laughter which was echoing inside the clinic subsided when the doctor cleared her throat, getting both our attention.

"Mrs. Park, can I speak to Mrs Jeon alone?" the doctor asked my friend politely.

"But why? You can tell me anything." Chae hesitated to leave but I explained that it'll be fine. Soon she left me and the doctor alone.

When Chae left, the doctor faced me with a serious expression on her face. Nervous as I am, I just fidgetted my fingers and waited for her announcement.

I have an idea about it but I just chose to listen to her.

"What is it?" I bravely asked.

"Mrs Jeon, there is something I need to tell you. I hope you take this matter calmly." she looked down the paper with a sad face and faced me again.

"Is something wrong?"

"I'm sorry to say this but you're in no condition to continue this pregnancy. You have this underlying condition that'll be dangerous for you and your baby if you continue with the pregnancy." She explained looking apologetic.

"What should I do then?" I asked.

"It's either you continue your pregnancy but risk your life or just terminate the baby as early as now."

"What?" I've never heard such a cruel option as this before!

"But..I won't terminate it. I waited and prayed for this for years now. I cannot simply gave up on it." I argued.

“I understand but would you rather risk your life for the baby?” her question silenced me.

“How big is the possibility that I won’t survive if I continue the pregnancy?” I asked the hardest question that’s been bugging me cause I badly want to know. Is it that risky?

“90% you won’t survive.” She answered, looking at me with pity.

“Oh my god!” my shoulders slumped hearing the bad news. It feels like the worst nightmare to happen to me.

“How about the baby?” I asked another terrifying question. I swear I don’t want to lose an angel who’s not even born yet.

“The baby will have a greater chance of survival, that is if you’ll give way for him or her.”

“Give way?”

“Yes, if you’ll give up your own life for the baby.”

Tears came rushing down my face hearing this. How can I receive the best news but also the worst news all in a single day?

“I’m so sorry Mrs. Jeon but I think it is better if you just discontinue your pregnancy.” she advised but I didn’t agree.

“I don’t know.” I don’t want to give it up. It’ll just disappoint Jungkook if I tell him this.

How wilI I even tell him? ‘Hey Jungkook, I’m finally pregnant with your child but I’ll terminate your baby because my life will be in danger.’

No, I will never do that to him.

Never.

“Doctor, please don’t tell Chae about this.” I asked.

“Of course! Client’s Confidentiality is my what us doctors pledged.”

“Thank you so much. I’ll make up my mind first. And I promise to be back soon.” I stood and thanked the doctor.

“What did she say?” Chae asked excitedly when I walked out of the clinic.

“Nothing, she just said everything is fine.” I lied. I don’t want to worry the people around me especially Chae and Jungkook.

“You sure?” She raised her brow as if not believing me.

“Yup, come on. Let’s celebrate.” I took my friend’s hand and walked away.

Chae and I spent the day together celebrating the news of my pregnancy. I also asked her to not tell Jimin and Jungkook yet ‘cause I plan on surprising my own husband.

I can’t wait to tell him the good news. I can’t wait to give him his child. With this, he won’t cry over Yuna’s absence anymore.

This time, I’m sure I can make him happy.

Even if it costs me my life.

Author’s Note

This may come as a spoiler but I don’t do sad endings.

😊

Search for Wife

Jungkook's POV

"Just take care of her. It's all that I am asking for." I reminded Jin-goo again.

"You don't have to tell me twice. She's my daughter Jungkook, I will do anything for her. As I said, this time I won't fail her as her father." Jin-goo replied so surely.

"That's good then." I nodded while watching the little girl write her homework. After weeks of living away from Yuna, my heart is already at ease.

Yuna's uniforms are not crumpled anymore. Her lunchbox is always filled with nuritious food, her hair is neatly combed. Her smile reaches her eyes. All of these is because of how Jin-goo caters to her needs. Unlike how Ji-eun treats her daughter, Jin-goo is far from it. He makes sure that Yuna is getting all the attention that she needs, all the things that she needs. Which made me realize that the little girl is better being with her father.

My phone beeped and I read Lisa's message.

"Jungkook, I'm with Chae we're heading on a Spa. I hope it's okay?" I smiled at the simple text.

I quickly typed a message for approval, "Okay." amd sent it. I don't want to lock my wife bored at home. As much as I want to spend time with her, I can't.

Not yet.

I've yet to close a chapter in my life which is my life with Yuna.

I'm so glad that Chae agreed to my request of her visiting Lisa. I asked Chae last night if she could come and be with my wife because I'be visitng Yuna for the last time.

But even if Lisa's with her most trusted friend, I still feel bad over the fact that I've been a terrible husband to her the past few weeks. In all honesty, Yuna leaving us really hurt me. I feel somewhat betrayed especially when Yuna chose her real father over me.

The day I confronted Jin-goo, I asked Yuna immediately if she'll come home with me or not. But the little girl surprised me with her answer.

"Yuna stay Daddy Jin. Dada and Muffin Lady make baby." Those were the words that left me dumbfounded. I can't believe she would say that.

I tried explaining that she will always be dada and Muffin Lady's daughter but she disagree. She kept saying that Muffin Lady Marry Dada and have a baby. I don't know how she learned those things but I was really surprised with how she conceptualize marriage at an early age.

At first, I thought she was just being jealous because I married Lisa. That she's just being rebellious because she only wants my time alone and doesn't want to share with her Muffin Lady but she's not. She was clearly happy in choosing her father.

Yuna was clearly happy with his real father and it was so evident when I found them after searching. So with a heavy heart, I accepted the little girl's decision and gave up on her.

However, the emptiness of losing Yuna led to sadness. I feel like I'm mourning over the loss of my own daughter.

Nevertheless, I made a terrible mistake of leaving Lisa behind because I wanted to save my relationship with Yuna. But Lisa told me she understands and that she'll always be there to support me.

I admit, Lisa was such an angel, the most understanding wife ever. She never failed to take care of me especially at my most down time. She comforts me with her soft words and I feel so blessed.

I lnow I failed her once again by always leaving her side but I can't help it. I'm still adjusting to Yuna's absence. I have a

feeling that I'll never see the girl again so I had to make the most of it.

Especially when Jin-goo announced that he'll take Yuna to Australia to permanently live there. I objected and asked him to not take Yuna away but he said he needs to. Otherwise Ji-eun will take her away from him once she frees herself from jail.

Knowing how crazy Ji-eun is, I understand him. So the following week, I made sure to spend my time with her even though Lisa misses me. I even asked Lisa to come with me but she refuses because she said she's not feeling well.

"What time is your flight tomorrow?" I asked.

"One in the afternoon." he replied.

I just nodded and agreed. "So this is really the last time I get to spend time with her?"

"Listen, I didn't mean to hurt you Jungkook. I appreciate all the things that you did for her. But she is my child, I'm sure you'll understand me if Lisa gets pregnant too."

I shook my head, "No, she can't." I sadly replied.

"You mean? She's?" his eyes widened and looked at me with pity.

"Yeah, but I don't think less of her for that. To me, she's still perfect." I proudly said.

True to that, even if Lisa can't give me my own child, I still love her. I have thought about her condition a lot that I decided that we'll just adopt. I thought if we could raise someone as our kid, Lisa will not feel empty.

Then Yuna came to my life, I imagined that we can finally be a complete family. We will be happy. But sadly, Yuna left. I feel bad especially for Lisa. I think she'll be down again. I mean she just lost Jihoon and now Yuna.

So I did all my best to take Yuna back so that Lisa won't think less of herself, that she could still be a mother even if it's other's child.

I just hope she'll take the news of Yuna leaving for good positively. I don't want my baby to get hurt again.

"She is, what a beautiful and kind lady." he smiled adoringly which made me frown.

I cleared my throat, "She's mine in case you forgot Mr. Goo." but the man just laughed at me.

"Hmm.. Lucky you, you married her already. She's caught everyone's attention especially the men in school."

"What do you mean? Somebody's checking her out?" I got irritated.

I hate it when Lisa attracts male species. I know it is always her talent, drawing men to her and it's really tiring.

"I mean your wife is gorgeous, who wouldn't look?" Jin-goo shrugged.

"Shut up. She's mine." I rolled my eyes at him.

"If you say so, but aren't you concerned that you're here everyday, leaving her alone? What if one day she finds another man who can spend more time with her and decides to leave you?"

"Lisa is not Ji-eun. She's faithful and she'll never leave me for another man." I feel like my blood is boiling just listening to his theories.

And why am I even talking to this man in the first place? He's so annoying!

"Just what if?" he raised his brow, teasing.

"Will you please shut up? I think I'll leave now. I will just see you at the airport tomorrow, I'll ask Lisa to come with me too so she could see Yuna for the last time." I stood and walked to the little girl.

"That sounds good." Jin-goo agreed.

I kissed Yuna goodbye and hugged her tightly. "Muffin Lady and Dada will see you at the airport tomorrow okay? Please count all the Kangaroos for me."

“Yes Dada, Yuna want see Muffin Lady and baby.” she squeaked in excitement and both Jin-goo and I exchanged looks.

“Baby, there’s no baby other than you. You are our only baby.”

“No, Muffin Lady baby inside tummy.” she argued.

I sighed and just ruffled her hair. I hope she won’t talk nonsense to Lisa tomorrow, otherwise my wife will have her hopes up. “Dada is leaving now. Be a good girl, okay?”

“Yes, Yuna good girl.” I gave her another kiss before leaving the two alone.

It was just past five in the afternoon when I left his house. And I decided to drive straight to a bouquet shop, to buy my wife some peace offering.

I know giving her flowers is not enough to make up for the time we missed but I still want to offer her one. And knowing lisa, im sure she’ll love this.

Ot was already dark when I got home, but Lisa isn’t there yet. So I decided to just cook us both a dinner. Now that Yuna is gone for good, I can have all the time in the world to serve Lisa.

I swear from this day forward, I’ll treat her like a queen. That’s how I planned things from the very beginning after the wedding.

Unfortunately, my plan wasn’t realized after what happened. We had to cut our honeymoon short and go home early because of the news.

I got mad at Lisa for not telling me about her meeting with Yuna’s real father. I was even blaming her back the. I thought I could’ve prevented things from happening if she just told me earlier.

My frustrations over losing Yuna caused me to be cold to her, my own wife and I really regret it. I realized that Lisa didn’t do anything wrong. She just forgot telling me about it.

Whether she told me or not, Yuna would still choose her own father over me and it's beyond my control anymore.

The silence of the house reminded me that I'm just alone with no Lisa by my side.

Suddenly I missed her presence. I miss the way she smiles at me. I miss her soft lips. I miss her hugs and her I love you's. I miss everything about her.

Checking the time it was already 8 in the evening, Still, she's not yet back. This made me worried. So I decided to just call her. But when I did, her phone was unattended.

Where is she? I wonder if Chae and her are still together?

I decided to call Chae. *"Chae, where are you?"*

"Uhm, Mr. Jeon I'm here at home, about to sleep." she replied with a tired voice.

"Wait? Is Lisa with you?"

"Nope, I sent her to your house three hours ago. Is everything okay?" She asked worriedly.

"Uh.. Nothing, maybe she's in our room now." I quickly ended the call and rushed to our room to check if she's there.

But she's not.

Fear washed over me as I remember the time when Lisa left me with just a goddamn letter.

What if Jingoo was right? What if she left me because she got tired of being alone?

Shit!

Just shit!

What the fuck did I just do with my life?

I ran our of the house, to my car while pressing the dial button to Lisa's number.

"Please pick up, please baby."

My calls won't reach her and I'm getting more anxious.

I drive straight to the orphanage hoping she's there but she's not.

I went to Mr. Kim's house next to see if she just visited Jihoon but when I got there, one of the guards told me that Mr. Kim, Jennie and Jihoon went out for a family dinner.

I was getting restless and worried as time goes by without seeing Lisa. My heart was also getting heavy under my chest not knowing what to do or where to go.

"He's not here Mr. Jeon." Yoongi who was already in pajama answered. He was the last of Lisa's classmates I went to and unfortunately she's not here too.

"Is anything wrong? It's already late Mr. Jeon, maybe Lisa just went to get something. I'm sure she's back now at your house." Yoongi added.

I took a deep breath and bid the man goodbye. With slumped shoulders, I drove back home, hoping that Lisa was already back.

But when I got home, she's still nowhere to be found.

That moment, I wasn't sure what to do anymore. I felt helpless and at the verge of crying. Suddenly flashbacks of Lisa leaving me four years ago came rushing before my eyes.

Tears began falling down my cheeks remembering how crushed I was when she left me.

My heart is badly aching just thinking that I won't see her again.

Where is my Lisa?

Where is my wife?

I was so scared thinking that she probably left me. And it was my damn fault. I realized how bad I treated her the past few weeks.

I was too concerned over the loss of a child which is not even mine. And here I am regretting things I did.

I should've been better.

I could've treated her like a goddess cause that's what she is: an angel, a goddess, a queen.

Yet I spent most of my time with somebody else's daughter!

Fuck!

I look around our house, it feels so cold and empty without her.

Lisa left me and I'm the one to blame.

She got tired of waiting, I'm sure.

But unlike years later, I won't stop searching this time.

I drove my car again and started my search for my wife. Who knows if she's just walking around the streets? That's how Mr. Kim found her back then, so I did.

I was almost out of Seoul in search when my phone started ringing.

Mom calling…

"Mom?" I answered, my eyes were still focused on the road, hoping to find Lisa.

"Jungkook, I'm sorry for calling just now but I just want to say that Lisa will be spending the night here."

"What?"

I never stepped on my car break this hard. *"You mean she's with you?"*

"Yes, she's here. I went to your house earlier and invited her for dinner. But we didn't notice that it was already late. She's already sleeping in your old room. I'll just drive her tomorrow to your house."

"Thank God!" I felt so relieved hearing that Lisa was just with my mother. I was about to go crazy searching for her!

"See you tomorrow Jk, your dad and I will go to bed now __"

"Wait wait… I'll go there. I want to see Lisa."

“Huh? But she’s already sleeping. Don’t bother your wife when she’s taking a rest.”

“I won’t wake her. I just want to see her.” I miss her so much.

“Okay, take care on your way, son.”

I reached my parents house in less than ten minutes, that’s how fast I drive. I don’t care if my car was almost flying. I just wanted to see Lisa. I want to see her face.

And when I open the door to my old room, Lisa was really there, sleeping peacefully just like a baby.

I wanted to wake her up, to apologize and to beg for forgiveness after everything that I had done. Also to tell her that I love her so much.

That I realized I don’t care if Yuna leaves, I don’t care anymore if all the people in my life leaves me, as long as it is not her.

I walked slowly to the bed and removed my clothes, I lie by her side and nuzzled my face into her neck.

Her heavenly scent reminded me again how much I missed her, I missed her so bad.

“I’m sorry, baby.” I pulled her body to mine and hugged her tightly. Lisa didn’t wake. She remained sleeping.

My once raging heart calmed down as soon as my skin touched hers.

Soon, I was already in deep slumber.

When I open my eyes, Lisa's smiling face welcomed me thought the morning.

"Good morning!" She greeted, iling sweetly.

"Baby..you'r awake." I rubbed my eyes and looked around. Yeah, I remember we fell asleep at my old bedroom.

"How did you ge here? I'm sorry if I wasn't able to call you last night, my battery was drained—"

"Shhh.." I pressed my finger on her lips. "Don't. Don't apologize. Between the two of us, it is me who needs to apologize for everything."

"Jungkook, you don't have to." Lisa's eyes sparked with sadness, she looked away.

"I'm so sorry baby! I was too scared for Yuna too leave that I didn't realize I was already hurting you."

"I'm okay. I told you it's okay—"

"No, no baby, I know it isn't. I know I hurt you. I'm so sorry I hope you give me another chance."

"You don't have to say sorry to me. It's really okay." Lisa once again smiled, masking her own sadness but I could see it, how she fakes her emotions. Her smile won't even reach her eyes.

"Lisa, please be mad at me. It guilts me more how you remain this kind and understanding. Slap me, curse at me, yell at me. Please I deserve it."

I was waiting for her to throw fits and to do everything that I tell her but she didn't. Instead she pulled me in and hugged me tight.

"I vowed to understand you, support you and make you happy. If you weren't happy with my presence alone, I would still understand."

"And I vowed to prioritize you above all the things yet I didn't. I left you almost everyday just to be with a kid which is not even mine—"

“You wanted a daughter. She is more important than me.” my eyes widened with her words.

“Lisa!” I let go of the hug to look into her eye. “What are you saying! That’s not true! No one is more important than you in my life! You are my everything.”

“But..”

“I just thought you wanted a child so bad that’s why I was clinging to the idea of having Yuna as our adopted daughter. But it never meant that i’ll prefer her over you. You are the most important person in my life Lisa.”

Lisa’s expression softened after that. She threw her arms around me again and I also ppressed her slender body her to mine.

“It’s okay. I know you love me and you’ll make up for everything. You don’t have to worry with how I feel.”

“Are you even real?” I asked and she giggled.

I’ve never met a woman as patient as her, she’s close to being impossible.

Lisa is the best wife in the world.

I held her chin for her to look at me, “But seriously, I’m so sorry baby. I hope you forgive me. I promise I won’t do it again.”

“I already forgave long before you even apologized.”

“God, just how kind you are.” I whispered. Leaning closer, I was about to kiss her lips when she moved away from me.

“I..I haven’t brushed my teeth yet.” she shook her head and stood from the bed.

“I already told you you don’t smell bad but I need to brush mine too. Come, let brush our teeth together.” I offered and she nodded.

Lisa and I walked to the bathroom while my hand was holding her hand tight.

I was so afraid to let go of her again, just having the thought of her leaving scares the shit out of me.

“Jungkook, my hand.” she tugged her hand when we were already by the bathroom.

“Oh sorry.” I said and let go of her. I took new pack of toothbrush for her and me and enjoyed the time brushing teeth together.

Moments later, Lisa and I were back at my old bedroom sharing a kiss.

“Baby I miss this so much.” I whispered against her lips. Her arms were already circling to my neck while one of her hand was tugging my hair, pulling me to her.

Over the course of being together, I have studied Lisa’s body language enough to know what she wants. Everytime she pulls my hair to her, everytime she tugs my lips, everytime she pushes her pelvis against mine everytime she moans against our kiss and everytime her breathing becomes staggered as her chest heaves up and down, I am certain that she wants to make love. And now is definitely the time she wants to have one.

I mean who wouldn’t be? We haven’t make love after our short honeymoon and I’m sure she wants it just like how I do.

It was just 8 in the morning but for Lisa and I, there is not too early or too late for sex.

“I missed this too.” she whispered back.

I slowly rolled her to the bed. And hovered on top of her. Then I began unbottoning her pull over when the door to my room opened.

“Jungkook, Lisa, breakfast is ready…oh shit!” My mom shut the door again just after opening it. “I’m sorry, don’t bother coming downstairs, just continue with what you’re doing.” My mom shouted against the door making Lisa and I stop with our heated moment.

Lisa sat up quickly and fixed her self while looking away.

“Uhm, are you hungry?” I scratched my head, feeling embarrassed. Why does my mom always catch us being in this kind of situation?

“Uh.. Yeah..” my wife answered shyly.

“Let’s joined them for breakfast and just continue back at our house, is it okay baby?” I offered and she excitedly nodded.

We both walk down and faced my parents who was already sharing breakfast by the dinning table.

“Oh, that was quick! I bet Jungkook moved like a bunny” My mom joked which earned a glare from me.

“Mom!”

“Good morning Lisa, how was your sleep?” Father cut us off.

“It was good. Thank you so much for letting me sleep here.” Lisa politely bowed then sat on the chair facing my mom.

“Of course, you can stay here anytime you want.” my father offered.

“Thank you!” Lisa bowed.

“Just tell me if Jungkook leaves you alone again, I won’t hesitate to take you here. And Jungkook, I am really disappointed with how you treat your wife! Imagine leaving her alone at your house without securities around! Don’t you feel worried about her safety! What kind of a husband are you?”

“It’s okay mom—” Lisa opened her lips to defend me but was shut by mom.

“No, Lisa it is not okay. I am very much aware that Jungkook leaves the house to go and visit Yuna and it’s not okay, If I am Lisa, I will leave and not come back again!”

“Hon, let the kids fix this matter. It’s not ours to meddle with.” father reached out to rub my mom’s back which silenced her.

I didn’t dare defend myself because my mom was right, I legit messed up.

“I already apologized to Lisa mom. I promise before you to never neglect her again.” I looked at Lisa who was silently staring at the food. I don’t know if she’s really forgiven me but I’ll make sure she will.

“You better. Because I don’t want to see you crying and threatening to end your life again if she leaves you for the second time.” My mom glared at me but turned to Lisa and smile sweetly, “Don’t mind us sweetie, go ahead and enjoy the food.” she offered to which Lisa nodded.

All of us began eating but then I realized that Lisa was not touching the food. She was just rubbing her tummy like it was hurting.

“Are you okay baby?” I asked her, she looks pale.

“What is it Lisa? Don’t you like the food?” My mom worriedly asked.

“Uhm.. I’m just not feeling well, that’s all.” she answered. I got worried when she closed her eyes and rubbed her temple. “Is it okay if I go back to the room?” Lisa asked and before we could even answer, she already excused herself and walked away.

“Jungkook, what was that?” My mom eyed me.

“What?” I asked back.

“I can’t believe she’s your wife yet you can’t tell what’s happening to her?” My father spoke looking disappointed.

“What do you mean?” I asked. I was confused with how my father looks at me. It’s as if I killed someone.

My mom looks confused as me too.

Father cleared his throat and both mom and I waited for his next words.

“Your wife is pregnant, you don’t know?”

It took me minutes to process what he said.

“What???”

“Lisa is pregnant?!”

Author’s Note

Who’s the father? Wrong answers only 😂

In His Warmth

Jungkook's POV

"Lisa is pregant?!"

Did I hear my father right? Lisa is pregnant?

"Yes, I'm sure of it. I was observing her since last night until this morning. That's exactly how your mother was when she got pregnant with you Jungkook."

My mother gasped, "Oh my god! Jungkook you're going to be a father!" mom squeaked in excitement and stood to hug me.

"I can't…I can't believe it..I.." I don't know what to say.

Is it true? What if she's not? Should I ask Lisa just to make sure? I was too shocked that I was frozen on my spot.

"Your wife is pregnant and this is the time where she needs you the most, I hope you treat her with care this time." father spoke with a warning voice. I seldom see him as serious as this so I know I really need to pull myself together and forget the things which does not concern my family, and that is Lisa.

"I will check on her." I excused myself and ran upstairs to where my wife is. Just when I open the door to my room to search for her, I caught her by the bathroom sink washing her face with water.

I observed how wiped her face with a clean towel after.

"Oh God! Jungkook you startled me!" She clenched her fist against her chest out of surprise when she realized that I was already standing behind her.

"Lisa… Are you… Are you pregnant?" My fingers were lightly shaking as I point on her tummy, hoping that there is something in there.

Lisa looked surprise with my question but recovered immediately. She walked out of the bathroom and took her purse. Then she fished something out of it.

When my eyes got a glimpse of a pregnancy stick, was the moment I became so emotional.

“Here, I was about to surprise you but you found out right away” Lisa handed me a pregnancy stick with two very visible lines in it.

Positive, she’s really pregnant.

“Oh God, Lisa!” I gasped, realizing it was true. My Lisa is really pregnant. I literally cried out of joy just knowing how we were able to form a bundle of joy inside her womb.

I didn’t wait any longer and embraced Lisa so tight. I kissed her face, her forehead, her cheeks, her lips in pure happiness and gratefulness.

I was so damn happy! Too happy that I’m praying this isn’t a dream. I just couldn’t believe it that I’ll be recieving the greatest news in my life.

Imagine having the love of your life pregnant? Just how awesome life is!

“You’re pregnant! Please tell me I’m not dreaming baby.”

“I’m really pregnant. I went to an OB gyne yesterday and had it confirmed.” She replied with assurance in her voice.

“You’re pregnant! You’re pregnant!” I repeated the words over and over again to have it sink in that Lisa’s finally carrying my child while prepping her face with gentle kisses.

Lisa giggles everytime my lips would land on her beautiful face, so she lightly pushed me. “Jungkook stop, it’s tickling me.”

“Do you have any idea how happy I am baby? Oh God! We should celebrate! Let’s celebrate my love!” I carried Lisa in my arms and began jumping as if she was a trophy I just won but then she stopped me.

“Jungkook, put me down! the baby will get dizzy.”

“Oh sorry! I’m sorry baby.” I slowly placed her down and kneeled infront of her. Pressing my ear against her flat tummy, I smiled.

“Hello there little angel! I’m you father! Can you hear me?” I tried to listen and looked at the smiling Lisa to ask “The baby won’t answer?”

Of course it was a joke, I’m just excited to talk to our baby.

“Jungkook, the baby is just a month old, of course she won’t answer yet.” Lisa chuckled softly. She looks at me with an amused eyes and I’m glad I can make her laugh like this. It’s been a long time since I made her smile because I have been a jerk the past few weeks which guilts me more. If I only knew she was pregnant.

“She? You think she’s a girl?” I asked as I was still kneeling infront of her.

“I hope so. You wanted a daughter from the very beginning, right?”

“When did I say that? I don’t mind having a boy, just the fact that we are blessed with one is more than enough.”

“But you told me you wanted a girl four years ago.”

“That was back then, I will love our baby whatever the gender is. Right baby? Dada loves you even if you’re a boy or girl.” I smiled at her tummy and gave it my very first kiss.

“That was Dada’s first kiss with you my sunshine, I hope to kiss you more when you go out of mommy’s” Lisa laughed again this time.

“Come on, stand up Jungkook. You’ll hurt your knee.” She said and pulled me to her.

“Are you happy?” she asked, her curious gaze was on mine.

“Of course I am! This is the greatest gift I ever received from you. You just don’t know how you make me happy Lisa. I love you. I love you so so much.” I poured out my overflowing happiness by kissing my wife’s lips. I kissed her

slow and tender as if conveying how lucky I am to have her and Lisa returned the kiss with the same amount of love.

I didn't know we've been kissing for too long until Lisa gasp for air. So I let go and just carressed her round puffy checks.

God! I love her so much!

"I'm glad I can make you happy." Lisa once again spoke.

"You always make me happy. Not a day goes by that I'm not happy and feeling grateful for having you."

"Thank you Jungkook!"

"Thank you for what?"

"For giving me this." she said pointing at her tummy.

"I should be the one to thank you. They said carrying a baby for 9 months is hard and giving birth is the most painful thing to happen to a human." I guiltily looked at her. I hope I can ease her pain when she goes through it in the future.

"Nothing I can't handle for you Jungkook. That's how much I love you."

Once again, I was overwhelmed by Lisa's words that pulled her for another hug.

"I promise from this day forward, I will serve you baby. I'll take care of you and our baby and we'll be a complete and a happy family." I let go of the hug and raised my palm as if promising. But when I said those words, Lisa's eyes sparked with sadness. I realized she was already tearing. Her eyes glistened with tears and by the look of it, she seems sad than happy.

"Are you crying? Is there something wrong?" I held her shoulders for her to face me, I got worried all of a sudden but she just shook her head.

"It's nothing. I'm just happy I can make you happy, that's all." Lisa answered as if convincing herself.

Why do I feel like something isn't right with her?

“Are you sure?”

“Yes I am, we better tell mother and father about the news. I’m sure they’ll be be happy to hear this. Let’s go.” Lisa let go and walked out of the room ahead of me.

Now she looks excited than awhile ago. ‘Maybe I’m just over-analyzing. I shrugged and let go of the thought then followed her downstairs.

Lisa and I spent the whole morning with my parents. My mother didn’t hide her excitement over the pregnancy news. She kept calling all her friends and all their business partners even the employees that they’re finally having an heir to the Jeon company.

My father was very happy too. But he’s more concerned with Lisa. He kept asking her how she feels and if she’s not having a hard time with the first month of being pregnant.

“I can look for the best doctor to make sure that you are okay. Also, I will hire a private nurse for Lisa.” he spoke with finality.

“Father, you don’t have to. I’m really fine by myself.” Lisa refused father’s offer. And I understand. Lisa is not the type of girl who is weak and would seek for anyone’s help. She grew up strong and very independent, having a nurse to take care of her is impossible.

“But we need to have you safe for 9 months. Also, your work is stressful. I think it is better if you just take an indefinite leave or just resign so that you can stay at your house while you are pregnant.” Lisa frowned upon hearing this and it got me concerned. I understand my father’s worry and I’m also on his side. I also want Lisa to resign to have her safe but I know how much she loves her work so I won’t dare ask her do this without pleading.

“Father, this is Lisa’s job we’re talking about so I think we should let Lisa decide on this matter. I believe she has

decisions of her own.” I tried to convince my father as I could how Lisa is getting upset over the topic.

“Im just concerned with Lisa’s safety. You’ve both been praying for this child to come and now that it’s here we better make sure that the child is safe and healthy. I hope you don’t get mad at me dear.” Father gave my wife an apologetic look to which Lisa just nodded.

“I understand father, but I really want to work. Without work, I have nothing else to do at home. It’ll just be boring waiting for Jungkook while he works. And I want to help with the expenses and the bills at home. I don’t want to burden Jungkook more.” Lisa explained gently.

“Aww Lisa is such a sweet and thoughtful wife. See Jungkook how lucky you are to have this young girl as your wife. She always considers you.” Mother said.

And she doesn’t have to say it. I know how great Lisa is long before we began dating. That’s one of the reasons why I feel in love with her. She’s not just a beauty outside but also a pure soul within.

“Mom, dad, we appreciate your concern but Lisa and I will discuss matter first. Please understand.” I looked over Lisa who’s silently watching me. Then gave her hand a little squeeze.

“Fine. But if you need anything, don’t hesitate to tell us. We are willing to help you either with finances or with moral support.” Father finally nodded.

End of discussion.

It was past noon when Lisa and I decided to leave my parents house.

“We are heading straight home?” Lisa asked while I’m helping her adjust her seatbelt.

“Nope, let’s go to the airport first.” I replied.

“Airport, why?”

“Today is Yuna’s flight to Australia. We better bid her a goodbye first. That is if you’re okay with it baby?”

“Wait.. What do you mean flight to Australia? You mean Mr. Goo…? Lisa gasped.

“Yes she will permanently live there with her father Lisa.”

I don’t know why. I’m supposed to be sad with Yuna leaving but I’m just too happy with the pregnancy news to be gloomy over Yuna.

“Oh.. So that’s why.” Lisa stopped herself from further talking.

“Yeah.. I’m sorry if I just told you about this now. I hope you won’t get mad at me. This is also the reason why I was always with her. But I know now that it was still terrible to leave you behind just because of it.” I guiltily apologized.

“It’s okay. It must have been hard for you.” I can’t help but smile. If Lisa was another girl, she probably left me for what I did.

“It was. But I’m fine now. I finally accepted the fact that she’s not ours. So, let’s go and see Yuna for the last time.” I suggested to which Lisa nodded.

Soon we both arrived at the airport. Yuna was already waiting with her father when we got there. And I watched how Lisa hugged the little girl tight amd promised her she would call her always.

“Muffin Lady kiss baby!” Yuna tried to reach Lisa’s tummy and Lisa gladly crouched down to level her face.

I took my phone and capture in admiration how the three of the most imortant person in my life can be in the same frame.

First Yuna, second our baby which is yet to be born and third the love of my life, Lisa. The moment was just too perfect that I kept taking pictures with just my phone. Too bad, I wasn’t able to bring a better camera.

Soon, Yuna and Jin-goo left and It was like a chapter of my life finally closed. The chapter was my life with Yuna.

And this is the part where I can focus my attention to my real family which is Lisa and our baby.

Lisa and I went back home a little late, and seeing her restless face right now tells me she's already tired.

"Are you okay?" I asked for the hundredth time. Despite the happiness that we feel about the news of her getting pregnant, it still bugs me how and why she's being silent.

I am very much aware of how she silently prays everynight just for her to get pregnant. And now that we are granted with one, she's suddenly silent?

"You can tell me anything Lisa. If there's something bothering you, you can share it with me." I almost ask with a pleading voice just for her to open up her thoughts.

"I'm fine Jungkook. You don't have to be worried. I'm just thinking about what father said earlier during lunch."

"Oh.. Is that it?" I feel relieved that it's just about that. I feel like we can settle the matter with ease.

"Yeah, I don't want to quit my job." she announced.

"I know but it's for your own safety we are talking about. We both know that teaching is stressful. And the reports being ask are always piled everyday." I tried to make her agree to me by explaining gently.

Unlike the 18-year old Lisa who willingly submits to my wishes, this 22 year old Lisa is far from it. You cannot simply command her to do this and that.

"But it makes me happy!" she argued.

"I know baby but.." I looked at her pouting face again and sigh. "Okay okay, I won't argue anymore. You can work." Lisa's pouting face was replaced with a smile, "but if I see you having a hard time, I'm going to make you file for a leave."

"Jungkook!"

"Taking a leave is better than resigning Lisa. And just remember that this is also for the baby." I reached out to rub her tummy and now it's her turn to sigh.

“Okay but if I surv—I mean after giving birth, I want to go back to work.” She fluttered her eyelashes asking and I smiled at how beautiful she is.

“That’s a deal then.”

“Okay. It’s deal.” Lisa looked satisfied with our deal which isn’t that bad after all.

“Common, let’s get inside. I’ll cook you a dinner.”

“You’ll cook for me?” she asked as if surprised that I’ll be the one cooking.

“Of course, from now on, I’ll make up for everything.” I gently kissed Lisa’s forhead before helping her out of our car.

Lisa’s POV

The air was cold so I kept rubbing my arms to keep me warm. Stairing into the stars of the night from the balcony of our room, my mind was filled with a lot of thoughts. Even thoigh the night is silent, I could still hear the fast beating of my anxious heart.

I sighed as I recall the happenings of the day. From Jungkook and his parents finding out about my baby upto sending Yuna to the airport and bidding the sweet child goodbye.

I am very much torn between telling Jungkook the truth about my pregnancy and not.

First, he told how much this baby makes him really happy. Just the way his eyes sparked with joy breaks my heart.

Second my in-laws were very excited about it. Making them felt secured that finally they have an heir to the company they put their blood and sweat on, lessened my decision to tell them the truth.

I can’t.

I just couldn’t.

I can’t dare to tell them especially my husband that I will die if I continue with the pregnancy.

But what can I do? This is my faith and I am bound to die this way.

I suddenly remembered the time when I caught Jungkook crying a few years back when he dreamt about me dying from giving birth.

He looked so fragile that time, begging me to not leave him in this world.

Now, who would've thought that his dream will come true?

He really shouldn't have laughed at me when I was crying over that anime.

Will he cry for me the same way if I die? Should I tell him this? If I do, how will Jungkook react? How would he decide if he is me? Jungkook will only be contented if I can give him his child.

"Baby? What are doing here?" I heard Jungkook's sleepy but yet worried voice behind me. I then faced him with smile on my face.

"Nothing, I just need some fresh air." I answered, he was still in his night robe, abs showing. Looking at it now, I think I feel hotter than cold.

A while ago, I secretly left him in the bed while he was sleeping to collect my thoughts and now here he is joining me.

"It's too late, and you'll get cold. Let's go back. It's not good for the baby."

"It's okay. I'm not cold.
Jungkook walked forward and rubbed my arm "You are cold baby."

He was right but I don't want to go back yet. I'm just in my robe and the coldness of the night penetrates my skin, still I find it peaceful staying here. As if I am making pact with my own thoughts.

"A little later. Just go back to sleep Jungkook." I replied.

"Well if you don't want to go back yet, let me just hug you so that we can share my warmth." Jungkook said and hugged

me from the back his arms encircled around me, caging me in his body. His face rested on my shoulder and breathed calmly.

“I love you.” he whispered.

“I love you too.”

Just having his skin touched mine, made me feel warm. Not just my body but as well as my heart.

That night was the first night we spent as a happy married couple and I felt so contented.

Now, I don’t care if I have less than nine months to live in this world, as long as Jungkook and I will spend it like this:

me being cuddled in his warmth.

Author’s Note

Two chapters left my loves.

Question for my dearest readers:

Who would you want to be the second male lead for my upcoming story? Please share me your thoughts. Thanks!

Hormones ⚠

Jungkook's POV

"Dance!"

"Lisa I can't—" I shook my head aggressively this time.

"I said dance!"

"Baby, I can do anything but that please—"

It's just 8 in the morning when I woke up to Lisa's whinning. She woke me up asking for something and I thought she was just craving for food. But I was terrified beyond belief knowing that she wants me to dance.

Like who the heck dances early in the morning with no music?

"I see you don't love me anymore." Lisa's eyes watered almost immediately after I refuse her request. It's not even a request, it's more like she's forcing me to do it.

I look at her in disbelief but she really started crying.

And my chest aches at it, I can't see her like this. I don't want my baby crying.

I sighed in defeat, "Hush now, please don't cry."

"But you won't dance for me!" she started sobbing in her palm and it guilts me more. But I really don't want to dance infront of her. Her pregnancy hormones is making her crave for the weirdest shits and I'm always at the losing end because I will always comply to her wishes.

"Fine, fine!" I throw my hands in the air, "What do you want me to dance?" I asked. God! Never in my life I imagined

that I will have to dance infront of a girl, but who am I to refuse my wife?

Lisa grinned automatically and wiped her tears with the back of her palm, “I want a sexy dance.”

“You what???” of all the dances!

“Dance! Now!” she spoke like a queen ordering a servant.

“Okay, Okay…I will dance now.” I said and started dancing infront of her.

She frowned, “Move your hips, do a sexy dance not a robot dance!” Lisa complained.

And I did what she wanted, I started dancing like those guys in the gay club which made Lisa smile in satisfaction.

“Woah! Woah! Sexy sexy!” she chanted and clapped her hands. She even whistled at me.

‘Fuck hormones!’ I mentally cursed out of embarrassment but just seeing my wife happy like this makes me continue more.

“Now remove your clothes!”

“Wait—what? You’re asking me to strip now?” my eyes widen but Lisa started tearing again.

“See.. You don’t really love me!”

“Fine fine, here, I’m taking it off!” I rushed to remove my sweater. Freeing my self from the constriction of my clothes made her eyes widen. Lisa looked at me intently, stopped with her clapping, and eyes just focused on me.

When I thought it was enough, Lisa added, “your sweatpants too.”

“Girl?”

“Remove your sweatpants or me and our baby will cry!” she threatened.

Why would our baby even cry just because I’m not stripping?

Whatever, I just did what she wanted. I took of my sweatpants. And now I'm left with my boxers.

"You're so hot, you know that." she smiled at me. Then her eyes travelled to my morning wood.

"Shall I continue with the dancing?" I asked.

"Yes, of course!"

So i did, I danced infront of her and moved between Lisa's legs, she gasped "Oh my god Jungkook!"

I feel a little proud of myself this time. Not caring if I'm dancing weirdly infront of her. I'm just glad that Lisa seems to be turned on with what I'm doing.

Now I'm torn between wanting to fuck her and not. Despite being pregnant for two months, Lisa is still as hot as ever. She has no baby bump yet but her breast and ass grew in size. I had always dreamt of groping them and squeezing them with my hand. I wished to make love to her but I can't.

I'm too scared for the baby.

And I don't know how she'll feel. That's why ever since I learned that she's pregnant, I haven't attempted to have sex with. Her and our baby's safety is still my priority more than my own pleasure.

But looking at her now, how she bites her lip as I grind my hips into the air, how she breathes sharply with my every move, how her eyes focus on me with so much intensity, makes me feel needy.

A strong surge of lust fills my whole system. Suddenly, I want to make love with my wife.

But won't she be mad?

"Jungkook…" she called.

"Yes, baby.."

"Let's…" she shyly bit her lip and looked away.

Oh god! Does Lisa want me too?

"Let's what baby?" I urge her to continue.

“Let’s….”

I waited for her next word, hoping that she’ll say ‘fuck me daddy’ but I frowned when Lisa answered the opposite.

“Let’s eat. I’m hungry!”

Then just like that, she left the room while humming as if contented with what she got. And I was left with a real real huge boner.

I just shook my head and head to the shower again to have my junior sleep. Today is a monday and I a have work so I shouldn’t be horny or else it’ll be uncomfortable to hold a class.

After bath, I walked to the kitchen were I suppose Lisa is already eating. But when I got there, she’s still cooking and what’s funny is she’s crying while cooking.

I don’t want to laugh but Lisa is just too adorable now that she got pregnant. She turned into an emotional but cute little baby and she cries for almost anything.

“Why are you crying?” I asked as I walk to her. I already see the burnt egg she was cooking, which I assume was the reason.

“Jungkook, the egg. It’s burnt. I’m a useless wife. I don’t deserve you. You will leave me for sure!” her tears were falling one by one and I want to kiss her round cheeks so bad so I did.

“The egg looks fine. Com’on don’t cry.”

“You’re just saying that because you don’t want me upset.”

“It’s really fine. I can eat that. But I have to cook for you and our baby now so you should sit there and just wait till I finish.” I gently pulled her to her seat and make her sit there.

I began cooking Lisa and I breakfast. When I was done, I made sure to eat her burnt egg so that she’ll stop pouting.

“Hmm.. Not bad.” I commented which replaced Lisa’s pout with a grin.

“Really?” she asked.

“Really. Now start eating and take a rest as you wait for me. Your prenatal check up is at 12pm right? I will have to skip my load at that hour to accompany you—”

“No!!!”

I was shocked to have Lisa shout at me.

“Lisa? why?”

“I don’t want you to come!”

“What do you mean you don’t want me to come? You told me last night that you’ll have your check up and I’m your husband. Of course I will come.”

“I don’t wanna!” she crossed her arms over her chest and glared at me.

“Baby please let me accompany you. I want to hear what the doctor will say about you and our baby.”

“No, I’d rather go alone.”

“Then explain to me why? Why can’t I come with you?” I admit she’s so frustrating sometimes. All I wanted to do is to make sure that she and our baby is fine.

“Wait, is your Ob a male or a female?” I asked, I hope my suspicion isn’t right.

“Of course a female, why would I have a male OB?”

“Thank goodness then.” I breathed out of relief. I don’t want other guys checking my wife’s private part even if they’re professional.

“Just please don’t come. Chae and I agreed to go together.”

“As far as I remember, it is me who’s your husband, not Chae.” I rolled my eyes. Chae is making me jealous again. Now I understand why Lisa annoys Jimin.

“But we talked about going there together and we’re planning to shop after. Please Jungkook don’t come with me. Besides you have a class and I’m the only one on leave.”

I sighed. “Fine, but be careful with your shopping okay? And don’t carry too much. If you need someone to carry your

shopping bags, don't hesitate to call me."

"Yes, thank you!" she smiled and started munching on her food.

This is not the first time that Lisa refused to have me go with her on a check up. Last month she also threw tantrums when I told her I would like to go to a prenatal with her.

Now I'm curious if it's just because of her hormones or she's hiding something from me.

Whatever it is, I need to find out.

After work, I got home earlier than usual. And I was surprised that Lisa was already by the living room, watching anime.

And surprise! she's crying again.

I took a deep breath and walked to kiss the top of her head. "I'm home baby, I bought you the fruit that you wanted, I'll peel them later for you." I said.

"Wow! Thank you so much!" she scooted further and pat the space beside her for me to sit.

"How was your check up and your shopping? Did Chae drove you here?" I asked.

"Uhm…Chae didn't come with me because she had to attend Chaeryoung's PTA meeting.

"What??? You mean you left alone?"

"Yes, and I'm fine." she answered nonchalantly while here I am about to have a heart attack knowing that my wife left the house alone.

"Are you fucking serious? You went to prenatal check-up alone? What did the doctor say?"

"Chill kook, I am fine. She said everything is normal with me and the baby." she replied while her eyes are focused on the anime.

"Are you sure?" I asked, tilting my head to look at her. She's really getting weird.

“I am sure.”

“Did you go shopping then?”

“Nope. I don’t want to shop alone.”

“Well, I can come with you if you want.”

“Maybe next time.” Lisa replied again.

“Hmmm.. Wait, I haven’t kissed our baby yet.” I crouched down to level her tummy and lifted her tshirt.

Her tummy is still flat but it’s gotten bigger compared to her usual size.

“Hello baby, dada is back from work. What do you want to eat?” I asked and pressed my ear against her tiny bump.

“I want ice cream.” Lisa answered excitedly.

“I’m cooking dinner not junk food Lisa.” I chuckled.

“Hmp! But I want Ice cream!”

“You can have your ice cream after our dinner. Is that okay?” I ask.

“Yehey!” she cutely clapped her hands like a little kid making me smile.

Later that night, Lisa was already snuggled in my side, peacefully sleeping like an angel.

But sleep won’t visit me.

I don’t say much but I could feel she’s hiding something from me and it makes me anxious.

We’ve been together for a long time now and I believe she’s lying about the doctor. If she’s not, she wouldn’t react that much everytime I want to come with her, right?

So I took my phone and typed Chae a message.

“Can you send me the name and contact number of Lisa’s OB.” I pressed send then looked at my wife.

Sorry baby, I don’t want to sneak out on you but I’m so curious about this.

Soon my phone beeped,

“Sure, Mr.Jeon. I’ll send you her contact number.”

Lisa’s POV

After Jungkook left, I quickly prepared my self for my prenatal check-up.

I lied, yes.

Chae and I didn’t plan to meet up. I just said that so that Jungkook will not come with me.

If he comes, he’ll definitely know the truth about my condition and I’m so scared with how he will react.

Will he be mad because I am like this? Will he get worried over me?

Whatever it is, I still feel that he doesn’t deserve to know.

I don’t want to crush his heart with this cruel news. It’s enough that he doesn’t know, that way he won’t feel guilty.

If I survive, we’re lucky.

If I don’t, I am certain he can move on easily because I will be replaced with his own child.

Remembering how much he loved Yuna tells me that Jungkook will choose the baby over my life. He even choose Yuna over me after our wedding. I’m sure he’ll do more for our baby.

“Are you sure with this?” the OB asked after I signed the waiver.

“Yes, I am doctor.” she looked at me guiltily as she check my signature on the piece of paper.

It was a waiver saying that my dearest baby’s life will be prioritized once I give birth. That whatever happens, her life should come first before mine.

They say that mothers are selfless and I believe it’s true.

The Next Morning

Jungkook's POV

I woke up feeling felling the light kisses on my face and neck. Then realized it was my wife's lips doing the magic.

"hmmm.. baby?" I turn to look at her face. She was also looking at me. Big, round eyes watching me sleep. "What is it?" I asked.

Lisa pouted, "You haven't touched me since our honeymoon. When will you touch me again?"

I was surprised to hear her ask this and I don't want her to assume I'm not interested anymore because the truth is, I'm almost dying of just imagining having sex with her but I'm too scared.

"Baby, i'm just scared that you—"

"About the baby? Some couples still do it near the woman's due. Why won't you do it with me when it's just two months old?"

"I know but we need to make sure both of you are safe."

"You won't harm the baby." she added and it's honestly hard not to pin her down the bed especially that my cock hears our conversation.

"Let's just wait after you give birth, I will make love to you everyday if you want, I promise." my answer made her roll eyes and I chuckled.

"Baby, it's not that long. How about I just kiss you down there and help you get off?" I offered and sat up to lift her night dress but she stopped me.

"Why won't you just fuck me!" she frustratedly ask which made me sigh more.

"Lisa baby, listen. You are so small and my cock is…" I stopped, I don't want to brag my size but I don't have a choice. "I'm just concerned that I move too rough on you and harm the baby." I explained while embracing her close.

Lisa looked at me, and began tearing up.

Shit! Good job Jeon for making your wife cry again. I almost forgot how emotional she gets once deprived from her wishes.

“You won’t know if there’s still a next time!” she blurted out and removed herself from my embrace.

Then she strode to the bathroom while I was left dumbfounded.

I got my wife upset again and it’s my fault.

It took me minutes to make up my my mind.

I can’t stand seeing her like this. So I stood and followed her to the bathroom where she is already showering and pushed the door open.

“Jungkook!” her eyes widen seeing me intrude her bath. But it was actually me who’s mouth hunged open upon seeing her wet and naked body.

Goodness, I want to fuck her just looking at her like this.

I didn’t stop my self from removing my boxers to join her in the water.

Lisa’s POV

⚠

The water beat softly against the marbled shower, the sound of the constant pouring served as a backdrop for my thoughts, “Why won’t he make love to me!” I mumble under my breath as I felt the warm water against my skin.

I was reaching for the shampoo when I heared the door open. Fluttering my wet eyeslashes I look up at my husband’s perfect built. He was by the doorframe with a somewhat determined look.

“Jungkook!” my eyes widen as his mouth hunged open.

But it just took him two long strides to get in and when he was already facing me, he took off his boxers and threw it somewhere.

I didn’t cover myself despite my nakedness.

What's the point? When I badly want him to consume me again.

It's been months of longing and I crave for his touch so I badly wanted to do it. Who knows if I'll survive the pregnancy and be lucky to feel our physical bond again.

I look up and see Jungkook's big cock twitch and spring into action when he free his hard dick from the restraints of the boxers.

Stroking his thick cock, he twisted his hand slightly and worked his way up and down its magnificent length.

He watched me watch him, his hand on his hard penis wanking it slowly. He groaned gently and slides his hand up and down.

A yearning for Jungkook pulsed through my whole being. I have definitely missed him but he won't touch me and now I've grown impatient.

"Get in here Jungkook and fuck me now," I growled.

I catch my breath as he stepped in and corssed the distance of our lips. He kissed me passionately, his tongue exploring my mouth as if it was some foreign territory.

I admit, we had kissed hundreds of times before, but each time felt new with him. I held on to his neck as we continued to deepen the kiss.

Then one of his hands explored my curves, stopping at every point to squeeze my ass as his tongue moved to my throat lapping, licking and sucking my neck up to my mouth. He began to thrusts his tongue deep inside and kissed me roughly.

"You have no idea how much I missed this baby. And I'm so sorry for depriving you." He whispered with a husky voice in my ear and my legs buckled with the pleasure unleashed from the warmth of his beautiful body next to mine.

Jungkook is so fucking perfect. Everything in him is just perfect that I wish I can keep him to me forever.

We kissed like lovers in the rain, our mouths licking and sucking and thrashing under the water.
His hands is now entangled in my hair, pulling my head back as he kisses my neck, rolling his tongue up to behind my ear.

“Fuck you hard, you say.” He growled…“With pleasure baby” Hee bit my bottom lip as he reached down to my wet sex.

He thumbs my clit and holds my mound, plunging his fingers hard and slow into my pussy, sliding, penetrating my sex.

His other hand travelled to my bum squeezing me and I moan at the pleasure.

“Ahh.. Jungkook, I love this.” I shut my eyes close as I concentrate at the feel of his long finger inside me.

Holding me by my waist with his strong hands he spins me around. “Bend.” he ordered.

I tilt my hips and arch my back granting him access.

‘This is it!’ I thought I’m finally going to feel him inside me again.

He kissed my shoulder before bending me more forward and I held at the cold tilled wall.

“Fuck me now.” I ordered impatiently.

He paused for what seems like forever before he plunged the full length of his cock deep into me.

“Oh shit!” My eyes went wide as I feel being stretched.

He pulled out until we nearly part before slamming back into me, again and again, he pumped and grind.

Hands on my hips he fucked me as instructed.

Amd my pussy clenched around him as he slid deeper and harder, grinding me up against the cold wall.

Just as I start to climb towards orgasm, he stopped his flow, pulls out and starts to rim my lips, teasing my creamy pussy with his hot slippery cock.

Looking up at him through a watery haze, we made eye-contact and his gaze softened and devoured me.

“I love you baby.” Jungkook smiled before turning me to face him.

“I love you too Jungkook.”

Jungkook lifted me and I let my legs wrap around his small waist. He pressed me against the wall and he started thrusting inside me again. His grip as he holds my head and kisses me, making my heart feel as if it might pound out of my chest. His tongue as it explored my breasts, moving in circles around my nipples.

In and out he pumps his impressive cock, stimulating me deeper, eyes locked on one another. I moaned with every small thrust until I was out of breath.

All sense of reality drifted away as we climbed higher and higher.

“Fuck Lisa, I’m close!” Jungkook barely announced, biting his lower lip as he moved faster.

His arms wrapped around my body, holding me close as we screw, his hand on my wet breasts, his dick pumping and grinding and sliding until we climaxed hard together.

His cum filled me inside and I took it all in.

We tensed and moaned and ride the wave of pleasure together.

I smiled in satisfaction. I’ve never felt this contented.

He breath in and I feel his cock soften inside me. His eyes glistened as he looked at me as if well fucked.

“Did I go rough on you?” he asked apologetically, “I’m sorry I just got carried away.”

“No, I like it. You inside me fits perfectly.” I assured him to lessen his worry.

Jungkook smiled and it hit me how he grew big inside me again.

“We’re late but I think we can do one more round.” He smiled wickedly and before I could even reply, I felt being lifted by Jungkook out of the shower.

Jungkook’s lips once again found mine. He carried me to our bed and roll me there then began thrusting inside, ignoring how wet we both are.

“Oh my God! It feels so good!” I shut my eyes close as I feel great surge of pleasure.

Jungkook started fucking me again and I can tell he’s trying his best to be careful not to harm our baby. And I love it, I love how thoughful he is.

Soon, we reached orgasm at the same time, he kissed my lips, moved to my throat down to my breast and ended on my belly, “Are you fine there little angel? Sorry dada has been naughty today.” Then he kissed the little bump so gently.

I smiled as I look up to him.

He will be a great father, That is what I’m sure of.

Author’s Note

So a lot have voted for Taehyung, Eunwoo, Mingyu, Jaehyun and Kun? 😉

Baby Shower

Jungkook's POV

The following months, Lisa has been all clingy and needy like she doesn't want me out of her sight. She's always calling me and would always ask for cuddles and kisses.

And even when we're at work, Lisa would make sure that I'm just within her radius and would never leave her sight. At first, it was hard but I slowly adjusted to it. For the love of Lisa, my wife.

Thankfully, the Dean of the Foreign Language understands my her and said she were the same when she was pregnant years back. That's why our colleagues started giving her enough consideration and understanding. Some had switched schedules just so Lisa and I can share the same schedule.

And as her husband and the father of our unborn child, I provide her everything that she needs. Whatever she wants and craves, I make sure that she gets it.

I want to be there for her as I know she's undergoing overwhelming emotions due to her pregancy hormones.

Lisa also started showing me her prenatal results which are all good. I am relieved knowing that baby is healthy and normal. So my plan on talking with her OB was pushed a little. I think everything is good we are just preparing ourselves emotionally and psychologically.

As of the moment, I offered a massage on her feet cause she said it's hurting lately.

"Is the pressure enough?" I asked as I press on her muscles.

"Yeah!" she groaned but her face shows pleasure. The sight reminded me of something. That's her face every time she climaxes and it's the best in the world.

My massaging skills are getting better now, I can say it can level to my…

And just by looking at her pleasured face, I suddenly wanted to make love with her, but looking at her baby bump I immediately withdraw the thought.

I shook my head lightly thinking there will be a "Next Time".

After she gave birth, I plan on spending more time with her and taking care of our baby to help her with the coming sleepless nights.

I remember when Ji-eun gave birth, I was also by her side. I accompanied her through the hardship at that time. Those were the time that I was so lost, I don't feel like living because of Lisa's disappearance.

But after seeing Yuna for the first time, I got really happy and dreamt that Lisa and I could create such an amazing baby too. And now that Lisa finally got pregnant, the excitement of meeting my own child was increased to a hundred fold.

The baby is mine.

I can take care of her, love her and I'm sure the baby will stay by my side until her mom and I grew old. I will fullfill my family's needs, I will try to be the best father and husband to them and I'm sure Lisa will be the best mom too.

Just remembering how she took care of Jihoon tells that she'll love our child more that she loved anyone else.

This is the part of my life where I felt so contented and blessed. I am blessed with the best wife and she'll soon give birth to an angel.

I continued the massage until I remember something. We don't know the gender of the baby yet.

"Baby, this coming weekend, I can go with you for your ultrasound check-up, I heard the doctor can find out our baby's gender. At fifth month." I excitedly offered. Lisa is now in her fifth month and we can finally know the gender.

In contrast with my excitement, Lisa's expression changed, she paled. "But.. Uh.. I just read the gender can be checked by the end of the second trimester so that would be in my 6th month!" Lisa uncomfortably shifted from her lying position and removed her feet away from my hands, she stood up and was about to walk away when I held her hand.

"Baby, it's just an ultrasound. Whether the doctor finds out our baby's gender or not, I would still like to go with you and talk with your doctor."

"No!" she forcefully withdrew her hand and we were both taken a back by her action.

Why is she acting like this? She's getting pumped up over an ultrasound?

"I'm sorry.." she looked down, "I was just.. I wanted to have the Ultrasound on my 6th month to make sure. Sometimes, the results on the 5th month is not accurate." Lisa explained.

"It doesn't matter. Let's just have an ultrasound. I really want to see how the baby behave through the machine, I can't just look at the printed ultrasound result all the time."

"Jungkook, I just took an ultrasound last month remember? I don't think it is necessary to be checked again this month."

I can't believe she's still arguing over this!

"Lisa, what's wrong?" I stood from the bed and walked to her. She looks restless just having the conversation and it made me realize I shouldn't force her to do things she doesn't want.

I heaved a sigh and finally decided, "Okay, 6th month it is, but please I really want to come with you. Please Lisa?"

Lisa looked at me and after sometime she finally nodded.

That night, I was so happy, I can finally go with her for a prenatal check-up.

So on the 6th month, I woke up really early, prepared my wife a nutritious breakfast and took my bath. I was fully prepared and is just waiting for her to wake up but she won't.

I looked at the time and it was already 9. Lisa said her appointment with the doctor is at 10, so we should get going.

“Baby, wake up.” I shook her shoulder lightly but she was still on her peaceful sleep.

I kept calling her but she won’t wake so I tried to wake her by annoying her with kisses.

Lisa finally woke up after being showered with kisses on her face, “Jungkook….” she whined.

“Baby, get ready now. Today is our check-up remember?”

Hearing this, Lisa’s big eyes opened. She quickly stood and went inside the bathroom.

‘My love is excited too’, I thought.

After our silent breakfast, both Lisa and I went straight to the clinic of her doctor and knocked.

I couldn’t explain how excited I am just setting foot in the hospital clinic to accompany her. I feel like I’m really going to be a father soon.

Lisa introduced me to her doctor and said, “He is the one I’m talking about.” the doctor nodded in understanding as if they had an agreement.

I tilted my head in confusion but just shook it off when the doctor asked as both to sit on her couch.

She prepared the machine and had Lisa lay on the single bed, I on the other hand jumped straight to the chair beside her. I watched how the doctor rubbed some gel-like thingy on her round belly, then she pressed a somewhat scanner on her the the screen showed the baby.

I wept a tear when I saw it for the first time….

My child.

Oh how precious it is. Lisa smiled at me and said, “Jungkook, that is our baby.”

“Yes baby!” I nodded and kissed her temple. “Doctor, can you check the gender of our baby already? I asked with full

anticpation.

The doctor smiled at us, “Yes. Congratulations, She’s a girl.”

“A girl! Oh god! I’ll be having my daughter!” I jumped from my seat and embraced my lying wife. “Baby, we’ll be having a baby girl!”

“Yeah.. I heard the doctor too.” she chuckled and hugged me too.

“The baby is fine Mr. And Mrs. Jeon. In advice to continue with your vitamins and supplimentary milk. Also, take proper rest and do a little exercise. If you can.”

Both of us nodded and thanked the doctor.

Lisa’s POV

As Jungkook was driving with one hand, his other hand was tightly holding mine. He was joyfully humming a song with his beautiful voice while his eyes are locked on the road.

After our check up, Jungkook’s mood lighten up, he was really pleased with the news of our baby’s gender.

The ride was peaceful until I noticed something.

“Kook?”

“Hmm?”

“Where are we going? This is not the way to our house?” I asked confusedly. He just drove past the way to our house. He was supposed to turn left.

Is he that happy that he forgot where our house is?

“We are going to home.” Jungkook simply answered.

“But this is not the way to our house.” I looked at him, he seemed really happy.

“It is.” he smiled.

“Jungkook, it’s not.”

“It really is.” he softly laugh and continued driving. I on the other hand just kept quiet.

Whatever, I trust him anyway.

After an hour of driving, I noticed that we are already parking in front of a huge-ass house.

“What are we doing here Jungkook?”

Jungkook just took my hand and smiled.

“Let’s go in and see.” he stepped out of the car and turn to my side guiding me out.

“Jungkook…”

“Come on baby.” he tugged me making me walk inside.

I looked around when we got in observing the new sorrounding. The house we entered was thrice bigger than our house but you can’t deny that inspite of it’s size, it still gives you the warmth and cozy feel.

“What are we doing here?” I asked him. He looks so proud as if he’s about to announce that this is our new house.

“This will be our new house.” he answered.

“What???”

“I decided to purchase this because we will be needing more room for our baby.”

“Jungkook I…” I honestly don’t know what to say. Jungkook held my hand while showing me around. I was speechless the whole time as he was the one who did all of the talking.

In the end I just let him, his excitement was evident by the way he explains where the living room, the kitchen our bedroom and our baby’s bedroom will be. The new house has 5 rooms in it. He explained that we will have to have extra rooms because he’s sure that his parents will be visiting a lot and we will also need for the nanny and the security.

The new house has a giant play pen and another one for a study room for our baby and on top of that, it has a swimming

pool designed for our family.

“–-Our daughter will be running around the house and I will tell her to stop running or else she won’t get a taste of mama’s delicious cooking.” Jungkook chuckled as he imagined the scenario.

“So, what do you think of our new house baby?” Jungkook asked with eyes glistening in excitement. I stared at him for a moment feeling how my heart was pinched by his thoughts.

Being here inside a beautiful house perfect for a family and facing the most perfect man to ever exist, how can I remain happy when I know that I’m gonna leave him soon?

Guilt washed over me.

I couldn’t contain my emotion as sadness took over, I started crying.

“Baby… Why?” Jungkook pulled me in his arms and brused my hair with his fingers, kissing the top of my head. “Don’t you like it?”

“No.. I like it.. It is perfect.” I shook my head. I wanted to tell him the truth but I can’t crush his heart like this. Not when he’s happy as this. I might just let the heavens decide how our story will end.

“Oh.. So you’re crying out of happiness?” Jungkook guessed and I just nodded.

I can’t break his heart. I’m too coward to tell him.

“Hmm.. I’m happy that you liked it baby. I’m sure our baby will be happy too.” Jungkook suddenly kneeled in front of me and lifted my dress. He began kissing my tummy as he spoke with our baby.

And the sight is hurting me more. Jungkook noticed this so he stood.

“Shh.. Stop crying baby, come on, let’s try our new bedroom and see if it’s as comfortable as our last.

I just let Jungkook guide me into our new bedroom where he has already bought new furnitures and mini appliances.

We both sat at the bed and he helped me lie down. “There, just relax my love.” Jungkook took my shoes and said, “Let’s stay the night here okay? I already had our clothes and stuffs transfered here while we were on our check up. So you can change after you bath.”

“Okay.” I replied.

Well, it seems everything is settled now. Just how perfect can he be.

“Jungkook?” I called out softly.

“Hmm?”

“Thank you!”

“For what?”

“For everything.”

Jungkook sat back up and faced me, “why are we getting emotional?” he teased.

“I’m just grateful to you. All the things that you did for me, i can’t explain how much you mean to me Jungkook. I love you so much.”

My words made him smile, “I love you too baby.” Jungkook leaned down and kissed me. Slow and very gentle. His hands brushed my check as he support his weight with the other.

I kissed him back with the same amount of love and soon we were both getting ready to bless the new house with our first love making.

Jungkook was in his gentlest as we are both aware of the danger. Still, I didn’t feel uncomfortable while making love.

He kissed me everywhere and whispered words of love as we were both chasing heaven.

Now, the walls of our new room witnessed how deep our love is for one another.

Later that night, while my husband is peacefully sleeping, my mind was still running with thoughts about our future. I'm so terrified with what the future holds and even if I don't want to leave this world, I'm not God to decide such a thing. I stood and walked to the dresser, finding a pen and a paper, I started writing Jungkook a letter.

I stared at my perfect Mr.Jeon is sleeping soundly and began writing.

Pouring all my emotions that I couldn't say to him, I started writing.

I wrote everything that I wished to say but more importantly I bid him goodbye.

After folding the paper, I kissed it like a seal of love.

Now I plan on having him read this once something happens to me.

Determined with my plan, I hid the letter on one of the box inside my designated closet.

Jungkook is not the type to go over my things that's why I'm sure he'll not see this.

Surprisingly, I felt a little better after writing him a letter. It's as if the burden of my secret has been taken off. I joined him back in the bed for a peaceful sleep.

Class 3-C POV

The class who was lead by Chaeyoung organized a baby shower for Lisa and Mr. Jeon. The group had the party at the newly bought house and everyone was happy and excited.

"Thank you! Thank you guys. You just don't know how happy I am." Lisa wiped her tears. Tears out of joy. Her husband was smilingly rubbing her back and hushing her emotional wife.

“Anything for you Lis.” Chaeyoung said. All of them were present during the surprise party. Even Bambam went back from US just to give his bestfriend his present for the baby.

Lisa looked at the gifts they showered her baby and she couldn’t be more grateful.

Namjoon gifted them with first book of words to help the baby learn to read.

Jeongyeon gave them a tablet downloaded with nursery rhymes to keep the baby entertained.

Dahyun gave them a stroller and a walker to help the baby learn how to walk fast.

Hoseok gave them a mini mp3 player with pink unicorn design, he said the playlist is for the baby to learn how to dance.

Yoongi gave them a pink basketball set with his signature (as he is now a very popular basketball player.) He said he has no idea for what to give a baby girl and this is what he could come up with.

Tzuyu and Eunwoo gave them cute baby clothes. Tzuyu wanted Lisa and Mr. Jeon’s baby to look good all the time just like her so she picked cute and chic outfits.

Jin and Jisoo gave them a cooking set toy to encourage the baby to learn how to cook through pretend play.

Chae and Jimin gifted them with potty trainer and tons of diapers. They said it will come in handy iinthe future.

While Bambam gave them a lifetime ticket to the disneyland. He said the baby girl will be a princess in Lisa and Mr. Jeon’s life so it’s just normal to have the baby see real disney’s princesses up close.

Lisa and Mr. Jeon was very much pleased with the thoughtful gifts.

However, Taehyung and Jennie’s gift was the most surprising one, as the couple gifted them with a baby insurance.

Along with it is a note from Mr. Kim,

"Lisa,

You took care of my son and loved him for four years in patience. I believe It is right for me to love your daughter back. I hope you appreciate my simple gift.

-K.T."

Lisa was speechless. She hoped to thank both but Mr. Kim is out of the country and only his girlfriend Jennie attended the party.

"Are you happy?" Mr. Jeon asked her when he saw her out of the door somewhat lost in thoughts. The class is currently having a feast of food which was prepared by Jungkook's parents and Lisa find her way out to lessen her guilt.

Lisa turned to her husband and smiled, "Very."

"I'm glad. Come on let's go back to them." he tried to tug her back inside when but she wants to stay out first.

"Go ahead, I'll follow after you." Lisa said.

"Okay, don't stay for too long. It's cold out here." Mr. Jeon kissed her before leaving his wife there.

Lisa breathed deeply when she was finally alone. She thought she needed some time to collect her thoughts.

It's a month before her due and she's too scred for what will happen. Even though she knows the risk, she still hopes on that 10% chance of survival.

And she has no plans in telling Jungkook this until the end. Specially that everyone looks happy and expectant.

Lisa was engrossed in thoughts when she felt a presence behind her. She looked back and saw her former teacher Jennie smiling at her.

"Ms. Kim."

"Lisa, why are you alone here?"

"I was just craving for some fresh air. You know, pregnant women craves for weird things." she chuckled.

“I see.. I’m really happy for you Lisa for getting pregnant. Tae told me about your story. He said you were having a hard time conceiving back then.”

“I am. And here I am finally blessed with one.” Lisa rubbed the big baby bump in admiration.

“I hope I can be pregnant like you in the future too.” she smiled bitterly before continuing. “My marriage with Jong-in failed because I wasn’t able to give him the child that he wants. I was so heart broken Lisa.” she explained and Lisa listened as she told her her story.

“Years of trying our luck lead to Jong-in’s cold shoulders. We began to fight. He would tell me that I’m useless because I can’t give him a son. That’s the reason why he filed for a divorce.”

Lisa nodded again, feeling sorry for her former teacher. Lisa thought she’s still lucky Jungkook still loved him despite her condition.

“That’s why you are lucky you ended with Jungkook. He’s a great man.” Jennie spoke a little too proud of her friend.

“I really am. And you are as lucky as me for being with Mr. Kim. I mean Kim Teahyung not Kim Jong-in.” she gently laughed realizing that they all have Kim’s for a surname.

“Yes, he is really great. My failed marriage led me to meet him and I cannot be more grateful. Especially that I was instantly given a child. I feel like he is my own son now. Jihoon is a really good kid. Thank you for raising him well Lisa.”

“Thank you for loving him too. You see I cannot take care of him anymore that’s why your arrival was a blessing.”

“Yeah, I want to mend Tae’s heart. He told me about his previous wife’s story. How she kept her condition to him. Which ended with her dying while leaving Tae and Jihoon behind. I feel bad for Tae. If he had just known her condition earlier, he could’ve prevented her from dying of giving birth.”

When Ms. Jennie said those words, she was dumbfounded.

Well, she just realized that Ms. Ruby Jane's story is partly like hers.

Lisa thought if she die from giving birth, will Jungkook get a terminal illness like that of Mr. Kim?

Will her daughter call her mommy angel too?

Will their story be as sad as Mr. Kim's?

She was so confused and don't know what to do until Ms. Jennie urged her to go back inside since it is getting cold.

That night, she finally made up her mind.

Lisa doesn't want to end up like Ms. Ruby Jane. She doesn't want Jungkook to be left alone just like Mr. Kim and most importantly she doesn't want her daughter to just end up reading a farewell letter just like Jihoon.

She needs to tell him.

"Yes, I will tell Jungkook." she whispered.

□

Author's Note

I'm back 😊

I'll finish the story tomorrow. 😊

Exposed Truth

Lisa's POV

After my talk with Ms. Jennie, I came back inside determined to talk to Jungkook but he was squeezed between the boys in our mini bar and they're currently having a drink.

I looked at him, contemplating on how to tell him while we have visitors. As I was staring at him Chae came by my side and cut me off my thoughts.

"Lis, come here, mommy Jeon wants you to see her gifts too." Chae held my hand and guided me to the living room where Jungkook's parents are putting boxes of gifts with the help of their maids.

Just what the…?

This is too much!

I sighed and walked forward. Still, I made sure to thank my in laws for showering us with these gifts.

The night finally ended and all our visitors left. I was left alone with Jungkook and thought it's the right time to tell him. But he was yawning and yawning.

I realized he's now sleepy because he had few drinks with my friends.

"Are you sleepy?" I asked the obvious.

"Yeah, it's late and we need to sleep." Jungkook yawned again and held me by my waist. He sat on the sofa and helped me sit on his lap.

"Let me sing you and our baby a lullaby first. " Jungkook rubbed my baby bump and started singing a song.

He sang a lullaby for baby to sleep and it was the most soothing voice I ever heard.

After singing he said, “There there, our baby is ready to sleep.” Jungkook kissed my tummy and smiled.

“Yes, she is. Thank you for the wonderful song.”

“Anything for my lovely wife and my baby.” He kissed me on the lips and I tasted the alchohol in it. He must’ve been so happy this day that he really drink. Jungkook is a person who doesn’t drink unless there is a very important occassion.

Then, Jungkook lifted me effortlessly to our room and had me lay on the bed.

He usually does this every night for the fact that my feet is always hurting for carrying my baby. The weight is just too heavy for me.

That’s why he started helping me change clothes. As he is doing now.

Jungkook helped me changed clothes with his eyes partly open. I feel like he’s really sleepy but still wanted to help me.

After removing my clothes, he helped my change to my pajamas and soon he joined me in the bed.

“Jungkook?” I called. I wanted to tell him now.

“Hmm?” he answered, his eyes was already closed.

“I have to tell you something.” I nervously bit my lip. I hope he won’t get very mad.

I breathed deeply and mustered all the courage in me.

“I’m dying.”

There, I said it.

I waited for him to shout at me or what but he didn't.

No answer.

"Kook?"

"Jungkook?" I called out again but he's already snoring.

Ahhh.. Too bad.

Jungkook's POV

A month before Lisa's due date, My parents and I has gotten more tensed than excited. Lisa had to take a maternity leave this time and I wanted to make sure that she and our baby is always safe that's why I took a month-long leave at work too.

Everything was ready, from the baby's room to the nurses that we hired who will serve as our help once the baby comes out.

Lisa doesn't know but every time there is time, I make sure to go to church and pray for her and our baby's safety.

Just now, after going to church, I drove straight to our house and found our bed empty.

I could hear the sound of the shower from our bathroom and I'm sure Lisa is taking a bath. My husband instinct kicked in so I rushed to get her a fresh set of clothes.

Lately, Lisa has been having problem wearing her underwear and clothes because of her baby bump. That's why I'm the one who helps her wear her panties and clothes as of the moment.

I opened her closet and open the drawer to where her panties are. Finding an iron man panty, I smiled.

I thought she'll get rid of these?

Anyway, she's still hot even if she uses these kind of kiddie stuffs.

I laughed and decided to choose it. But when I pulled it out, a paper fell from the drawer.

I took a closer look at the folded paper and for some reason, I got a little nervous.

What is this?

The paper intrigued me so much. It looks like a love letter.

Did Lisa received a love letter from her admirers?

I swear to god!

Rolling my eyes, I decided to read it. I slowly opened the letter to see what's inside,

A Letter of Love ✉

I stared at the letter for a moment before reading the words written. I thought it was just a love letter from her admirers at the University because she has a lot of them especially college students. What I didn't expect is that the letter was for me.

Jungkook,

If you're reading this, I'm probably gone now.

I'm so sorry for leaving you. Please know that I love you so much and if the situation was different, I swear we could've been a happy family.

I'm sure you'll take care of our daughter. You can teach her a lot of things especially good manners. Tell her everyday how much I love her, kiss her for me and sing her a lullaby to sleep.

Embrace her tight cause she is part of me, a part of us.

I love you both so so much!

Thank you for all the love you had given. I couldn't ask for more.

-Lisa

I couldn't believe what I'm reading! Is this some sort of a joke?

"Oh.. Jungkook, you're back." Lisa's voice drew me back to reality. I stared at her, looking at her in disbelief.

“What is this?” I show her the paper and her eyes widened as if it was her darkest and deepest secret which was exposed.

“Jungkook… I..you’re not suppose to read that.” She snatched the letter away from me and placed it back to her drawer.

“Then when am I suppose to read it?” I yelled.

“Jungkook calm down.” she trembled.

“How can I calm down after reading that? Lisa, what bullshit is this? What is happening?”

“Jungkook.. It’s hard to explain when you’re mad like this.”

“Well, I’m definitely very very very extremely mad right now! And I deserve an explanation!”

Lisa shook in fear after yelling at her which I regretted almost immediately. But I’m too mad. She’s leaving me. Where is she going? What’s happening?

I’m so scared.

“I’m sorry Jungkook.” her eyes watered as she clutch the towel on her chest.

“You’re sorry for what exactly?” This is just so stupid!!!

“For not telling you the truth.”

“What truth?”

“That I’m not in condition to give birth. The doctor said that I will die if I continue with the pregnancy.” she explained and I couldn’t belive it.

“Bullshit! Tell me you’re joking please.”

“It is true and I’m truly and deeply sorry for keeping it from you.”

“You’re sorry for keeping something like this from me? Lisa, do you even love me?”

“Of course, I love you Jungkook!”

“Then why??? Why would you dare to threathen your life without me knowing.”

“Because you wanted a baby and Yuna left and I’m not enough—”

“How many times do I have to tell you that it’s only you that I need. I don’t need anything else, I don’t need anyone else other than you!”

“Shhh..our baby will hear you.”

“You’re unbelievable Lisa!”

“I’m just trying to make you happy.”

“Do you think I’m happy right now? You just crushed my heart to pieces! I don’t even know how to live without you. You are my life, my happiness, my everything. Can’t you understand? There’s no one in this world that can make me happy more than you do!”

Lisa’s POV

Jungkook slumped down on the floor crying so hard. And I was surprised to see him like this.

The sight of him sobbing hurts my chest so bad.

“You’re leaving me. You promised me you’d never leave me again. Why would you leave me?” Jungkook’s tears were rushing down his beautiful face and that was the most vulnerable look I’ve seen of him and It guilts me more.

“Jungkook, please stop crying.” I pulled him to sit on the bed.

“You are leaving me! You don’t love me! You don’t love me Lisa!”

“What can I do? We cannot do otherwise. I’m already pregnant and the baby is here. She is our responsibility.”

“If you told me sooner, we could’ve consulted more doctors to make sure you’re safe.”

“I’m sorry but I’ve consulted some doctors already and it’s just the same. They all said that I could die from this.”

“No! You’re not dying! As long as I am breathing there’s no way that I’ll let something happen to you.” Jungkook wiped

his tears and stood.

“Where are you going?” I asked when he wore his coat again.

“We are going to consult all the doctors here in Seoul. If we don’t get a good result, we’ll travel abroad and consult better doctors.”

I didn’t speak much when Jungkook started preparing my clothes. I just watch as he took off my towel. He helped me wear my underwear. Jungkook also helped me wear my maternity dress and after he blow dry my hair.

I kept quiet the whole time and I just let him do it. Jungkook’s movement was rushed. As if not wasting time. Later that day, we faced a lot of doctors and all of them tells the same: that I may die and that is on a greater chance.

Jungkook was literall crying everytime we would reach his car to try for another hospital. But he was so persistent. “They are so useless!” he kept complaining how useless the doctors are. “I know there is a better one. We will find one Lisa.”

“Who exactly are we looking for Jungkook?”

“Someone who will tell me that there is no way that you will die. You will never die. I swear you won’t!”

I kept quiet as Jungkook started driving the car. Even though I was too tired from performing the same tests over and over, I didn’t complain because I wanted to lessen his anxiousness.

Jungkook was so helpless. He called his parents and asked for help in searching for the best doctors in South Korea. Soon we came back to our house with a Jungkook ignoring me and just busilly called everyone for help.

“Yes, yes. We would like to set an appointment. Yes. Anytime would do. Okay. Okay. Thank you very much.” Jungkook ended the call and faced me.

“Let’s eat first and we’ll travel out of Seoul.”

“Jungkook, let’s just stay here and…”

“No! unless we find the best, we won’t stop searching.” Jungkook fished out his phone again and started typing in there. I just watch him do his thing. He looks so miserable right now.

I feel so bad to be in this situation where he looks so restless and now I regret not telling him sooner.

“I’m so mad Lisa! I’m so mad!” Jungkook walked out of the room to cook for me and I just stayed at our room.

When he came back, he was already carrying a tray of nutritious food. He was still frowning but his mood lighten up a bit. “Mom called, she said she knows a doctor who is settled in Busan. We’ll go there.” His eyes shown hope in it when he announced his plan.

“I’m sorry.” is all that I say.

“You will not die! You will never leave me! You will fight Lisa.” his hopeful eyes urged me to nod.

Then his eyes softened, “Fight for me baby. Please I need you in my life. If this is some punishment because I was not a good husband, I think this is just yoo much. I swear I will face anything just not this.” Jungkook held me in his arms and soon I heard soft sobs.

It’s been the hundredth time I’ve seen him cry today. I feel very bad for my husband.

Later that day, Jungkook decided that we will travel to Busan the next day because I’m completely drained from consulting a lot of doctors.

I could feel how much he was willing to give anything just to know that I won’t leave him in this world.

After taking my warm bath, I caught Jungkook by the bed crying again.

He was crying like a baby.

His eyes lifted and saw me, “Baby, please don’t leave me. Please… Stay.”

How can I even answer him? I'm not God to give him an assurance. Still I nodded and walked closer to him. Jungkook burried his face on my chest and cried there.

He engulfed me in a tight embrace that night for the fear that I will actually leave him.

Jungkook's POV

We rushed Lisa to the hospital after showing symptoms of labor. She was crying and complaining about the pain in her lower back and pelvis and all I could do was to kiss her while mentally praying for her safety.

My family and I gathered 5 most well renowned doctors in South Korea just to make sure that she'll deliver safe.

"Son, focus!" father called me out. Lisa was already in the labor room while I can't feel my body. It's as if my soul is floating.

"What if Lisa…"

"No! Stop thinking too much. Just join your mom. She's praying in the church's chapel." I nodded and walked to where my mom is silently praying. Sitting beside her, I started praying my hearts out.

Hours had passed and I was completely drained. I've never been so anxious in all of my life. My body was shaking, my heart was racing.

I was walking back and forth in front of the delivery room where Lisa was finally transfered.

This is it! I cannot take this anymore! I tried to push the door of the delivery room open to where Lisa is but the nurses where quicker to shove me out.

"You are not allowed in." they said.

"But what if.. What if.." I couldn't complete my words.

My mom pulled me to sit on one side. "Jungkook, be patient! Lisa is a fighter right? I'm sure she can do this." my

mom talked sense to me and her reassuring voice calmed my heart.

Yes, Lisa will never leave me. She promised me. I was sure of it.

Not long after, a nurse came out of the delivery room. I rushed to her and asked how my wife was.

She said the baby's head is crowning already. I thanked her and patiently waited.

Few minutes had pass when a doctor came out, "Mr. Jeon? Your wife wishes to see you."

Imagine how fast I ran when he said Lisa wants to see me.

I quickly entered the delivery room and the first thing I saw was Lisa who was smilingly staring at a very beautiful baby in her chest. The doctors are still cleaning her lower body.

"Baby?" I was able to breath out of relief when I saw her.

"Jungkook… Look our baby." Lisa's hand lazily reached out for mine. I closed the gap and kissed my wife's forehead.

Seeing our baby for the first time was like love at first sight. My heart was filled with so much joy.

"She's so beautiful." I said, I tried to touch the baby'snlittle finger.

"I love you Jungkook. Thank you."

"I love you too Lisa." I kissed her one more time and she closed her eyes.

"Hey, don't sleep at me." I said.

"Lisa, look at the beauty of our baby. She looks like you." she smiled with her eyes close.

"Baby, look at her." I urged Lisa to open her eyes but she looks tired.

"Lisa."

"Lisa.."

"Baby, wake up first. Please don't sleep."

But Lisa won't open her eyes.

"Doctor, why is she sleeping?" I asked them and I caught how their expression panicked.

"Please step aside Mr. Jeon." One of the doctor placed the baby in my arms as they check on Lisa.

"What's wrong?" I asked. My heart is beating too fast.

The doctors didn't answer me. One nurse tried to make me leave as one took my baby away.

I tried to fight with them but the were able to push me out as they were busily checking on my sleeping wife.

"What happened?" my parents asked in unison when I was out.

"Lisa… She's just tired. I know she just fell asleep." I answered, trying to convince my self that it was the case. But the door opened once again. It was too fast. Everyone was in panic and nobody answers my question:

Why is Lisa sleeping?

"Mom? Mom she's just sleeping right? Right dad?"

My parents weren't able to answer. They both looked at me with worry.

Soon, the delivery room opened again and the head doctor stepped out. "Mr. Jeon, we tried our best."

"Tried what? Lisa? Where is my wife?"

"She's inside. I'm so sorry."

I ran inside and say her there lying. No more machines were attached to her.

"Baby?" I walked slowly.

Lisa was lying and her face looks pale. I looked at her chest which is not moving.

"Baby? Please don't joke like this." I kissed her forehead, "Baby."

"Baby, please wake up."

“Baby, I’m here. Please open your eyes.”

But she remained unmoving.

“Lisa, you promised me.” this time I didn’t stop my tears from falling. I hugged her so so tight and sobbed, “You promised. You promised me.”

“I’m so sorry, we really tried our best but her body just gave up on it.” the doctor once again said.

“Jungkook Lisa is gone.” my mom spoke behind me. I could feel her warm hand rubbing my back but it cannot comfort me.

“We transfered the baby to the private room.” the doctor spoke again.

I stared at Lisa and shook her shoulder, “Lisa, our baby is waiting. Please wake up.”

“Jungkook stop! Lisa is gone.”

“No! She promised me. She said she won’t leave me!”

“Jungkook..”

“Baby, please wake up. Lisa please wake up.”

But she won’t open her eyes.

My heart was crushed, my world was shattered. I wanted to die this instant. If Lisa dies then I’ll die too!

“Baby, please wake up!”

I cried and cried until there is no more tears in my eyes. I held her cold body in my arms but it’s really true.

She’s gone.

My wife is gone leaving me and our baby alone.

I wanted to shout to have her hear me, maybe she will come back to life if I do so I shouted “Baby, please don’t leave! Wake up please!!!”

“Jungkook!”

“Jungkook, wake up!”

My eyes opened to an angelic voice.

Lisa’s big round eyes were the first thing I see.

“Baby?”

“Why are you shouting? Did you have a bad dream?” she asked.

A dream?

So that just was a dream?

I stared at her for a moment then my eyes moved down to her baby bump. The baby is still there.

I was too relieved that I just had a dream. I hugged her so tight. Her warmth, her scent and the softness of her body tells me that she is indeed alive. “You’re alive!”

“Of course I am, did you have a nightmare?” She asked with her voice laced with worry.

“Yes, but I won’t let that dream happen.” I caged her in my arms and kissed her endlessly. “I love you! I love you so much!”

As long as I live, I won’t let that happen to my Lisa.

She will live and we will be a happy family.

I swear I have one chapter more before the epilogue. 😂

Deciding for a New Story

Hi readers, will you please help me decide on what story to write next?

Here are the snippets:

Story Plot #1

Sister Lisa devoted her life to serving God.

Will she be able to fulfill her devotion now that her life was suddenly entangled with the aggressive Jeon Jungkook?

Story Plot #2

I switched off the airplane mode curiously tapped the bird app logo.

#BenvetulaLalisa trending at no. 1 Worldwide with over a million of tweets.

I blinked a few times processing the updates from my fans which I secretly read thorugh my secret twitter account.

I just couldn't believe it. I'm still on the air, on my way to Paris for the Paris Fashion Week with only YG's staffs accompanying me and this tremendous amount of welcome is too overwhelming that sometimes I couldn't believe it. Yet, inspite of the fans support, I can't help but still feel anxious.

Well I hope the girls are here to cheer me up and tell me to not be nervous because even if I've been to fashion shows, It still pressures me how to act around all these high profiled persons in the fashion world.

And this day, I'm about to represent the Brand Prada. Feeling excited I smiled as I look at the clouds out of the plane's small window.

I lifted my camera and took a picture of it, smiled at the screen when I made sure I took few good shots.

But then paused realizing something.

Clouds…

Suddenly it reminded me of him and emptiness took over. My chest started aching and I did my best to let go of the thought.

The way it is so hard to forget that one person.
And how his face appears everytime I see clouds, stars and even the moon.

“Why is it so hard to forget you ko—”

“Lisa?”

As if caught in the act, I quickly covered my mouth realizing that I was speaking on the plane and about to utter an idol’s name. Looking up at the owner of the voice, I was surprised to see a pretty face.

“Chungha?” she smiled.

“Yes, I didn’t know you’re on the same flight.” She looked around then spoke “Wait let’s talk later. I’m heading to the lavatory.” she politely excused herself and walked away.

I face palmed myself when she was out of sight.

Gosh! I hope she didn’t hear me say his name. Or else it’ll be a big scandal.

I mean who would’ve thought that Lalisa Manoban of Blackpink has been dating the most popular maknae of the kpop industry.

Sadly, it was long over and all I need to do right now is to pretend that nothing happened.

This way, both our careers will be spared from any scandals and backlash from fans—his fans.

Story Plot #3

“Jeon, can you help me how to make a girl fall for me?” She asks her dear friend seriously.

Jungkook stared at her for a second and smirked, “Oh boy! Don’t tell me Manoban is finally in love?”

Under his teasing smile, she impatiently reacted, “Shut up!.. Just tell me if you’ll help me or not?”

“Of course yes! Anything for my bestfriend.” Jungkook proudly smiled and Lisa beamed at her bestfriend’s answer.

He lifted his brow. “So, who is the lucky girl that you want to chase?” he asked. This is the very first time she told him that she’s interested with someone.

Finally Lisa will not die a virgin anymore.

She fidgetted her fingers and replied,

“Sana.”

Jungkook’s mouth hunged open hearing the name.

Did she just say Sana?

Isn’t she his ex?

“Shut the fuck up Manoban!”

A story where a girl who has a heart of a boy falls in love with her bestfriend’s ex.

Will he be able to help his bestfriend if he’s the one who falls for her first?

Story Plot #4

Jungkook was watching his brother lie in his bed in a state of coma when the door opened.

A beautiful girl walked in but halted when she saw him there.

Jungkook thought she might be the maid for his older brother, Jaehyun.

The girl seemed to froze seeing him there but recovered quickly. “Hello, my name is Lisa.”

She smiled so sweetly.

Jungkook smiled back, “Hello, I’m Jungkook!” will it be okay if you change the bed sheets?”

She was startled with his question. If she’s not mistaken, this is Jaehyun’s younger brother who lives abroad and only came back to see his brother. She needs to impress Jaehyun’s family so she nodded.

“And please change hyung’s clothes and also mop the dirt on this spot because it’s a little dusty. My hyung hates dusts and please…”

He began ordering her around and she was closed to blowing up in anger.

When in Manoban’s mansion, she is queen and people are serving her not the other way around.

How come this low level creature asks her to do this and that?

“Lisa? Lisa right?” he called her.

“What?” she answered through gritted teeth.

“And also a glass of water for me.” the young man smiled. And this annoyed her more.

Lisa was dumbfounded. Does he think she is his maid?

“You’re the maid, right?” he asked.

Oh fuck you! Lisa was about to curse but she controlled her sharp tongue.

“No, mister. I’m definitely not.”

He tilted his head as if not believing her. Then why is she here? Is she a far away relative? Is she Jaehyun’s friend?

“Then who are you?” he finally asked.

This time it was Lisa who smiled sweetly,

“I’m Jaehyun’s finacee.”

Jungkook was shocked. He looked at her from head to toe and under his scrutinizing gaze, Lisa wanted to bury herself deep.

Will he find out that she’s a fake finacee?

Story Plot #5

A girl who travelled through time met the hottest and most fearless warlord, Jeon Jungkook.

How will their love conquer the mistake of time?

Hard to choose, right? 😂😂😂

Final Chapter

It's finally the end 😭

Lisa's POV

You know that weird feeling as if someone is watching you while you sleep?

I could definitely feel that someone is watching me right now.

I opened my eyes and curiously looked around and I was really right.

Jungkook is watching me. He was just sitting on the chair next to our bed while staring at me.

I was weirded out by the way he is looking at me. But more importantly, I was more concerned of how he looked today.

Dark circles formed around his eyes. He looks like he's not yet slept yet as he was staring deep into my soul.

"What's the matter?" I asked concernly, my love looks restless as usual.

"Lisa, am I the worst husband? Am I the worst person? Did I fail you so much? Am I not worthy of you?"

He began asking questions after questions. And it got me thinking. It sure is hard to process his words when I just woke up but still I have a feeling that his question were because of what he learnt yesterday.

"I want to recall the past mistakes I did to help me understand why does this have to happen to you, God knows how much I treasure you but why is this happening?"

"Jungkook, It's not your fault. My uncle who used to beat me since I was young was the real fault here. This is not some punishment for you."

“I just couldn’t understand why? All my life, the only thing I prayed for is to be with you. Not just for a month, for a year. I want to be with you forever.” Jungkook’s eyes were filled with sadness as he said those words.

“I’m not asking for much. It’s not too much to ask for you to stay, right? But why is it hard to have you with me? I think I’m really the worst person. God must hate me so much.”

“No, you are wrong. You are a great person Jungkook. You loved me and took care of me so well. You’re the Great Teacher Jeon. If not for your greatness I would never fall in love with you.”

Jungkook was silenced. I reached out to hold his hand and squeezed it gently.

“Last night, I dreamt of you dying from giving birth. I thought I really lose you. I don’t wanna lose you baby.”

“It’s just a dream.” I want him to erase those thoughts because I could almost see the water in his eyes threathening to fall. It’s not good for my heart seeing him like this.

“Yeah, but it felt so real. I don’t know what to do Lisa. I’m so scared.”

This is one of the few times that Jungkook told me that he’s scared. I reached out to cup his cheeks and kissed the tip of his nose. “Shh.. Please don’t be scared. I will fight for you. I promise.”

“You promised but in my dream you broke it.” the gloomy face of Jungkook remained the same.

“Please cheer up. You said we’re going to Busan, right? You also said we’ll leave the country if we don’t find the best doctor.” I tried to cheer him up to which he nodded.

“Yes, yes. Thank you baby. Let’s have you and our baby eat first before we leave. Okay?” Jungkook helped me stood and we hand in hand walked downstairs where he started preparing breakfast.

Later in the afternoon, we were already in Busan and meet Dr. Chu, he’s a Chinese doctor which is based in one of the

biggest hospitals in Busan and his expertise earned him a good reputation in his field. That's why Jungkook and I were a bit hopeful this time.

He asked us questions and performed the same test at me. After, he faced the both of us and spoke. "I have had a patient like you before." he announced like my case was just normal.

"Really? What.. What happened to her?" Jungkook anxiously asked.

"Well, she survived. Right now she has 5 children."

"For real? How?" Jungkook's eyes sparked with hope. As if the doctor is the answer to everyrhing.

The doctor confidently answered, "Nothing is impossible in Science especially if it is paired with prayers."

"That means my wife can survive?" Jungkook grabbed his hands in hopes that he'll say yes and he really said, "Yes, Mr. Jeon. However you need to prepare a huge amount of money.

"Money is not a problem, name it all you want I can give you all of my wealth just please tell me that my wife will live."

He nodded, "Very well."

That night, Jungkook and I stayed in one of their hotels in Busan. We haven't even reached the door to our room when Jungkook jumped in so much joy as if he won the lottery.

As a matter of fact, it was the other way around. The doctor asked for too much that I think we will have to start saving for the coming months.

I feel really bad but Jungkook doesn't even care if he ends up penniless just to have me with him.

I just realized how much he loves me and I was so stupid for thinking that he really loved Yuna more than me back then.

"Baby, I'm so happy." he held me in his arms and kissed my forehead.

"I'm happy too but don't you think he asked for a bit too much?"

“It’s not too much. We’ll be fine Lisa. As long as you’re here with me, I’ll be fine.”

I smiled and hugged him back. I’m glad Jungkook will be relieved from now. I couldn’t take how much he was continuously crying for hours now.

Now, his smile was brought back to his pretty face.

Jungkook’s POV

“Jungkook…”

“Jungkook…”

I woke up to Lisa’s groaning.

“Baby? What’s wrong?” My heartbeat fastened when I saw her twists in pain.

“I.. I think it’s time.” she said and I jumped out of our bed quickly.

God! Oh god! What should I do???

I panicked as the time we all had been waiting for came right at us.

I rushed to get the things we need, called our nurse to help us out of the hotel room. Actually, our hospital bag is readily set.

Lisa’s clothes and underwear
Maternity pads
Baby’s diapers
Newborn clothes
And a lot more

Our nurse and our hotel staffs helped us get off of the hotel. I quickly called my parents to have them travel to Busan to help me with everything.

Lisa was biting her lip from pain and I rub those parts which hurts.

“Jungkook, here… Ugh.. Here too.. Ugh this one hurts more.” I kept rubbing and rubbing but she’s still twisting in

pain.

God! I feel bad for women.

Imagine being them? Bleeding once a month and giving birth?

I swear all men should love their woman with all of their hearts and treat their woman like a queen.

We finally reached the hospital and Lisa's hand was pulled out from me when she was transfered to a wheelchair.

A flash of fear and confusion washed through me when I realized that this already happened in my dream.

The hospital, the labor room.

Suddenly, I froze on my spot.

No, no… It won't happen again!

I followed her to the labor room where of course, I'm not allowed.

"Sir, you're not allowed in." One nurse said.

"I'll buy the whole labor room just let me be with my wife, she needs me."

The doctor who saw the commotion said, "Let him in. But please wear a lab gown."

I willingly followed one nurse when she ushered me to change and soon I rushed to Lisa who was in bed, eyes shut as she keep on turning from one side to another.

She's in pain.

"Baby, I'm here." I held her hand and in mind I silently prayed.

"Jungkook, it hurts so much."

"I'm sorry baby"

Ugh.. I feel guilty.

"I swear I won't let you fuck me again!" Lisa shouted all of a sudden.

It was so embarrasing that all of us in the room including the nurses and the doctor pretended we didn't hear her.

"Shhh Lisa.. Stop saying these things."

"Huuuu.. Because it's true!"

"Baby… Hush now."

"Don't baby me! I'm mad at you for fucking me. This hurts huhu" One nurse silently chuckled in one corner.

"Fuck you Jungkook!"

"Fuck your dick!"

"No, I won't fuck your dick anymore!"

"Lisa, please baby stop saying these." I whispered as she keeps on crying while whining that it was my fault. I mean yeah I did fucked her but she liked it too, right?

Why is she suddenly angry this time?

When Lisa was almost screaming in pain, "I want to push it out now!" One nurse came in and checked her then she announced, "Doctor it's 10."

"Okay, ready her."

I panicked again when they transfered her to the delivery room.

"Doctor, please let me come in too. Please please" I begged and begged until it was too much for him.

I don't want to stay out just like in my dream. I want to see my Lisa and be with her as she give birth.

Thankfully, the doctor allowed me.

I was faced with Lisa who was already legs wide and ready to push the baby out.

I don't know where I found the courage to stay there when the whole scene was terrifying.

Imagine a baby coming out of you!

I watch how Lisa bite her lip so hard that it almost turned white.

“Baby, please fight this time, okay?” I kept whispering words of love as I stay by her side, holding her hand while kissing her sweaty forehead .

The scene was too fast, Lisa let a strong push and the baby slipped out of her.

The crying sound of a baby echoed around the delivery room and both Lisa and I’s tears fell down immediately when the baby who’s umbilical cord was just cut was placed in her chest.

Oh.. God, just how amazing our baby is!

“She’s so beautiful.” our baby’s beauty is stunning as Lisa.

“She is.” Lisa replied emotionally.

“Thank you Lisa. Thank you baby.” I kept prepping Lisa’s face with gentle kisses as I was filled with so much joy.

I love her so much! I love them so so much!

We watched how the doctors clean our baby and we patiently waited for them to clean Lisa too.

The whole process of giving birth was the most fascinating thing I’ve seen. The best thing that God has created.

Lisa and I were too happy seeing our baby for the first time.

It was like love at first sight.

She is mine and Lisa’s flesh and blood and I promise to love the baby with all my heart.

I held the baby in my arm when they finished clothing her with new born clothes. That’s when I realized that Lisa’s eyes fell close.

No.

No…

No…

Not this again!

I shook her shoulder, “Baby, please don’t leave me.. Baby you promised me.” I didn’t know that I was already crying so

hard. As flashes of my dream is now being repeated.

“Lisa…”

“Lisa, baby”

“Baby please wake up!”’

“Ugh.. Jungkook keep quiet I want to sleep!” Lisa groaned and I looked at her.

Her chest is moving softly.

She’s breathing calmly.

So, she’s just sleeping?

“Mr. Jeon, it’s just normal for your wife to sleep. Giving birth is tiring.” The doctor spoke so confidently as if there’s nothing wrong with my wife.

“Bu what if she… She..”

“Believe me she’s past the dangerous part and she’s safe so please keep quiet. We’ll transfer her to your room so that she can rest more.

My heart leaped in happiness when the doctors said those words. I gently held the baby in my arms as my eyes focused on Lisa’s chest.

That’s right, I want to see her breath.

I don’t want her to stop breathing.

Lisa fell asleep for a good two hours but she was waken by the rounding nurse as she said the baby needs to be breastfed.

I watch in awe when she let out her pink nipple. The one where I used to suck is now being offered to our princess.

Lisa saw me watching her and she said, “Don’t look at me.” she embarrasely covered her chest and held the baby closer.

I just smiled and sighed in relief.

Lisa is out of danger and I thanked God so much for this miracle.

Lisa's POV

Jungkook was such in a high spirit after I miraculously survived.

He was too happy that he gave all the hospital staffs gifts. I wanted to reprimand him for spending too much but I was too tired to speak.

My body was exhausted but the sight of our baby was boosting my energy. As Jungkook took care of me in the hospital, I managed to kiss my baby endlessly.

Jungkook pouted and said I should leave him kisses too but I ignored him and just focused on showing love to our baby.

The hospital room was quite spaciously clean and very comfy. It feels like home. Actually, anywhere where Jungkook is feels like home.

Soon, Jungkook's parents came in and also my classmates. Everyone was excited to see our baby and everyone was delighted hearing the good news that I'm still alive.

I was not in condition to talk much that's why Jungkook did all the talking.

When all of our visitors left, I was faced with Jungkook. Our baby is silently sleeping beside me and I admired her features more.

"She's too beautiful that you can't take your eyes off of her." Jungkook proudly smiled.

"For real." Jungkook lie down beside me, since the bed was wide enough for two adults.

"She's our daughter baby. We're finally a complete family, are you happy?" he asked.

"Of course I am." Who wouldn't be happy when my prayers of giving birth to Jungkook's child was granted.

"I'm glad. Thank you so much Lisa." he held my now small waist under the white sheets.

“For what?”

“For staying, for not leaving me.”

I smiled at his words.

Jungkook crossed the gap on our faces and kissed me on the lips.

“I love you Lisa.”

I love you Jungkook” he smiled before kissing me once more.

Author’s Note

Dear readers,

Thank you so much for reading this story. And for those who waited patiently fpr updates, I love you so much.

I have read this story for so many times and I noticed the typos and grammatical errors and I apologize. I’m very lazy to edit. I’m just 11 month old in Wattpad so please forgive me.

Once again, Thank you very much especially those who comments, you are my driving force.

Comments are writer’s inspiration, so please give me a lot on my next story.

Epilogue is coming btw 😊

EPILOGUE

Lisa's POV

A month later

My wound healed fast.

That's how effective the doctor's prescription is. I got my strength back and now I can say that I can finally move out from bed.

But the problem is, Jungkook won't let me out of bed. Not that he wanted to make love, he just wants to make sure that I am safe and surely healed before he let's me move.

"Just lie there. Relax, don't move. I'll cook for you." this is Jungkook's words everytime I would say that I will help him.

"But I want to cook for you and our baby…"

"No, I don't want you tiring yourself out. I'd rather do this myself. Remember the doctors words that you should rest well."

"But it's more than a month now, my wound has healed. I can even attend Zumba class if you'll just let me out of bed." I said, meaning every words.

"Not happening! Just follow me and rest here. Once you totally recovered, we can try zumba in bed." he joked making me roll eyes.

"But…" Jungkook shut me down with a kiss to silence me.

And yes, It has always been effective.

A month had passed and Jungkook managed to be the greatest husband to me. He took care of me so well. As he's the one who bathe me, change me and fed me. He actually filed a year leave just to be with me.

He has also been the greatest dad to Lily, our daughter. We hired two nurses for our baby but it was jungkook who's doing all the work. He's the one who change her diapers, prepares her milk and sings the baby to sleep. In short, the nurses loves my husband because they got nothing to do anymore.

I sighed and just let my man do his thing. Soon, he came back with a tray of delicious food and began feeding me, "Say ah"

I opened my mouth and took the spoonful of food and Jungkook smiled in satisfaction.

"Very good. Now you should finish this food so that you'll get stronger." I simply nodded and opened my mouth for him.

From carrying the baby for 9 months to labor to birth giving, I can say that it was the most hard and painful thing I've experienced but I'll go through the same process again if it's with Jungkook.

He never failed to amaze me, his love for me is just the greatest.

Two years later,

It was a weekend when Jungkook's parents decided to pay us a visit. Mother bought too many dolls and stuffed toys for Lily. She always does this every weekend, buying our daughter a lot of stuffs that I think our house will soon be filled with just her toys.

On the other hand, Father is more concerned with Lily's intellectual development that's why he has bought tons of books even though we already have a lot of books in the library. He said, Lily needs to be smart just like us.

Jungkook and I together with his parents were busilly watching our daughter play on the carpet by the iving room with her toys. But most of the time, she'll flip the books.

"Look honey! Our grandaughter loves the toys more" Mother Jeon said.

"I think she enjoys the books more." Father proudly smiled when Lily took another book with her little fingers.

"Ugh.. That's only because Lisa is always reading her books." Then she turned to me. "Lisa, please let your daughter play more than just reading. She's too young to be studying."

Feeling a little guilty, I nodded. "Yes, mother." True to that, I enjoy reading my daughter books than letting her play. Because I want her to be smart like Jungkook.

"Mom, Dad, I think studying and playing should be balanced out. Lisa is doing a good job, she even resigned from her work just to focus on Lily." Jungkook smiled at me, explaining.

"Of course, our Lisa is such a great mom. Now I feel bad for suggesting you quit working." Mother guiltily said.

"It's okay. I want to witness Lily's milestones." I was honestly sad after resigning because I love teaching but I love my daughter more. I want to be there for her always. I want to love her and cherish her and make her feel that she is loved by me and Jungkook. I will do everyrhing for her unlike what my own mother did to me.

"Such a sweet mother you are. Don't worry, once you get pregnant again with another child, Lily will soon have someone to play with. This time you won't have to worry much, you can definitely go back to work."

Another Child?

My eyes travelled to Jungkook as he grew stiff on his spot. Now I feel bad for him.

Two years had passed and Jungkook had this trauma of love making. He said he's scared to get me pregnant again. The issue of having another child is just out of option.

And now that it was easily brought up by his mother, he paled again.

“Mom, I told you we won’t have another baby.”

His parents concerned looks didn’t go unnoticed. They began convincing him that it’ll be fine since nothing happened really.

“You just don’t know what I went through! I don’t want to lose my wife again!” he grew irritated this time. But he was silenced when he noticed the pair of eyes that was on him the whole time, it was Lily’s.

“I’m sorry.” he looked down. “It’s just, Lisa and I with our Lily is already complete. I don’t want to harm this family.”

His parents silently nodded. It was clear that they were sad for their son but they can’t do otherwise.

The following nights, I started convincing him to make love. This way, it’ll probably lessen his anxiousness over the matter.

Maybe if we constantly make love, he won’t be that scared again.

Finally, after three days of constant begging he agreed.

In one condition–Use Protection.

“How do we do this?” he tore another pack and stretched it out so hard that it snapped back hurting his finger. “Ow.”

“Jungkook!” I am getting impatient as he clumsily tore another one. This is already the fifth pack but we’re still far from starting.

At this point, I think we’ll go through another round of foreplay if he keeps on tearing condoms.

“Are you purposefully tearing the condoms?” I huffed in annoyance. Both of us are naked in bed. He was really hard and I am so wet but the heat will soon die down because he has no experience in using them.

In the past, he used to come inside me which was not a big problem but after knowing that I may die if I get pregnant

again, Jungkook said he doesn't want to come inside me anymore.

After two years, this is our first time making love so I'm a little impatient while Jungkook is anxious.

We wanted it to be perfect but he really doesn't know how to use condoms.

"But it's really hard." I can tell he was seriously having a hard time.

That's it! I snatched the condom from his hand and threw it at the side.

Jungkook's eyes grew wide with my action, "What?—"

"Just do it without the condom."

"But—"

"Withdraw it once your close." Jungkook contemplated firat before nodding, "I'll try my best. "

Determined to finish what we started, Jungkook kissed me again. His lips wandered overed my body, kissing all the sensitive spots.

He lifted his head which was concentrated between my thighs. "How was it?" he asked.

"Still the best." Jungkook smiled proudly. Simply because I came twice with just his lips and fingers.

Soon we were up for the main event. "Baby, what if?" he looked so scared but his eyes were burning with passion.

"It won't, remember I'm also taking pills. Don't worry."

For the very first time in our history of love making that both of are are scared to death. But I don't want him to know that I also feel the same because if I do, he'll stop. I desperately want to feel him again.

"Ahhh..shhhit" Jungkook hissed when he pushed himself inside me. I grabbed hi shoulders at the pain.

I didn't know it would be painful again.

Aren't V's supposed to be loose after giving birth? Why is mine hurts like our first?

"Why are you still tight?" Jungkook kept on asking as he began pounding himself in me.

I just lay there with closed eyes. The pain was replaced with pleasure this time.

Oh, Jungkook just how amazing your body does to me!

We were both panting as we chase our pleasure, enjoying the feeling that we both missed for the past two years.

The night was filled with passion as Jungkook and I were engrossed with our love making.

"Lisa! Fuck fuck!!!" his body shaked and muscles tightened.

He's close.

Soon, he withdraw his cock before squirting his hot sticky cum on my belly.

Then collapsed on top of me. "Oh, how much I love you." he smiled in content, eyes sparkling with joy

"And I love you more." I kissed him once making him feel excited again.

"Let's do it again."

The Next Day

"Where are we going?" I nervously asked as I try to peek between his fingers which are now securely covering my eyes.

"Shh.. Be patient. We're close." Jungkook was guiding me out of his car where he said he'll show me his surprise.

"You're not planning to kill me, right?"

"Of course not! How can I kill someone who's bringing joy to my life.

“Ugh..too cheesy.” I chuckled as I let him guide me to wherever he wants me to.

Soon I felt him stop and whispered, “We’re here.” I can hear the excitement in his voice making me so curious about this.

“Show me now.” I tried to removed his hands but he was still covering my eyes securely.

“Wait baby. Hear me first.” I felt Jungkook loosened his hold and said, “Teaching is both our passion and I know how much you wanted to help the orphans so…”

Suddenly his hands were completely removed from my eyes. I opened my eyes trying to adjust to the brightness as I stare at the building in front of me.

Hope School for the Orphans

“What is this?” my heart raced in excitement as I read the words.

“This is my gift for your birthday.” he started to explain. “I thought you’d love running the school yourself. Since you love children, it’ll be nice if we teach while helping. Do you like that baby?”

My eyes watered in so much joy hearing such a generous gift. “Of course! I love it so so much!” My arms automatically encircled Jungkook’s neck as I pressed my lips to his. “Thank you! I love it so much! I want to teach just like you. I want to be a great teacher just like you.”

“You are already the best my love, far more better than me.”

“No, you’re better.” I argued.

“No, you are much much better.” he kisses the tip of my nose to argue back.

“No, you’re the greatest one.”

“Am I still the greatest even if I took advantage of my once innocent student?”

“Remember we were both virgins and we had our first so I also took your innocence Mr. Jeon.”

“Hmm.. That’s true though.” he smiled and kissed my lips. “Lisa…”

“Hmm?”

“Thank you!”

“For?”

“For breaking my nose.”

Jungkook’s lips curled and both of us laughed

I pulled him more to me as he deepen the kiss.

And that is the story of The Great Teacher Jeon.

Author’s Note

Sorry it took me so long. But here is finally the end. I will miss all of you especially my readers whom I enjoy reading comments.

I love you so much! 😘